



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







OLIVER CROMWELL'S  
LETTERS AND SPEECHES:

INCLUDING

THE SUPPLEMENT TO THE FIRST EDITION.

*With Elucidations.*

BY THOMAS CARLYLE.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

NEW YORK :  
HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS,  
329 & 331 PEARL STREET,  
FRANKLIN SQUARE.  
1868.



## CONTENTS OF VOLUME II.

---

### CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.

#### PART VII.

##### THE LITTLE PARLIAMENT. 1651-53.

	PAGE
THE LITTLE PARLIAMENT . . . . .	3
LETTER CXXV. To Rev. J. Cotton : London, 2 Oct., 1651	9
Reflections on Public Affairs : what Prophecies are now fulfilling.	
“ CXXVI. To Mr. Hungerford : London, 30 July, 1652 . . . . .	19
Note on Private Business.	
“ CXXVII. To Mr. Parker : Whitehall, 23 April, 1653	30
Riot in the Fen-Country.	
SUMMONS . . . . .	31
SPEECH I. Opening of the Little Parliament, 14 July, 1653 .	34
Retrospective : aim of all these Wars and Struggles ; chief events of them ; especially dismissal of the Long Parliament. Prospective : dayspring of divine Prophecy and Hope, to be struggled towards, though with difficulty. Demits his authority into their hands.	
LETTER CXXVIII. To Committee of Customs : Whitehall, Oct., 1653 . . . . .	59
In remonstrance for a poor Suitor to them.	
“ CXXIX. To H. Weston, Esq. : Whitehall, 16 Nov., 1653 . . . . .	60
Excuse for an oversight : Speldhurst Living.	

## PART VIII.

## FIRST PROTECTORATE PARLIAMENT. 1654.

	PAGE
<b>LETTER CXXX.</b> To R. Mayor, Esq. : Whitehall, 4 May, 1654	77
Dare not undertake the Purchase recommended.	
“ <b>CXXXI.</b> To Lord Fleetwood : Whitehall, 16 May, 1654 . . . . .	79
To dismiss Col. Alured.	
“ <b>CXXXII.</b> To Col. Alured : Whitehall, 16 May, 1654	80
Official Order to the Colonel.	
“ <b>CXXXIII.</b> To Sir T. Rymer : Whitehall, 5 July, 1654 . . . . .	82
A City Preacher.	
<b>SPEECH II.</b> Meeting of the First Protectorate Parliament, 4 Sept., 1654 . . . . .	88
Goodwin's Sermon, <i>On the Deliverance out of Egypt, and Pilgrimage towards Canaan through the Wilderness</i> . Our difficulties : Antichrist ; Levellers, Fifth-Monarchists, Jesuits. Our attainments : Some Reform of Law ; Reform of Church ; Peace, with almost all Nations. Finance ; necessity of Concord.	
<b>SPEECH III.</b> To the same Parliament, 12 Sept., 1654 . . . . .	109
Cannot have the Foundations of Government submitted to debate in this Assembly. A free Parliament they ; but he also, in virtue of whom they sit, must be an unquestioned Protector. His history since he entered on these Public Struggles : Dismissal of the Long Parliament ; Abdication of the Little Parliament ; Protectorship, on what founded, by whom acknowledged. To proceed no farther, till they acknowledge it.	
<b>LETTER CXXXIV.</b> To R. Bennet, Esq. : Whitehall, 12 Jan., 1654-5 . . . . .	132
Virginia and Maryland.	
“ <b>CXXXV.</b> To Captain Crook : Whitehall, 20 Jan., 1654-5 . . . . .	135
To watch Adjutant-Gen. Allen.	
<b>SPEECH IV.</b> Dissolution of the First Protectorate Parliament, 22 Jan., 1654-5 . . . . .	138
Regrets that they have not communicated with him : <i>he</i> was not unconcerned with them ; has been struggling and	

endeavoring for them, keeping Peace round them ;—does not know, on their part, whether they have been alive or dead. Of trees that foster only things poisonous under their shadow. Of disturbances, once well asleep, awakened into new perilous activity during these debates. Necessary that they be dissolved.

PART IX.

THE MAJOR GENERALS. 1655-56

	PAGE
CHRONOLOGICAL . . . . .	161
LETTER CXXXVI. To Gen. Blake : Whitehall, 13 June, 1655 . . . . .	171
The Dey of Tunis. Instructions.	
“ CXXXVII. To Lord Fleetwood : Whitehall, 22 June, 1655 . . . . .	176
By the Rev. Mr. Brewster. Henry Cromwell gone to Ireland. Private feelings.	
“ CXXXVIII. To Gen. Blake : Whitehall, 30 July, 1655 . . . . .	178
Instructions not yet to divide the Fleet. Person for Lisbon.	
COMPLIMENT . . . . .	179
LETTER CXXXIX. To Gen. Blake : Whitehall, 13 Sept., 1655 . . . . .	181
Plate Fleet.	
“ CXL. To Maryland Commissioners : Whitehall, 26 Sept., 1655 . . . . .	182
Virginia and Maryland.	
JAMAICA . . . . .	187
LETTER CXLI. To Gen. Goodson : Whitehall, Oct., 1655 . . . . .	192
Of Jamaica :—This and the two following.	
“ CXLII. To D. Serle, Esq. : Whitehall, Oct., 1655 . . . . .	194
“ CXLIII. To Gen. Fortescue : Whitehall, Nov., 1655 . . . . .	195
“ CXLIV. To Henry Cromwell : Whitehall, 21 Nov., 1655 . . . . .	199
The Disaffected in Ireland.	
“ CXLV. To Generals Blake and Montague : Whitehall, 28 April, 1656 . . . . .	204
By Capt. Lloyd. Suggestions : Cadiz, Puntal, Gibraltar.	
“ CXLVI. To the same : Whitehall, 6 May, 1656 . . . . .	206
Claims on Portugal.	

	PAGE
<b>LETTER CXLVII.</b> To Richard Cromwell: Whitehall, 29 May, 1656 . . . . .	209
Can sell Newhall.	
“ <b>CXLVIII.</b> To Henry Cromwell: Whitehall, 26 Aug., 1656 . . . . .	215
Dangers in Ireland.	
<b>SPEECH V.</b> Meeting of the Second Protectorate Parliament, 17 Sept., 1656 . . . . .	219
Our difficulties: Spain, and why we have gone to war with Spain; Papists, Cavaliers, Levellers, Fifth Monarchists;—the need there was of Major-Generals. Our remedies: To prosecute the war with vigor; to maintain steadily the aim of all these struggles, Liberty of Conscience and a pure Gospel Ministry; to reform the law:—to reform Manners; that will be the grand remedy of all. Finance. Exhortation; Divine encouragement and hope: Eighty fifth Psalm.	

## PART X.

## SECOND PROTECTORATE PARLIAMENT. 1657-58.

<b>LETTER CXLIX.</b> To the Mayor of Newcastle: Whitehall, 18 Dec., 1656 . . . . .	255
Presbyterians and Independents.	
“ <b>CL.</b> To Cardinal Mazarin: Whitehall, 26 Dec., 1656 . . . . .	258
Quarrel between Charles Stuart and his Brother.	
<b>SPEECH VI.</b> To the Second Protectorate Parliament, 23 Jan., 1656-7 . . . . .	262
Thanks for their Congratulation on the failure of Sindercomb's Plot.	
<b>KINGSHIP</b> . . . . .	267
<b>LETTER CLI.</b> To the same Parliament: Whitehall, 25 Dec., 1656 . . . . .	271
Case of James Nayler.	
<b>SPEECH VII.</b> To the same Parliament, 31 March, 1657 . . . . .	275
Reception of their Petition and Advice with their Offer of the Title of King. Returns pious thanks; craves time to consider; will then answer.	

	PAGE
<b>SPEECH VIII. To a Committee of the same Parliament, 3 April, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>278</b>
Answers with praise as to the Petition and Advice generally, but as to the Title of King, with distinct though not emphatic No.	
“ <b>IX. Conference with the Committee of Ninety-nine in regard to the Title of King, 11 April, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>283</b>
Difficulty as to how they shall proceed in this matter of Conferring.	
“ <b>X. Second Conference with the same, 13 April, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>293</b>
Endeavors to rebut their arguments, used in the former Conference, in favor of the Title. Not of necessity; at best only of expediency or advantage. John Hampden and the Ironsides. Leaves the matter undecided: Conference to be renewed.	
“ <b>XI. Third Conference with the Committee of Ninety-nine, 20 April, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>307</b>
Replies to their argument drawn from Law; contends that whatever Title they, the Parliament, establish, be it that of Protector, or another, will be Law. For the rest, the matter not an essential; unimportant in comparison with others in this New Instrument of Government,—to which others, let us rather address ourselves. Conference to be renewed on the morrow.	
“ <b>XII. Fourth Conference with the same, 21 April, 1657. . . . .</b>	<b>313</b>
Animadverts on various Articles of the Petition and Advice, or New Instrument, which seem to require reconsideration; leaves that of the Kingship unmeddled with.	
“ <b>XIII. To the Second Protectorate Parliament in a body, 8 May, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>343</b>
Briefly refuses the Title of King.	
“ <b>XIV. To the same, 9 June, 1657, on the Presentation of some Bills for assent . . . . .</b>	<b>347</b>
Thanks for their Supplies of Money, as the custom is.	
<b>LETTER CLII. To Gen. Blake: Whitehall, 10 June, 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>349</b>
Jewel for the victory at Santa Cruz.	
“ <b>CLIII. To Gen. Montague: Whitehall, 11 Aug., 1657 . . . . .</b>	<b>352</b>
Order to sail.	



	PAGE
LETTER CLIV. To J. Dunch, Esq.: Hampton Court, 27 Aug., 1657 . . . . .	352
To call at Hampton Court.	
“ CLV. To Gen. Montague: Hampton Court, 30 Aug., 1657 . . . . .	353
In sanction of his treatment of the Dutch Ships.	
“ CLVI. To Sir W. Lockhart: Whitehall, 31 Aug., 1657 . . . . .	356
Mardike and Dunkirk. Peremptory: To bring Mazarin to the point.	
“ CLVII. To the same: same date . . . . .	357
Same subject.	
SPEECH XV. To the Two Houses of Parliament; Opening of the Second Session of the Second Protectorate Parliament, 20 Jan., 1657-8 . . . . .	365
Reasons for thankfulness in such a Meeting: Religious Liberty, the great object of our struggles, gained, and in the way of being made secure: Peace hitherto; a Godly Ministry. Understand the works of God, what God has done for you;—and persevere and prosper.	
“ XVI. To the same, the Commons having raised de- bates as to the Title of the other House, 25 Jan., 1657-8 . . . . .	373
Perils of the Nation; perils of the Protestant Interest in Europe at large; pressing need there is of unanimity. Ex- hortation and Remonstrance: Do not sacrifice great vital interests for titles and niceties.	
“ XVII. Dissolution of the Second Protectorate Par- liament, 4 Feb., 1657-8 . . . . .	390
What he might have expected in this Meeting of Par- liament; what he has found in it; Angry debating; and the Nation on the verge of conflagration thereby. Dis- solves the Parliament.	
DEATH OF THE PROTECTOR . . . . .	400
SUPPLEMENT . . . . .	413
INDEX . . . . .	589

CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.

---

PART VII.

THE LITTLE PARLIAMENT.

1651—1653.



## LETTERS CXXV.—CXXVII.

### THE LITTLE PARLIAMENT.

**BETWEEN** Worcester Battle on the 3d of September, 1651, and the Dismissal of the Long Parliament on the 20th of April, 1653, are Thirty-one very important months in the History of Oliver, which, in all our Books and Historical rubbish-records, lie as nearly as possible dark and vacant for us. Poor Dryasdust has emitted, and still emits, volumes of confused noise on the subject ; but in the way of information or illumination, of light in regard to any fact, physiognomic feature, event or fraction of an event, as good as nothing whatever. Indeed, onwards from this point where Oliver's own Letters begin to fail us, the whole History of Oliver, and of England under him, becomes very dim ;—swimming most indistinct in the huge Tomes of *Thurloe* and the like, as in shoreless lakes of ditchwater and bilgewater ; a stagnancy, a torpor, and confused horror to the human soul ! No historical genius, not even a Rushworth's, now presides over the matter : nothing but bilgewater *Correspondences* ; vague jottings of a dull fat Bulstrode : vague printed babblements of this and the other Carrion Heath or Flunkey Pamphleteer of the Blessed Restoration Period, writing from ignorant rumor and for ignorant rumor, from the winds and to the winds. After long reading in very many Books, of very unspeakable quality, earning for yourself only incredibility, inconceivability, and darkness visible, you begin to perceive that in the Speeches of Oliver himself once well read, such as they are, some shadowy outlines, authentic prefigurements of what the real History of the Time may have been, do first, in the huge inane night, begin to loom forth for you,—credible, conceivable in some measure, there for the first time. My reader's patience is henceforth to be still more severely tried : there is unluckily no help for it, as matters stand.

Great lakes of watery *Correspondence* relating to the History of

this Period as we intimate, survive in print; and new are occasionally issued upon mankind :\* but the essence of them has never yet in the smallest been elaborated by any man ;—will require a succession and assiduous series of many men to elaborate it. To pluck up the great History of Oliver from it, like drowned Honor by the locks : and show it to much-wondering, and, in the end, right thankful England ! The richest and noblest thing England hitherto has. The basis England will have to start from again, if England is ever to struggle Godward again, instead of staggering Devilward, and Mammonward merely. Serene element of Cant has been tried now for two Centuries ; and fails. Serene element, general completed life-atmosphere, of Cant religious, Cant Moral, Cant political, Cant universal, where England vainly hoped to live in a serene soft-spoken manner,—England now finds herself on the point of choking there ; large masses of her People no longer able to find even potatoes on that principle. England will have to come out of that ; England, too terribly awakened at last, is everywhere preparing to come out of that. England, her Amazon-eyes once more flashing strange Heaven's-light, like Phœbus Apollo's fatal to the Pythian mud-serpents, will lift her hand, I think, and her heart, and swear by the Eternal, "I will not die in that ! I had once men who knew better than that !" —

But with regard to the History of Oliver, as we were saying, for those Thirty-one months there is almost no light to be communicated at present. Of Oliver's own uttering, I have found only Three Letters, short, insignificant, connected with no phasis of Public Transactions : there are Two Dialogues recorded by Whitlocke, of dubious authenticity ; certain small splinters of Occurrences not pointing very decisively anywhither, sprinkling like dust of stars the dark vacancy : these, and Dryasdust's vociferous commentaries new and old ;—and of discovered or discoverable, nothing more. Oliver's own *Speech*, which the reader is by and by to hear, casts backward some straggling gleams ; well accordant, as is usual, with whatever else we know ; and worthy to be well believed and meditated, by Historical readers,

\* Thurloe's *State Papers*, Milfon's, Clarendon's, Ormond's, Sidney's, &c., &c., are old and very watery ; new and still waterier are Vaughan's *Protectorate*, and others not even worth naming here.

among others. Out of these poor elements the candid imagination must endeavor to shape some not inconceivable scheme and genesis of this very indubitable Fact, the Dismissal of the Long Parliament as best it may. Perhaps if Dryasdust were once well gagged, and his vociferous commentaries all well forgotten, such a feat might not be very impossible for mankind!—

Concerning this Residue, Fag-end, or ‘Rump,’ as it had now got nicknamed, of the Long Parliament, into whose hands the Government of England had been put, we have hitherto, ever since the King’s Death-Warrant, said almost nothing: and in fact there was not much to be said. ‘Statesmen of the Commonwealth’ so called: there wanted not among them men of real mark; brave men, of much talent, of true resolution, and nobleness of aim: but though their title was chief in this Commonwealth, all men may see their real function in it has been subaltern all along. Not in St. Stephen’s and its votings and debates, but in the battle-field, in Oliver Cromwell’s fightings, has the destiny of this Commonwealth decided itself. One unsuccessful Battle, at Preston or at any time since, had probably wrecked it;—one stray bullet hitting the life of a certain man had soon ended this Commonwealth. Parliament, Council of State, they sat like diligent Committees of Ways and Means, in a very wise and provident manner: but the soul of the Commonwealth was at Dunbar, at Worcester, at Tredah: Destiny, there questioned, “Life or death for this Commonwealth?” has answered, “Life yet for a time!”—That is a fact which the candid imagination will have to keep steadily in view.

And now if we practically ask ourselves, What is to become of this small junto of men, somewhat above a Hundred in all,\* hardly above Half-a-hundred the active part of them, who now sit in the chair of authority? the shaping-out of any answer will give rise to considerations. These men have been raised thither by miraculous interpositions of Providence; they may be said to sit there only by continuance of the like. They cannot sit there

\* One notices division-numbers as high as 121, and occasionally lower than even 40. Godwin (iii., 121), ‘by careful scrutiny of the Journals,’ has found that the utmost number of all that had still the right to come ‘could not be less than 150.’

for ever. They are not Kings by birth, these men ; nor in any of them have I discovered qualities as of a very indisputable King by attainment. Of dull Bulstrode, with his lumbering law-pedantries, and stagnant official self-satisfactions, I do not speak ; nor of dusky tough St. John, whose abstruse fanaticisms, crabbed logics, and dark ambitions, issue all, as was very natural, in ‘decided avarice’ at last :—not of these. Harry Marten is a tight little fellow, though of somewhat loose life : his witty words pierce yet, as light-arrows, through the thick oblivious torpor of the generations ; testifying to us very clearly, Here was a right hard-headed, stout-hearted little man, full of sharp fire and cheerful light ; sworn foe of Cant in all its figures ; an indomitable little Roman Pagan if no better : but Harry is not quite one’s King either ; it would have been difficult to be altogether loyal to Harry ! Doubtful too, I think, whether without great effort you could have worshipped even the Younger Vane. A man of endless virtues, says Dryasdust, who is much taken with him, and of endless intellect ;—but you must not very specially ask, How or Where ? Vane was the Friend of Milton : that is almost the only answer that can now be given. A man, one rather finds, of light fibre this Sir Harry Vane. Grant all manner of purity and elevation ; subtle high discourse ; much intellectual and practical dexterity : there is an amiable, devoutly zealous, very pretty man ;—but not a royal man ; alas, no ! On the whole rather a thin man. Whom it is even important to keep strictly subaltern. Whose tendency towards the Abstract, or Temporary-Theoretic, is irresistible : whose hold of the Concrete, in which lies always the Perennial, is by no means that of a giant, or born Practical King ;—whose ‘astonishing subtlety of intellect’ conducts him not to new clearness, but to ever-new abstruseness, wheel within wheel, depth under depth ; marvellous temporary empire of the air ;—wholly vanished now, and without meaning to any mortal. My erudite friend, the astonishing intellect that occupies itself in splitting hairs, and not in twisting some kind of cordage and effectual draught-tackle to take the road with, is not to me the most astonishing of intellects ! And if, as is probable, it get into narrow fanaticisms ; become irrecognisant of the Perennial be cause not dressed in the fashnable Temporary ; become self

secluded, atrabiliar, and perhaps shrill-voiced and spasmodic,—what can you do but get away from it, with a prayer, “The Lord deliver me from thee!” I cannot do with *thee*. I want twisted cordage, steady pulling and a peaceable bass tone of voice; not split hairs, hysterical spasmodics, and treble! Thou amiable, subtle, elevated individual, the Lord deliver me from thee!

These men cannot continue Kings for ever; nor in fact did they in the least design such a thing: only they find a terrible difficulty in getting abdicated. Difficulty very conceivable to us. Some weeks after Pride’s Purge, which may be called the constituting of this remnant of Members into a Parliament and Authority, there had been presented to it, by Fairfax and the Army, what we should now call a Bentham-Sieyes Constitution, what was then called an ‘Agreement of the People,’\* which might well be imperative on honorable members sitting there; whereby it was stipulated for one thing, That this present Parliament should dissolve itself, and give place to another ‘equal Representative of the People,’—in some three months hence; on the 30th of April, namely. The last day of April, 1649: this Parliament was then to have its work finished, and go its ways, giving place to another. Such was our hope.

They did accordingly pass a vote to that effect; fully intending to fulfil the same: but, alas, it was found impossible. How summon a new Parliament, while the Commonwealth is still fighting for its existence? All we can do is to resolve ourselves into Grand Committee, and consider about it. After much consideration, all we can decide is, That we shall go weekly into Grand Committee, and consider farther. Duly every Wednesday we consider, for the space of eleven months and odd: find, more and more, that it is a thing of some considerableness! In brief, when my Lord General returns to us from Worcester, on the 16th of September, 1651, no advance whatever towards a dissolution of ourselves has yet been made. The Wednesday Grand Committees had become a thing like the meeting of Roman augurs, difficult to go through with complete gravity; and so, after the eleventh month, have silently fallen into desuetude. We sit

\* Commons Journals, 20 January, 1648–9; some six weeks after the Purge; ten days before the King’s Death.



here very immovable. We are scornfully called the Rump of a Parliament by certain people: but we have an invincible Oliver to fight for us: we can afford to wait here, and consider to all lengths; and by one name we shall smell as sweet as by another.

I have only to add at present, that on the morrow of my Lord General's reappearance in Parliament, this sleeping question was resuscitated;\* new activity infused into it; some show of progress made; nay, at the end of three months, after much labor and struggle, it was got decided, by a neck-and-neck division,† That the present *is* a fit time for fixing a limit beyond which this Parliament shall not sit. Fix a limit therefore; give us the *non-plus-ultra* of you. Next Parliament-day we do fix a limit, Three years hence, 3d November, 1654; three years of rope still left us: a somewhat wide limit; which, under conceivable contingencies, may perhaps be tightened a little. My honorable friends, you ought really to get on with despatch of this business; and know of a surety that not being, any of you, Kings by birth, nor very indubitably by attainment, you will actually have to go, and even in case of extremity to be shoved and sent!

---

### LETTER CXXV.

At this point the law of dates requires that we introduce Letter Hundred-and-twenty-fifth; though it is as a mere mathematical point, marking its own whereabouts in Oliver's History; and imparts little or nothing that is new to us.

Reverend John Cotton is a man still held in some remembrance among our New England Friends. A painful Preacher, oracular of high Gospels to New England; who in his day was well seen to be connected with the Supreme Powers of this Universe, the word of him being as a live-coal to the hearts of many. He died some years afterwards;—was thought, especially on his deathbed,

\* Commons Journals, 17 September, 1651.

† 49 to 47; Commons Journals, 14 November, 1651: 'Lord General and Lord Chief Justice,' Cromwell and St. John, are Tellers for the Yea

to have manifested gifts even of Prophecy,\*—a thing not conceivable to the human mind that well considers Prophecy and John Cotton. We should say farther, that the Parliament, that Oliver among and before them, had taken solemn anxious thought concerning Propagating of the Gospel in New England; and, among other measures, passed an Act to that end;† not unworthy of attention, were our hurry less. It is probably in special reference to this that Cotton has been addressing Oliver,—founding too on their general relationship as Soldier of the Gospel and Priest of the Gospel, high brother and humble one; appointed, both of them, to fight for it to the death, each with such weapons as were given him.

*For my esteemed Friend, Mr. Cotton, Pastor of the Church at Boston, in New England: These.*

‘London,’ 2d October, 1651.

WORTHY SIR, AND MY CHRISTIAN FRIEND,

I received yours a few days since. It was welcome to me because signed by you, whom I love and honor in the Lord: but more ‘so’ to see some of the same grounds of our Actings stirring in you that are in us, to quiet us in our work, and support us therein. Which hath had great difficulty in Scotland; by reason we have had to do with some who were, I very think, Godly, but through weakness and the subtlety of Satan, ‘were’ involved against the Interests of the Lord and His People.

With what tenderness we have proceeded with such, and that in sincerity, our Papers (which I suppose you have seen) will in part manifest; and I give you some comfortable assurance of ‘the same.’ The Lord hath marvellously appeared even against them.‡ And now again when all the power was devolved into the Scottish King and the Malignant Party,—they invading England, the Lord rained upon them such snares as the Enclosed§ will show. Only the Narrative is short in this, That of their whole Army, when the Narrative was framed, not five men were returned.

Surely, Sir, the Lord is greatly to be feared and to be praised! We

\* Thurloe, i., 565;—in 1653.

† Scobell (27 July, 1649), ii., 66.

‡ From Preston downward.

§ Probably the Official Narrative of Worcester Battle; published about a week ago, as Preamble to the Act appointing a Day of Thanksgiving. 26t; September, 1651; reprinted in Parliamentary History, xx, 59–65.

need your prayers in this as much as ever. How shall we behave ourselves after such mercies? What is the Lord a-doing? What Prophecies are now fulfilling? \* Who is a God like ours? To know His will, to do His will are both of Him.

I took this liberty from business, to salute you thus in a word. Truly I am ready to serve you and the rest of your Brethren and Churches with you. I am a poor weak creature, and not worthy the name of a worm; yet accepted to serve the Lord and His People. Indeed, my dear Friend, between you and me, you know not me,—my weakness, my inordinate passions, my unskilfulness, and every-way unfitness to my work. Yet, yet the Lord, who will have mercy on whom He will, does as you see! Pray for me. Salute all Christian friends though unknown.

I rest,

Your affectionate friend to serve you,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

About this time, for there is no date to it but an evidently vague and erroneous one, was held the famous Conference of Grandees, called by request of Cromwell; of which Bulstrode has given record. Conference held ‘one day’ at Speaker Lenthall’s house in Chancery Lane, to decide among the leading Grandees of the Parliament and Army, How this Nation is to be settled,—the Long Parliament having now resolved on actually dismissing itself by and by. The question is really complex: one would gladly know what the leading Grandees did think of it; even what they found good to say upon it! Unhappily, our learned Bulstrode’s report of this Conference is very dim, very languid: nay Bulstrode, as we have found elsewhere, has a kind of dramatic turn in him, indeed an occasional poetic friskiness; most unexpected, as if the hippopotamus should show a tendency to dance;—which painfully deducts from one’s confidence in Bulstrode’s entire accuracy on such occasions! Here and there the multitudinous Paper Masses of learned Bulstrode do seem to smack a little of the date when he redacted them,—posterior to the Ever-blessed Restoration, not prior to it. We shall, nevertheless, excerpt this dramatic Report of Conference: the reader will be willing to examine, with his own eyes, even as in a glass darkly

\* See Psalm Hundreth-and-tenth.

† From the *New York Evangelist*, of February, 1843

any feature of that time ; and he can remember always that a learned Bulstrode's fat terrene mind, imaging a heroic Cromwell and his affairs, is a very dark glass indeed !

The Speakers in this Conference,—Desborow, Oliver's Brother-in-law ; Whalley, Oliver's Cousin ; fanatical Harrison, tough St. John, my learned Lord Keeper or Commissioner Whitlocke himself,—are mostly known to us. Learned Widdrington, the mellifluous orator, once Lord Commissioner too, and like to be again, though at present 'excused from it owing to scruples,' will by and by become better known to us. A mellifluous, unhealthy, seemingly somewhat scrupulous and timorous man.\* He is of the race of that Widdrington whom we still lament in doleful dumps,—but does not fight upon the stumps like him. There were 'many other Gentlemen' who merely listened.

'Upon the defeat at Worcester,' says Bulstrode vaguely,† Cromwell desired a Meeting with divers Members of Parliament, and some chief Officers of the Army, at the Speaker's house. And a great many being there, he proposed to them, 'that now the old King being dead, and his Son being defeated, he held it necessary to come to a Settlement of the Nation. And in order thereunto, had requested this meeting ; that they together might consider and advise, what was fit to be done, and to be presented to the Parliament.

'SPEAKER. My Lord, this Company were very ready to attend your Excellence, and the business you are pleased to propound to us is very necessary to be considered. God hath given marvellous success to our Forces under your command ; and if we do not improve those mercies to some Settlement, such as may be to God's honor, and the good of this Commonwealth, we shall be very much blameworthy.

'HARRISON. I think that which my Lord General hath propounded, is, to advise as to a Settlement both of our Civil and Spiritual Liberties ; and so, that the mercies which the Lord hath given in to us may not be cast away. How this may be done is the great question.

\* Wood, *in voce*.

† Whitlocke, p. 491 ; the date, 10 December, 1651, is that of the Paper merely, and as applied to the Conference itself cannot be correct

‘WHITLOCKE. It is a great question indeed, and not suddenly to be resolved! Yet it were pity that a meeting of so many able and worthy persons as I see here, should be fruitless.—I should humbly offer, in the first place, whether it be not requisite to be understood in what way this Settlement is desired? Whether of an absolute Republic, or with any mixture of Monarchy.

‘CROMWELL. My Lord Commissioner Whitlocke hath put us upon the right point: and indeed it is my meaning, that we should consider, whether a Republic, or a mixed Monarchical Government will be best to be settled? And if anything Monarchical, then, in whom that power shall be placed?

‘SIR THOMAS WIDDRINGTON. I think a mixed Monarchical Government will be most suitable to the Laws and People of this Nation. And if any Monarchical, I suppose we shall hold it most just to place that power in one of the Sons of the late King.

‘COLONEL FLEETWOOD. I think that the question, whether an absolute Republic, or a mixed Monarchy, be best to be settled in this Nation, will not be very easy to be determined!

‘LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE ST. JOHN. It will be found, that the Government of this Nation, without something of Monarchical power, will be very difficult to be so settled as not to shake the foundation of our Laws, and the Liberties of the People.

‘SPEAKER. It will breed a strange confusion to settle a Government of this Nation without something of Monarchy.

‘COLONEL DESBOROW. I beseech you, my Lord, why may not this, as well as other Nations, be governed in the way of a Republic?

‘WHITLOCKE. The Laws of England are so interwoven with the power and practice of Monarchy, that to settle a Government without something of Monarchy in it, would make so great an alteration in the Proceedings of our Law, that you will scarce have time\* to rectify it, nor can we well foresee the inconveniences which will arise thereby.

‘COLONEL WHALLEY. I do not well understand matters of Law: but it seems to me the best way, Not to have anything of Monarchical power in the Settlement of our Government. And

\* Between this and November, 1654.

if we should resolve upon any, whom have we to pitch upon ? The King's Eldest Son hath been in arms against us, and his Second Son\* likewise is our enemy.

'SIR THOMAS WIDDRINGTON. But the late King's Third Son, the Duke of Gloucester, is still among us ; and too young to have been in arms against us, or infected with the principles of our enemies.

'WHITLOCKE. There may be a day given for the King's Eldest Son,† or for the Duke of York his Brother, to come in to the Parliament. And upon such terms as shall be thought fit, and agreeable both to our Civil and Spiritual liberties, a Settlement may be made with them.

'CROMWELL. That will be a business of more than ordinary difficulty ! But really I think, if it may be done with safety, and preservation of our Rights, both as Englishmen and as Christians, That a Settlement with somewhat of Monarchical power in it would be very effectual.'

Much other discourse there was, says my learned friend ;—but amounting to little. The Lawyers all for a mixed Government, with something of Monarchy in it ; tending to call in one of the King's Sons,—I especially tending that way ; secretly loyal in the worst of times. The Soldiers again were all for a Republic ; thinking they had had enough of the King and his Sons. My Lord General always checked that secret-loyalty of mine, and put off the discussion of the King's Son ; yet did not declare himself for a Republic either ;—was indeed, as my terrene fat mind came at length to image him, merely 'fishing for men's opinions,' and for provender to himself and his appetites, as I in the like case should have been doing !—The Conference broke up, with what of 'fish' in this kind my Lord General had taken, and no other result arrived at.

\* James ; who has fled to the Continent some time ago, 'in women's clothes,' with one Colonel Bamfield, and is getting fast into Papistry and other confusions.

† Charles Stuart : 'a day' for him, upon whose *head* there was, not many weeks ago, a Reward of 1000*l.* ? Did you actually *say* this, my learned friend ? Or merely strive to think, and redact, at an after-period, that you had said it,—that you had thought it, meant to say it, which was virtually all the same, in a case of difficulty !

Many Conferences held by my Lord General have broken up so. Four years ago, he ended one in King Street by playfully 'flinging a cushion' at a certain solid head of our acquaintance, and running down stairs.\* Here too it became ultimately clear to the solid head that he had been 'fishing.' Alas, a Lord General has many Conferences to hold; and in terrene minds, ligneous, oleaginous, and other, images himself in a very strange manner!—The candid imagination, busy to shape out some conceivable Oliver in these Thirty-one months, will accept thankfully the following small indubitabilities, or glimpses of definite events.

*December 8th, 1651.* In the beginning of December (Whitlocke dates it 8th December) came heavy tidings over from Ireland, dark and heavy in the house of Oliver especially: that Deputy Ireton, worn out with sleepless Irish services, had caught an inflammatory fever, and suddenly died. Fell sick on the 16th of November, 1651; died, at Limerick, on the 26th.† The reader remembers Bridget Ireton, the young wife at Cornbury:‡ she is now Widow Ireton; a sorrowful bereaved woman. One brave heart and subtle-working brain has ended: to the regret of all the brave. A man able with his pen and his sword; 'very stiff in his ways.'

Dryasdust, who much loves the brave Ireton in a rather blind way, intimates that Ireton's 'stern virtue' would probably have held Cromwell in awe; that had Ireton lived, there had probably been no sacrilege against the Constitution on Oliver's part. A probability of almost no weight, my erudite friend. The 'stern virtue' of Ireton was not sterner on occasion than that of Oliver; the probabilities of Ireton's disapproving what Oliver did, in the case alluded to, are very small, resting on solid Ludlow mainly; and as to those of Ireton's holding Cromwell 'in awe,' in this or in any matter he had himself decided to do, I think we may safely reckon them at Zero, my erudite friend!

Lambert, now in Scotland, was appointed Deputy in Ireton's room; and meant to go; but did not. Some say the Widow

\* Ludlow, i., 240

† Wood, iii., 390 Whitlocke, p. 491. ‡ Letter XXIII., vol. i. p. 201

Ireton, irritated that the beautiful and showy Lady Lambert should *already* 'take precedence of her in St. James's Park,' frustrated the scheme: what we find certain is, That Lambert did not go, that Fleetwood went; and farther, that the Widow Ireton in due time became Wife of the Widower Fleetwood: the rest hangs vague in the head of zealous Mrs. Hutchinson, solid Ludlow, and empty Rumor.\* Ludlow, already on the spot, does the Irish duties in the interim. Ireton has solemn Public Funeral in England: copious monies settled on his Widow and Family: all honors paid to him, for his own sake and his Father-in-law's.

*March 25th, 1652.* Above two years ago, when this Rump Parliament was in the flush of youthful vigor, it decided on reforming the Laws of England, and appointed a working Committee for that object, our learned friend Bulstrode one of them. Which working Committee finding the job heavy, gradually languished; and after some Acts for having Law-proceedings transacted in the English tongue, and for other improvements of the like magnitude, died into comfortable sleep. On my Lord General's return from Worcester, it had been poked up again; and, now rubbing its eyes, set to work in good earnest; got a subsidiary Committee appointed, of Twenty-one persons not members of this House at all, To say and suggest what improvements were really wanted: such improvements they the working Committee would then, with all the readiness in life, effectuate and introduce in the shape of specific Acts. Accordingly, on March 25th, first day of the new year 1652, learned Bulstrode, in the name of this working Committee, reports that the subsidiary Committee has suggested a variety of things; among others some improvement in our method of Transferring Property,—of enabling poor John Doe, who finds at present a terrible difficulty in doing it, to inform Richard Roe, "I John Doe do, in very fact, sell to thee Richard Roe, such and such a Property,—according to the usual human meaning of the word *sale*; and it is hereby, let me again assure thee, indisputably *SOLD* to thee Richard, by me John:" which, my learned friend thinks, might really be an

\* Hutchinson's Memoirs (London, 1806), p. 195; Ludlow, pp. 414, 449 450, &c



improvement. To which end he will introduce an Act: nay there shall farther be an Act for the 'Registry of Deeds in each County,'—if it please Heaven. 'Neglect to register your Sale of Land in this promised County-Register within a given time,' enacts the learned Bulstrode, 'such Sale shall be void. Be exact in registering it, the Land shall not be subject to any incumbrance.' Incumbrance: yes, but what is 'incumbrance?' asks all the working Committee, with wide eyes, when they come actually to sit upon this Bill of Registry, and to hatch it into some kind of perfection: What is 'incumbrance?' No mortal can tell. They sit debating it, painfully sifting it, 'for three months;'\* three months by Booker's Almanac, and the Zodiac Horologe: March violets have become June roses; and still they debate what 'incumbrance' is;—and indeed, I think, could never fix it at all; and are perhaps debating it, if so doomed, in some twilight foggy section of Dante's Nether World, to all Eternity, at this hour!—Are not these a set of men likely to reform English Law? Likely these to strip the accumulated owl-droppings and foul guano-mountains from your rock-island, and lay the reality bare,—in the course of Eternities! The wish waxes livelier in Colonel Pride that he could see a certain addition made to the Scots Colors hung in Westminster Hall yonder.

I add only, for the sake of Chronology that on the fourth day after this appearance of Bulstrode as a Law-reformer, occurred the famous *Black Monday*; fearfulest eclipse of the Sun ever seen by mankind. Came on about nine in the morning; darker and darker; ploughmen unyoked their teams, stars came out, birds sorrowfully chirping took to roost, men in amazement to prayers: a day of much obscurity; *Black Monday*, or *Mirk Monday*; 29th March, 1652.† Much noised of by Lilly, Booker, and the buzzard Astrologer tribe. Betokening somewhat? Belike that Bulstrode and this Parliament will, in the way of Law-reform and otherwise, make a Practical Gospel, or real Reign of God, in this England?—

*July 9th, 1652.* A great external fact which, no doubt, has

\* Ludlow, i., 430; Parliamentary History, xx., 84; Commons Journals, ii., 67, 110, &c.

† Balfour, iv., 349; Law's Memorials, p. 6.

its effect on all internal movements, is the War with the Dutch. The Dutch, ever since our Death-Warrant to Charles First, have looked askance at the New Commonwealth, which wished to stand well with them ; and have accumulated offence on offence against it. Ambassador Dorislaus was assassinated in their country ; Charles Second was entertained there ; evasive slow answers were given to tough St. John, who went over as new Ambassador : to which St. John responding with great directness, in a proud, brief and very emphatic manner, took his leave, and came home again. Came home again ; and passed the celebrated Navigation Act,\* forbidding that any goods should be imported into England except either in English ships or in ships of the country where the goods were produced. Thereby terribly maiming the 'Carrying Trade of the Dutch ;' and indeed, as the issue proved, depressing the Dutch Maritime Interest not a little, and proportionally elevating that of England. Embassies in consequence, from their irritated High Mightinesses ; sea-fightings in consequence ; and much negotiating, apologising, and bickering mounting ever higher ;—which at length, at the date above given, issues in declared War. Dutch War : cannonadings and fierce sea-fight in the narrow seas ; land-soldiers drafted to fight on shipboard ; and land-officers, Blake, Dean, Monk, who became very famous sea-officers ; Blake a thrice-famous one ;—poor Dean lost his life in this business. They doggedly beat the Dutch, and again beat them : their best Van Tromps and De Ruyters could not stand these terrible Puritan Sailors and Gunners. The Dutch gradually grew tame. The public mind, occupied with sea-fights and sea-victories, finds again that the New Representative must be patiently waited for ; that this is not a time for turning out the old Representative, which has so many affairs on its hands.

But the Dutch War brings another consequence in the train of it : renewed severity against Delinquents. The necessities of cash for this War are great : indeed the grand business of Parliament at present seems to be that of Finance,—finding of sinews

\* Introduced, 5 August, 1651 ; passed 9 October, 1651 : given in Scobell, *id.*, 176.

for such a War. Any remnants of Royal lands, of Dean-and-Chapter lands,—sell them by rigorous auction: the very lead of the Cathedrals one is tempted to sell; nay almost the Cathedrals themselves,\* if any one would buy them. The necessities of the Finance Department are extreme. Money, money: our Blakes and Monks, in deadly wrestle with the Dutch, must have money!

Estates of Delinquents, one of the readiest resources from of old, cannot, in these circumstances, be forgotten. Search out Delinquents; in every County make stringent inquest after them! Many, in past years, have made light settlements with lax Committee-men; neighbors, not without pity for them. Many of minor sort have been overlooked altogether. Bring them up, every Delinquent of them; up hither to the Rhadamanthus-bar of Goldsmiths' Hall and Haberdashers' Hall; sift them, search them; riddle the last due sixpence out of them. The Commons Journals of these months have formidable ell-long Lists of Delinquents; List after List; who shall, on rigorous terms, be ordered to compound. Poor unknown Royalist Squires, from various quarters of England; whose names and surnames excite now no notion in us except that of No. 1 and No. 2: my Lord General has seen them 'crowding by thirties and forties in a morning'† about these Haberdasher-Grocer Halls of Doom, with haggard expression of countenance; soliciting, from what austere official person they can get a word of, if not mercy, yet at least swift judgment. In a way which affected my Lord General's feelings. We have now the third year of peace in our borders: is this what you call Settlement of the Nation?

---

#### LETTER CXXVI.

THE following Letter 'to my honored Friend Mr. Hungerford the Elder,' which at any rate by order of time introduces itself here, has probably some reference to these Delinquent Businesses. There were three Hungerfords in Parliament, all Wiltshire peo-

\* Parliamentary History, xx., 90.

† Speech, *postea*.

ple; two of them Puritans, but purged out by Pride: Henry, Esq., 'recruiter' for Bedwin since 1646; Sir Edward, recruiter for Chippenham in like manner. The third, Anthony Hungerford, original Member for Malmesbury, declared for the King in 1642; was of course disabled, and is and continues a Delinquent. One might guess, but nobody can know, that this Note was perhaps addressed to the first of these Hungerfords, in reference to the affairs of the last. Or as probably, it might refer to Sir Edward's affairs; who is now deceased, and has a Widow soliciting.\* A hasty Note, on some 'business' now unknown, about which an unknown 'gentleman' has been making inquiry and negotiation; for the answer to which an unknown 'servant' of some 'Mr. Hungerford the Elder' is waiting in the hall of Oliver's House,—the Cockpit, I believe, at this date:—in such faintly luminous state, revealing little save its own existence, must this small Document be left.

*For my honored Friend, Mr. Hungerford the Elder, at his  
House: These.*

'London,' 30th July, 1652,

SIR,

I am very sorry my occasions will not permit me to return† to you as I would. I have not yet fully spoken with the Gentleman I sent to wait upon you; when I shall do it, I shall be enabled to be more particular. Being unwilling to detain your servant any longer,—with my service to your Lady and Family, I take my leave, and rest,

Your affectionate servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

It is a sad reflection with my Lord General, in this Hungerford and other businesses, that the mere justice of any matter will so little avail a man in Parliament; you can make no way till you have got up some party on the subject there!§ In fact red-tape has, to a lamentable extent, tied up the souls of men in this Parliament of the Commonwealth of England. They are becoming hacks of office; a savor of Godliness still on their lips

\* Commons Journals, vii., 260 (18 February, 1652-3).

† reply.

‡ Collinson's History of Somersetshire, iii., 357 (Note).

§ Speech, *postea*.

but seemingly not much deeper with some of them. I begin to have a suspicion *they* are no Parliament! If the Commonwealth of England had not still her Army Parliament, rigorous devout Council of Officers, men in right life-and-death earnest, who have spent their blood in this Cause, who in case of need can assemble and act again,—what would become of the Commonwealth of England? Earnest persons, from this quarter and that, make petition to the Lord General and Officers, That they would be pleased to take the matter in hand, and see right done. To which the Lord General and Officers answer always: Wait, be patient; the Parliament itself will yet do it.

What the 'state of the Gospel in Wales' is, in Wales or elsewhere, I cannot with any accuracy ascertain; but see well that this Parliament has shown no zeal that way; has shackled rather, and tied up with its sorrowful red-tape the movements of men that had any zeal.\* Lamentable enough. The light of the Everlasting Truth was kindled; and you do not fan the sacred flame, you consider *it* a thing which may be left to itself! Unhappy: and for what did we fight then, and wrestle with our souls and our bodies as in strong agony; besieging Heaven with our prayers, and Earth and its Strengths, from Naseby on to Worcester, with our pikes and cannon? Was it to put an official Junto of some Three-score Persons into the high saddle in England; and say, Ride ye? They would need to be Three-score beautifuller men! Our blood shed like water, our brethren's bones whitening a hundred fields; Tredah Storm, Dunbar death-agony, and God's voice from the battle-whirlwind: did they mean no more but you!—My Lord General urges us always to be patient: Patience, the Parliament itself will yet do it. That is what we shall see!—

On the whole, it must be seriously owned by every reader, this present Fag-end of a Parliament of England has failed altogether to realize the high dream of those old Puritan hearts. 'Incumbance,' it appears, cannot in the abstract be defined: but if you would know in the concrete what it is, look there! The thing we fought for, and gained as if by miracle, it is ours this long while

\* Speech, *postea*.

and yet not ours ; within grasp of us, it lies there unattainable, enchanted under Parliamentary formulas. Enemies are swept away ; extinguished as in the brightness of the Lord : and no Divine Kingdom, and no clear incipency of such, has yet in any measure come !—These are sorrowful reflections.

For, alas, such high dream is difficult to realize ! Not the Stuart Dynasty alone that opposes it ; all the Dynasties of the Devil, the whole perversions of this poor Earth, without us and within us, oppose it.—Yea, answers with a sigh the heart of my Lord General : Yea, it is difficult, and thrice difficult ;—and yet wo to us, if we do not with our whole soul try it, make some clear beginning of it ; if we sit defining ‘incumbrances’ instead of bending every muscle to the wheel that is encumbered ! Who art thou that standest still ; that having put to thy hand, turnest back ? In these years of miracle in England, were there not great things, as if by divine voices, audibly promised ? ‘The Lord said unto my Lord !’—And is it all to end here ? In Juntos of three-score ; in Grocers-Hall Committees, in red-tape, and official shakings of the head ?—

My Lord General, are there no voices, dumb voices from the depths of poor England’s heart, that address themselves to you, even you ? My Lord General hears voices ; and would fain distinguish and discriminate them. Which, in all these, is the God’s voice ? That were the one to follow. My Lord General, I think has many meditations, of a very mixed, and some of a very abstruse nature, in these months.

*August 13th, 1652.* This day came a ‘Petition from the Officers of my Lord General’s Army,’ which a little alarmed us. Petition craving for some real reform of the Law ; some real attempt towards setting up a Gospel Ministry in England ; real and general ousting of scandalous, incompetent and plainly diabolic persons from all offices of Church and State ; real beginning, in short, of a reign of Gospel Truth in this England ;—and for one thing, a swift progress in that most slow-going Bill for a New Representative ; an actual ending of this present Fag-end of a Parliament, which has now sat very long ! So, in most respectful language, prays this Petition\* of the Officers. Petition prefaced,

\* Whitlocke, p, 516.

they say, with earnest prayer to God : that was the preface or prologue they gave it ;—what kind of epilogue they might be prepared to give it, one does not learn : but the men carry swords at their sides ; and we have known them !—‘ Many thought this kind of Petition dangerous ; and counselled my Lord General to put a stop to the like : but he seemed to make light of it,’ says Bulstrode. In fact, my Lord General does not disapprove of it : my Lord General, after much abstruse meditation, has decided on putting himself at the head of it. He, and a serious minority in Parliament, and in England at large, think with themselves, once more, If it were not for this Army Parliament, what would become of us ?—Speaker Lenthall ‘ thanked ’ these Officers, with a smile which I think must have been of the grimmest, like that produced by eating thistles.

*September 14th, 1652.* The somnolent slow-going Bill for a New Representative, which has slept much, and now and then pretended to move a little, for long years past, is resuscitated by this Petition ; comes out, rubbing its eyes, disposed for decided activity ;—and in fact sleeps no more ; cannot think of sleep any more, the noise round it waxing ever louder. Settle how your Representative shall be : for be it now actually must !

This Bill, which has slept and waked so long, does not sleep again : but, How to settle the conditions of the New Representative ?—there is a question ! My Lord General will have good security against ‘ the Presbyterial Party ’ that they come not into power again ; good security against the red-tape Party, that they sit not for three months defining an incumbrance again. How shall we settle the New Representative ;—on the whole, what or how shall we do ? For the old stagnancy is verily broken up : these petitioning Army Officers, with all the earnest armed and unarmed men of England in the rear of them, have verily torn us from our moorings : and we do go adrift,—with questionable havens, on starboard and larboard, very difficult of entrance ; with Mahlstroms and Niagaras very patent right ahead ! We are become to mankind a Rump Parliament ; sit here we cannot much longer ; and we know not what to do !

‘ During the month of October, some ten or twelve conferences took place,’—private conferences between the Army Officers and

the Leaders of the Parliament : wherein nothing could be agreed upon. Difficult to settle the New Representative ; impossible for this Old Misrepresentative or Rump to continue ! What shall or can be done ? Summon, without popular intervention, by earnest selection on your and our part, a Body of godly wise Men, the Best and Wisest we can find in England : to them entrust the whole question ; and do you abdicate, and depart straightway, say the Officers. Forty good Men, or a Hundred-and-forty ; choose them well,—they will define an incumbrance in less than three months, we may hope, and tell us what to do ! Such is the notion of the Army Officers, and my Lord General ; a kind of Puritan ‘Convention of the Notables,’ so the French would call it : to which the Parliament Party see insuperable objections. What other remedy, then ? The Parliament Party mournfully insinuate that there is no remedy, except,—except continuance of the present Rump ! \*

*November 7th, 1652.* ‘About this time,’ prior or posterior to it, while such conferences and abstruse considerations are in progress, my Lord General, walking once in St. James’s Park, beckons the learned Bulstrode, who is also there ; strolls gradually aside with him, and begins one of the most important Dialogues. Whereof learned Bulstrode has preserved some record ; which is unfortunately much dimmed by just suspicion of dramaturgy on the part of Bulstrode ; and shall not be excerpted by us here. It tends conspicuously to show, *first*, how Cromwell already entertained most alarming notions of ‘making oneself a King,’ and even wore them pinned on his sleeve, for the inspection of the learned ; and *secondly*, how Bulstrode, a secret royalist in the worst of times, advised him by no means to think of that, but to call in Charles Stuart,—who had an immense popularity among the Powerful in England just then ! ‘My Lord General did not in words express any anger, but only by looks and carriage ; and turned aside from me to other company,’—as this Editor, in quest of certainty and insight, and not of doubt and fat drowsy pedantry, will now also do !

*November, 1652—March, 1653.* The Dutch War prospers and

\* Speech *postea*.



has prospered, Blake and Monk beating the Dutch in tough sea-fights ; Delinquents, monthly Assessments, and the lead of Cathedrals furnishing the sinews : the Dutch are about sending Ambassadors to treat of Peace. With home affairs, again, it goes not so well. Through winter, through spring, this Bill for a New Representative goes along in its slow gestation ; reappearing Wednesday after Wednesday ; painfully struggling to take a shape that shall fit both parties, Parliament Grandees and Army Grandees both at once. A thing difficult ; a thing impossible ! Parliament Grandees, now become a contemptible Rump, wish they could grow into a Reputable Full Parliament again, and have the Government and the Governing Persons go on as they are now doing : this naturally is their wish. Naturally too the Army Party's wish is the reverse of this : that a Full free Parliament, with safety to the Governing Interests, and due subordination of the Presbyterian and other factions, should assemble ; but also that the present Governing Persons, with their red-tape habits unable to define an incumbrance in three months, should for most part be out of it. Impossible to shape a Bill that will fit both of these Parties : Tom Thumb and the Irish Giant, you cannot, by the art of Parliamentary tailoring, clip out a coat that will fit them both ! We can fancy 'conferences,' considerations deep and almost awful ; my Lord General looking forward to possibilities that fill even him with fear. Puritan Notables they will not have : these present Governing men are clear against that : not Puritan Notables ;—and if they themselves, by this New Bill or otherwise, insist on staying there, what is to become of them ?

Dryasdust laments that this invaluable Bill, now in process of gestation, is altogether lost to Posterity ; no copy even of itself, much less any record of the conferences, debates, or contemporaneous considerations on it, attainable even in fractions by mankind. Much is lost, my erudite friend ;—and we must console ourselves ! The substantial essence of the Bill came out afterwards into full practice, in Oliver's own Parliaments. The present form of the Bill, I do clearly perceive, had one clause, That all the Members of this present Rump should continue to sit without re-election ; and still better, another, That they should be a general Election Committee, and have power to say to every new

Member, "Thou art dangerous, thou shalt not enter; go!" This clearly in the Bill: and not less clearly that the Lord General and Army Party would in nowise have a Bill with this in it,—or indeed have any Bill that was to be the old story over again under a new name. So much, on good evidence, is very clear to me;—the rest, which is all obliterated, becomes not inconceivable. Cost what it may cost, this Rump Parliament, which has by its conduct abundantly 'defined what an incumbrance is,' shall go about its business. Terrible Voices, supernal and other, have said it, awfully enough, in the hearts of some men! Neither under its own shabby figure, nor under another more plausible, shall it guide the Divine Mercies and Miraculous Affairs of this Nation any farther.

The last of all the conferences was held at my Lord General's house in Whitehall, on Tuesday evening, 19th of April, 1653. Above twenty leading Members of Parliament present, and many Officers. Conference of which we shall have some passing glimpse from a sure hand by and by.\* Conference which came to nothing, as all the others had done. Your Bill with these clauses and visible tendencies in it cannot pass, says the one party: Your Scheme of Puritan Notables seems full of danger, says the other. What remedy? "No remedy except,—except that you leave us to sit as we are, for a while yet!" suggest the Official persons.—"In no wise!" answer the Officers, with a vehemence of look and tone, which my Lord General, seemingly anxious to do it, cannot repress. You must not, and cannot sit longer, say the Officers;—and their look says even, Shall not. Bulstrode went home to Chelsea, very late, with the tears in his big dull eyes, at thought of the courses men were getting into. Bulstrode and Widdrington were the most eager for sitting; Chief Justice St. John, strange thing in a Constitutional gentleman, declared that there could be no sitting for us any longer. We parted, able to settle on nothing, except the engagement to meet here again to-morrow morning, and to leave the Bill asleep till something were settled on. 'A leading person,' Sir Harry Vane or another, undertook that nothing should be done in it till then.

\* Speech, *postea*; see also Whitlocke, p. 529.

*Wednesday, 20th April, 1653.* My Lord General accordingly is in his reception-room this morning, 'in plain black clothes and grey worsted stockings;' he, with many Officers: but few Members have yet come, though punctual Bulstrode and certain others are there. Some waiting; some impatience that the Members would come. The Members do not come; instead of Members, comes a notice that they are busy getting on with their Bill in the House; hurrying it double-quick through all the stages. Possible? New message that it will be Law in a little while, if no interposition take place! Bulstrode hastens off to the House: my Lord General, at first incredulous, does also now hasten off,—nay orders that a Company of Musketeers of his own regiment attend him. Hastens off, with a very high expression of countenance, I think;—saying or feeling: Who would have believed it of them? "It is not honest; yea, it is contrary to common honesty!"—My Lord General, the big hour is come!

Young Colonel Sidney, the celebrated Algernon, sat in the House this morning; a House of some Fifty-three.\* Algernon has left distinct note of the affair; less distinct we have from Bulstrode, who was also there, who seems in some points to be even wilfully wrong. Solid Ludlow was far off in Ireland, but gathered many details in after-years; and faithfully wrote them down in the unappeasable indignation of his heart. Combining these three originals, we have, after various perusals and collations and considerations, obtained the following authentic, moderately conceivable account:†

'The Parliament sitting as usual, and being in debate upon the Bill with the amendments, which it was thought would have been passed that day, the Lord General Cromwell came into the House, clad in plain black clothes and grey worsted stockings, and sat down, as he used to do, in an ordinary place.' For some time he listens to this interesting debate on the Bill; beckoning once to Harrison, who came over to him, and answered dubitat-

\* That is Cromwell's number; Ludlow, far distant, and not creditable on this occasion, says 'Eighty or a Hundred.'

† Blencowe's Sidney Papers (London, 1825), pp. 139-41; Whitlocke, p. 529; Ludlow, ii., 456;—the last two are reprinted in *Parliamentary History*, xx., 128.

ingly. Whereupon the Lord General sat still, for about a quarter of an hour longer. But now the question being to be put, That this Bill do now pass, he beckons again to Harrison, says, " 'This is the time ; I must do it !' "—and so 'rose up, put off his hat, and spake. At the first, and for a good while, he spake to the commendation of the Parliament for their pains and care of the public good ; but afterwards he changed his style, told them of their injustice, delays of justice, self-interest, and other faults,'—rising higher and higher, into a very aggravated style indeed. An honorable Member, Sir Peter Wentworth by name, not known to my readers; and by me better known than trusted, rises to order, as we phrase it ; says, "It is a strange language this ; unusual within the walls of Parliament this ! And from a trusted servant too ; and one whom we have so highly honored ; and one"—" 'Come, come !' " exclaims my Lord General in a very high key, "we have had enough of this,"—and in fact my Lord General now blazing all up into clear conflagration, exclaims, " 'I will put an end to your prating,' " and steps forth into the floor of the House, and 'clapping on his hat,' and occasionally 'stamping the floor with his feet,' begins a discourse which no man can report ! He says—Heavens ! he is heard saying : " 'It is not fit that you should sit here any longer !' You have sat too long here for any good you have been doing lately. 'You shall now give place to better men !—Call them in !' " adds he briefly, to Harrison, in word of command : and 'some twenty or thirty' grim musketeers enter, with bullets in their snaphances ; grimly prompt for orders ; and stand in some attitude of Carry-arms there. Veteran men : men of might and men of war, their faces are as the faces of lions, and their feet are swift as the roes upon the mountains ;—not beautiful to nonorable gentlemen at this moment !

"You call yourselves a Parliament," continues my Lord General in clear blaze of conflagration : " 'You are no Parliament : I say you are no Parliament ! Some of you are drunkards,' " and his eye flashes on poor Mr. Chaloner, an official man of some value, addicted to the bottle ; " 'some of you are ——' " and he glares into Harry Marten, and the poor Sir Peter who rose to order, lewd livers both ; "living in open contempt of God's

Commandments. Following your own greedy appetites, and the Devil's Commandments. 'Corrupt unjust persons,' and here I think he glanced 'at Sir Bulstrode Whitlocke, one of the Commissioners of the Great Seal, giving him and others very sharp language, though he named them not : ' "Corrupt unjust persons ; scandalous to the profession of the Gospel : ' how can you be a Parliament for God's People ? Depart, I say ; and let us have done with you. In the name of God,—go !"

The House is of course all on its feet,—uncertain almost whether not on its head : such a scene as was never seen before in any House of Commons. History reports with a shudder that my Lord General, lifting the sacred Mace itself, said, "What shall we do with this bauble ? Take it away !"—and gave it to a musketeer. And now,—“Fetch him down !” says he to Harrison, flashing on the Speaker. Speaker Lenthall, more an ancient Roman than anything else, declares, He will not come till forced. “Sir,” said Harrison, “I will lend you a hand ;” on which Speaker Lenthall came down, and gloomily vanished. They all vanished ; flooding gloomily clamorously out, to their ulterior businesses, and respective places of abode : the Long Parliament is dissolved ! “‘It's you that have forced me to this,’” exclaims my Lord General : “‘I have sought the Lord night and day, that He would rather slay me than put me upon the doing of this work : ’” ‘At their going out, some say the Lord General said to young Sir Harry Vane, calling him by his name, That *he* might have prevented this ; but that he was a juggler, and had not common honesty.’ “‘O Sir Harry Vane,’ thou with thy subtle casuistries and abstruse hair-splittings, thou art other than a good one, I think ! ‘The Lord deliver me from thee, Sir Harry Vane ! ’” ‘All being gone out, the door of the House was locked, and the Key with the Mace, as I heard, was carried away by Colonel Otley ;’—and it is all over, and the unspeakable Catastrophe has come, and remains.

Such was the destructive wrath of my Lord General Cromwell against the Nominal Rump Parliament of England. Wrath which innumerable mortals since have accounted extremely diabolic ; which some now begin to account partly divine. Divine

or diabolic, it is an indisputable fact ; left for the commentaries of men. The Rump Parliament has gone its ways ;—and truly, except it be in their own, I know not in what eyes are tears at their departure. They went very softly, softly as a Dream, say all witnesses. “ We did not hear a dog bark at their going !” asserts my Lord General elsewhere.

It is said my Lord General did not, on his entrance into the House, contemplate quite as a certainty this strong measure ; but it came upon him like an irresistible impulse, or inspiration, as he heard their Parliamentary eloquence proceed. “ Perceiving the spirit of God so strong upon me, I would no longer consult flesh and blood.”\* He has done it, at all events ; and is responsible for the results it may have. A responsibility which he, as well as most of us, knows to be awful ; but he fancies it was in answer to the English Nation and to the Maker of the English Nation and of him ; and he will do the best he may with it.

---

### LETTER CXXVII.

WE have to add here an Official Letter, of small significance in itself, but curious for its date, the Saturday after this great Transaction, and for the other indications it gives. Except the Lord General, ‘ Commander-in-chief of all the Forces raised and to be raised,’ there is for the moment no Authority very clearly on foot in England ;—though Judges, and all manner of Authorities whatsoever do, after some little preliminary parleying, consent to go on as before.

The Draining of the Fens had been resumed under better auspices when the War ended ;† and a new Company of Adventurers, among whom Oliver himself is one, are vigorously proceeding with a New Bedford Level,—the same that yet continues. A ‘ Petition’ of theirs, addressed ‘ To the Lord General,’ in these hasty hours, sets forth that upon the ‘ 20th of this instant April’ (exactly while Oliver was turning out the Parliament !), ‘ about

\* Godwin, iii., 456 (who cites Echard ; not much of an authority in such matters).

† Act for that object (Scobell, ii., 33), 29 May, 1649.

a Hundred-and-fifty persons,' from the Towns of Swaffham and Botsham,—which Towns had petitioned about certain rights of theirs, and got clear promise of redress in fit time,—did 'tumultuously assemble,' to seek redress for themselves; did 'by force expel your Petitioners' workmen from their diking and working in the said Fens;' did tumble in again 'the dikes by them made;' and in fine did peremptorily signify that if they or any other came again to dike in these Fens, it would be worse for them. 'The evil effects' of which—are very apparent indeed. Whereupon this Official Letter, or Warrant; written doubtless in the press of much other business.'

*'To Mr. Parker, Agent for the Company of Adventurers for Draining the Great Level of the Fens.'*

'Whitehall,' 23d April, 1653.

MR. PARKER,

I hear some unruly persons have lately committed great outrages in Cambridgeshire, about Swaffham and Botsham, in throwing down the works making by the Adventurers, and menacing those they employ thereabout. Wherefore I desire you to send one of my Troops, with a Captain, who may by all means persuade the people to quiet, by letting them know, They must not riotously do anything, for that must not be suffered: but 'that' if there be any wrong done by the Adventurers,—upon complaint, such course shall be taken as appertains to justice, and right will be done. I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

The *Declaration of the Lord General and his Council of Officers*,† which came out on the Friday following the grand Catastrophe, does not seem to be of Oliver's composition: it is a Narrative of calm pious tone, of considerable length; promises, as a second Declaration does still more explicitly,‡ a Real Assembly of the Puritan Notables;—and on the whole can be imagined by the reader; nay we shall hear the entire substance of it, from Oliver's own mouth, before long. These Declarations and other

\* From the Records of the Fen Office, in Sergeants' Inn, London; communicated, with other Papers relating thereto, by Samuel Wells, Esq.

† 22 April, Cromwelliana, p. 120.

‡ 30 April, *ibid.*, p. 122.

details we omit. Conceive that all manner of Authorities, with or without some little preambling, agree to go on as heretofore ; that adherences arrive from Land-Generals and Sea-Generals by return of post ; that the old Council of State having vanished with its Mother, a new Interim Council of State, with ‘ Oliver Cromwell Captain General’ at the head of it, answers equally well ; in a word, that all people are looking eagerly forward to these same ‘ Known Persons, Men fearing God, and of approved Integrity,’ who are now to be got together from all quarters of England, to say what *shall* be done with this Commonwealth,—whom there is now no Fag-end of a corrupt Parliament to prevent just men from choosing with their best ability. Conceive all this, and read the following

## SUMMONS.

To ————.

FORASMUCH as, upon the dissolution of the late Parliament, it became necessary, that the peace, safety and good government of this Commonwealth should be provided for : And in order thereunto, divers Persons fearing God, and of approved Fidelity and Honesty, are, by myself with the advice of my Council of Officers, nominated ; to whom the great charge and trust of so weighty affairs is to be committed : And having good-assurance of your love to, and courage for, God and the interest of His Cause, and ‘ that ’ of the good People of this Commonwealth :

I, Oliver Cromwell, Captain General and Commander-in-chief of all the Armies and Forces raised and to be raised within this Commonwealth, do hereby summon and require You, ————, being one of the Persons nominated,—Personally to be and appear at the Council-Chamber, commonly known or called by the name of the Council-Chamber at Whitehall, within the City of Westminster, upon the Fourth day of July next ensuing the date hereof ; Then and there to take upon you the said Trust : unto which you are hereby called, and appointed to serve as a Member for the County of ———. And hereof you are not to fail.

Given under my hand and seal the 6th day of June, 1653.

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 125).



## SPEECH FIRST.

A HUNDRED-AND-FORTY of these Summonses were issued ; and of all the Parties so summoned, ‘only two’ did not attend. Disconsolate Bulstrode says, ‘Many of this Assembly being persons of fortune and knowledge, it was much wondered at by some that they would at this Summons, and from such hands, take upon them the Supreme Authority of this Nation ; considering how little right Cromwell and his Officers had to give it, or those Gentlemen to take it.’\* My disconsolate friend, it is a sign that Puritan England in general accepts this action of Cromwell and his Officers, and thanks them for it, in such a case of extremity ; saying as audibly as the means permitted : Yea, we did wish it so ! Rather mournful to the disconsolate official mind !—Lord Clarendon again, writing with much latitude, has characterized this Convention as containing in it ‘divers Gentlemen who had estates, and such a proportion of credit’ in the world as might give some color to the business, but consisting on the whole of a very miserable beggarly sort of persons, acquainted with nothing but the art of praying ; ‘artificers of the meanest trades,’ if they even had any trade :—all which the reader shall, if he please, add to the general *guano*-mountains, and pass on not regarding.

The undeniable fact is, these men were, as Whitlocke intimates, a quite reputable Assembly ; got together by anxious ‘consultation of the godly Clergy’ and chief Puritan lights in their respective Counties ; not without much earnest revision, and solemn consideration in all kinds, on the part of men adequate enough for such a work, and desirous enough to do it well. The List of the Assembly exists ;† not yet entirely gone dark for

\* Whitlocke, p. 534.

† Somers’ Tracts, i., 216

mankind. A fair proportion of them still recognizable to mankind. Actual Peers one or two: founders of Peerage Families, two or three, which still exist among us,—Colonel Edward Montague, Colonel Charles Howard, Anthony Ashley Cooper. And better than King's Peers, certain Peers of Nature; whom if not the King and his pasteboard Norroys have had the luck to make Peers of, the living heart of England has since raised to the Peerage, and means to keep there,—Colonel Robert Blake the Sea-King, for one. 'Known persons,' I do think; 'of approved integrity, men fearing God;' and perhaps not entirely destitute of sense any one of them! Truly it seems rather a distinguished Parliament,—even though Mr. Praisegod Barbone, 'the Leather-merchant in Fleet-street,' be, as all mortals must admit, a member of it. The fault, I hope, is forgivable? Praisegod, though he deals in leather, and has a name which can be misspelt, one discerns to be the son of pious parents; to be himself a man of piety, of understanding and weight,—and even of considerable private capital, my witty flunkey friends! We will leave Praisegod to do the best he can, I think.—And old Francis Rouse is here from Devonshire; once member for Truro; Provost of Eton College; whom by and by they make Speaker; whose psalms the Northern Kirks still sing. Richard Mayor of Hursley is there, and even idle Dick Norton; Alexander Jaffray of Aberdeen, Laird Swinton of the College of Justice in Edinburgh; Alderman Ireton, brother of the late Lord Deputy, colleague of Praisegod in London. In fact, a real Assembly of the Notables in Puritan England; a Parliament, *Parliamentum*, or real *Speaking-Apparatus* for the now dominant Interest in England, as exact as could well be got,—much more exact, I suppose, than any ballot-box, free hustings or ale-barrel election usually yields.

Such is the Assembly called the Little Parliament, and wittily *Barebones's Parliament*; which meets on the 4th of July. Their witty name survives; but their history is gone all dark; and no man, for the present, has in his head or in his heart the faintest intimation of what they did or what they aimed to do. They are very dark to us; and will never be illuminated much! Here is one glance of them face to face; here in this Speech of Oliver's—if we can read it, and listen along with them to it. There is

this one glance ; and for six generations, we may say, in the English mind there has not been another.

Listening from a distance of two Centuries, across the Death-chasms, and howling kingdoms of Decay, it is not easy to catch everything ! But let us faithfully do the best we can. Having once packed Dryasdust, and his unedifying cries of "Nonsense ! Mere Hypocrisy ! Ambitious Dupery !" &c., &c., about his business ; closed him safe under hatches, and got silence established, --we shall perhaps hear a word or two ; have a real glimpse or two of things long vanished ; and *see* for moments this fabulous Barebones's Parliament itself, standing dim in the heart of the extinct centuries, as a recognizable fact, once flesh and blood, now air and memory ; not untragical to us !

Read this first, from the old Newspapers ; and then the Speech itself, which the laborious Editor has with all industry copied and corrected from Two Contemporaneous Reports by different hands, and various editions of these. Note, however : The *Italic* sentences in brackets, most part of which, and yet perhaps not enough of which I have suppressed, are evidently by an altogether modern hand !

'*July 4th, 1653.* This being the day appointed by the Letters of Summons from his Excellency the Lord General, for the meeting of the Persons called to the Supreme Authority, there came about a Hundred-and-twenty of them to the Council-Chamber in Whitehall. After each person had given in a Ticket of his Name, they all entered the room, and sat down in chairs appointed for them, round about the table. Then his Excellency the Lord General, standing by the window opposite to the middle of the table, and as many of the Officers of the Army as the room could well contain, some on his right hand and others on his left, and about him,—made the following Speech to the Assembly :

GENTLEMEN,

I suppose the Summons that hath been instrumental to bring you hither gives you well to understand the occasion of your being here. Howbeit, I have something farther to impart to you, which is an Instrument drawn up by the consent and advice of the principal Officers of the Army ; which is a little (as we conceive) more significant

than the Letter of the Summons. We have that here to tender you, and somewhat likewise to say farther for our own exoneration;\* which we hope may be somewhat farther for your satisfaction. And withal seeing you sit here somewhat uneasily by reason of the scantness of the room, and heat of the weather, I shall contract myself with respect thereunto.

We have not thought it amiss a little to remind you of that Series of Providences wherein the Lord hath appeared, dispensing wonderful things to these Nations from the beginning of our Troubles to this very day.

If I should look much backward, we might remind you of the state of affairs as they were before the short, that is the last, Parliament,—in what posture the things of this Nation then stood: but they do so well, I presume, occur to all your memories, and knowledge, that I shall not need to look so far backward. Nor yet to those hostile occasions which arose between the King that was and the Parliament† that then followed. And indeed should I begin much later, the things that would fall very necessarily before you, would rather be for a History than for a verbal Discourse at this present.

But thus far we may look back. You very well know, it pleased God, much about the midst of this War, to winnow (if I may so say) the Forces of this Nation;‡ and to put them into the hands of other men of other principles than those that did engage at the first. By what ways and means that was brought about, would ask more time than is allotted me to mind you of it. Indeed there are Stories that do recite those Transactions, and give you narratives of matters of fact: but those things wherein the life and power of them lay; those strange windings and turnings of Providence; those very great appearances of God, in crossing and thwarting the purposes of men, that He might raise up a poor and contemptible company of men,§ neither versed in military affairs, nor having much natural propensity to them, ‘into wonderful success—!’ Simply by their owning a Principle of Godliness and Religion; which so soon as it came to be owned, and the state of affairs put upon the foot of that account,|| how God blessed them, furthering all undertakings, yet using the most improbable and the most contemptible and despicable means (for that we shall ever own): is very well known to you.

\* ‘exoneration’ does not here mean ‘excuse’ or ‘shifting away of blame,’ but mere laying down of office with due form.

† The Long Parliament.

‡ Self-denying Ordinance; beginning of 1645: see vol. i., p. 153 et seq.

§ Fairfax’s Army.

|| upon that footing

What the several Successes and Issues have been, is not fit to mention at this time neither;—though I confess, I thought to have enlarged myself upon that subject; forasmuch as Considering the works of God, and the operations of His hands, is a principal part of our duty; and a great encouragement to the strengthening of our hands and of our faith, for that which is behind.\* And among other ends which those marvellous Dispensations have been given us for, that's a principal end, which ought to be minded by us.

'Certainly' in this revolution of affairs, as the issue of those Successes which God was pleased to give to the Army, and 'to' the Authority that then stood, there were very great things brought about;—besides those dints that came upon the Nations† and places where the War itself was, very great things in Civil matters too. 'As first,' the bringing of Offenders to justice,—and the Greatest of them. Bringing of the State of this Government to the name (at least) of a Commonwealth. Searching and sifting of all persons and places. The King removed, and brought to justice; and many great ones with him. The House of Peers laid aside. The House of Commons itself, the representative of the People of England, winnowed, sifted and brought to a handful; as you very well remember.

And truly God would not rest there:—for by the way, although it's fit for us to ascribe‡ our failings and miscarriages to ourselves, yet the gloriousness of the work may well be attributed to God Himself, and may be called His strange work. You remember well that at the Change of the Government there was not an end of our Troubles [*No!*]<sup>§</sup>—although in that year were such high things transacted as indeed made it to be the most memorable year (I mean the year 1648) that this Nation ever saw. So many Insurrections,‖ Invasions, secret Designs, open and public Attempts, all quashed in so short a time, and this by the very signal appearance of God Himself; which, I hope, we shall never forget!—You know also, as I said before, that, as the first effect of that memorable year of 1648 was to lay a foundation, by bringing Offenders to Punishment, so it brought likewise to the Change of Government:—although it were worth the time 'perhaps, if one had time,' to speak of the carriage of some in places of trust, in most eminent places of trust, which was such as (had not God miraculously appeared) would have frustrated us of the hopes of all our undertakings. I mean by the closure of the Treaty that was endeavored with the King;|| whereby they would have

\* still to come.

† England, Ireland, Scotland.

‡ 'intitle' *in orig.*

§ Kent, St. Neot's, Colchester, Welsh Poyer at Pembroke, Scotch Hall at Preston, &c., &c.

|| Treaty of the Isle of Wight, again and again endeavored.

put into his hands all that we had engaged for, and all our security should have been a little piece of Paper ! That thing going off, you very well know how it kept this Nation still in broils by sea and land. And yet what God wrought in Ireland and Scotland you likewise know ; until He had finished these Troubles, upon the matter,\* by His marvelous salvation wrought at Worcester.

I confess to you, that I am very much troubled in my own spirit that the necessity of affairs requires I should be so short in those things : because, as I told you, this is the *leanest* part of the Transactions, this mere historical Narrative of them ; there being in every particular ; in the King's first going from the Parliament, in the pulling-down of the Bishops, the House of Peers, in every step towards that Change of the Government,—I say there is not any one of these things, thus removed and reformed, but hath an evident print of Providence set upon it, so that he who runs may read it. I am sorry I have not an opportunity to be more particular on these points, which I principally designed, this day ; thereby to stir up your hearts and mine to gratitude and confidence.

I shall now begin a little to remind you of the passages that have been transacted since Worcester. Coming from whence, with the rest of my fellow Officers and Soldiers, we did expect, and had some reasonable confidence our expectations would not be frustrated, That, having such an history to look back unto, such a God, so eminently visible, even our enemies confessing that “God Himself was certainly engaged against them, else they should never have been disappointed in *every* engagement,”—and that may be used by the way, That if we had but miscarried in the least,† all our former mercies were in danger to be lost :—I say, coming up then, we had some confidence That the mercies God had shown, and the expectations which were upon our hearts, and upon the hearts of all good men, would have prompted those who were in Authority to do those good things which might, by honest men, have been judged fit for such a God, and worthy of such mercies ; and indeed been a discharge of duty from those to whom all these mercies had been shown, for the true interest of this Nation ! [ *Yes !* ]—If I should now labor to be particular in enumerating how businesses have been transacted from that time to the Dissolution of the late Parliament, indeed I should be upon a theme which would be troublesome to myself. For I think I may say

\* Means ‘so to speak ;’ a common phrase of those times ; a perpetual one with Clarendon, for instance.

† *los*: one battle of these many.

for myself and my fellow Officers, That we have rather desired and studied Healing and Looking-forward than to rake into sores and to look backward,—to give things forth in those colors that would not be very pleasing to any good eye to look upon. Only this we shall say for our own vindication, as pointing out the ground for that unavoidable necessity, nay even that duty that was incumbent upon us, to make this last great Change—I think it will not be amiss to offer a word or two to that [*Hear, Hear!*]. As I said before, we are loath to rake into businesses, were there not a necessity so to do.

Indeed we may say that, ever since the coming-up of myself and those Gentlemen who have been engaged in the military part, it hath been full in our hearts and thoughts, To desire and use all the fair and lawful means we could to have the Nation reap the fruit of all the blood and treasure that had been spent in this Cause : and we have had many desires, and thirstings in our spirits, to find out ways and means wherein we might be anywise instrumental to help it forward. We were very tender, for a long time, so much as to petition. For some of the Officers being Members ; and others having very good acquaintance with, and some relations to, divers Members of Parliament,—we did, from time to time, solicit such ; thinking if there had been nobody to prompt them, nor call upon them, these things might have been attended to, from ingenuity\* and integrity in those that had it in their power to answer such expectations.

Truly when we saw nothing would be done, we did, as we thought according to our duty, a little, to remind them by a Petition ; which I suppose you have seen : it was delivered, as I remember in August last.† What effect that had, is likewise very well known. The truth is, we had no return at all for our satisfaction,—a few words given us ; the things presented by us, or the most of them, we were told, “ were under consideration ; ” and those not presented by us had very little or no consideration at all. Finding the People dissatisfied in every corner of the Nation, and ‘ all men ’ laying at our doors the non-performance of these things, which had been promised, and were of duty to be performed,—truly we did then think ourselves concerned, if we would (as becomes honest men) keep up the reputation of honest men in the world. And therefore we, divers times, endeavored to obtain meetings with divers Members of Parliament ;—and we did not begin those till about October last. And in these meetings we did, with all faithfulness and sincerity, beseech them that they would be mindful of their duty to God and men, in the discharge of the trust reposed in them. I believe (as there are

\* Ingenuousness.

† Commons Journals, vii., 164 (12 Aug., 1652).

many gentlemen here know), we had at least ten or twelve meetings; most humbly begging and beseeching of them, That by their own means they would bring forth those good things which had been promised and expected; that so it might appear they did not do them by any suggestion from the Army, but from their own ingenuity: so tender were we to preserve them in the reputation of the People. Having had very many of those meetings; and declaring plainly that the issue would be the displeasure and judgment of God, the dissatisfaction of the People, the putting of 'all' things into a confusion: yet how little we prevailed we very well know, and we believe it's not unknown to you.

At last, when indeed we saw that things would not be laid to heart, we had a very serious consideration among ourselves what other ways to have recourse unto [*Yea, that is the question!*]; and when we grew to more closer considerations, then they 'the Parliament men' began to take the Act for a Representative\* to heart, and seemed exceeding willing to put it on. And had it been done with integrity, there could nothing have happened more welcome to our judgments than that. But plainly the intention was, Not to give the People a right of choice; it would have been but a seeming right; that 'semblance' of giving them a choice was only to recruit the House, the better to perpetuate *themselves*. And truly, having been, divers of us, spoken unto to give way hereunto, to which we made perpetual aversions, indeed abominating the thoughts of it,—we declared our judgments against it, and our dissatisfaction with it. And yet they that would not hear of a Representative formerly, when it lay three years before them, without proceeding one line, or making any considerable progress,—I say, those that would not hear of this Bill formerly, did now, when they saw us falling into more closer considerations, make, instead of protracting their Bill, as much preposterous haste with it on the other side, and run into that 'opposite' extremity.

Finding that this spirit was not according to God; and that the whole weight of this Cause,—which must needs be very dear unto us who had so often adventured our lives for it, and we believe it was so to you,—did hang upon the business now in hand; and seeing plainly that there was not here any consideration to assert this Cause, or provide security for it, but only to cross the troublesome people of the Army, who by this time were high enough in their displeasures: Truly, I say, when we saw all this, having power in our hands, 'we could not resolve' to let such monstrous proceedings go on, and so to throw away all our liberties into the hands of those whom we had fought against [*Presbyterian Royalists; at Preston and elsewhere—"fought against," yea, and beaten.*]

For a New Parliament and Method of Election.



ruin, your *Excellency might add!*] : we came, first, to this conclusion among ourselves, That if we had been *fought* out of our liberties and rights, Necessity would have taught us patience; but that to deliver them ‘sluggishly’ up would render us the basest persons in the world, and worthy to be accounted haters of God and of His People. When it pleased God to lay this close to our hearts; and indeed to show us that the interest of His People was grown cheap, ‘that *it was*’ not at all laid to heart, but that if things came to real competition, His Cause, even among themselves, would also in every point go to the ground: indeed this did add more considerations to us, That there was a duty incumbent upon us, ‘even upon us.’ And,—I speak here, in the presence of some that were at the closure of our consultations, and as before the Lord,—the thinking of an act of violence was to us worse than any battle that ever we were in, or that could be, to the utmost hazard of our lives [*Hear him!*] : so willing were we, even very tender and desirous if possible that these men might quit their places with honor.

I am the longer upon this; because it hath been in our own hearts and consciences, justifying us, and hath never been yet thoroughly imparted to any; and we had rather begin with you than have done it before—and do think indeed that this Transaction is more proper for a verbal communication than to have it put into writing. I doubt he whose pen is most gentle in England would, in recording that, have been tempted, whether he would or no, to dip it deep in anger and wrath [*Stifled cries from Dryasdust*]. But affairs being at this posture; we seeing plainly, even in some critical cases,\* that the Cause of the People of God was a despised thing;—truly we did believe then that the hands of other men ‘than these’ must be the hands to be used for the work. And we thought then, it was very high time to look about us, and to be sensible of our duty [*Oliver’s voice somewhat rising; Major-General Harrison and the others looking rather animated!*].

If, I say, I should take up your time to tell you what instances we have to satisfy our judgments and consciences, That these are not vain imaginations, nor things fictitious, but which fell within the compass of our own certain knowledge, it would bring me, I say, to what I would avoid, to rake into these things too much. Only this. If anybody was in competition for any place of real and signal trust, ‘if any really public interest was at stake in that Parliament,’ how hard and difficult a matter was it to get anything carried without making parties,—without practices\* indeed unworthy of a Parliament! When things must be carried so in a Supreme Authority, indeed I think it is not as it ought to

\* ‘Things’ in orig.

be, to say no worse [*Nor do I.*]!—Then when we came to other trials, as in that case of Wales, ‘of establishing a Preaching Ministry in Wales,’ which, I must confess for my own part, I set myself upon,—if I should relate what discountenance that business of the poor People of God there had (who had men\* watching over them like so many wolves, ready to catch the lambs so soon as they were brought forth into the world); how signally that Business was trodden under foot ‘in Parliament,’ to the discountenancing of the Honest People, and the countenancing of the Malignant Party, of this Commonwealth—! I need but say it was so. For many of you know, and by sad experience have felt it to be so. And somebody I hope will, at leisure, better impart to you the state of that Business ‘of Wales;’ which really to myself and Officers, was as plain a trial of their spirits, ‘the Parliament’s spirits,’ as anything,—it being known to many of us that God had kindled a seed there [*Such is the metaphor*] indeed hardly to be paralleled since the Primitive Time.

I would these had been all the instances we had! Finding, ‘however,’ which way the spirits of men went, finding that good was never intended to the People of God,—I mean when I say the People of God, I mean the *large* comprehension of them, under the several Forms of Godliness in this Nation;—finding, I say, that all tenderness was forgotten to the Good People (though it was by *their* hands and their means, under the blessing of God, that *those* sat where they did),—we thought this a very bad requital! I will not say, they were come to an utter inability of working Reformation,—though I might say so in regard to one thing: the Reformation of the Law, so much groaned under in the posture it now is in [*Hear, hear!*]. That was a thing we had many good words spoken for; but we know that many months together were not enough for the settling of one word, “Incumbrances” [*Three calendar months! A grim smile on some faces.*],—I say, finding that this was the spirit and complexion of men,—although these were faults for which no man should lift up his hand against the Superior Magistrate; not simply for these faults and failings,—yet when we saw that this ‘New Representative of theirs’ was meant to perpetuate men of such spirits; nay when we had it from their own mouths, That they could not endure to hear of the Dissolution of this Parliament: we thought this an high breach of trust. If they had been a Parliament never violence was upon,† sitting as free and clear as any in former ages, it was thought, this, to be a breach of trust, such as a greater could not be.

\* Clergymen so-called.

† Had no Pride’s Purge, Apprentice-riot or the like ever come upon them.

And that we might not be in doubt about these matters : having had that Conference among ourselves which I gave you an account of, we did desire one more,—and indeed it was the night before the Dissolution ; it had been desired two or three nights before : we did desire that we might speak with some of the principal persons of the House. That we might with ingenuity open our hearts to them ; that we might either be convinced of the certainty of their intentions ; or else that they would be pleased to hear our expedients to prevent these inconveniences. And indeed we could not attain our desire till the night before the Dissolution. There is a touch of this in our Declaration.\* As I said before, at that time we had often desired it, and at that time we obtained it : where about Twenty of them were, none of the least in consideration for their interest and ability ; with whom we desired some discourse upon these things and had it. And it pleased these Gentlemen, who are here, the Officers of the Army, to desire me to offer their sense for them, which I did, and it was shortly thus : We told them “ the reason of our desire to wait upon them now was, that we might know from them, What security lay in their manner of proceeding, so hastened, for a New Representative ; wherein they had made a few qualifications, such as they were : and How the whole business would, ‘ in actual practice,’ be executed : Of which we had as yet no account ; and yet we had our interest, our lives, estates and families therein concerned : and, we thought likewise, the Honest People had interest in us : ‘ How all this was to be ? ’ That so, if it did seem they meant to appear in such honest and just ways as might be security to the Honest Interest, we might therein acquiesce : or else that they would hear what we had to offer.” Indeed, when this desire was made, the answer was, “ That nothing would do good for this Nation but the continuance of this Parliament ! ” We wondered we should have such a return. We said little to that : but seeing they would not give us satisfaction that their ways were honorable and just, we craved their leave to make our objections. We then told them, That the way they were going in would be impracticable. ‘ That ’ we could not tell how to send out an Act, with such qualifications as to be a rule for electing and for being elected, Until we first knew who the persons were that should be admitted to elect. And above all, Whether any of the qualifications reached ‘ so far as to include ’ the Presbyterian Party.† And we were bold to tell them, That none of that judgment who had deserted this Cause and Interest‡ should have

\* Of April 22 ; referred to, not given, at vol. i., p. 547.

† ‘ Presbytery ’ *in orig.*

‡ None of your Royalist, Hamilton Invasion Presbyterians.

any power therein. We did think we should profess it, That we had as good deliver up our Cause into the hands of any as into the hands of those who had deserted us, or who were as neuters! For it's one thing to love a brother, to bear with and love a person of different judgment in matters of religion; and another thing to have anybody so far set in the saddle on that account, as to have all the rest of his brethren at mercy.

Truly, Gentlemen, having this discourse concerning the impracticableness of the thing, the bringing-in of neuters, and such as had deserted this Cause, whom we very well knew; objecting likewise how dangerous it would be by drawing concourses of people in the several Counties (every person that was within the qualification or without); and how it did fall obvious to us that the power would come into the hands of men who had very little affection to this Cause: the answer again was made, and that by very eminent persons, "That nothing would save the Nation but the continuance of this Parliament." This being so, we humbly proposed,—since neither our counsels, our objections to their way of proceeding, nor their answers to justify that, did give us satisfaction; nor did we think they ever intended to give us any, which indeed some of them have since declared 'to be the fact,'—we proposed to them, I say, *our* expedient; which was indeed this: 'That the Government of the Nation being in such a condition as we saw, and things 'being' under so much ill sense abroad, and likely to end in confusion 'if we so proceeded,'—we desired they would devolve the trust over to some Well-affected Men, such as had an interest in the Nation, and were known to be of good affection to the Commonwealth. Which, we told them, was no new thing when this Land was under the like hurlyburlies. And we had been laboring to get precedents 'out of History' to convince them of it; and it was confessed by them it had been no new thing. This expedient we offered out of the deep sense we had of the Cause of Christ; and were answered so as I told you, That nothing would save this Nation but the continuance of that Parliament. 'The continuance:' they would not 'be brought to' say the *perpetuating* of it, at this time; yet we found their endeavors did directly tend that way; they gave us this answer, "That the thing we offered was of a very high nature and of tender consideration: How would money be raised?"—and made some other objections. We told them 'how;' and that we here offered an expedient five times better than that 'of theirs,' for which no reason was given, nor we thought could be given [*Why should the Fag-End of this poor old Parliament, now fallen impotent except to raise money for itself, continue? No reason is given, nor we think can be, that will convince mankind.*]: and desired them that they would lay

things seriously to heart ! They told us, They would take time for the consideration of these things till to-morrow ; they would sleep upon them, and consult some friends : ‘ some friends,’—though, as I said, there were about Twenty-three ‘ of them here,’ and not above Fifty-three in the House. And at parting, two or three of the chief of them, one of the chief [*O Sir Harry Vane !*], and two or three more, did tell us, That they would endeavor to suspend farther proceedings about their Bill for a New Representative until they had another conference with us. And upon this we had great satisfaction ; and had hope, if our expedient could receive a loving debate, that the next day we should have some such issue thereof as would give satisfaction to all.\* And herewith they went away, ‘ it ’ being late at night.

The next morning, we considering how to order what we had farther to offer to them in the evening, word was brought us that the House was proceeding with all speed upon the New Representative ! We could not believe it, that such persons would be so unworthy ; we remained there till a second and a third messenger came, with tidings, That the House was really upon that business, and had brought it near to the issue,—and with that height† as was never before exercised : leaving out all things relating to the due exercise of the qualifications (which had appeared all along ‘ in it till now ’) ; and ‘ meaning,’ as we heard, to pass it only on paper, without engrossing, for the quicker despatch of it.—Thus, as we apprehend, would the Liberties of the Nation have been thrown away into the hands of those who had never fought for it. And upon this we thought it our duty not to suffer it [*No !*].—And upon this the House was dissolved, even when the Speaker was going to put the last question [*Let him travel, at any rate !*]

I have too much troubled you with this : but we have made this relation that you might know that what hath been done in the Dissolution of the Parliament was as necessary to be done as the preservation of this Cause. And the necessity which led us to do that, hath brought us to this ‘ present ’ issue, Of exercising an extraordinary way and course to draw You together ‘ here ;’ upon this account, that you are men who know the Lord, and have made observations of His marvellous Dispensations ; and may be trusted, as far as men may be trusted, with this Cause.

It remains now for me to acquaint you ‘ a little ’ farther with what relates to your taking upon you this great Business. ‘ But indeed ’ that is contained in the Paper‡ here in my hand, which will be offered pre-

\* ‘ hoping by conference to have satisfaction to all ’ in *orig.*

† violence, height of temper.

‡ An Indenture or Instrument of Government, some account of which

sently to you to read.\* But having done that we have done [*Dissolving of the Parliament: which cannot be repented of, and need not be boasted of!*] upon such ground of necessity as we have 'now' declared which was not a feigned necessity but a real,—'it did behove us,' to the end we might manifest to the world the singleness of our hearts and our integrity who did these things, Not to grasp at the power ourselves or keep it in military hands, no not for a day; but, as far as God enabled us with strength and ability, to put it into the hands of Proper Persons that might be called from the several parts of the Nation. This necessity; and I hope we may say for ourselves, this integrity of concluding to divest the Sword of all power in the Civil Administration,—hath been that that hath moved us to put You to this trouble 'of coming hither;' and having done that, truly we think we cannot, with the discharge of our own consciences, but offer somewhat to you on the devolving of the burden on your shoulders.† It hath been the practice of others who have, voluntarily and out of a sense of duty, divested themselves, and devolved the Government into new hands; I say, it hath been the practice of those that have done so; it hath been practised and is very consonant to reason, To lay 'down,' together with their Authority, some Charge 'how to employ it'‡ (as we hope we have done), and to press the duty 'of employing it well:' concerning which we have a word or two to offer you.

Truly God hath called you to this Work by, I think, as wonderful providences as ever passed upon the sons of men in so short a time. And truly I think, taking the argument of necessity, for the Government must not *fall*; taking the appearance of the hand of God in this thing,—'I think' you would have been loath it should have been re-

can be found, if any one is curious about it, in Parliamentary History xx. 175.

\* Considerable discrepancies in the Two Reports throughout this paragraph; indicating some embarrassment and intricacy in the Speaker. Which with our best industry we endeavor to reconcile; to elicit from them what the real utterance, or thought and attempted utterance, of the Speaker may have been. The two Reporters being faithful according to their ability, and the Speaker faithful according to his, all discrepancies ought to dissolve themselves in clearer insight and conviction; as we hope they do.

† 'for our own exoneration' *in orig.*

‡ He seems embarrassed lest he be thought to assume authority over this new Little Parliament, and to treat them as if he were their King. The dissolving of the old Parliament has also its embarrassment, though not so prominent here; and both together make an intricate paragraph. Our Two Reports, from this point, virtually coincide again.

signed into the hands of wicked men and enemies! I am sure, God would not have it so. It's come, therefore, to you by the way of necessity: by the way of the wise Providence of God,—through weak hands. And therefore I think, coming through our hands, though such as we are, it may not be ill taken if we do offer somewhat (as I said before) as to the discharge of the Trust which is now incumbent upon you [*Certainly not!*]. And although I seem to speak of that which may have the face and interpretation of a Charge, it's a very humble one: and if he that means to be a Servant to you, who hath now called you to the exercise of the Supreme Authority, discharge what he conceives to be a duty to you, we hope you will take it in good part.

And truly I shall not hold you long in it; because I hope it's written in your hearts to approve yourselves to God. Only this Scripture I shall remember to you, which hath been much upon my spirit: *Hosea*, xi. 12, "Judah yet ruleth with God, and is faithful with the Saints." It's said before, that "Ephraim compassed God about with lies, and the house of Israel with deceit." How God hath been compassed about by fastings and thanksgivings,\* and other exercises and transactions, I think we have all cause to lament. Truly you are called by God, 'as Judah was,' to "rule with Him," and for Him. And you are called to be faithful with the Saints who have been instrumental to your call. 'Again,' *Second Samuel*, xxi. 3, "He that ruleth over men," the Scripture saith, "must be just, ruling in the fear of God" [*Groans from Dryasdust. Patience, my friend! Really, does not all this seem an incredibility;—a palpable hypocrisy, since it is not the mouth of an imbecile that speaks it? My estimable, timber-headed, leaden-hearted friend, can there be any doubt of it!*]

And truly it's better to *pray* for you than to *counsel* you in that matter, That you may exercise the judgment of mercy and truth! It's better, I say, to pray for you than counsel you; to ask wisdom from Heaven for you; which I am confident many thousands of Saints do this day, 'and' have done, and will do, through the permission of God

\* There was a Monthly Fast, the Last Wednesday of every Month, held duly for about Seven Years; till, after the King's Death, we abolished it. Immense preaching and howling, all over the country, there has been on these stated Wednesdays; sincere and insincere. Not to speak of due Thanksgivings for victories and felicities innumerable; all ending in this infelicitous condition! His Excellency thinks we ought to restrain such habits; not to imitate Ephraim, or the Long Parliament in such. The rest of this Discourse is properly a Sermon of his; and one conceived in a different style.

and His assistance. I say it's better to pray than advise: yet truly I think of another Scripture, which is very useful, though it seems to be for a common application to every man as a Christian,—wherein he is counselled to ask wisdom;\* and he is told what that is. That's "from Above," we are told; it's "pure, peaceable, gentle and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits;" it's "without partiality and without hypocrisy." Truly my thoughts run much upon this place, 'That to the execution of judgment (the judgment of truth, for that's the judgment) you must have wisdom "from Above;" and that's "pure.' That will teach you to exercise the judgment of truth; it's "without partiality." Purity, impartiality, sincerity: these are the effects of "wisdom," and these will help you to execute the judgment of truth. And then if God give you hearts to be "easy to be entreated," to be "peaceably spirited," to be "full of good fruits," bearing good fruits to the Nation, to men as men, to the People of God, to all in their several stations,—this will teach you to execute the judgment of mercy and truth [Yes, if thou understand it: still yes,—and nothing else will!]. And I have little more to say to this. I shall rather bend my prayers for you in that behalf, as I said; and many others will.

Truly the "judgment of truth," it will teach you to be as just towards an Unbeliever as towards a Believer; and it's our duty to do so. I confess I have said sometimes, foolishly it may be: I had rather miscarry to a Believer than an Unbeliever.† This may seem a paradox:—but let's take heed of doing that which is evil to either! Oh, i. God fill your hearts with such a spirit as Moses had, and as Paul had—which was not a spirit for Believers only, but for the whole People! Moses, he could die for them: wish himself "blotted out of God's Book:‡" Paul could wish himself "accursed for his countrymen after the flesh§" [*Let us never forget that, in Moses and Paul.—Are not these amazing sentiments, on their part, my estimable, timberheaded, leadenhearted friend?*]: so full of affection were their spirits unto all. And truly this would help you to execute the judgment of truth, and of mercy also.

A second thing is, To desire you would be faithful with the Saints; to be touched with them. And I hope, whatever others may think, it may be a matter to us all of rejoicing to have our hearts touched (with reverence be it spoken) as Christ, "being full of the spirit," was

\* 'But the Wisdom that is from Above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle and easy to be entreated; full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace' (*James*, iii., 17, 18).

† Do wrong to a good than to a bad man; a remarkable sentiment.

‡ Exodus, xxxii., 32.

§ Romans, ix., 3



“touched with our infirmities,” that He might be merciful. So should we be; we should be pitiful. Truly, this calls us to be very much touched with the infirmities of the Saints; that we may have a respect unto all, and be pitiful and tender towards all, though of different judgments. And if I did seem to speak something that reflected on those of the Presbyterial judgment,—truly I think if we have not an interest of love for them too, we shall\* hardly answer this of being faithful to the Saints.

In my pilgrimage, and some exercises I have had abroad, I did read that Scripture often, Forty-first of *Isaiah*; where God gave me, and some of my fellows, encouragement ‘as to’ what He would do there and elsewhere; which He hath performed for us. He said, “He would plant in the wilderness the cedar, the shittah-tree, and the myrtle and the oil-tree; and He would set in the desert the fir-tree, and the pine-tree, and the box-tree together.” For what end will the Lord do all this? “That they may see, and know, and consider, and understand together, That the hand of the Lord hath done this;”—that it is He who hath wrought all the salvations and deliverances we have received. For what end! To see, and know, and understand together, that He hath done and wrought all this for the good of the Whole Flock [*Even so. For ‘Saints’ read ‘Good Men; and it is true to the end of the world’*]. Therefore, I beseech you,—but I think I need not,—have a care of the Whole Flock! Love the sheep, love the lambs; love all, tender all, cherish and countenance all, in all things that are good. And if the poorest Christian, the most mistaken Christian, shall desire to live peaceably and quietly under you,—I say, if any shall desire but to lead a life of godliness and honesty, let him be protected.

I think I need not advise, much less press you, to endeavor the Promoting of the Gospel; to encourage the Ministry;† such a Ministry and such Ministers as be faithful in the Land; upon whom the true character is. Men that received the Spirit, which Christians will be able to discover, and do ‘the will of;’ men that “have received Gifts from Him who is ascended up on high, who hath led captivity captive, to give gifts to men,”‡ even for this same work of the Ministry! And truly the Apostle, speaking in another place, in the Twelfth of the *Romans*, when he has summed up all the mercies of God, and the goodness of God; and discoursed, in the former Chapters, of the foundations of the Gospel, and of those things that are the subject of those first Eleven Chapters,—he beseecheth them to “present their bodies a living sacrifice” [*Note that!*]. He beseecheth them that they would not esteem highly of

\* ‘will’ in orig.

† Preaching Clergy.

‡ Ephesians, iv., 8.

themselves, but be humble and sober-minded, and not stretch themselves beyond their line ; and also that they would have a care for those that “ had received gifts ” to the uses there mentioned. I speak not,—I thank God it is far from my heart,—for a Ministry deriving itself from the Papacy, and pretending to that which is so much insisted on, “ Succession ” [“ *Hear, hear !* ” from the *Puseyites*]. The true Succession is through the Spirit—[*I should say so !*],—given in its measure. The Spirit is given for that use, ‘ To make proper Speakers-forth of God’s eternal Truth ; ’ and that’s right Succession. But I need not discourse of these things to you ; who, I am persuaded, are taught of God, much more and in a greater measure than myself, concerning these things.

Indeed I have but one word more to say to you ; though in that perhaps I shall show my weakness : it’s by way of encouragement to go on in this Work. And give me leave to begin thus. I confess I never looked to see such a Day as this,—it may be nor you neither,—when Jesus Christ should be so owned as He is, this day, in this Work. Jesus Christ is owned this day by the Call of You ; and you own Him, by your willingness to appear for Him. And you manifest this, as far as poor creatures may do, to be a Day of the Power of Christ. I know you well remember that Scripture, “ He makes His People willing in the day of His power.”\* God manifests this to be the Day of the Power of Christ ; having, through so much blood, and so much trial as hath been upon these Nations, made this to be one of the great issues thereof : ‘ To have His People called to the Supreme Authority [*A thing, I confess, worth striving for ; and the one thing worth striving for !*]. He makes this to be the greatest mercy, next to His own Son. God hath owned His Son ; and He hath owned you, and made you own Him. I confess I never looked to have seen such a day ; I did not.—Perhaps you are not known by face to one another ; ‘ indeed ’ I am confident you are strangers, coming from all parts of the Nation as you do : but we shall tell you that indeed we have not allowed ourselves the choice of one person in whom we had not this good hope, That there was in him faith in Jesus Christ and love to all His People and Saints [*What a Parliament ; unexampled before and since in this world !*].

Thus God hath owned you in the eyes of the world ; and thus, by coming hither, you own Him : and, as it is in *Isaiah*, xliii., 21,—it’s an high expresssion ; and look to your own hearts whether, now or hereafter, God shall apply it to *you* : “ This People,” saith God, “ I have formed for Myself, that they may show forth my praise.” I say, it’s a memora-

\* Psalm cx., 3, a favorite Psalm of Oliver’s—as we know already, and solid Ludlow knows.

ble passage ;\* and, I hope, not unfitly applied : the Lord apply it to each of your hearts ! I shall not descant upon the words ; they are plain : indeed you are as like the “ forming of God ” as ever people were. If a man should tender a Book to you ‘ to swear you upon,’ I dare appeal to all your consciences, Neither directly nor indirectly did you seek for your coming hither. You have been passive in coming hither ; being *called*,—and indeed that’s an active work,—‘ though not on our part ! ’ “ This People have *I formed* : ” consider the circumstances by which you are “ called ” hither ; through what strivings [*At Marston Moor, at Naseby, Dunbar and elsewhere*], through what blood you are come hither,—where neither you nor I, nor no man living, three months ago, had any thought to have seen such a company taking upon them, or rather being called to take, the Supreme Authority of this Nation ! Therefore, own your call ! Indeed, I think it may be truly said that there never was a Supreme Authority consisting of such a Body, above One-hundred-and-forty, I believe ; ‘ never such a Body ’ that came into the Supreme Authority ‘ before,’ under such a notion ‘ as this,’ in such a way of owning God, and being owned by Him. And therefore I may also say, never such a “ People ” so “ formed,” for such a purpose, ‘ were ’ thus called before [*These are lucent considerations ; lucent, nay radiant !*].

If it were a time to compare your standing with ‘ that of ’ those that have been “ called ” by the Suffrages of the People—[*He does not say what the result would be*].—Which who can tell how soon God may fit the People for such a thing ? None can desire it more than I ! Would all were the Lord’s people ; as it was said, “ Would all the Lord’s people were Prophets ” [*Fit to sit in Parliament and make Laws ; alas, hitherto but few of them can “ prophesy ! ”*]. I would all were fit to be called. It ought to be the longing of our hearts to see men brought to own the Interest of Jesus Christ. And give me leave to say : If I know anything in the world, what is there likelier to win the People to the interest of Jesus Christ, to the love of Godliness (and therefore what stronger duty lies on you, being thus called), than an humble and godly conversation ? So that they may see ‘ that ’ you love them ; ‘ that ’ you lay yourselves out, time and spirits, for them ! Is not this the likeliest way to bring them to their liberties ? [*To make them free by being servants of God ; free, and fit to elect for Parliament !*] And do not you, by this, put it upon God to find out times and seasons for you ; ‘ fit seasons ’ by putting forth His Spirit ? At least you convince them that, as men fearing God have fought them out of their bondage under the Regal Power, so men fearing God do now rule them in the fear of God, and take care to adminis-

\* ‘ place ’ in orig.

ter Good unto them.—But this is some digression. I say, own your call; for it is of God! Indeed, it is marvellous, and it hath been unprojected. It's not long since either you or we came to know of it. And indeed this hath been the way God dealt with us all along, To keep things from our eyes all along, so that we have seen nothing, in all His dispensations, long beforehand;—which is also a witness, in some measure, to our integrity—[*“Integrity!” from Dryasdust—Husht, my friend, it is incredible! A flat impossibility, how can it be believed? To the human Owl, living in his perennial London Fog, in his twilight of all imaginable corrupt Exhalations, and with his poor head, too, overspun to such extent with red-tape, parliamentary eloquence, force of public opinion and such like, how shall the Azure Firmaments and Everlasting Stars become credible? They are and remain incredible. From his shut sense all light-rays are victoriously repelled; no light shall get admittance there. In no Heaven's-light will he for his part ever believe;—till at last, as is the necessity withal, it come to him as lightning! Then he will believe it*]. I say, you are called with an high calling. And why should we be afraid to say or think, That *this* may be the door to usher in the Things that God has promised; which have been prophesied of; which he has set the hearts of his People to wait for and expect? We know who they are that shall war with the Lamb, “against His enemies:” they shall be “a people called, and chosen, and faithful.” And God hath, in a Military way,—we may speak it without flattering ourselves, and I believe you know it,—He hath appeared with them; with that same “people,” and for them; and now in these Civil Powers and Authorities ‘does not He appear?’ These are not ill prognostications of the God we wait for. Indeed I do think somewhat is at the door: we are at the threshold;—and therefore it becomes us to lift up our heads, and encourage ourselves in the Lord. And we have thought, some of us, That it is our duties to endeavor this way; not merely to look at that Prophecy in Daniel, “And the Kingdom shall not be delivered to another people,” ‘and passively wait.’ Truly God hath brought this to your hands; by the owning of your call; blessing the Military Power. The Lord hath directed their [*our*] hearts to be instrumental to call you; and set it upon our hearts to deliver over the Power “to another people” [*Therefore “we” are not the persons prophesied of?*].—But I may appear to be beyond my line here; these things are dark. Only, I desire my thoughts† to be exercised in these things, and so I hope are yours.

Truly seeing things are thus, that you are at the edge of the Pro-

\* Hundred-and-tenth Psalm, and other Scriptures are known o Ludlow and us!

† Senses in orig.

mises and Prophecies—[*Does not say what results*].—At least, if there were neither Promise nor Prophecy, yet you are carrying on the best things, you are endeavoring after the best things : and, as I have said elsewhere,\* if I were to choose any servant, the meanest Officer for the Army or the Commonwealth, I would choose a godly man that hath principles. Especially where a trust is to be committed. Because I know where to have a man that hath principles. I believe if any one of you should choose a servant, you would do thus. And I would all our Magistrates were so chosen :—this may be done ; there may be good effects of this ! Surely it's our duty to choose men that fear the Lord, and will praise the Lord : such hath the Lord “formed for Himself ;” and He expects no praises from *other* ‘than such’ [*O Secretary of the Home Department, my right honorable friend!*].

This being so, truly it puts me in mind of another Scripture, that famous Psalm, Sixty-eighth Psalm ;† which indeed is a glorious Prophecy, I am persuaded, of the Gospel Churches,—it may be, of the Jews also. There it prophesies that “He will bring His People again from the depths of the Sea, as once He led Israel through the Red Sea.” And it may be, as some think, God will bring the Jews home to their station “from the isles of the sea,” and answer their expectations “as

\* In some Speech now lost :—probably in many Speeches ; certainly in all manner of Practice and Action.

† We remember it ever since Dunbar morning ; let us read a passage or two of it again : His Excellency and the Little Parliament will perhaps wait a moment : and it may do us good !

‘Let God arise, let His enemies be scattered : let them also that hate Him flee before Him. As smoke is driven away, so drive them away ; as wax melteth before the fire, so let the wicked perish before the presence of God.’ The unhappy.

‘But let the righteous be glad : let them rejoice before God, yea let them rejoice exceedingly. Sing unto God, sing praises to His name. A father of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is God in His Holy Habitation.’—

‘O God, when Thou wentest forth before Thy People, — the Earth shook, the Heavens also dropped. Kings of Armies did flee apace ; and she that tarried at home divided the spoil.’ Ye poor and brave, be ye of courage ! ‘Though ye have lain among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove, covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold.

‘The Hill of God is as the Hill of Bashan ; an high Hill as the Hill of Bashan.’ Inexpugnable, that ! ‘Why leap ye, ye high Hills ? This is the Hill of God which God desireth to dwell in ; yea, the Lord will dwell in it for ever. The chariots of God are twenty-thousand, even thousands of Angels : the Lord is among them, as in Sinai in the holy place.’

from the depths of the sea." But 'at all events' sure I am, when the Lord shall set up the glory of the Gospel Church, it shall be a gathering of people as "out of deep waters," "out of the multitude of waters:" such are His People, drawn out of the multitudes of the Nations and People of this world.—And truly that Psalm is very glorious in many other parts of it: When he gathers them, "great was the company" of them that publish His word. "Kings of Armies did flee apace, and they that tarried at home divided the spoil" [*Consider Charles Stuart, First and Second; and what we see this day!*]; and, "Although ye have lain among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove, covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold" [*Hah!*]. And indeed the triumph of that Psalm is exceeding high and great; and God is accomplishing it. And the close of it,—that closeth with my heart, and I do not doubt with yours, 'The Lord shakes the hills and mountains, and they reel.' And God hath a Hill too; "an high Hill as the Hill of Bashan: and the chariots of God are twenty-thousand, even thousands of Angels, and God will dwell upon this Hill for ever!"—[PROFUL PRO-FANI! *The man is without a soul that looks into this Great Soul of a man, radiant with the splendors of very Heaven, and sees nothing there but the shadow of his own mean darkness. Ape of the Dead Sea, peering askint into the Holy of Holies, let us have done with THY commentaries! Thou canst not fathom it.*]

I am sorry I have troubled you, in such a place of heat as this is, so long. All I have to say, in my own name, and that of my fellow Officers who have joined with me in this work, is: That we shall commend you to the grace of God, to the guidance of His Spirit; 'That' having thus far served you, or rather our Lord Jesus Christ 'in regard to you,' we shall be ready in our stations, according as the Providence of God shall lead us, to be subservient to the 'farther' work of God, and to that Authority which we shall reckon God hath set over us. And though we have no formal thing to present you with, to which the hands, or visible expressions, of the Officers and Soldiers of the three Nations of England, Scotland and Ireland, 'are set;' yet we may say of them, and we may say also with confidence for our brethren at Sea,—with whom neither in Scotland, Ireland, nor at Sea, hath there been any artifice used to persuade their consents to this work,—that nevertheless their consents have flowed in to us from all parts, beyond our expectations: and we may with all confidence say, that as we have their approbation and full consent to the other work, so you have their hearts and affections unto this.\* And not only theirs: we have very many Papers from the

\* 'other work' delicately means *dissolving the old Parliament* · 'this is assembling of you, 'this very thing.'

Churches of Christ throughout the Nation ; wonderfully both approving what hath been done in removing of obstacles, and approving what we have done in this very thing. And having said this, we shall trouble you no more. But if you will be pleased that this Instrument \* be read to you, which I have signed by the advice of the Council of Officers,—we shall then leave you to your own thoughts and the guidance of God ; to dispose of yourselves for a farther meeting, as you shall see cause.†

I have only this to add. The affairs of the Nation lying on our hands to be taken care of ; and we knowing that both the Affairs at Sea, the Armies in Ireland and Scotland, and the providing of things for the preventing of inconveniences, and the answering of emergencies, did require that there should be no Interruption, but that care ought to be taken for these things ; and foreseeing likewise that before you could digest yourselves into such a method, both for place, time and other circumstances, as you shall please to proceed in, some time would be required,—which the Commonwealth could not bear in respect to the managing of things : I have, within a week ‘past,’ set up a Council of State, to whom the managing of affairs is committed. Who, I may say very voluntarily and freely, before they see how the issue of things will be, have engaged themselves in business ; eight or nine of them being Members of the House that late was.—I say I did exercise that power which, I thought, was devolved upon me at that time ; to the end affairs might not have any interval ‘or interruption.’ And now when you are met, it will ask some time for the settling of your affairs and your way. And, ‘on the other hand,’ a day cannot be lost, ‘left vacant,’ but they must be in continual Council till you take farther order. So that the whole matter of their consideration also which regards them is at your disposal, as you shall see cause. And therefore I thought it my duty to acquaint you with thus much, to prevent distractions in your way : That things have been thus ordered ; that your affairs will ‘not stop, but’ go on, ‘in the meanwhile,’—till you see cause to alter this Council ; they having no authority or continuance of sitting, except simply until you take farther order.‡

\* The Instrument is to be found among the Old Pamphlets ; but being of a much lower strain, mere constitutionalities, &c., in phrase and purport alike leaden, we do not read it.

† Report in *Parliamentary History*, and the common Pamphlets, ends here.

‡ Milton State-papers, pp, 106–114 : and *Parliamentary History*, xx, 153–175 ; which latter is identical with Harleian Miscellany (London, 1810) vi., 331–344 Our Report, in some cramp passages, which could not always

The reader has now struggled through this First Speech of my Lord General's; not without astonishment to find that he has some understanding of it. The Editor has had his difficulties: but the Editor too is astonished to consider how such a Speech should have lain so long before the English Nation asking, "Is there no meaning whatever in me, then?"—with negatory response from almost all persons. Incompetent Reporters;—still more the obscene droppings of an extensive Owl-population, the accumulated *guano* of Human Stupor in the course of ages, do render Speeches unintelligible! It ought to be added, that my Lord General always spoke extempore; ready to speak, if his mind were full of meaning; very careless about the words he put it into. And never, except in one instance, which we shall by and by come upon, does he seem to have taken any charge as to what Report might be published of it. One of his Parliaments once asks him for a correct Report of a certain Speech, spoken some days before: he declares, "He cannot remember four lines of it."\* It appears also that his meaning, much as Dryasdust may wonder, was generally very well understood by his audience.—it was not till next generation, when the owl-droppings already lay thick, and Human Stupor had decidedly set in, that the cry of Unintelligibility was much heard of. Tones and looks do much;—yes, and the *having* a meaning in you is also a great help! Indeed, I fancy he must have been an opaque man to whom these utterances of such a man, all in a blaze with such a conviction of heart, had remained altogether dark.

The printed state of this Speech, and still more of some others, will impose hard duties on an Editor; which kind readers must take their share of. In the present case, it is surprising how little change has been needed, beyond the mere punctuation: correct division into sentences. Not the slightest change of meaning has, of course, anywhere seemed, or shall anywhere seem, permissible; nor indeed the twentieth part of that kind of liberty

be indicated without confusion, is a *tertium quid* between these two. Generally throughout we adhere to Milton's, which is the more concise, intelligible and every way better Report.

\* Burton's Diary.



which a skilful Newspaper Reporter takes with every speech he commits to print in our day.

A certain Critic, whom I sometimes cite from, but seldom without some reluctance, winds up his multifarious Commentaries on the present Speech in the following extraordinary way :

‘Intelligent readers,’ says he, ‘have found intelligibility in this Speech of Oliver’s : but to one who has had to read it as a painful Editor, reading every fibre of it with magnifying-glasses, has to do,—it becomes all glowing with intelligibility, with credibility ; with the splendor of genuine Veracity and heroic Depth and Manfulness ;—and seems, in fact, as Oliver’s Speeches generally do, to an altogether singular degree, the express image of the soul it came from !—Is not this the end of all speaking, and wagging of the tongue in every conceivable sort, except the false and accursed sorts ? Shall we call Oliver a *bad* Speaker, then ; shall we not, in a very fundamental sense, call him a good Speaker ?—

‘Art of Speech ? Art of Speech ? The Art of Speech, I take it, will first of all be the art of having something genuine to speak ! Into what strange regions has it carried us, that same sublime “Art,” taken up otherwise ! One of the saddest bewilderments, when I look at all the bearings of it, nay properly the fountain of all the sad bewilderments, under which poor mortals painfully somnambulate in these generations. “I have made an excellent Speech about it, written an excellent Book about it,”—and there an end. How much better, hadst thou done a moderately good deed about it, and not had anything to speak at all ! He who is about *doing* some mute veracity has a right to be heard speaking, and consulting of the doing of it ; and properly no other has. The light of a man shining all as a paltry phosphorescence on the surface of him, leaving the interior dark, chaotic, sordid, dead-alive,—was once regarded as a most mournful phenomenon !

‘False Speech is probably capable of being the falsest and most accursed of all things. False Speech ; so false that it has not even the veracity to know that it is false,—as the poor commonplace *liar* still does ! I have heard Speakers who gave rise to thoughts in me *they* were little dreaming of suggesting ! Is

man then no longer an "Incarnate Word," as Novalis calls him,—sent into this world to utter out of him, and by all means to make audible and visible what of *God's*-Message he has ; sent hither and made alive even for that, and for no other definable object ? Is there no sacredness, then, any longer, in the miraculous tongue of man ? Is his head become a wretched cracked pitcher, on which you jingle to frighten crows, and make bees hive ? He fills me with terror, this two-legged Rhetorical Phantasm ! I could long for an Oliver without Rhetoric at all. I could long for a Mahomet, whose persuasive-eloquence, with wild-flashing heart and scimitar, is : "Wretched mortal, give up that ; or by he Eternal, thy Maker and mine, I will kill thee ! Thou blasphemous scandalous Misbirth of Nature, is not even that the kindest thing I can do for thee, if thou repent not and alter in the name of Allah ?" '—

4\*

## LETTERS CXXVIII., CXXIX.

CONCERNING this Puritan Convention of the Notables, which in English History is called the *Little Parliament*, and derisively *Barebones's Parliament*, we have not much more to say. They are, if by no means the remarkablest Assembly, yet the Assembly for the remarkablest purpose who have ever met in the Modern World. The business is, No less than introducing of the Christian Religion into real practice in the Social Affairs of this Nation. Christian Religion, Scriptures of the Old and New Testament : such, for many hundred years, has been the universal solemnly recognized Theory of all men's Affairs ; Theory sent down out of Heaven itself : but the question is now that of reducing it to Practice in said Affairs ;—a most noble, surely, and most necessary attempt ; which should not have been put off so long in this Nation ! — We have conquered the Enemies of Christ ; let us now, in real practical earnest, set about doing the Commandments of Christ, now that there is free room for us ! Such was the purpose of this Puritan Assembly of the Notables, which History calls the *Little Parliament*, or derisively *Barebones's Parliament*.

It is well known they failed : to us, alas, it is too evident they could not but fail. Fearful impediments lay against that effort of theirs : the sluggishness, the slavish half-and-halfness, the greediness, the cowardice, and general opacity and falsity of some ten million men against it ;—alas, the whole world, and what we call the Devil and all his angels against it ! Considerable angles, human and other : most extensive arrangements, investments, to be sold off at a tremendous sacrifice ;—in general the entire set of luggage-traps and very extensive stock of merchant-goods and real and floating property, amassed by that assiduous Entity above-mentioned, for a thousand years or more ! For these, and also for other obstructions, it could not take effect

at that time ;—and the *Little Parliament* became a *Barebones's Parliament*, and had to go its ways again.

Read these two Letters, of small or no significance as to it or its affairs ; and then let us hasten to the catastrophe.

---

### LETTER CXXVIII.

IN the Commons Journals,\* while this Little Parliament sat, we find that, among other good services, the arrangement of the Customs Department was new-modelled ; that instead of Farmers of the Customs, there was a 'Committee' of the Parliament appointed to regulate and levy that impost ; Committee appointed on the 23d of September, 1653 : among whom we recognize 'Alderman Ireton,' the deceased General's Brother ; 'Mr. Mayor,' of Hursley, Richard Cromwell's Father-in-law ; 'Alderman Titchborne ;' 'Colonel Montague,' afterwards Earl of Sandwich ; and others. It is to this Committee that Oliver's Letter is addressed. It has no date of time : but as the Little Parliament ended, in Self-dissolution and Protectorship, on the 12th of December, the date of the Letter lies between the 23d September and that other limit. My Lord General,—who is himself a Member of the Parliament, he and his chief Officers having been forthwith invited to sit,—feels evidently that his recommendations, when grounded in justice, ought to be attended to.

*For my honored Friends, the Committee for Regulating the  
Customs : These present.*

'Whitehall, October, 1653.'

GENTLEMEN,

I am sorry after recommendation of a Friend of mine the Bearer hereof,—considering him in relation to his poor Parents an object of pity and commiseration, yet well deserving and not less qualified for employment,—he should find such cold success amongst you.

His great necessities and my love once more invite me to write unto

\* vii., 323, 23 September, 1653

you, in his behalf, To bestow on him, if it may not be in the City by reason of multiplicity of suitors, a place in the Out-ports: and I doubt not but his utmost abilities will be improved to the faithful discharging of such trust as you shall impose on him, for the good of the Commonwealth. And thereby you will engage him who remains,

Your affectionate friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

### LETTER CXXIX.

WHO 'Henry Weston' is, or his 'Brother Ford,' or whether 'his House' is in the Rutlandshire 'Oakham' or another, I do not in the least know. Neither has 'Mr. Draper' elsewhere come across me. Happily we can hope he officiates well in Kent; and read this Letter without other light than its own.

*For my honored Friend, Henry Weston, Esquire, at his House  
in Oakham: These.*

'Whitehall,' 16th November, 1653.

SIR, MY NOBLE FRIEND,

Your Brother Ford was lately with me, acquainting me with my presumption in moving for, and your civility in granting, the Advowson of Speldhurst to one Mr. Draper, who is now incumbent there, and who, it seems, was there for three or four years before the death of the old incumbent, by virtue of a sequestration.

Sir, I had almost forgot upon what account I made thus bold with you; but now have fully recollected. I understand the person is very able and honest, well approved of by most of the good Ministers thereabout; and much desired by the honest people who are in a Religious Association in those parts thereabouts. Wherefore I now most heartily own and thank you for your favor showed Mr. Draper for my sake; beseeching the continuance of your respects to the Gentleman,—who shall be very much tied to pay you all service; and so shall, in what lieth in his power

Your affectionate friend to serve you,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* Letter genuine, *teste me*; reference unfortunately lost.

† Additional Ayscough mss, no. 12,098. A Copy, in an old hand, with

And now to Parliament affairs again,—to the catastrophe now nigh.

On the whole, we have to say of this Little Parliament, that it sat for five months and odd days, very earnestly striving; earnestly, nobly,—and by no means unwisely, as the ignorant Histories teach. But the farther it advanced towards real Christianity in human affairs, the louder grew the shrieks of Sham-Christianism everywhere profitably lodged there; and prudent persons, responsible for the issue, discovered that of a truth, for one reason or another, for reasons evident and for reasons not evident, there could be no success according to that method. We said, the History of this Little Parliament lay all buried very deep in the torpors of Human Stupidity, and was not likely ever to be brought into daylight in this world. In their five months time they passed various good Acts; chose, with good insight, a new Council of State; took wise charge of the needful Supplies; did all the routine business of a Parliament in a quite unexceptionable, or even in a superior manner. Concerning their Council of State, I find this Note; which, though the Council had soon to alter itself, and take new figures, may be worth appending here.\*

Routine business done altogether well by this Little Parlia-

this endorsement: 'The Generell Cromwells letter about Spelderst living;' and this Note appended: 'In an old Bible I had from England with other Books, March, 1726.' Some Transatlantic Puritan, to all appearance.

\* Council of State elected,—Tuesday 1st November, 1653 (Commons Journals, vii., 344). The Election is by ballot, 113 Members present; 'Colonel Montague' (Sandwich), 'Colonel Cromwell' (Henry), and 'Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper,' are three of the Four Scrutineers. Among the Names reported as chosen, here are some, with the Numbers voting for them: Lord General Cromwell (113, one and all); Sir Gilbert Pickering (Poet Dryden's Uncle,—110); Desborow (74); Harrison (58); Mayor (of Hursley,—57); Colonel Montague (59); Ashley Cooper (60); Lord Viscount Lisle (Algernon Sidney's Brother,—58); Colonel Norton, idle Dick, recovered from the Pride's Purge again, but liable to relapse again,—57). The Council is of Thirty-one; Sixteen of the Old or Interim Council (above referred to in Cromwell's Speech) are to continue; Fifteen new: these mentioned here are all among the Old, whom the Lord General and his Officers had already nominated.

ment. But, alas, they had decided on abolishing Tithes, on supporting a Christian Ministry by some other method than Tithes;—nay far worse, they had decided on abolishing the Court of Chancery! Finding grievances greater than could be borne; finding, for one thing, ‘Twenty-three thousand Causes of from five to thirty years continuance’ lying undetermined in Chancery, it seemed to the Little Parliament that some Court ought to be contrived which would actually determine these and the like Causes;—and that, on the whole, Chancery would be better for abolition. Vote to that effect stands registered in the Commons Journals;\* but still, for near two hundred years now, only expects fulfilment.—So far as one can discover in the huge twilight of Dryasdust, it was mainly by this attack on the Lawyers, and attempt to abolish Chancery, that the Little Parliament perished. Tithes helped, no doubt; and the clamors of a safely settled Ministry, Presbyterian-Royalist many of them. But the Lawyers exclaimed: “Chancery? Law of the Bible? Do you mean to bring-in the *Mosaic Dispensation*, then; and deprive men of their properties? Deprive men of their properties; and us of our learned wigs and lucrative longwindedness,—with your search for ‘Simple Justice,’ and ‘God’s Law’ instead of Learned-Sergeant’s Law?”—There was immense ‘carousing in the Temple’ when this Parliament ended; as great tremors had been in the like quarters while it continued.†

But in brief, on Friday, the 2d of December, 1653, there came a ‘Report from the Tithes-Committee,’ recommending that Ministers of an incompetent, simoniacal, loose, or otherwise scandalous nature, plainly unfit to preach any Gospel to immortal creatures, should have a Travelling Commission of chosen Puritan Persons appointed, to travel into all Counties, and straightway inspect them, and eject them, and clear Christ’s Church of them:—whereupon there ensued high debates: Accept the Report, or not accept it? High debates, for the space of ten days; with Parliamentary manœuvrings, not necessary to specify here.

\* vii., 296; 5 August, 1653.

† Exact Relation of the Transactions of the late Parliament, by a Member of the same (London, 1654): reprinted in Somers Tracts, vi., 266-84.

Which rose ever higher ; and on Saturday, the 10th, had got so high that, as I am credibly informed, certain leading persons went about colleaguering and consulting, instead of attending Public Worship on the Lord's Day;—and so, on Monday morning early, while the extreme Gospel Party had not yet assembled in the House, it was surreptitiously moved and carried, old Speaker Rouse somewhat treacherously assenting to it, ' That the sitting of this Parliament any longer, as now constituted, will not be for the good of the Commonwealth ; and that therefore it is requisite to deliver up unto the Lord General Cromwell the Powers which we received from him ! ' Whereupon, adds the same Rhadamantine Record, ' the House rose ; and the Speaker, with many of the members of the House, departed out of the House to Whitehall : where they, being the greater number of the Members sitting in Parliament, did, by a Writing,' hastily redacted in the waiting-room there, and signed on separate bits of paper hastily wafered together, ' resign unto his Excellency their said Powers. And Mr. Speaker, attended by the Members, did present the same unto his Excellency accordingly,'—and retired into private life again.\*

The Lord General Cromwell testified much emotion and surprise at this result ;—emotion and surprise which Dryasdust knows well how to interpret. In fact the Lord General is responsible to England and Heaven for this result ; and it is one of some moment ! He and the established Council of State, ' Council of Officers and' non-established ' Persons of Interest in the Nation,' must consider what they will now do !

Clearly enough to them, and to us, there can only one thing be done ; search be made, Whether there is any King, *Könning*, Can-ning, or Supremely Able-Man that you can fall in with, to take charge of these conflicting and colliding elements, drifting towards swift wreck otherwise ;—any ' Parish Constable,' as Oliver himself defines it, to bid good men keep the peace to one another. To your unspeakable good-luck, such Supremely Able-Man, King, Constable, or by whatever name you will call him,

\* Commons Journals, vii., 363 ; Exact Relation, *ubi supra* ; Whitlocke, 5p.51, &c.



is already found,—known to all persons for years past ; your Puritan Interest is not yet necessarily a wreck ; but may still float, and do what farther is in it, while he can float !.

From Monday onwards, the excitement of the public mind in old London and whithersoever the news went, in those winter days, must have been great. The ‘ Lord General called a Council of Officers and other Persons of Interest in the Nation,’ as we said ; and there was ‘ much seeking of God by prayer,’ and abstruse advising of this matter,—the matter being really great and to some of us even awful ! The dialogues, conferences, and abstruse advisings are all lost ; the result we know for certain. Monday was 12th of December ; on Friday, 16th, the result became manifest to all the world : That the ablest of Englishmen, Oliver Cromwell, was henceforth to be recognized for Supremely Able ; and that the Title of him was to be LORD PROTECTOR OF THE COMMONWEALTH OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, AND IRELAND, with ‘ Instrument of Government,’ ‘ Council of Fifteen or of Twenty-one,’ and other necessary less important circumstances, of the like conceivable nature.

The Instrument of Government, a carefully constitutional piece in Forty-two Articles : the Ceremony of Installation, transacted with due simplicity and much modest dignity, ‘ in the Chancery Court in Westminster Hall,’ that Friday afternoon ;—the chair of state, the Judges in their robes, Lord Mayors with caps of maintenance ; the state-coaches, outriders, outrunners, and ‘ great shoutings of the people ;’ the procession from and to Whitehall, and ‘ Mr. Lockier the Chaplain’s Exhortation ’ to us there : these, with the inevitable adjuncts of the case, shall be conceived by ingenious readers, or read in innumerable Pamphlets and Books,\* and omitted here. ‘ His Highness was in a rich but plain suit ; black velvet, with cloak of the same : about his hat a broad band of gold.’ Does the reader see him ? A rather likely figure, I think. Stands some five feet ten or more ; a man of strong solid stature, and dignified, now partly military carriage : the expression of him valor and devout intelligence,—energy and delicacy on a basis of simplicity. Fifty-four years

\* Whitlocke, pp. 552-61 ; Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 131, in Parliamentary History, xx.) ; &c., &c

old, gone April last; brown hair and moustache are getting grey. A figure of sufficient impressiveness;—not lovely to the man-milliner species, nor pretending to be so. Massive stature; big massive head, of somewhat leonine aspect;—wart above the right eyebrow; nose of considerable blunt-aquiline proportions; strict yet copious lips, full of all tremulous sensibilities, and also, if need were, of all fiercenesses and rigors; deep loving eyes, call them grave, call them stern, looking from under those craggy brows as if in lifelong sorrow, and yet not thinking it sorrow, thinking it only labor and endeavor: on the whole, a right noble lion-face and hero-face; and to me royal enough.\* The reader, in his mind, shall conceive this event and its figures.

Conceived too, or read elsewhere than here, shall Dryasdust's multifarious unmelodious commentaries be,—and likewise Anti-Dryasdust's; the two together cancelling one another; and amounting, pretty well by this time, to *zero* for us. 'Love of power,' as flunkeys love it, remains the one credibility for Dryasdust; and will for ever remain. To the valet-soul how will you demonstrate that, in this world, there is or was anything heroic? You cannot do it; you need not try to do it.—I cite with some reluctance from a Manuscript Author, often enough referred to here, the following detached sentences, and so close this Seventh Part.

'Dryasdust knows not the value of a King,' exclaims he; 'the bewildered mortal has forgotten it. Finding King's-cloaks so cheap, hung out on every hedge, and paltry as beggars' gabardines, he says, "What use is in a King? This King's-cloak, if this be your King, is naught!"—

'Power? Love of power? Does "power" mean the faculty of giving places, of having newspaper paragraphs, of being waited on by sycophants? To ride in gilt coaches, escorted by the flunkeyisms and most sweet voices,—I assure thee, it is not the Heaven of all, but only of many! Some born Kings I myself have known, of stout natural limbs, who, in shoes of moderately good fit, found quiet *walking* handier; and crowned

\* Maidston's Letter to Winthrop, in *Thurloe*, i., 763-S; Cooper's *Portraits*; Mask of Cromwell's Face (in the Statuaries' Shops).

themselves, almost too sufficiently, by putting on their own private hat, with some spoken or speechless, "God enable me to be King of what lies under this! For Eternities lie under it, and Infinities,—and Heaven also and Hell. And it is as big as the Universe, this Kingdom; and I am to conquer it, or be for ever conquered by it, now while it is called To-day!"—

'The love of "power," if thou understand what to the manful heart "power" signifies, is a very noble and indispensable love. And here and there, in the outer world, too, there is a due throne for the noble man;—which let him see well that he seize, and valiantly defend against all men and things. God gives it him; let no Devil take it away. Thou also art called by the God's-message: This, if thou canst read the Heavenly omens and dare do them, this work is *thine*. Voiceless, or with no articulate voice, Occasion, god-sent, rushes storming on, amid the world's events; swift, perilous; like a whirlwind, like a fleet lightning-steed: manfully thou shalt clutch it by the mane, and vault into thy seat on it, and ride and guide there, thou! Wreck and ignominious overthrow, if thou have dared when the Occasion was *not* thine: everlasting scorn to thee if thou dare not when it is;—if the cackling of Roman geese and Constitutional ganders, if the clack of human tongues and leading articles, if the steel of armies and the crack of Doom deter thee, when the voice *was* God's!—Yes, this too is in the law for a man, my poor quack-ridden, bewildered Constitutional friends; and we ought to remember this withal. *Thou shalt* is written upon Life in characters as terrible as *Thou shalt not*,—though poor Dryasdust reads almost nothing but the latter hitherto.'

And so we close Part Seventh; and proceed to trace with all piety, what faint authentic vestiges of Oliver's Protectorate .he envious Stupidities have not yet obliterated for us.

**CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.**

---

**PART VIII.**

**FIRST PROTECTORATE PARLIAMENT.**

**1654.**



## LETTERS CXXX.—CXXXIII.

THE 3d of September, ever since Worcester Battle, has been kept as a Day of Thanksgiving ; commemorative of the mercy at Dunbar in 1650, and of the crowning-mercy which followed next year ; —a memorable day for the Commonwealth of England. By Article Seventh of the Instrument of Government, it is now farther provided that a Parliament shall meet on that auspicious Anniversary when it next comes round. September 3d, 1654, then shall the First Protectorate Parliament meet ; successive Parliaments, one at least every Three years, are to follow, but this shall be the First. Not to be dissolved or prorogued for at least Five months. Free Parliament of Four-hundred ; for England Three-hundred-and-forty, for Scotland Thirty, for Ireland Thirty ; fairly chosen by election of the People, according to rules anxiously constitutional, laid down in that same Instrument, —which we do not dwell upon here. Smaller Boroughs are excluded ; among Counties and larger Boroughs is a mere equable division of representatives according to their population ; nobody to vote that has not some clearly visible property to the value of Two-hundred Pounds ; all others to vote, or to be voted for, —except, of course, all such as have appeared against the Parliament in any of these Wars ‘since the First of January, 1642,’ and ‘not since given signal testimony’ of their repenting that step. To appearance, a very reasonable Reform Bill ; —understood to be substantially the same with that invaluable measure once nearly completed by the Rump : only with this essential difference, That the Rump Members are not now to sit by nature and without election ; not now to decide, they, in case of extremity, Thou shalt sit, Thou shalt not sit ; others than they will now decide that, in cases of extremity. How this Parliament, in its Five-months’ Session, will welcome the new Protector and Protectorate is naturally the grand question during those Nine or Ten Months that intervene. A question for all Englishmen ; and most of all

for Oliver Protector ;—who, however, as we can perceive, does not allow it to overawe him very much ; but diligently doing this day the day's duties, hopes he may find, as God has often favored him to do, some good solution for the morrow, whatever the morrow please to be. A man much apt to be overawed by any question that is smaller than Eternity, or by any danger that is lower than God's Displeasure, would not suit well in Oliver's place at present ! Perhaps no more perilous place, that I know clearly of, was ever deliberately accepted by a man. ' The post of honor,'—the post of terror and of danger and forlorn-hope ; this man has all along been used to occupy such.

To see a little what kind of England it was, and what kind of incipient Protectorate it was, take, as usual, the following small and few fractions of Authenticity, of various complexion, fished from the doubtful slumber-lakes and dust vortexes, and hang them out at their places in the void night of things. They are not very luminous ; but if they were well let alone, and the positively tenebrific were well forgotten, they might assist our imaginations in some slight measure.

*Sunday, 18th December, 1653.* A certain loud-tongued, loud-minded Mr. Feak, of Anabaptist-Leveller persuasion, with a Colleague, seemingly Welsh, named Powel, have a Preaching Establishment, this good while past, in Blackfriars ; a Preaching-Establishment every Sunday, which on Monday Evening becomes a National-Charter Convention, as we should now call it : there Feak, Powel and Company are in the habit of vomiting forth from their own inner man, into other inner men greedy of such pabulum, a very flamy fuliginous set of doctrines,—such as the human mind, superadding Anabaptistry to Sansculottism, can make some attempt to conceive. Sunday, the 18th, which is two days after the Lord Protector's Installation, this Feak-Powel meeting was unusually large ; the Feak-Powel inner-man unusually charged. Elements of soot and fire really copious ; fuliginous flamy in a very high degree ! At a time, too, when all Doctrine does not satisfy itself with spouting, but longs to become instant Action. ' Go and tell your Protector,' said the Anabaptist Prophet, ' That he has deceived the Lord's People ; ' that he is a perjured villain,' —' will not reign long,' or I am deceived ; ' will end worse than

the last Protector did,' the tyrant Crooked Richard ! Say, I said it !—A very foul chimney indeed, here got on fire. And 'Major-General Harrison, the most eminent man of the Anabaptist Party, being consulted whether he would own the new Protectoral Government, answered frankly, No ;—was thereupon ordered to retire home to Staffordshire, and keep quiet.\*

Does the reader bethink him of those old Leveller Corporals at Burford, and Diggers at St. George's Hill, five years ago ; of Quakerisms, Calvinistic Sansculottisms, and one of the strangest Spiritual Developments ever seen in any country ? The reader sees here one foul chimney on fire, the Feak-Powel chimney in Blackfriars ; and must consider for himself what masses of combustible material, noble fuel and base soot and smoky explosive fire-damp in the general English Household it communicates with ! Republicans Proper, of the Long Parliament ; Republican Fifth-Monarchists of the Little Parliament ; the solid Ludlows, the fervent Harrisons : from Harry Vane down to Christopher Feak, all manner of Republicans find Cromwell unforgivable. To the Harrison-and-Feak species Kingship in every sort, and government of man by man, is carnal, expressly contrary to various Gospel Strictures. Very horrible for a man to think of governing men ;—whether he ought even to govern cattle, and drive them to field and to needful penfold, 'except in the way of love and persuasion,' seems doubtful to me ! But fancy a Reign of Christ and his Saints ; Christ and his Saints just about to come,—had not Oliver Cromwell stepped in and prevented it ! The reader discerns combustibles enough ; conflagrations, plots, stubborn disaffections, and confusions on the Republican and Republican-Anabaptist side of things. It is the first Plot-department, which my Lord Protector will have to deal with, all his life long. This he must wisely damp down, as he may. Wisely ; for he knows what is noble in the matter, and what is base in it ; and would not sweep the fuel and the soot both out of doors at once.

*Tuesday, 14th February, 1653-4.* 'At the Ship-Tavern in the Old Bailey, kept by Mr. Thomas Amps,' we come upon the second lifelong Plot-department : Eleven truculent, rather thread-

\* Thurloe, i., 641 ;—442, 591, 621.



bare persons, sitting over small drink there, on the Tuesday night considering how the Protector might be assassinated. Poor broken Royalist men ; payless Old-Captains, most of them, or such like ; with their steeple-hats worn very brown, and jackboots slit,—and projects that cannot be executed. Mr. Amps knows nothing of them, except that they came to him to drink ; nor do we. Probe them with questions ; clap them in the Tower for a while.\* Guilty, poor knaves ; but not worth hanging :—disappear again into the general mass of Royalist Plotting, and ferment there.

The Royalists have lain quiet ever since Worcester ; waiting what issue matters would take. Dangerous to meddle with a Rump Parliament, or other steadily regimented thing ; safer if you can find it fallen out of rank ; hopefulest of all, when it collects itself into a Single Head. The Royalists judge, with some reason, that if they could kill Oliver Protector, this Commonwealth were much endangered. In these Easter weeks, too, or Whitsun weeks, there comes ‘from our Court (Charles Stuart’s Court) at Paris,’ great encouragement to all men of spirit in straitened circumstances. A Royal Proclamation “By the King,” drawn up, say some, by Secretary Clarendon ; setting forth that ‘Whereas a certain base mechanic fellow, by name Oliver Cromwell, has usurped our throne, much to our and others’ inconvenience, who-soever will kill the said mechanic fellow, ‘by sword, pistol, or poison,’ shall have 500*l.* a-year settled upon him, with colonelcies in our Army, and other rewards suitable, and be a made man,—‘on the word and faith of a Christian King.’† A Proclamation which cannot be circulated except in secret ; but is well worth reading by all loyal men. And so Royalist Plots also succeed one another, thick and threefold through Oliver’s whole life ;—but cannot take effect. Vain for a Christian King and his cunningest Chancellors to summon all the Sinners of the Earth, and whatsoever of necessitous Truculent-Flunkeyism there may be, and to bid, in the name of Heaven and of Another place, for the Head of Oliver Cromwell : once for all, they cannot have it ;—

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 155).

† Thurloe, ii., 248. ‘Given at Paris 3d May (23d April by old style) 1651.’

not till *he* has entirely done with it, and can make them welcome to their benefit from it! We shall come upon these Royalist Plots, Rebellion Plots, and Assassin Plots, in the order of time; and have to mention them, though with brevity. Oliver Protector, I suppose, understands and understood his Protectorship moderately well, and what Plots and other Hydra-coils were inseparable from it; and contrives to deal with these too, like a conscientious man, and not like a hungry slave.

Secretary Thurloe, once St. John's Secretary in Holland, has come now, ever since the Little-Parliament time, into decided action as Oliver's Secretary, or the State Secretary; one of the expertest Secretaries in the real meaning of the word Secretary, any State or working King could have. He deals with all these Plots; it is part of his function, supervised by his Chief. Mr. John Milton, we all lament to know, has fallen blind in the Public Service; lives now in Bird-cage Walk, still doing a little when called upon; bating no jot of heart or hope. Mr. Milton's notion is, That this Protectorate of his Highness Oliver was a thing called for by the Necessities and the Everlasting Laws; and that his Highness ought now to quit himself like a Christian Hero in it, as in other smaller things, he has been used to do.\*

*March 20th, 1653-4.* By the Instrument of Government, the Lord Protector with his Council,† till once the First Parliament

\* *Defensio Secunda.*

† Fifteen in number, which he may enlarge to Twenty-one, if he see good. Not removable any of them, except by himself with advice of the rest. A very remarkable Majesty's Ministry;—of which, for its own sake and the Majesty's, take this List, as it stood in 1654:

Philip Viscount Lisle (Algernon Sidney's Brother); Fleetwood; Lambert; Montague (of Hinchinbrook); Desborow (Protector's Brother-in-law); Ashley Cooper (Earl of Shaftesbury afterwards); Walter Strickland (Member for Minehead in the Long Parliament, once Ambassador in Holland); Colonel Henry Lawrence (for Westmoreland in the Long Parliament, became *President* of the Council); Mayor (of Hursley); Francis Rouse (our old friend; pious old Major-General Skippon; Colonels Philip Jones and Sydenham; Sirs Gilbert Pickering and Charles Wolseley, of whom my readers do not know much. Fifteen Councillors in all. To whom Nathaniel Fiennes (son of Lord Say and Sele) was afterwards added; with the Earl of Mulgrave; and another, Colonel Mackworth, who soon died (Thurloe, iii., 581) Thurloe is Secretary; and blind Milton, now with assistants,

is Latin Secretary.

were got together, was empowered not only to raise monies for the needful supplies, but also ‘to make Laws and Ordinances for the peace and welfare of these Nations ;’ which latter faculty he is by no means slack to exercise. Of his ‘Sixty Ordinances’ passed in this manner before the Parliament met, which are well approved of by good judges, we cannot here afford to say much : but there is one bearing date as above, which must not be omitted. First Ordinance relating to a Settlement of a Gospel Ministry in this Nation ; Ordinance of immense interest to Puritan England at that time. An object which has long been on the anvil, this same ‘Settlement ;’ much labored at, and striven for, ever since the Long Parliament began : and still, as all confess, no tolerable result has been attained. Yet is it not the greatest object ; properly the soul of all these struggles and confused wrestlings and battlings, since we first met here ? For the thing men are taught, or get to *believe*, that is the thing they will infallibly *do* : the kind of ‘Gospel’ you settle, kind of ‘Ministry’ you settle, or do not settle, the root of all is there ! Let us see what the Lord Protector can accomplish in this business.

Episcopacy being put down, and Presbytery not set up, and Church-Government for years past being all a Church-Anarchy, the business is somewhat difficult to deal with. The Lord Protector, as we find, takes it up in simplicity and integrity, intent upon the real heart or practical outcome of it ; and makes a rather satisfactory arrangement. Thirty-eight chosen Men, the acknowledged Flower of English Puritanism, are nominated by this Ordinance of the 20th of March,\* nominated a Supreme Commission for the Trial of Public Preachers. Any person pretending to hold a Church-living, or levy tithes or clergy-dues in England, has first to be tried and approved by these men. Thirty-eight, as Scobell teaches us : nine are Laymen, our friend old Francis Rouse at the head of them ; twenty-nine are Clergy. His Highness, we find, has not much inquired of what Sect they are ; has known them to be Independents, to be Presbyterians, one or two of them to be even Anabaptists ;—has been careful only of one characteristic, That they were men of wisdom, and had the root

\* Scobell, ii., 279. 80.

of the matter in them. Owen, Goodwin, Sterry, Marshall, Manton, and others not yet quite unknown to men, were among these Clerical *Triers*: the acknowledged Flower of Spiritual England at that time; and intent, as Oliver himself was, with an awful earnestness, on actually having the Gospel taught to England.

This is the First branch or limb of Oliver's scheme for Church-Government, this Ordinance of the 20th March, 1653-4. A Second, which completes what little he could do in the matter at present, developed itself in August following. By this August Ordinance,\* a Body of Commissioners, distinguished Puritan Gentry, distinguished Puritan Clergy, are nominated in all Counties of England, from Fifteen to Thirty in each County; who are to inquire into 'scandalous, ignorant, insufficient,' and otherwise deleterious alarming Ministers of the Gospel; to be a tribunal for judging, for detecting, ejecting them (only in case of ejection, if they have wives, let some small modicum of living be allowed them): and to sit there, judging and sifting, till gradually all is sifted clean, and can be kept clean. This is the Second branch of Oliver's form of Church-Government: this, with the other Ordinance, makes at last a kind of practicable Ecclesiastical Arrangement for England.

A very republican arrangement, such as could be made on the sudden; contains in it, however, the germ or essence of all conceivable arrangements, that of worthy men to judge of the worth of men;—and was found in practice to work well. As indeed, any arrangement will work well, when the men in it have the root of the matter at heart; and, alas, all arrangements, when the men in them have not, work ill and not well! Of the Lay Commissioners, from fifteen to thirty in each County, it is remarked that not a few are political enemies of Oliver's: friends or enemies of his, Oliver hopes they are men of pious probity, and friends to the Gospel in England. My Lord General Fairfax, the Presbyterian; Thomas Scot, of the Long Parliament, the fanatical Republican; Lords Wharton, Say, Sir Arthur Haselrig, Colonel Robert Blake, Mayor of Hursley, Dunch of Pusey, Montague of Hinchinbrook, and other persons known to us,—are of these

\* 28 August, 1654 (Scobell, ii. 335-47).

Commissioners. Richard Baxter, who seldom sat, is one of the Cergy for his County: he testifies, not in the willingest manner, being no friend to Oliver, That these Commissioners, of one sort and the other, with many faults, did sift out the deleterious alarming Ministers of the Gospel, and put in the salutary in their stead, with very considerable success,—giving us ‘able, serious Preachers who lived a godly life, of what tolerable opinion soever they were;’ so that ‘many thousands of souls blessed God’ for what they had done; and grieved sore when, with the return of the Nell-Gwynn Defender, and his Four Surplices or what remained of them, it was undone again.\* And so with these *Triers* and these *Expurgators* both busy, and a faithful eye to watch their procedure, we will hope the Spiritual Teaching-Apparatus of England stood now on a better footing than usual, and actually succeeded in teaching somewhat.

Of the Lord Protector’s other Ordinances; Ordinance ‘declaring the Law of Treason,’ Ordinances of finance, of Amnesty for Scotland, of Union with Scotland, and other important matters, we must say nothing. One elaborate Ordinance, ‘in sixty-seven Articles,’ for ‘Reforming the Court of Chancery,’ will be afterwards alluded to with satisfaction, by the Lord Protector himself. Elaborate Ordinance; containing essential improvements, say some;—which has perhaps saved the Court of Chancery from abolition for a while longer! For the rest, ‘not above Two-hundred Hackney-coaches’ shall henceforth be allowed to ply in this Metropolis and six miles round it; the ever-increasing number of them, blocking up our thoroughfares, threatens to become insupportable.†

*April 14th, 1654.* This day, let it be noted for the sake of poor Editors concerned with undated Letters, and others, his Highness removed from his old Lodging in the Cockpit, into new properly Royal Apartments in Whitehall, now ready for him,‡ and lived there henceforth, usually going out to Hampton Court on the Saturday afternoon. He has ‘assumed somewhat of the state of a King;’ due ceremonial, decent observance beseeeming

\* Baxter’s Life, Part i., 72.

† Scobell, ii., 313; Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 139).

‡ Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 139).

the Protector of the Commonwealth of England; life-guards, ushers, state-coaches,—in which my erudite friend knows well what delight this Lord Protector had! Better still, the Lord Protector has concluded good Treaties; received congratulatory Embassies,—France, Spain itself have sent Embassies. Treaty with the Dutch, with Denmark, Sweden, Portugal :\* all much to our satisfaction. Of the Portuguese Treaty there will perhaps another word be said. As for the Swedish, this, it is well known, was managed by our learned friend Bulstrode at Upsal itself; whose Narrative of that formidable Embassy exists, a really curious life-picture by our Pedant friend; whose qualities are always fat and good;—whose parting from poor Mrs. Whitlocke at Chelsea, in those interesting circumstances, may be said to resemble that of Hector from Andromache, in some points.

And now for our Two small Letters, for our First Protectorate Parliament, without waste of another word!

---

### LETTER CXXX.

*For my loving Brother, Richard Mayor, Esquire, at Hursley  
in Hampshire : These.*

‘Whitehall,’ 4th May, 1654.

DEAR BROTHER,

I received your loving Letter; for which I thank you; and surely were it fit to proceed in that Business, you should not in the least have been put upon anything but the trouble; for indeed the land in Essex, with some money in my hand, should have gone to wards it.

But indeed I am so unwilling to be a seeker after the world, having had so much favor from the Lord in giving me so much without seeking; and ‘am’ so unwilling that men should think me so, which they will though you only appear in it (for they will, by one means or other, know it),—that indeed I dare not meddle nor proceed therein. Thus I have told you my plain thoughts.

\* Dutch Treaty signed, 5 April, 1654; Swedish, 28 April; Portuguese, 10 July; Danish Claims settled, 3. July (Godwin, iv., 49–56).

My hearty love I present to you and my Sister, my blessing and love  
to dear Doll and the little one. With love to all,

I rest,

Your loving brother,

OLIVER P.\*

A 'business' seemingly of making an advantageous purchase of land for Richard ; which Mayor will take all the trouble of, and even advance the money for ; but which Oliver P., for good reasons given, 'dare not meddle' with. No man can now guess what land it was,—nor need much. In the Pamphletary dust-mountains is a confused story of Cornet Joyce's,† concerning Fawley Park in Hampshire ; which, as the dim dateless indications point to the previous winter or summer, and to the 'Lord General Cromwell' as looking towards that property for his Son Richard,—may be the place, for aught we know ! The story sets forth, with the usual bewildered vivacity of Joyce : How Joyce, the same who took the King at Holmby, and is grown now a noisy Anabaptist and Lieutenant-Colonel,—how Joyce, I say, was partly minded and fully entitled to purchase Fawley Park, and Richard Cromwell was minded and not fully entitled : how Richard's Father thereupon dealt treacherously with the said Joyce ; spake softly to him, then quarrelled with him, menaced him (owing to Fawley Park) ; nay ended by flinging him into prison, and almost reducing him to his needle and thimble again,—greatly to the enagement and distraction of the said Joyce. All owing to Fawley Park, thinks Joyce and prints ;—so that my Lord Protector, if this Park be the place, is very wise 'not to meddle or proceed therein.' And so we leave it.

---

#### LETTER CXXXI.

MONK, in these summer months, has a desultory kind of Rebellion in the Highlands, Glencairn's or Middleton's Rebellion, to

\* Noble, i., 330 ; Harris, p. 515 :—one of the Pusey Letters.

\* True Narrative of the Causes of the Lord General Cromwell's anger and indignation against Lieutenant-Colonel George Joyce : reprinted (without date) in *Harleian Miscellany*, v., 557, &c

deal with ; and is vigorously coercing and strangling it. Colonel Alured, an able officer, but given to Anabaptist notions, has been sent into Ulster to bring over certain forces to assist Monk. His loose tongue, we find, has disclosed designs or dispositions in him which seem questionable. The Lord Protector sees good to revoke his Commission to Alured, and order him up to Town.

*'To the Lord Fleetwood, Lord Deputy of Ireland: These.'*

*'Whitehall,' 16th May, 1654.*

SIR,

By the Letter I received from you, and by the information of the Captain you sent to me, I am sufficiently satisfied of the evil intentions of Colonel Alured ; and by some other considerations amongst ourselves, tending to the making up a just suspicion,—by the advice of friends here, I do revoke Colonel Alured from that Employment.

Wherefore I desire you to send for him to return to you to Dublin, and that you cause him to deliver up the Instructions and Authorities into your hands, which he hath in reference to that Business ; as also such monies and accounts concerning the same,—according to the Letter, herein enclosed, directed to him, which I entreat you to deliver when he comes to you.

I desire 'you' also, to the end the Service may not be neglected, nor 'for' one day stand, it being of so great concernment, To employ some able Officer to assist in Colonel Alured's room, until the men be shipped off for their design. We purpose also, God willing, to send one very speedily who, we trust, shall meet them at the place, to command in chief. As for provision of victual and other necessaries, we shall hasten them away ; desiring that these Forces may by no means stay in Ireland ; because we purpose they shall meet their provision in the place they are designed 'for.'

If any farther discovery be with you about any other passages on Colonel Alured's part, I pray examine them, and speed them to us ; and send Colonel Alured over hither with the first opportunity. Not having more upon this subject at present,

I rest,

Your loving father,

OLIVER P.

'P. S.' I desire you that the Officer, whom you appoint to assist the shipping of the Forces, may have the money in Colonel Alured's hands, for carrying on the Service ; and also that he may have what



remains at Carrickfergus for the Commander-in-Chief, who shall call for it there.\*

This is the Enclosure above spoken of:

LETTER CXXXII.

*'To Colonel Alured: These.'*

16th May, 1654.

SIR,

I desire you to deliver up into the hands of Lieutenant-General Fleetwood such Authorities and Instructions as you had for the prosecution of the Business of the Highlands in Scotland; and 'that' you forthwith repair to me to London; the reason whereof you shall know when you come hither, which I would have you do with all speed. I would have you also give an account to the Lieutenant-General, before you come away, how far you have proceeded in this Service, and what money you have in your hands, which you are to leave with him

I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

This Colonel Alured is one of several Yorkshire Alureds somewhat conspicuous in these wars; whom we take to be Nephews or Sons of the valuable Mr. Alured or Ald'red who wrote 'to old Mr. Chamberlain,'—in the last generation, one morning, during the Parliament of 1628, when certain honorable Gentlemen held their Speaker down,—a Letter which we thankfully read.‡ One of them, John, was Member in this Long Parliament; a Colonel too, and King's Judge; who is now dead. Here is another, Colonel Matthew Alured, a distinguished soldier and republican; who is not dead; but whose career of usefulness is here ended. 'Repairing forthwith to London,' to the vigilant Lord Protector, he gives what account he can of himself; none that will hold water, I perceive; lingers long under a kind of arrest 'at the Mews' or elsewhere; soliciting either freedom and renewed favor, or a fair trial and punishment; gets at length committal to the Tower, trial by Court Martial,—dismissal from the service.§ A

\* Thurloe, ii., 285.

† Ibid., 286.

‡ Vol. i., p. 58 *et seq.*

§ Whitlocke, pp. 499, 510; Thurloe, ii., 294, 313, 414; Burton's *Diary* (London, 1828), iii., 46; Commons Journals, vii., 678.

fate like that of several others in a similar case to his. Poor Alured! But what could be done with him? He had Republican Anabaptist notions; he had discontents, enthusiasms, which might even ripen into tendencies to correspond with Charles Stuart. Who knows if putting him in a stone waistcoat, and general strait-waistcoat of a mild form, was not the mercifulest course that could be taken with him?

He must stand here as the representative to us of one of the fatallest elements in the new Lord Protector's position: the Republican discontents and tendencies to plot, fermenting in his own Army. Of which we shall perhaps find elsewhere room to say another word. Republican Overton, Milton's friend, whom we have known at Hull and elsewhere; Okey, the fierce dragoon Colonel, and zealous Anabaptist; Alured whom we see here; Ludlow sitting sulky in Ireland: all these are already summoned up, or about being summoned, to give account of themselves. Honorable, brave and faithful men: it is, as Oliver often says, the saddest thought of his heart that he must have old friends like them for enemies! But he cannot help it; they will have it so. They must go their way, he his.

Much need of vigilance in this Protector! Directly on the back of these Republican commotions, come out Royalist ones; with which however the Protector is less straitened to deal. Lord Deputy Fleetwood has not yet received his Letter at Dublin, when here in London emerges a Royalist Plot; the first of any gravity; known in the old Books and State-Trials as *Vowel and Gerard's Plot*, or *Somerset Fox's Plot*. Plot for assassinating the Protector, as usual. Easy to do it, as he goes to Hampton Court on a Saturday,—Saturday, the 20th of May, for example. Provide thirty stout men; and do it then. Gerard, a young Royalist Gentleman, connected with Royalist Colonels, afterwards Earls of Macclesfield,—he will provide Five-and-twenty; some Major Henshaw, Colonel Finch, or I know not who, shall bring the other Five. 'Vowel, a Schoolmaster at Islington,' who taught many young gentlemen,' strong for Church and King, cannot act in the way of shooting; busies himself consulting, and providing arms. 'Billingsley, the Butcher, in Smithfield,' he, aided by Vowel, could easily 'seize the Troopers' horses grazing in Islington fields;

while others of us unawares fall upon the soldiers at the Mews ? Easy then to proclaim King Charles in the City ; after which Prince Rupert arriving with ‘ Ten-thousand Irish, English and French,’ and all the Royalists rising,—the King should have his own again, and we were all made men ; and Oliver once well killed, the Commonwealth itself were as good as dead ! Saturday, the 20th of May : then, say our Paris expresses, then !—

Alas, in the very birthtime of the hour, ‘ five of the Conspirators are seized in their beds ;’ Gerard, Vowel, all the leaders are seized ; Somerset Fox confesses for his life ; whosoever is guilty can be seized : and the Plot is like water spilt upon the ground ! A High Court of Justice must decide upon it ; and with Gerard and Vowel it will probably go hard.

---

### LETTER CXXXIII.

REFERS to a small private or civic matter : the Vicarage of Christ-Church, Newgate Street, the patronage of which belongs to ‘ the Mayor, Commonalty and Citizens of London as Governors of the Royal Hospital of St. Bartholomew’ ever since Henry the Eighth’s time.\* The former incumbent, it would seem, had been removed by the Council of State ; some Presbyterian probably, who was not without cause offensive to them. If now the Electors and the State could both agree on Mr. Turner,—it would ‘ silence’ several questions, thinks the Lord Protector. Whether they did agree ? Who ‘ Mr. Turner,’ of such ‘ repute for piety and learning,’ was ? These are questions.

*To the Right Honorable Sir Thomas Rymer, Knight, Lord Mayor of London : These.*

‘ Whitehall,’ 5th July, 1654.

MY LORD MAYOR,

It is not my custom now, nor shall be, without some special cause moving, to interpose anything to the hindrance of any in the free course of their presenting persons in the Public Ministry.

\* Elmes’s Topographical Dictionary of London, *in voce*.



The High Court of Justice has sat upon Vowel and Gerard; found them both guilty of High Treason: they lie under sentence of death, while this Letter is a-writing; are executed five days hence, 10th July, 1654; and make an edifying end.\* Vowel was hanged at Charing Cross in the morning; strong for Church and King. The poor young Gerard, being of gentle blood and a soldier, petitioned to have beheading; and had it, the same evening, in the Tower. So ends Plot First. Other Royalists, Plotters or suspect of Plotting,—Ashburnham, who rode with poor Charles First to the Isle of Wight on a past occasion; Sir Richard Willis, who, I think, will be useful to Oliver by and by,—these and a list of others† were imprisoned; were questioned, dismissed; and the Assassin Project is rather cowed down for a while.

Writs for the New Parliament are out, and much electioneering interest over England: but there is still an anecdote connected with this poor Gerard and the 10th of July, detailed at great length in the old Books, which requires to be mentioned here. About an hour after Gerard, there died, in the same place by the same judicial axe, a Portuguese Nobleman, Don Pantaleon Sa, whose story, before this tragic end of it, was already somewhat twisted up with Gerard's. To wit, on the 23d of November last this same young Major Gerard was walking in the crowd of Exeter 'Change, where Don Pantaleon, Brother of the Portuguese Ambassador, chanced also to be. Some jostling of words, followed by drawing of rapiers, took place between them; wherein as Don Pantaleon had rather the worst, he hurried home to the Portuguese Embassy; armed some twenty of his followers, in headpieces, breastpieces, with sword and pistol, and returned to seek revenge. Gerard was gone; but another man, whom they took for him, these rash Portugals slew there; and had to be repressed, after much other riot, and laid in custody, by the watch or soldiery. Assize-trial, in consequence, for Don Pantaleon; clear Trial in the 'Upper Bench Court,' jury half foreigners; and rigorous sentence of death;—much to Don Pantaleon's amazement, who pleaded and got his Brother to plead the rights

\* State Trials (London, 1810), v. 516–39.

† Newspapers, 1–8 June, 1654 (in Cromwelliana, p. 143).

of Ambassadors, all manner of rights and considerations ; all to no purpose. The Lord Protector would not and could not step between a murderer and the Law : poor Don Pantaleon perished on the same block with Gerard ; two Tragedies, once already in contact, had their fifth-act together. Don Pantaleon's Brother, all sorrow and solicitation being fruitless, signed the Portuguese Treaty that very day, and instantly departed for his own country with such thoughts as we may figure.\*

\* Whitloc ८३, pp. 550, 577.

## SPEECH II.

BUT now the new Parliament has got itself elected ; not without much interest :—the first Election there has been in England for fourteen years past. Parliament of Four-hundred, thirty Scotch, thirty Irish ; freely chosen according to the Instrument, according to the Bill that was in progress when the Rump disappeared. What will it say to these late inarticulate births of Providence, and high transactions ? Something edifying, one may hope.

Open Malignants, as we know, could not vote or be voted for, to this Parliament ; only active Puritans or quiet Neutrals, who had clear property to the value of 200*l*. Probably as fair a Representative as, by the rude method of counting heads, could well be got in England. The bulk of it, I suppose, consists of constitutional Presbyterians and use-and-wont Neutrals ; it well represents the arithmetical account of heads in England : whether the real divine and human value of thinking-souls in England,—that is a much deeper question ; upon which the Protector and this First Parliament of his may much disagree. It is the question of questions, nevertheless ; and he that can answer it best will come best off in the long-run. It was not a successful Parliament this, as we shall find. The Lord Protector and it differed widely in certain fundamental notions they had !—

We recognize old faces, in fair proportion, among those Four-hundred ;—many new withal, who never become known to us. Learned Bulstrode, now safe home from perils in Hyperborean countries, is here ; elected for several places, the truly valuable man. Old-Speaker Lenthall sits, old Major-General Skippon, old Sir William Masham, old Sir Francis Rouse. My Lord Herbert (Earl of Worcester's son) is here ; Owen, Doctor of Divinity, for Oxford University ;—a certain not entirely useless Guibon Goddard, for the Town of Lynn, to whom we owe some Notes of the procedure. Leading Officers and high Official persons have

been extensively elected ; several of them twice and thrice : Fleetwood, Lambert, the Claypoles, Dunches, both the young Cromwells ; Montague for his County, Ashley Cooper for his. On the other hand, my Lord Fairfax is here ; nay Bradshaw, Haselrig, Robert Wallop, Wildman, and Republicans are here. Old Sir Harry Vane ; not young Sir Harry, who sits meditative in the North. Of Scotch members we mention only Laird Swinton, and the Earl of Hartfell ; of the Irish, Lord Broghill and Commissary-General Reynolds, whom we once saw fighting well in that country.\* And now hear the authentic Bulstrode ; and then the Protector himself.

‘*September 3d, 1654.*—The Lord’s day, yet the day of the Parliament’s meeting. The Members met in the afternoon at sermon, in the Abbey Church at Westminster ; after sermon they attended the Protector in the Painted Chamber ; who made a Speech to them of the cause of their summons,’ Speech unreported ; ‘after which, they went to the House, and adjourned to the next morning.

‘*Monday, September 4th.*—The Protector rode in state from Whitehall to the Abbey Church in Westminster. Some hundreds of Gentlemen and Officers went before him bare ; with the Life-guard ; and next before the coach, his pages and laqueys richly clothed. On the one side of his coach went Strickland, one of his Council, and Captain of his Guard, with the Master of the Ceremonies ; both on foot. On the other side went Howard,† Captain of the Life-guard. In the coach with him were his son Henry, and Lambert ; both sat bare. After him came Claypole, Master of the Horse ; with a gallant led horse richly trapped. Next came the Commissioners of the Great Seal, Lisle, Widdrington, and I ; ‘Commissioners of the Treasury, and divers of the Council in coaches ; last the ordinary Guards.

‘He alighting at the Abbey Church door,’ and entering, ‘the Officers of the Army and the Gentlemen went first ; next them four maces ; then the Commissioners of the Seal, Whitlocke carrying the Purse ; after, Lambert carrying the Sword bare :

\* Letter LXXII. vol i., p. 387.

† Colonel Charles, ancestor of the Earl of Carlisle.



the rest followed. His Highness was seated over against the Pulpit; the Members of the Parliament on both sides.

‘After the sermon, which was preached by Mr. Thomas Goodwin, his Highness went, in the same equipage, to the Painted Chamber. Where he took seat in a chair of state set upon steps,’ raised chair with a canopy over it, under which his Highness sat covered, ‘and the Members upon benches round about sat all bare. All being silent, his Highness,’ rising, ‘put off his hat, and made a large and subtle speech to them.’\*

Here is a Report of the Speech, ‘taken by one who stood very near,’ and ‘published† to prevent mistakes.’ As we, again, stand at some distance,—two centuries with their chasms and ruins,—our hearing is nothing like so good! To help a little, I have, with reluctance, admitted from the latest of the Commentators a few annotations; and intercalated them the best I could; suppressing very many. Let us listen well; and again we shall understand somewhat.

GENTLEMEN,

You are met here on the greatest occasion that, I believe, England ever saw; having upon your shoulders the Interests of Three great Nations with the territories belonging to them;—and truly, I believe I may say it without any hyperbole, you have upon your shoulders the Interest of all the Christian People in the world. And the expectation is, that I should let you know, as far as I have cognisance of it, the occasion of your assembling together at this time.

It hath been very well hinted to you this day,‡ that you come hither to settle the Interests above mentioned: for your work here, in the issue and consequences of it, *will* extend so far, ‘even to all Christian people.’ In the way and manner of my speaking to you, I shall study plainness; and to speak to you what is truth, and what is upon my heart, and what will in some measure reach to these great concerns.

After so many changings and turnings, which this Nation hath labored under,—to have such a day of hope as this is, and such a door of hope opened by God to us, truly I believe, some months since, would have been beyond all our thoughts!—I confess it would have been worthy of such a meeting as this is, To have remembered§ that which was the **rise**

\* Whitlocke, p. 582.

† By G. Sawbridge, at the *Bible* on Ludgate Hill, London, 1654.

‡ in the Sermon we have just heard.

§ commemorated.

‘of,’ and gave the first beginning to all these Troubles which have been upon this Nation: and to have given you a series of the Transactions,—not of men, but of the Providence of God, all along unto our late changes: as also the ground of our first undertaking to oppose that usurpation and tyranny\* which was upon us, both in civils and spirituals; and the several grounds particularly applicable to the several changes that have been. But I have two or three reasons which divert me from such a way of proceeding at this time.

If I should have gone in that way, then’ that which lies upon my heart ‘as to these things,’ which is ‘so’ written there that if I would blot it out I could not,—would ‘itself’ have spent this day: the providences and dispensations of God have been so stupendous. As David said in the like case, *Psalms* xl., 5, “Many, O Lord my God, are thy wonderful works which thou hast done, and thy thoughts which are to us-ward; they cannot be reckoned up in order unto thee: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.”—Truly, another reason, unexpected by me, you had to-day in the Sermon:† you had much recapitulation of Providence; much allusion to a state and dispensation in respect of discipline and correction, of mercies and deliverances, ‘to a state and dispensation similar to ours,’—to, in truth, the only parallel of God’s dealing with us that I know in the world, which was largely and wisely held forth to you this day: To Israel’s bringing out of Egypt through a wilderness by many signs and wonders, towards a Place of Rest,—I say *towards* it.‡ And that having been so well remonstrated to you this day, is another argument why I shall not trouble you with a recapitulation of those things;—though they are things which I hope will never be forgotten, because written in better Books than those of paper;—written, I am persuaded, in the heart of every good man!

‘But’ a third reason was this: What I judge to be the end of your meeting, the great end, which was likewise remembered to you this day;§ to wit, Healing and Settling. The remembering of Transactions too particularly, perhaps instead of healing,—at least in the hearts of many of you,—might set the wound fresh a-bleeding. ‘And’ I must profess this unto you, whatever thoughts pass upon me: That if this day, if this meeting, prove *not* healing, what shall we do! But, as I

\* Of Charles, Wentworth, Laud and Company.

† This Sermon of Goodwin’s is not in the collected Edition of his Works; not among the King’s Pamphlets; not in the Bodleian Library. We gather what the subject was, from this Speech, and know nothing of it otherwise.

‡ not yet at it; *nota bene*.

§ in the Sermon.

said before, I trust it is in the minds of you all, and much more in the mind of God, to cause healing. It must be first in His mind :—and He being pleased to put it into yours, this will be a Day indeed, and such a Day as generations to come will bless you for !—I say, for this and the other reasons, I have forborne to make a particular remembrance and enumeration of things, and of the manner of the Lord's bringing us through so many changes and turnings as have passed upon us.

Howbeit, I think it will be more than necessary to let you know, at least so well as I may, in what condition this Nation, or rather these Nations were, when the present Government\* was undertaken. And for order's sake : It's very natural to consider what our condition was, in Civils ; 'and then also' in Spirituals.

What was our condition ! Every man's hand almost was against his brother ; at least his heart 'was ;' little regarding anything that should cement, and might have a tendency in it to cause us to grow into one. All the dispensations of God ; His terrible ones, when He met us in the way of His judgment† in a Ten-years Civil War ; and His merciful ones : they did not, they did not work upon us !† 'No.' But we had our humors and interests ;—and indeed I fear our humors went for more with us than even our interests. Certainly, as it falls out in such cases, our passions were more than our judgments.—Was not, everything almost grown arbitrary ? Who of us knew where or how to have right 'done him,' without some obstruction or other intervening ? Indeed we were almost grown arbitrary in everything.

What was the face that was upon our affairs as to the Interest of the Nation ? As to the Authority in the Nation ; to the Magistracy ; to the Ranks and Orders of men,—whereby England hath been known for hundreds of years ? [*The Levellers* !]. A nobleman, a gentleman, a yeoman ; 'the distinction of these :' that is a good interest of the Nation, and a great one ! The 'natural' Magistracy of the Nation, was it not almost trampled under foot, under despite and contempt, by men of Levelling principles ? I beseech you, For the orders of men and ranks of men, did not that Levelling principle tend to the reducing of all to an equality ? Did it 'consciously' think to do so ; or did it 'only unconsciously' practise towards that for property and interest ? 'At all events,' what was the purport of it but to make the Tenant as liberal a fortune as the Landlord ? Which, I think, if obtained, would not have lasted

\* Protectorate.

† punishment for our sins.

‡ Reiteration of the word is not an uncommon mode of emphasis with Oliver.

long! The men of that principle, after they had served their own turns, would *then* have cried up property and interest fast enough!—This instance is instead of many. And that the thing did ‘and might well’ extend far, is manifest; because it was a pleasing voice to all Poor Men, and truly not unwelcome to all Bad Men. [*Far extended classes, these two both!*] To my thinking, this is a consideration which, in your endeavors after settlement, you will be so well minded of, that I might have spared it here: but let that pass.—

‘Now as to Spirituals.’ Indeed in Spiritual things the case was more sad and deplorable ‘still;’—and that was told to you this day eminently. The prodigious blasphemies; contempt of God and Christ, denying of Him, contempt of Him and His ordinances, and of the Scriptures: a spirit visibly acting\* those things foretold by Peter and Jude; yea those things spoken of by Paul to Timothy! Paul declaring some things to be worse than the Antichristian state (of which he had spoken in the *First to Timothy*, Chapter fourth, verses first and second, ‘under the title of the Latter Times’), tells us what should be the lot and portion of the *Last Times*. He says (*Second to Timothy*, Chapter third, verses second, third, fourth), “In the Last Days perilous times shall come; men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful,” and so on. But in speaking of the Antichristian state, he told us (*First to Timothy*, Chapter fourth, verses first and second), that “in the *latter* days” that state shall come in; ‘not the *last* days but the *latter*,’—wherein “there shall be a departing from the faith, and a giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils, speaking lies in hypocrisy,” and so on. This is only his description of the *latter* times, or those of Antichrist; and we are given to understand that there are *last* times coming, which will be worse!†—And surely it

\* A general temper visibly bringing out in practice.

† There is no express mention of Antichrist either here or elsewhere in the Text of *Timothy* at all; but, I conclude, a full conviction on the part of Cromwell and all sound Commentators that Antichrist is indubitably shadowed forth there. Antichrist means, with them and him, the Pope; to whom Laud, &c., with his ‘four surplices at Allhallowtide’ and other clothweb and cobweb furniture, are of kindred. “We have got rid of Antichrist,” he seems to intimate, “we have got pretty well done with Antichrist: and are we now coming to something *worse*? To the Levellers, namely! The *Latter* times are over, then; and we are coming now into the *Last* times!” It is on this contrast of comparative and superlative, *Latter* and *Last*, that Oliver’s logic seems to ground itself: Paul says nothing of Antichrist, nor anything directly of the one time being worse or better than the other; only the one time is ‘*latter*,’ the other is ‘*last*.’—This paragraph is not impor-

may be feared, these are *our* times. For when men forget all rules of Law and Nature, and break all the bonds that fallen man hath on him 'obscuring' the remainder of the image of God in their nature, which they cannot blot out, and yet shall endeavor to blot out, "having a form of godliness without the power,"—"surely" these are sad tokens of the last times!

And indeed the character wherewith this spirit and principle is described in that place 'of Scripture,' is so legible and visible, that he who runs may read it to be amongst us. For by such "the grace of God is turned into wantonness," and Christ and the Spirit of God made a cloak for all villany and spurious apprehensions. [*Threatening to go a strange course, those Antinomian, Levelling, day-dreaming Delusionists of ours!*] And though nobody will own these things publicly as to practice, the things being so abominable and odious; yet 'the consideration' how this principle extends itself, and whence it had its rise, makes me to think of a Second sort of Men, 'tending in the same direction;' who, it's true, as I said, will not practise nor own these things, yet can tell the Magistrate "That he hath nothing to do with men holding such notions: These, 'forsooth,' are matters of conscience and opinion: they are matters of Religion; what hath the Magistrate to do with these things? He is to look to "the outward man, not to the inward,"—"and so forth." And truly it so happens that though these things do break out visibly to all, yet the principle wherewith these things are carried on so forbids the Magistrate to meddle with them, that it hath hitherto kept the offenders from punishment.\*

Such considerations, and pretensions to "liberty of conscience," 'what are they leading us towards!' Liberty of Conscience, and Liberty of

tant: but to gain any meaning from it whatever, some small changes have been necessary. I do not encumber the reader with *double* samples of what at best is grown obsolete to him: such as wish to see the original unadulterated unintelligibility, will find it, in clear print, p. 321, vol. xx., of *Parliamentary History*, and satisfy themselves whether I have read well or ill.

\* The latest of the Commentators says: 'This drossy paragraph has not much Political Philosophy in it, according to our modern established Litany of "toleration," "freedom of opinion," "no man responsible for what opinions he may form," &c., &c.; but it has some honest human sagacity in it, of a much more perennial and valuable character. Worth looking back upon, worth looking up towards,—as the blue skies and stars might be, if through the great deep element of "temporary London Fog" there were any chance of seeing them!—Strange exhalations have risen upon us, and the Fog is very deep: nevertheless very indubitably the stars still *are*.

the Subject,—two as glorious things to be contended for, as any that God hath given us; yet both these abused for the patronising of villanies! Insomuch that it hath been an ordinary thing to say, and in dispute to affirm, “That the restraining of such pernicious notions was not in the Magistrate’s power; he had nothing to do with it. Not so much as the printing of a Bible in the Nation for the use of the People, ‘was competent to the Magistrate,’ lest it should be imposed upon the consciences of men,”—for “they would receive the same traditionally and implicitly from the Magistrate, if it were thus received! The afore-mentioned abominations did thus swell to this height among us.

‘So likewise’ the axe was laid to the root of the Ministry.\* It was Antichristian, it was Babylonish, ‘said they.’ It suffered under such a judgment, that the truth is, as the extremity was great according to the former system;† I wish it prove not as great according to this. The former extremity ‘we suffered under’ was, That no man, though he had never so good a testimony, though he had received gifts from Christ, might preach, unless ordained. So now ‘I think we are’ at the other extremity, when’ many affirm, That he who is ordained hath a nullity, or Antichristianism, stamped ‘thereby’ upon his calling: so that he ought not to preach, or not be heard.—I wish it may not be too justly said, That there was severity and sharpness ‘in our old system!’ Yea, too much of an imposing spirit in matters of conscience; a spirit Unchristian enough in any times, most unfit for these ‘times;’—denying liberty ‘of conscience’ to men who have earned it with their blood; who have earned civil liberty, and religious also, for those [*Stifled murmurs from the Presbyterian Sect.*] who would thus impose upon them!

We may reckon, among these our Spiritual evils, an evil that hath more refinedness in it, more color for it, and hath deceived more people of integrity than the rest have done;—for few have been caught by the former mistakes except such as have apostatized from their holy profession, such as being corrupt in their consciences have been forsaken by God, and left to such noisome opinions. But, I say, there is another error of more refined sort; ‘which’ many honest people whose hearts are sincere, many of them belonging to God, ‘have fallen into:’ and that is the mistaken notion of the Fifth Monarchy—

[Yes, your Highness!—But will his Highness and the old Parliament be pleased here to pause a little, till a faithful Editor take the great liberty of explaining somewhat to the modern part of

\* Preaching Clergy.

† ‘On that hand’ *in orig.* He alludes to the Presbyterian system.

the audience? Here is a Note saved from destruction; not without difficulty. To his Highness and the old Parliament it will be inaudible; to them, standing very impassive,—serene, immovable in the fixedness of the old Eternities,—it will be no hardship to wait a little! And to us who still live and listen, it may have its uses.

‘The common mode of treating Universal History,’ says our latest impatient Commentator, ‘not yet entirely fallen obsolete in this country, though it has been abandoned with much ridicule everywhere else for half a century now, was to group the Aggregate Transactions of the Human Species into Four Monarchies: the Assyrian Monarchy of Nebuchadnezzar and Company; the Persian of Cyrus and ditto; the Greek of Alexander; and lastly the Roman. These I think were they, but am no great authority on the subject. Under the dregs of this last, or Roman Empire, which is maintained yet by express name in Germany, *Das heilige Römische Reich*, we poor moderns still live. But now say Major-General Harrison and a number of men, founding on Bible Prophecies, Now shall be a Fifth Monarchy, by far the blesseddest and the only real one,—the Monarchy of Jesus Christ, his Saints reigning for him here on Earth,—if not he himself, which is probable or possible,—for a thousand years, &c., &c.— O Heavens, there are tears for human destiny; and immortal Hope itself is beautiful because it is steeped in Sorrow, and foolish Desire lies vanquished under its feet! They who merely laugh at Harrison take but a small portion of his meaning with them. Thou, with some tear for the valiant Harrison, if with any thought of him at all, tend thou also valiantly, in thy day and generation, whither he was tending; and know that, in far wider and diviner figure than that of Harrison, the Prophecy is very sure,—that it *shall* be sure while one brave man survives among the dim bewildered populations of this world. Good shall reign on this Earth: has *not* the Most High said it? To approve Harrison, to justify Harrison, will avail little for thee; go and *do likewise*. Go and do better, thou that disapprovest him. Spend thou thy life for the Eternal; we will call thee also brave, and remember thee for a while!’

So much for ‘that mistaken notion of the Fifth Monarchy:’

and now his Highness, tragically audible across the Centuries, continues again :]

—Fifth Monarchy. A thing pretending more spirituality than anything else. A notion I hope we all honor, and wait, and hope for ‘the fulfilment of;’ That Jesus Christ *will* have a time to set up His Reign in our hearts; by subduing those corruptions and lusts and evils that are there; which now reign more in the world than, I hope, in due time they shall do. And when more fulness of the Spirit is poured forth to subdue iniquity, and bring-in everlasting righteousness, then will the approach of that glory be. [*Most true:—and not till then!*] The carnal divisions and contentions among Christians, so common, are not the symptoms of that Kingdom!—But for men, on this principle, to betitle themselves, that they are the only men to rule kingdoms, govern nations, and give laws to people, and determine of property and liberty and everything else,—upon such a pretension as this is:—truly they had need ‘to’ give clear manifestations of God’s presence with them, before wise men will receive or submit to their conclusions! Nevertheless, as many of these men have good meanings, which I hope in my soul they have, it will be the wisdom of all knowing and experienced Christians to do as Jude saith. ‘Jude,’ when he reckoned up those horrible things, done upon pretences, and haply by some upon mistakes: “Of some,” says he, “have compassion, making a difference; others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire.”\* I fear they will give too often opportunity for this exercise! But I hope the same will be for their good. If men do but ‘so much as’ pretend for justice and righteousness, and be of peaceable spirits, and will manifest this, let them be the subjects of the Magistrate’s encouragement. And if the Magistrate, by punishing visible miscarriages, save them by that discipline, God having ordained him for that end,—I hope it will evidence *love* and not hatred, ‘so’ to punish where there is cause. [*Hear!*]

Indeed this is that which doth most declare the danger† of that spirit. For if these were but motions,—I mean these instances I have given you of dangerous doctrines both in Civil things and Spiritual; if, I say they were but notions, they were best let alone. Notions will hurt none but those that have them. But when they come to such practices as telling us, ‘for instance,’ That Liberty and Property are not the badges of the Kingdom of Christ; when they tell us, not that we are to regu-

\* Jude, 22, 23. A passage his Highness frequently refers to.

† This fact, that they come so often to ‘visible miscarriages,’ these Fifth-Monarchists and Speculative Levellers, who ‘have good meanings.’



late Law, but that Law is to be abrogated, indeed subverted; and perhaps wish to bring in the Judaical Law.—

Latest Commentator *loquitur* : ‘ This, as we observed, was the cry that Westminster raised when the Little Parliament set about reforming Chancery. What countenance this of the Mosaic Law might have had from Harrison and his minority, one does not know. Probably they did find the Mosaic Law, in some of its enactments, more cognate to Eternal Justice and “ the mind of God ” than Westminster-Hall Law was ; and so might reproachfully or admonitorily appeal to it on occasion, as they had the clearest title and call to do : but the clamor itself, as significant of any practical intention, on the part of that Parliament, or of any considerable Sect in England, to bring in the Mosaic Law, is very clearly a long-wigged one, rising from the Chancery regions, and is descriptive of nothing but of the humor that prevailed there. His Highness alludes to it in passing ; and from him it was hardly worth even that allusion.’ ]

—Judaical Law : instead of our known laws settled among us : this is worthy of every Magistrate’s consideration. Especially where every stone is turned to bring in confusion. I think, I say, this will be worthy of the Magistrate’s consideration. [*Shall he step beyond his province, then, your Highness ? And interfere with freedom of opinion ? “ I think, I say, it will be worth his while to consider about it ! ”*]

Whilst these things were in the midst of us ; and whilst the Nation was rent and torn in spirit and principle from one end to the other, after this sort and manner I have now told you ; family against family, husband against wife, parents against children ; and nothing in the hearts and minds of men but “ Overturn, overturn, overturn ! ” (a Scripture phrase very much abused, and applied to justify unpeaceable practices by all men of discontented spirits),—the common Enemy sleeps not ; our adversaries in civil and religious respects did take advantage of these distractions and divisions, and did practise accordingly in the three Nations of England, Scotland, and Ireland. We know very well that Emissaries of the Jesuits never came in such swarms as they have done since those things\* were set on foot. And I tell you that divers Gentlemen here can bear witness with me How that they, ‘ the

\* Speculations of the Levellers, Fifth-Monarchists, &c., &c.

Jesuits,' have had a Consistory abroad which rules all the affairs of things [*"Affairs of things;" rough and ready!*] in England, from an Archbishop down to the other dependents upon him. And they had fixed in England,—of which we are able to produce the particular Instruments in most of the limits of their Cathedrals 'or pretended Dioceses,'—an Episcopal power [*Regular Episcopacy of their own!*], with Archdeacons, &c. And had persons authorized to exercise and distribute those things [*I begin to love that rough and ready method, in comparison with some others!*]; who pervert and deceive the people. And all this, while we were in that sad, and as I said deplorable condition.

And in the mean time all endeavors possible were used to hinder the work of 'God' in Ireland, and the progress of the work of God in Scotland: by continual intelligences and correspondences, both at home and abroad, from hence into Ireland, and from hence into Scotland.\* Persons were stirred up, from our divisions and discomposure of affairs, to do all they could to ferment the War in both these places. To add yet to our misery, whilst we were in this condition, we were in a 'foreign' War. Deeply engaged in War with the Portuguese;† whereby our Trade ceased: the evil consequences by that War were manifest and very considerable. And not only this, but we had a War with Holland; consuming our treasure; occasioning a vast burden upon the people. A War that cost this Nation full as much as the 'whole' Taxes came unto; the Navy being a Hundred-and-sixty Ships, which cost this Nation above 100,000*l.* a-month; besides the contingencies, which would make it 120,000*l.* That very one War (*sic*) did engage us to so great a charge.—At the same time also we were in a War with France. [*A Bickering and Skirmishing, and Liability to War:—Mazarin, as yet, thinking our side the weaker.*] The advantages that were taken of the discontents and divisions among ourselves did also ferment that War, and at least hinder us of an honorable peace; every man being confident we could not hold out long. And surely they did not calculate amiss, if the Lord had not been exceedingly gracious to us! I say, at the same time we had a War with France. [*Yes, your Highness said so,—and we admit it!*] And besides the sufferings in respect to the Trade of the Nation, it's most evident that the Purse of the Nation could not have been able much longer to bear it,—by reason of the advantages taken by other States to improve their own, and spoil our Manufacture of Cloth, and hinder the vent thereof; which is the great

\* Middleton-Glencairn Revolts, and what not.

† Who protected Rupert in his quasi-piracies, and did require chastisement from us.

staple commodity of this Nation. [*And has continued to be!*] Such was our condition: spoiled in our Trade, and we at this vast expense; thus dissettled at home, and having these engagements abroad.

Things being so,—and I am persuaded it is not hard to convince every person here they were so,—what a heap of confusions were upon these poor Nations! And either things must have been left to sink into the miseries these premises would suppose, or else a remedy must be applied. [*Apparently!*] A remedy hath been applied: that hath been this Government;\* a thing I shall say little unto. The thing is open and visible to be seen and read by all men: and therefore let it speak for itself. [*Even so, your Highness: there is a silence prouder and nobler than any speech one is used to hear.*] Only let me say this,—because I can speak it with comfort and confidence before a Greater than you all: That in the intention of it, as to the approving of our hearts to God, let men judge as they please,† it was calculated ‘with our best wisdom’ for the interest of the People. For the interest of the People alone, and for their good, without respect had to any other interest. And if that be not true [*With animation!*], I shall be bold to say again, Let it speak for itself. Truly, I may,—I hope, humbly before God, and modestly before you,—say somewhat on the behalf of the Government. [*Recite a little what it “speaks for itself,” after all!*] Not that I would discourse of the particular heads of it, but acquaint you a little with the effects it has had: and this not for ostentation’s sake, but to the end I may at this time deal faithfully with you: and acquaint you with the state of things, and what proceedings have been entered into by† this Government, and what the state of our affairs is. This is the main end of my putting you to this trouble.

The Government hath had some things in desire; and it hath done some things actually. It hath desired to reform the Laws. I say to reform them. [*Hear!*]:—and for that end it hath called together Persons, without offence be it spoken, of as great ability and as great interest as are in these Nations,‡ to consider how the Laws might be made plain and short, and less chargeable to the People; how to lessen expense, for the good of the Nation. And those things are in preparation, and Bills prepared; which in due time, I make no question, will be tendered to you. ‘In the meanwhile’ there hath been care taken to put the ad-

\* He means, and his hearers understand him to mean, ‘*Form of Government*’ mainly; but he diverges now and then into our modern acceptation of the word ‘Government,’—Administration or Supreme Authority.

† ‘been upon’ *in orig.*

‡ Ordinance for the Reform of Chancery: *supra*, p. 76.

ministration of the Laws into the hands of just men [*Matthew Hale, for instance.*]; men of the most known integrity and ability. The Chancery hath been reformed—

[FROM THE MODERNS : ‘Only to a very small extent and in a very temporary manner, your Highness ! His Highness returns upon the Law, on subsequent occasions, and finds the reform of it still a very pressing matter. Difficult to sweep the intricate foul chimneys of Law his Highness found it,—as we after two centuries of new soot and accumulation now acknowledge on all hands, with a sort of silent despair, a silent wonder each one of us to himself, “What, in God’s name, is to become of all that ?” ’]

—hath been reformed ; I hope, to the satisfaction of all good men : and as for the things, ‘or causes,’ depending there, which made the burden and work of the honorable Persons intrusted in those services too heavy for their ability, it\* hath referred many of them to those places where Englishmen love to have their rights tried, the Courts of Law at Westminster.

This Government hath, ‘farther,’ endeavored to put a stop to that heady way (likewise touched of ‘in our Sermon’ this day) of every man making himself a Minister and Preacher. [*Commission of Triers ; Yea !*] It hath endeavored to settle a method for the approving and sanctioning of men of piety and ability to discharge that work. And I think I may say it hath committed the business to the trust of Persons both of the Presbyterian and Independent judgments, of as known ability, piety and integrity, as any, I believe, this Nation hath. And I believe also that, in that care they have taken, they have labored to approve themselves to Christ, to the Nation and to their own consciences. And indeed I think, if there be anything of quarrel against them,—though I am not here to justify the proceedings of any—it is that they, ‘in fact,’ go upon such a character as the Scripture warrants : To put men into that great Employment, and to approve men for it, who are men that have “received gifts from Him that ascended up on high, and gave gifts” for the work of the Ministry, and for the edifying of the Body of Christ. The Government hath also taken care, we hope, for the expulsion [*Commission of Expurgation, too.*] of all those who may be judged any way unfit for this work ; who are scandalous, and the common scorn and contempt of that function.

\* The Government.

One thing more this Government hath done : it hath been instrumental to call a free Parliament ;—which, blessed be God, we see here this day ! I say a free Parliament. [*Mark the iteration !*] And that it may continue so, I hope is in the heart and spirit of every good man in England,—save such discontented persons as I have formerly mentioned. It's that which as I have desired above my life, so I shall desire to keep it above my life. [*Verily ?*]

I did before mention to you the plunges we were in with respect to Foreign States ; by the War with Portugal, France, the Dutch, the Danes, and the little assurance we had from any of our neighbors round about. I perhaps forgot, but indeed it was a caution upon my mind, and desire now it may be so understood, That if any good hath been done, 't was the Lord, not we His poor instruments.—

[Pity if this pass entirely for 'cant,' my esteemed modern friends ! It is not cant, nor ought to be. O Higginbotham, there is a *Selbstödtung*, a killing of Self, as my friend Novalis calls it, which is, was, and for ever will be, 'the beginning of all morality,' of all real work and worth for man under this Sun.]

—I did instance the Wars ; which did exhaust your treasures ; and put you into such a condition that you must have sunk therein, if it had continued but a few months longer : this I can affirm, if strong probability may be a fit ground. And now you have, though it be not the first in time,—Peace with Swedeland ; an honorable peace ; through the endeavors of an honorable Person here present as the instrument. [*Whitlocke seen blushing !*] I say you have an honorable peace with a Kingdom which, not many years since, was much a friend to France, and lately perhaps inclinable enough to the Spaniard. And I believe you expect not much good from any of your Catholic neighbors [*No ; we are not exactly their darlings !*] ; nor yet that they would be very willing you should have a good understanding with your Protestant friends. Yet, thanks be to God, that Peace is concluded ; and as I said before, it is an honorable Peace.

You have a peace with the Danes,—a State that lay contiguous to that part of this island [*Your Montroses, Middleton's came always, with their Mosstroopers and Harpy hosts, out of the Danish quarter.*] which hath given us the most trouble. And certainly if your enemies abroad be able to annoy you, it is likely they will take their advantage (where it best lies) to give you trouble from that country. But you have a Peace there, and an honorable one. Satisfaction to your Merchants

ships; not only to their content, but to their rejoicing.\* I believe you will easily know it is so,—‘an honorable peace.’ You have the Sound open; which used to be obstructed. That which was and is the strength of this Nation, the shipping, will now be supplied thence. And, whereas you were glad to have anything of that kind † at secondhand, you have now all manner of commerce there, and at as much freedom as the Dutch themselves, ‘who used to be the carriers and venders of it to us;’ and at the same rates and tolls;—and I think, by that Peace, the said rates now fixed upon cannot be raised to you ‘in future.’

You have a Peace with the Dutch: a Peace unto which I shall say little, seeing it is so well known in the benefit and consequences thereof. And I think it was as desirable, and as acceptable to the spirit of this Nation, as any one thing that lay before us. And, as I believe nothing so much gratified our enemies as to see us at odds ‘with that Commonwealth;’ so I persuade myself nothing is of more terror or trouble to them than to see us thus reconciled. ‘Truly’ as a Peace with the Protestant States hath much security in it, so it hath as much of honor and of assurance to the Protestant Interest abroad; without which no assistance can be given thereunto. I wish it may be written upon our hearts to be zealous for that Interest! For if ever it were like to come under a condition of suffering, it is now. In all the Emperor’s Patrimonial Territories, the endeavor is to drive the Protestant part of the people out, as fast as is possible; and they are necessitated to run to Protestant States to seek their bread. And by this conjunction of Interests, I hope, you will be in a more fit capacity to help them. And it begets some reviving of their spirits, that you will help them as opportunity shall serve. [*We will!*]

You have a Peace likewise with the Crown of Portugal; which Peace, though it hung long in hand, yet is lately concluded. It is a Peace which, your Merchants make us believe, is of good concernment to their trade; the rate of insurance to that Country having been high, and so the profit which could bear such rate, ‡ than to other places.

\* ‘Danish claims settled,’ as was already said somewhere, ‘on the 31st of July:’ Dutch and English Commissioners did it, in Goldsmiths’ Hall, met on the 27th of June; if the business were not done when August began, they were then to be ‘shut up without fire, candle, meat or drink,’—and to do it out very speedily! They allowed our Merchants 98,000*l.* for damages against the Danes. (Godwin, iv., 49,—who cites Dumont, *Traité* 24)

† Baltic Produce, namely.

‡ ‘their assurance being greater, and so their profit in trade thither,’

*orig*

And one thing hath been obtained in this treaty, which never 'before was, since the Inquisition was set up there : That our people which trade thither have Liberty of Conscience,—‘liberty to worship in Chapels of their own.’

Indeed Peace is, as you were well told to-day, desirable with all men, as far as it may be had with conscience and honor ! We are upon a Treaty with France. And we may say this, that if God give us honor in the eyes of the nations about us, we have reason to bless Him for it and so to own it. And I dare say that there is not a Nation in Europe but is very willing to ask a good understanding with you.

I am sorry I am thus tedious : but I did judge that it was somewhat necessary to acquaint you with these things. And things being so,—I hope you will not be unwilling to hear a little again of the Sharp as well as of the Sweet ! And I should not be faithful to you, nor to the interest of these Nations which you and I serve, if I did not let you know *all*.

As I said before, when this Government was undertaken, we were in the midst of those ‘domestic’ divisions and animosities and scatterings ; engaged also with those ‘foreign’ enemies round about us, at such a vast charge,—120,000*l.* a-month for the very Fleet. Which sum was the very utmost penny of your Assessments. Ay ; and then all your treasure was exhausted and spent when this Government was undertaken : all *accidental* ways of bringing in treasure ‘were,’ to a very considerable sum, consumed ;—the ‘forfeited’ Lands sold, the sums on hand spent ; Rents, Fee-Farms, Delinquents’ Lands, King’s, Queen’s, Bishops’, Dean-and-Chapters’ Lands, sold. These were *spent* when this Government was undertaken. I think it’s my duty to let you know so much. And that’s the reason why the Taxes do yet lie so heavy upon the People ;—of which we have abated 30,000*l.* a-month for the next three months. Truly I thought it my duty to let you know, That, though God hath dealt thus ‘bountifully’ with you,\* yet these are but entrances and doors of hope. Whereby, through the blessing of God, you *may* enter into rest and peace. But you are not entered ! [*Looking up, with a mournful toss of the head, I think.*—“Ah, no, your *Highness* ; not yet !”]

You were told, to-day, of a People brought out of Egypt towards the Land of Canaan ; but through unbelief, murmuring, repining, and other temptations and sins wherewith God was provoked, they were fain to come back again, and linger many years in the Wilderness before they came to the Place of Rest. We are thus far, through the mercy of

\* In regard to our Successes and Treaties, &c. enumerated above

God. We have cause to take notice of it, That we are not brought into misery, 'not totally wrecked;' but 'have,' as I said before, a door of hope open. And I may say this to you: If the Lord's blessing and His presence go along with the management of affairs at this Meeting, you will be enabled to put the topstone to the work, and make the Nation happy. But this must be by knowing the true state of affairs! [*Hear!*] You are yet, like the People under Circumcision, but raw.\* Your Peaces are but newly made. And it's a maxim not to be despised, "Though peace be made, yet it's interest that keeps peace;"—and I hope you will not trust such peace except so far as you see interest upon it. 'But all settlement grows stronger by mere continuance.' And therefore I wish that you may go forward, and not backward; and 'in brief' that you may have the blessing of God upon your endeavors! It's one of the great ends of calling this Parliament, that the Ship of the Commonwealth may be brought into a safe harbor; which, I assure you, it will not be, without your counsel and advice.

You have great works upon your hands. You have Ireland to look unto. There is not much done to the Planting thereof, though some things leading and preparing for it are. It is a great business to settle the Government of that Nation upon fit terms, such as will bear that work† through.—You have had laid before you some considerations, intimating your peace with several foreign States. But yet you have not made peace with *all*. And if they should see we do not manage our affairs with that wisdom which becomes us,—truly we may sink under disadvantages, for all that's done. [*Truly, your Highness!*] And our enemies will have their eyes open, and be revived, if they see animosities amongst us; which indeed will be their great advantage.

I do therefore persuade you to a sweet, gracious and holy understanding of one another, and of your business. [*Alas!*] Concerning which you had so good counsel this day; which as it rejoiced my heart to hear, so I hope the Lord will imprint it upon your spirits,—wherein you shall have my Prayers. [*Prayers, your Highness!—If this be not "cant," what a noble thing is it, O reader! Worth thinking of, for a moment.*]

Having said this, and perhaps omitted many other material things through the frailty of my memory, I shall exercise plainness and freeness with you; and say, That I have not spoken these things as one who assumes to himself dominion over you; but as one who doth resolve to be a fel-

\* See, in *Joshua*, v., 2-8, the whole Jewish Nation circumcised at once. So, too, your Settlements of Discord are yet but indifferently cicatrised.

† Of planting Ireland with persons that will plough and pray, instead of quarrel and blarney!



low-servant with you to the interest of these great affairs, and of the People of these Nations. I shall trouble you no longer ; but desire you to repair to your House, and to exercise your own liberty in the choice of a Speaker, that so you may lose no time in carrying on your work.\*

At this Speech, say the old Newspapers, ‘all generally seemed abundantly to rejoice, by extraordinary expressions and hums at the conclusion.’—Hum-m-m!† ‘His Highness withdrew into the old House of Lords, and the Members of Parliament into the Parliament House. His Highness, so soon as the Parliament were gone to their House, went back to Whitehall, privately in his barge, by water.’

This Report of Speech Second, ‘taken by one that stood near,’ and ‘published to prevent mistakes,’ may be considered as exact enough in respect of matter, but in manner and style it is probably not so close to the Original Deliverance as the foregoing Speech was. He ‘who stood near’ on this occasion seems to have had some conceit in his abilities as a Reporter ; has pared off excrescences, peculiarities,—somewhat desirous to present the Portrait of his Highness without the warts. He, or his Parliamentary-History Editor and he, have, for one thing, very arbitrarily divided the Discourse into little fractional paragraphs ; which a good deal obstruct the sense here and there ; and have accordingly been disregarded in our Transcript. Our changes, which, as before, have been insignificant, are indicated wherever they seem to have importance or physiognomic character,—indicated too often perhaps for the reader’s convenience. As to the meaning, I have not anywhere remained in doubt, after due study. The rough Speech when read faithfully becomes transparent, every word of it ; credible, calculated to produce conviction, every word of it ;—and that I suppose is or should be, as our impatient Commentator says, ‘the definition of a *good Speech*. Other “good speeches,”’ continues he, ‘ought to be spoken in Bedlam ;—unless, indeed, you will concede them Drury Lane,

\* Old Pamphlet cited above : reprinted in *Parliamentary History*, xx., 318-33.

† Cromwelliana, p. 147 ; see also Guibon Goddard, Member for Lynn (in *Burton*, i., Introd., p. xviii.)

and admittance one shilling. Spoken in other localities than these, without belief on the speaker's part, or hope or chance of producing belief on the hearer's.—Ye Heavens, as if the good-speaking individual were some frightful Wood-and-leather Man, made at Nürnberg, and tenanted by a Devil ; set to *increase* the Sum of Human madness, instead of lessening it— !—But we here cut short our impatient Commentator.—The Reporter of Cromwell, we may say for ourselves, like the painter of him, has not to suppress the warts, the natural rugged physiognomy of the man ; which only very poor tastes would exchange for any other. He has to wash the natural face *clean*, however ; that men may see *it*, and not the opaque mass of mere soot and featureless confusions which, in two Centuries of considerable Stupidity in regard to that matter, have settled there.

\*

## SPEECH III.

THIS First Protectorate Parliament, we said, was not successful. It chose, judiciously enough, old Lenthall for Speaker; appointed, judiciously enough, a Day of general Fasting:—but took, directly after that, into constitutional debate about Sanctioning the Form of Government (which nobody was specially asking it to ‘sanction’); about Parliament and Single Person; powers of Single Person and of Parliament; Cöordination, Subordination; and other bottomless subjects;—in which getting always the deeper the more it puddled in them, inquiry or intimation of inquiry rose not obscurely in the distance, whether this Government should *be* by a Parliament and Single Person? These things the honorable gentlemen, with true industry, debated in Grand Committee, ‘from eight in the morning till eight at night, with an hour for refreshment about noon,’ debates waxing ever hotter, question ever more abstruse,—through Friday, Saturday, Monday; ready, if Heaven spared them, to debate it farther for unlimited days. Constitutional Presbyterian persons, Use-and-wont Neuters; not without a spicing of sour Republicans, as Bradshaw, Haselrig, Scott, to keep the batch in leaven.

His Highness naturally perceived that this would never do, not this;—sent therefore to the Lord Mayor, late on Monday night I think, to look after the peace of the City; to Speaker Lenthall, that he must bring his people to the Painted Chamber before going farther: and early on Tuesday morning, poor Mr. Guibon Goddard, Member for Lynn, just about to proceed again, from the Eastern parts, towards his sublime constitutional day’s work, is overwhelmed by rumours, ‘That the Parliament is dissolved; that, for certain, the Council of State, and a Council of War, had sat together all the Sabbath-day before, and had then contrived this Dissolution!’

‘Notwithstanding,’ continues Guibon, ‘I was resolved to go to

Westminster, to satisfy myself of the truth ; and to take my share of what I should see or learn there. Going by water to Westminster, I was told that the Parliament-doors were locked up, and guarded with soldiers, and that the Barges were to attend the Protector to the Painted Chamber. As I went, I saw two Barges at the Privy Stairs.' River and City in considerable emotion. 'Being come to the Hall, I was confirmed in what I had heard. Nevertheless I did purpose not to take things merely upon trust ; but would receive an actual repulse, to confirm my faith. Accordingly, I attempted up the Parliament stairs ; but a guard of Soldiers was there, who told me, "There was no passage that way ; the House was locked up, and command given to give no admittance to any ;—if I were a Member, I might go into the Painted Chamber, where the Protector would presently be." The Mace had been taken away by Commissary-General Whalley. The Speaker and all the Members were walking up and down the Hall, the Court of Requests, and the Painted Chamber ; expecting the Protector's coming. The passages there likewise were guarded with soldiers.\*

No doubt about it, therefore, my honorable friend ! Dissolution, or something, is not far. Between nine and ten, the Protector arrived, with due escort of Officers, halberts, Lifeguards ; took his place, covered, under 'the state' as before, we all sitting bare-headed on our benches as before ; and with fit salutation spake to us ;—as follows. 'Speech of an hour and a half long ;' taken in characters by the former individual who 'stood near ;' audible still to modern men. Tuesday morning, 12th September, 1654 ; a week and a day since the last Speech here.

In this remarkable Speech, the occasion of which and the Speaker of which are very extraordinary, an assiduous reader, or 'modern hearer,' will find Historical indications, significant shadowings forth both of the Protectorate and the Protector ; which, considering whence they come, he will not fail to regard as documentary in those matters. Nay perhaps, here for the first time, if he read with real industry, there may begin to paint itself for him, on the void Dryasdust abyss, hitherto called History of

\* Ayscough mss., printed in Burton's *Diary*, i., Introd., p. xxxiii

Oliver, some dim adumbration of How this business of Assuming the Protectorate may actually have been. It was, many years ago, in reading these Speeches, with a feeling that they must have been credible when spoken, and with a strenuous endeavor to find what their meaning was, and try to believe it, that to the present Editor the Commonwealth, and Puritan Rebellion generally, first began to be conceivable. Such was his Experience.—

But certainly the Lord Protector's place, that September Tuesday, 1654, is not a bed of roses! His painful asseverations, appeals and assurances have made the Modern part of his audience look, more than once, with questioning eyes. On this point, take from a certain Commentator sometimes above cited from, and far oftener suppressed, the following rough words:

“Divers persons who do know whether I lie in that,” says the Lord Protector. What a position for a hero, to be reduced continually to say he does not lie!—Consider well, nevertheless, what else could Oliver do? To get on with this new Parliament was clearly his one chance of governing peaceably. To wrap himself up in stern pride, and refuse to give any explanation: would that have been the wise plan of dealing with them? Or the stately and not-so-wise plan? Alas, the *wise* plan, when all say yet as an experiment, with so dread issues in it to yourself and the whole world, was not very discoverable. Perhaps not quite reconcilable with the *stately* plan, even if it had been discovered!

And again, with regard to the scheme of the Protectorship, which his Highness says was done by “the Gentlemen that undertook to frame this Government,” after divers days consulting, and without the least privity of his: “You never guessed what they were doing, your Highness? Alas, his Highness guessed it,—and yet must not say, or think, he guessed it. There is something sad in a brave man's being reduced to explain himself from a barrel-head in this manner! Yet what, on the whole, will he do? Coriolanus curled his lip, and scowled proudly enough on the sweet voices: but Coriolanus had likewise to go over to the Volscians; Coriolanus had not the slightest chance to govern by a free Parliament in Rome! Oliver was not prepared for these extremities; if less would serve. Perhaps in Oliver there

is something of better than "silent pride?" Oliver will have to explain himself before God Most High, ere long;—and it will not stead him there, that he went wrong because his pride, his "personal dignity," his &c., &c., were concerned. — Who would govern men! "Oh, it were better to be a poor fisher," exclaimed Danton, "than to meddle with governing of men!" "I would rather keep a flock of sheep!" said Oliver. And who but a Flunkey would not, if his real trade lay in keeping sheep?—

On the whole, concludes our Commentator: 'As good an explanation as the case admits of,—from a barrel-head, or "raised platform under a state." Where so much that is true cannot be said; and yet nothing that is false shall be said,—under penalties forgotten in our Time! With regard to those asseverations and reiterated appeals, note this also: An oath was an oath then; not a solemn piece of blasphemous cant, as too often since. No *contemporary* that I have met with, who had any opportunity to judge, disbelieved Oliver in these protestations; though many believed that he was unconsciously deceiving himself. Which, of course, we too, where needful, must ever remember that he was liable to do; nay, if you will, that he was continually doing. But to this Commentator, at this stage in the development of things, "Apology" seems not the word for Oliver Cromwell;—not that, but a far other word! The Modern part of his Highness's audience can listen now, I think, across the Time-gulfs, in a different mood;—with candor, with human brotherhood, with reverence and grateful love. Such as the noble never claim in vain from those that have any nobleness. This of tasking a great soul continually to prove to us that he was not a liar, is too unwashed a way of welcoming a Great man! Scrubby Apprentices of tender years, to them it might seem suitable;—still more readily to Apes by the Dead Sea! Let us have done with it, my friend; and listen to the Speech itself, of date, Painted Chamber, 12th September, 1654, the best we can!

GENTLEMEN,

It is not long since I met you in this place, upon an occasion which gave me much more content and comfort than this doth. That which I have now to say to you will need no preamble, to let me

into my discourse : for the occasion of this meeting is plain enough. I could have wished with all my heart there had been no cause for it.

At our former meeting I did acquaint you what was the first rise of this Government, which hath called you hither, and by the authority of which you have come hither. Among other things which I then told you of, I said, You were a Free Parliament. And ‘truly’ so you are,—whilst you own the Government and Authority which called you hither. But certainly that word ‘Free Parliament’ implied a reciprocity,\* or it implied nothing at all ! Indeed there was a reciprocity implied and expressed ; and I think your actions and carriagés ought to be suitable ! But I see it will be necessary for me now a little to magnify my Office. Which I have not been apt to do. I have been of this mind, I have been always of this mind, since I first entered upon my Office, If God will not bear it up, let it sink ! [*Yea !*] But if a duty be incumbent upon me to bear my testimony unto it (which in modesty I have hitherto forborne), I am in some measure necessitated thereunto. And therefore that will be the prologue to my discourse.

I called not myself to this place. I say again, I called not myself to this place ! Of that God is witness :—and I have many witnesses who, I do believe, could lay down their lives bearing witness to the truth or that. Namely, That I called not myself to this place ! [*His Highness is growing emphatic.*] And being in it, I bear not witness to myself ‘or my office ;’ but God and the People of these Nations have also borne testimony to it ‘and me.’ If my calling be from God, and my testimony from the People,—God and the People shall take it from me, else I will not part with it. [*Do you mark that, and the air and manner of it, my honorable friends !*] I should be false to the trust that God hath placed in me, and to the interest of the People of these Nations, if I did.

“That I called not myself to this place,” is my first assertion. “That I bear not witness to myself, but have many witnesses,” is my second. These two things I shall take the liberty to speak more fully to you of.—To make plain and clear what I have here asserted, I must take liberty to look ‘a little’ back.

I was by birth a Gentleman ; living neither in any considerable height, nor yet in obscurity. I have been called to several employments in the Nation : To serve in Parliament, ‘and others ;’ and,—not to be over-tedious,—I did endeavor to discharge the duty of an honest man, in those services, to God and His People’s Interest, and to the Commonwealth ; having, when time was, a competent acceptance in the hearts of men,

\* ‘reciprocation’ *in orig.*

and some evidences thereof. I resolve, not to recite the times and occasions and opportunities, which have been appointed me by God to serve Him in; nor the presence and blessings of God therein bearing testimony to me. [*Well said, and well forborne to be said!*]

Having had some occasions to see, together with my brethren and countrymen, a happy period put to our sharp Wars and contests with the then common Enemy, I hoped, in a private capacity, to have reaped the fruit and benefit, together with my brethren, of our hard labors and hazards: the enjoyment, to wit, of Peace and Liberty, and the privileges of a Christian and a Man, in some equality with others, according as it should please the Lord to dispense unto me. And when, I say, God had put an end to our Wars, or at least brought them to a very hopeful issue, very near an end,—after Worcester Fight,—I came up to London to pay my service and duty to the Parliament which then sat; hoping that all minds would have been disposed to answer what seemed to be the mind of God, namely, To give peace and rest to His People, and especially to those who had bled more than others in the carrying on of the Military affairs,—I was much disappointed of my expectation. For the issue did not prove so. [*Suppressed murmurs from Bradshaw and Company.*] Whatever may be boasted or misrepresented, it was not so, not so!

I can say, in the simplicity of my soul, I love not, I love not,—I declined it in my former Speech,\*—I say, I love not to rake into sores, or to discover nakednesses! The thing I drive at is this: I say to you, I hoped to have had leave, ‘for my own part,’ to retire to a private life. I begged to be dismissed of my charge; I begged it again and again;—and God be Judge between me and all men if I lie in this matter! [*Groans from Dryasdust, scarcely audible, in the deep silence.*] That I lie not in matter of act, is known to very many [*“Hum-m-m!” Look of “Yea!” from the Military Party.*]: but whether I tell a lie in my heart, as laboring to represent to you what was not upon my heart, I say the Lord be Judge.† Let uncharitable men, who measure others by themselves, judge as they please. As to the matter of fact, I say, It is true. As to the ingenuity and integrity of my heart in that desire,—I do appeal as before upon that also!—But I could not obtain “what I desired,” what my soul longed for. And the plain truth is, I did afterwards apprehend some were of opinion (such the difference of their judgment from mine), That it could not well be.‡

\* Speech I., p. 38. † He: Believe *you* about that as you see good

‡ That I could not be spared from my post



I confess I am in some strait to say what I could say, and what is true, of what then followed. I pressed the Parliament, as a Member, To period themselves;—once and again, and again, and ten, nay twenty times over. I told them,—for I knew it better than any one man in the Parliament could know it; because of my manner of life, which had led me everywhere up and down the Nation,\* thereby giving me to see and know the temper and spirits of all men, and of the best of men,—that the Nation loathed their sitting. [*Haselrig, Scott and others looking very grim.*] I knew it. And, so far as I could discern, when they were dissolved, there was not so much as the barking of a dog, or any general and visible repining at it! [*How astonishing there should not have been!*] You are not a few here present who can assert this as well as myself.

And that there was high cause for their dissolution, is most evident: not only in regard there was a just fear of that Parliament's perpetuating themselves, but because it 'actually' was their design. 'Yes;' had not their heels been trod upon by importunities from abroad, even to threats, I believe there never would have been 'any' thoughts of rising, or of going out of that Room, to the world's end. I myself was sounded, and, by no mean persons [*O Sir Harry Vane!*], tempted; and proposals were made me to that very end: That the Parliament† might be thus perpetuated; that the vacant places might be supplied by new elections;—and so continue from generation to generation.

I have declined, I have declined very much, to open these things to you. [*What noble man would not, your Highness?*] But, having proceeded thus far, I must tell you 'this also:' That poor men, under this arbitrary power, were driven, like flocks of sheep, by forty in a morning; to the confiscation of goods and estates; without any man being able to give a reason why two of them had deserved to forfeit a shilling‡. I tell you the truth. And my soul, and many persons, whom I see in this place, were exceedingly grieved at these things; and knew not which way to help them, except by our mournings, and giving our negatives when occasion served.—I have given you but a taste of miscarriages 'that then were.' I am confident you have had opportunities to hear much more of them; for nothing was more obvious. It's true this will be said, That there was a remedy endeavored: To put an end to this Perpetual Parliament, by giving us a future Representative. How that was gotten, by what importunities that was obtained, and how unwillingly yielded unto, is well known.

\* While soldiering, &c the Original has, 'which was to run up and down the Nation.'

† 'it' in orig.

‡ *Antea* p

‘But’ what *was* this remedy? It was a seeming willingness to give us Successive Parliaments. And what was ‘the nature of’ that Succession? It was, That when one Parliament had left its seat, another was to sit down immediately in the room thereof, without any caution to avoid what was the real danger, namely, Perpetuating of the same ‘men in’ Parliaments. Which is a sore, now, that will ever be running, so long as men are ambitious and troublesome,—if a remedy be not found.

Nay, at best what will such a remedy amount to? It is a conversion of a Parliament that would have been and was Perpetual, to a Legislative Power Always Sitting! [*Which, however, consists of different men, your Highness!*] And so the liberties and interests and lives of people *not* judged by any certain known Laws and Power, but by an arbitrary Power; which is incident and necessary to Parliaments [*So!*]. By an arbitrary Power, I say: \* to make men’s estates liable to confiscation, and their persons to imprisonment,—sometimes ‘even’ by laws made after the fact committed; often by the Parliament’s assuming to itself to give judgment both in capital and criminal things, which in former times was not known to exercise such a judicature.† This, I suppose was the case ‘then before us.’ And, in my opinion, the remedy was fitted to the disease! Especially coming in the rear of a Parliament which had so exercised its power and authority as that Parliament had done but immediately before.

Truly I confess,—upon these grounds, and with the satisfaction of divers other persons who saw nothing could be had otherwise,—that Parliament was dissolved [*Not a doubt of it!*]: and we, desiring to see if a few might have been called together for some short time who might put the Nation into some way of certain settlement,—did call those Gen-

\* Such as the Long Parliament did continually exert.

† Intricate paragraphs, this and the foregoing; treating of a subject complex in itself, and very delicate to handle before such an audience. His Highness’s logic perhaps hobbles somewhat; but this strain of argument, which to us has fallen so dim and obsolete, was very familiar to the audience he was now addressing,—the staple indeed of what their debates for the last three days had been (Burton, i., *Introd*, pp. 25-33; Whitlocke, p. 587, &c.). ‘Perpetuating of the same men in Parliament:’ that clearly is intolerable, says the first Paragraph. But not only so, says the second Paragraph, ‘a Legislative Assembly always sitting,’ though it consist of new men, is likewise intolerable: any Parliament, as the Long Parliament has too fatally taught us, if left to itself, is, by its nature, arbitrary, of unlimited power, liable to grow tyrannous;—ought therefore only to sit at due intervals, and to have other Powers (Protectorate, for example) ready to check it on occasion. All this the ancient audience understands very well; and the modern needs only to understand that they understood it

tlement [ *The Little Parliament ; we remember them !* ] out of the several parts of the Nation. And as I have appealed to God before you already,\*—though it be a tender thing to make appeals to God, yet in such exigencies as these I trust it will not offend His Majesty ; especially to make them before Persons that know God, and know what conscience is, and what it is to “lie before the Lord !” I say, As a principal end in calling that Assembly was the settlement of the Nation, so a chief end to myself was to lay down the Power which was in my hands. [*Hum-m-m !*] I say to you again, in the Presence of that God who hath blessed, and been with me in all my adversities and successes : That was, as to myself, my greatest end ! [ *Your Highness—?—And “ God ” with you ancients is not a fabulous polite Hearsay, but a tremendous all-irradiating Fact of Facts, not to be “ lied before ” without consequences ?* ] A desire perhaps, I am afraid, sinful enough, To be quit of the Power God had most clearly by His Providence† put into my hands, before He called me to lay it down ; before those honest ends of our fighting were attained and settled.—I say, the Authority I had in my hand being so boundless as it was,—for, by Act of Parliament, I was General of all the Forces in the three Nations of England, Scotland and Ireland ; in which unlimited condition I did not desire to live a day,—we called that Meeting, for the ends before expressed.

What the event and issue of that Meeting was, we may sadly remember. It hath much teaching in it,‡ and I hope will make us all wiser for the future ! But, ‘in short,’ that Meeting not succeeding, as I already said unto you, and giving such a disappointment to our hopes, I shall not now make any repetition thereof : only the result was, That they came and brought to me a Parchment, signed by very much the major part of them ; expressing their re-delivery and resignation of the power and authority that had been committed them back again into my hands. And I can say it, in the presence of divers persons here, who do know whether I lie in that [*Hum-m-m !*], That I did not know one tittle of that Resignation ‘of theirs,’ till they all came and brought it, and delivered it into my hands. Of this also there are in this presence many witnesses. [*Yes, many are convinced of it,—some not.*] I received this Resignation ; having formerly used my endeavors and persuasions to keep them together. . Observing their differences, I had thought it my

\* ‘I know, and I hope I may say it,’ follows *in orig*,—deleted here, for light’s sake, though characteristic.

† ‘Most providentially’ *in orig*. : has not the modern meaning ; mean only as in the Text.

‡ Warning us not to quarrel, and get into insoluble theories, as they did

duty to give advice to them, that so I might prevail with them for union. But it had the effect I told you; and I had my disappointment.

When this proved so, we were exceedingly to seek how to settle things for the future. My 'own' Power was again, by this resignation, 'become' as boundless and unlimited as before; all things being subjected to arbitrariness; and myself, 'the only constituted authority that was left,' a person having power over the three Nations, without bound or limit set;—and all Government, upon the matter, being dissolved; all civil administration at an end\*—as will presently appear. [*"A grave situation: but who brought us to it?" murmur my Lord Bradshaw and others.*]

The Gentlemen that undertook to frame this Government† did consult divers days together (men of known integrity and ability); How to frame somewhat that might give us settlement. They did consult;—and that I was not privy to their councils they know it. [*Alas!*—When they had finished their model in some measure, or made a good preparation of it, they became communicative. [*Hum-m-m!*] They told me that except I would undertake the Government, they thought things would hardly come to a composure or settlement, but blood and confusion would break in upon us. [*A plain truth they told.*] I refused it again and again; not complimentingly,—as they know, and as God knows! I confess, after many arguments, they urging on me, "That I did not hereby receive anything which put me into a *higher* capacity than before; but that it *limited* me; that it bound my hands to act nothing without the consent of a Council, until the Parliament, and then limited 'me' by the Parliament, as the Act of Government expresseth,"—I did accept it. I might repeat again to you, if it were needful, but I think it hardly is: I was arbitrary in power; having the Armies in the three Nations under my command;—and truly not very ill beloved by them, nor very ill beloved by the People. By the good People. And I believe I should have been more beloved if they had known the truth, as things *were*, before God and in themselves, and also before divers of those Gentlemen whom I but now mentioned unto you. [*His Highness is rallying: getting out of the Unutterable into the Utterable!*] I did, at the entreaty of divers Persons of Honor and Quality, at the entreaty of very many of the chief Officers of the Army then present,—'at their entreaty' and at their request, I did accept of the place and title of PROTECTOR: and was, in the presence of the Commissioners of the Great Seal, the Judges, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of the City of London, the Soldiers, divers Gentlemen, Citizens, and divers other people and persons

\* *Civil* Office-bearers feeling their commission to be ended.

† *Plan* or *Model* of Government.

of quality, and so forth,—accompanied to Westminster Hall; where I took the Oath to this Government. [*Indisputably: draw your own inferences from it!*] This was not done in a corner: it was open and public!—This Government hath been exercised by a Council;\* with a desire to be faithful in all things:—and, among all other trusts, to be faithful in *calling this Parliament*.

And thus I have given you a very bare and lean Discourse;† which truly I have been necessitated to ‘do,’—and contracted in ‘the doing of,’ because of the unexpectedness of the occasion, and because I would not quite weary you nor myself. But this is a Narrative that discovers to you the series of Providences and Transactions leading me into the condition wherein I now stand. The next thing I promised ‘to demonstrate to’ you, wherein I hope, I shall be briefer—Though I am sure the occasion does require plainness and freedom!—‘But as to this first thing,‡ That I brought not myself into this condition: surely in my own apprehension I did not! And whether I did not, the things being true which I have told you, I shall submit to your judgment. And there shall I leave it. Let God do what He pleaseth.

The other thing, I say, that I am to speak of to you is, “That I have not ‘borne,’ and do not bear, witness to myself.” I am far from alluding to Him that said so!§ Yet truth, concerning a member of His, He will own, though men do not.—But I think, if I mistake not, I have a cloud of witnesses. I think so; let men be as froward as they will. [*My honorable friends!*] I have witness Within,—Without,—and Above! But I shall speak of my witnesses Without; having fully spoken of the Witness who is Above, and ‘who is’ in my own conscience, before. Under the other head|| I spoke of these; because that subject had more

\* According to the ‘Instrument’ or Program of it. † Narration.

‡ This paragraph is characteristic. One of Oliver’s *warts*. His Highness, in haste to be through, is for breaking off into the ‘next thing,’ with hope of greater ‘brevity;’ but then suddenly bethinks him that he has not yet quite completely winded off the ‘*first* thing,’ and so returns to that. The paragraph, stark nonsense in the original (where they that are patient of such can read it, *Parliamentary History*, xx., 357), indicates, on intense inspection, that this is the purport of it. A glimpse afforded us, through one of Oliver’s confused regurgitations, and inordinate *misutterances* of speech, into the real inner man of him. Of which there will be other instances as we proceed.

§ ‘Then answered Jesus, and said unto them,— If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is Another that beareth witness of me.’—*John*, v., 31, 32.

|| ‘upon the other account’ *in orig*

obscurity in it, and I in some sort needed appeals;—and, I trust, might lawfully make them (as lawfully as take an oath), where the things were not so apt to be made evident ‘otherwise.’ [*In such circumstances, Yea !*].—I shall enumerate my witnesses as well as I can.

When I had consented to accept of the Government, there was some Solemnity to be performed. And that was accompanied by some persons of considerableness in all respects: there were the persons before mentioned to you;\* these accompanied me, at the time of entering upon this Government, to Westminster Hall to receive my Oath. There was an express† consent on the part of these and other interested persons. And ‘there was also’ an implied consent of many; showing their good liking and approbation thereof. And, Gentlemen, I do not think you are altogether strangers to it in your countries. Some did not nauseate it; very many did approve it.

I had the approbation of the Officers of the Army, in the three Nations of England, Scotland and Ireland. I say, of the Officers: I had that by their ‘express’ Remonstrances,‡ and under signature. But there went along with that express consent of theirs, an implied consent also ‘of a body’ of persons who had ‘had’ somewhat to do in the world; who had been instrumental, by God, to fight down the Enemies of God and of His People in the three Nations. [*The Soldiery of the Commonwealth. Persons of “some considerableness,” these too !*] And truly, until my hands were bound, and I ‘was’ limited (to my own great satisfaction, as many can bear me witness); while I had in my hands so great a power and arbitrariness,—the Soldiery were a very considerable part of these Nations, especially all Government being dissolved. I say, when all Government was thus dissolved, and nothing to keep things in order but the Sword! And yet they,—which many Histories will not parallel,—even they were desirous that things might come to a consistency; and arbitrariness be taken away; and the Government be put into ‘the hands of’ a person limited and bounded, as in the Act of Settlement, whom they distrusted the least, and loved not the worst. [*Hear !*] This was another evidence ‘of consent, implied if not express.’

I would not forget the honorable and civil entertainment, with the approbation I found in the great City of London;§—which the City

\* ‘before expressed’ *in orig.*

† ‘explicit’ and ‘implicit’ in the original; but we must say ‘express’ and ‘implied,’—the word ‘implicit’ having got itself tacked to ‘faith’ (*implicit faith*), and become thereby hopelessly degraded from any independent meaning.

‡ Means ‘Public Letters of Adherence.’

§ Dinner, with all manner of gala, in the common Royal Style: 8 February, 1653–4

knows whether I directly or indirectly sought. And truly I do not think it folly to remember this. For it was very great and high ; and very public ; and ‘included’ as numerous a body of those that are known by names and titles—the several Corporations and Societies of citizens in this City,—as hath at any time been seen in England. And not without some appearance of satisfaction also.—And I had not this witness only. I have had from the greatest County in England, and from many Cities and Boroughs and Counties, express approbations. ‘Express approbations’ not of men gathered here and there, but from the County General Assizes ;—the Grand Jury, in the name of the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Yeomen and Inhabitants of that County, giving very great thanks to me for undertaking this heavy burden at such a time ; and giving very great approbation and encouragement to me to go through with it. These are plain ; I have them to show. And by these, in some measure, it will appear “I do not bear witness to myself.”

This is not all. The Judges,—truly I had almost forgotten it [*Another little window into his Highness !*],—the Judges, thinking that there had now come a dissolution to all Government, met and consulted ; and did declare one to another, That they could not administer justice to the satisfaction of their consciences, until they had received Commissions from me. And they did receive Commissions from me ; and by virtue of those Commissions they have acted :—and all Justices of the Peace that have acted, have acted by virtue of like Commissions. Which was a little more than an implied approbation ! And I believe all the Justice administered in the Nation hath been by this authority. Which also I lay before you ; desiring you to think, Whether all those persons now mentioned must not come to you for an Act of Oblivion and General Pardon, for having acted under and testified to this Government, if it be disowned by you !—

And I have two or three witnesses more,—equivalent to all these I have yet mentioned, if I be not mistaken, and greatly mistaken ! If I should say, All *you* that are here are my witnesses,—I should say no untruth ! I know that you are the same persons here that you were in your countries\*—But I will reserve this for a little ; this will be the *issue*, ‘the general outcome and climax,’ of my Proof. [*Another little window ;—almost a half-soliloquy ; you see the Speech getting ready in the interior of his Highness !*] I say I have two or three witnesses, of still more weight than all I have counted and reckoned yet. All the people in England are my witnesses ; and many in Ireland and Scotland !

\* Where you had to acknowledge me before election, he means, but does not yet see good to say.

All the Sheriffs in England are my witnesses : and all that have come in upon a Process issued out by Sheriffs are my witnesses. [*My honorable friends, how did you come in?*] Yea, the Returns of the Elections to the Clerk of the Crown,—not a thing to be blown away by a breath,—the Returns on behalf of the Inhabitants in the Counties, Cities and Boroughs, all are my witnesses of approbation to the Condition and Place I stand in.

And I shall now make *you* my last witnesses ! [*Here comes it, “the issue of my Proof !”*] And shall ask you, Whether you came not hither by my Writs directed to the several Sheriffs ‘of Counties,’ and through the Sheriffs to the other Officers of Cities and Liberties ? To which ‘Writs’ the People gave obedience ; having also had the Act of Government communicated to them,—to which end great numbers of copies ‘thereof’ were sent down to be communicated to them. And the Government\* ‘was’ also duly required to be distinctly read unto the People at the place of election, to avoid surprises, ‘or misleadings of them through their ignorance ;—where also they signed the Indenture,† with proviso, “That the Persons so chosen should *not* have power to alter the Government as now settled in one Single Person and a Parliament !” [*My honorable friends—?*—And thus I have made good my second Assertion, “That I bear not witness to myself ;” but that the good People of England, and you all are my witnesses.

Yea, surely !—And ‘now’ this being so,—though I told you in my last Speech “that you were a Free Parliament,” yet I thought it was understood withal that I was the Protector, and the Authority that called you ! That I was in possession of the Government by a good right from God and men ! And I believe if the learnedest men in this Nation were called to show a precedent, equally clear, of a Government so many ways approved of, they would not in all their search find it.—I did not in my other Speech take upon me to justify the ‘Act of’ Government in every particular ; and I told you the reason, which was plain : The Act of Government was public, and had long been published, ‘in order’ that it might be under the most serious inspection of all that pleased to peruse it.

This is what I had to say at present for approving‡ myself to God and my conscience in my actions throughout this undertaking ; and for giving cause of approving myself to every one of your consciences in the sight of God.—And if the fact be so, why should we sport with it ?

\* Act or Instrument of Government. † Writ of Return.

‡ ‘By what I have said, I have approved,’ &c., *in orig.* : but rhetorical charity required a change.



With a business so serious ! May not this character, this stamp [*Stamp put upon a man by the Most High and His providences.*] bear equal poise with any Hereditary Interest that could furnish, or hath furnished, in the Common Law or elsewhere, matter of dispute and trial of learning ? In the like of which many have exercised more wit, and spilt more blood, than I hope ever to live to see or hear of again in this Nation ! [*Red and White Roses for example : Henry of Bolingbroke and the last 'Protector.'*]—I say, I do not know why I may not balance this Providence, in the sight of God, with any Hereditary Interest [*Nor do I !*] ; as a thing less subject to those cracks and flaws which that 'other' is commonly incident unto ; the disputing of which has cost more blood in former times in this Nation than we have leisure to speak of now !—

Now, if this be thus, and I am deriving a title from God and men upon such accounts as these are—Although some men be froward, yet that *your* judgments who are Persons sent from all parts of the Nation under the notion of *approving* this Government—[*His Highness, bursting with meaning, completes neither of these sentences ; but pours himself, like an irregular torrent, through other orifices and openings.*]—For you to disown or not to own it : for you to act with Parliamentary Authority especially in the disowning of it ; contrary to the very fundamental things, yea against the very root itself of this Establishment : to sit, and not own the Authority by which you sit,— is that which I believe astonisheth more men than myself ; and doth as dangerously disappoint and discompose the Nation as anything 'that' could have been invented by the greatest enemy to our peace and welfare, or 'that' could well have happened. [*Sorrow, anger, and reproach on his Highness's countenance : the voice risen somewhat into ALT, and rolling with a kind of rough music in the tones of it !*]

It is true, as there are some things in the Establishment which are fundamental, so there are others which are not, but are circumstantial. Of these no question but I shall easily agree to vary, to leave out, 'according' as I shall be convinced by reason. But some things are Fundamentals ! About which I shall deal plainly with you ; These may *not* be parted with ; but will, I trust, be delivered over to posterity, as the fruits of our blood and travail. The Government by a Single Person and a Parliament is a Fundamental ! It is the *esse*, it is constitutive. And as for the Person,—though I may seem to plead for myself, yet I do not : no, nor can any reasonable man say it. If the things throughout this Speech be true, I plead for this Nation, and for all honest men therein who have borne their testimony as aforesaid, and *not* for myself ! And if things should do otherwise than well (which I

would not fear), and the Common Enemy and discontented persons take advantage of these distractions, the issue will be put up before God : let Him own it, or let Him disown it, as He pleases !—

In every Government there must be Somewhat Fundamental [*Will speak now of Fundamentals.*], Somewhat like a *Magna Charta*, which should be standing, be unalterable. Where there is a stipulation on one side, and that fully accepted, as appears by what hath been said,—surely a return\* ought to be; else what does that stipulation signify? If I have, upon the terms aforesaid, undertaken this great Trust, and exercised it; and by it called *you*,—surely it ought ‘by you’ to be owned—That Parliaments should not make themselves perpetual is a Fundamental. [*Yea; all know it: taught by the example of the Rump!*] O! what assurance is a *Law* to prevent so great an evil, if it lie in the same Legislature to *unlaw* it again? [*Must have a single Person to check your Parliament.*] Is such a law like to be lasting? It will be a rope of sand; will give it no security; for the same men may unbuild what they have built.

‘Again,’ is not Liberty of Conscience in Religion a Fundamental? So long as there is Liberty of Conscience for the Supreme Magistrate to exercise his conscience in erecting what Form of Church-Government he is satisfied he should set up [*He is to decide on the Form of Church-Government, then?*] *The Moderns, especially the Voluntary Principle, stare.*],—why should he not give the like liberty to others? Liberty of Conscience is a natural right; and he that would have it, ought to give it; having ‘himself’ liberty to settle what he likes for the Public. [*Where then are the limits of Dissent?*] *An abstruse question, my Voluntary friends; especially with a Gospel really BELIEVED!*] Indeed that hath been one of the Vanities of our Contest. Every Sect saith: “Oh! give me liberty!” But give it him, and to his power he will not yield it to anybody else. Where is our ingenuousness? ‘Liberty of Conscience’—truly that is a thing ought to be very reciprocal! The Magistrate hath *his* supremacy; he may settle Religion, ‘that is, Church-Government,’ according to his conscience. And ‘as for the People,’—I may say it to you, I can say it: All the money of this Nation would not have tempted men to fight upon such an account as they have here been engaged in, if they had not had hopes of Liberty ‘of Conscience’ better than Episcopacy granted them, or than would have been afforded by a Scots Presbytery,—or an English either, if it had made such steps, and been as sharp and rigid, as it threatened when first set up!† This, I say, is a Fundamental. It ought to be so. It is

\* reciprocal engagement.

† Liberty of Conscience must not be refused to a People who have fought

for us and the generations to come. And if there be an absoluteness in the Imposer [*As you seem to argue.*], without fitting allowances and exceptions from the rule [*“Fitting : that is a wide word !”*],—we shall have the People driven into wildernesses. As they were, when those poor and afflicted people, who forsook their estates and inheritances here, where they lived plentifully and comfortably, were necessitated, for enjoyment of their Liberty, to go into a waste howling wilderness in New England;—where they have, for Liberty’s sake, stript themselves of all their comfort; embracing rather loss of friends and want than to be so ensnared and in bondage. [*Yea !*]

Another ‘Fundamental’ which I had forgotten is the Militia. That is judged a Fundamental if anything be so. That *it* should be well and equally plac’d is very necessary. For, put the absolute power of the Militia into ‘the hands of’ one ‘Person,’—without a check, what doth it serve? ‘On the other hand,’ I pray you, what check is there upon your Perpetual Parliaments, if the Government be wholly stript of this of the Militia? ‘This as we now have it’ is\* equally plac’d, and men’s desires were to have it so;—namely in one Person, and in one Parliament ‘along with him’ while the Parliament sits. What signified a provision against perpetuating of Parliaments, if this power of the Militia be solely in *them*? Think, Whether, without some check, the Parliament have it not in their power to alter the Frame of Government altogether—into Aristocracy, Democracy, into anything, if this ‘of the Militia’ be fully in them! Yea, into all confusion; and that without remedy! If this one thing be placed in one ‘party,’ that one, be it Parliament, be it Supreme Governor, hath power to make what he pleases of all the rest. [*“Hum-m-m !” from the old Parliament.*]—Therefore if you would have a balance at all; if you agree that some Fundamentals must stand, as worthy to be delivered over to Posterity,—truly I think it is not unreasonably urged that ‘this power of’ the Militia should be disposed as we have it in the Act of Government;—should be placed so equally that no one party neither in Parliament nor out of Parliament have the power of ordering it. ‘Well;’—the Council are the Trustees of the Commonwealth, in all *intervals* of Parliament; and have as absolute a negative upon the Supreme Officer in the said intervals, as the Parliament hath while it is sitting. [*So that we are safe—or safish, your Highness? No one party has power of the Militia at any time.*] The power of the Militia cannot be made use of; not a man can

and conquered ‘upon such an account’ as ours was! For more of Oliver’s notions concerning the Magistrate’s power in Church-matters, see his Letter to the Scotch Clergy, *antea*, vol. i., 482—486.

\* ‘It is’ in orig.

be raised, nor a penny charged upon the People, nothing can be done, without consent of Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliament, without consent of the Council. Give me leave to say, There is very little power, none but what is coördinate, 'placed' in the Supreme Officer;—and yet enough in him in that particular. He is bound in strictness by the Parliament, and out of Parliament by the Council, who do as absolutely bind him as the Parliament while sitting doth.—

As for that of Money—I told you some things were Circumstantial [*Comes to the Circumstantial.*];—as, for example, this is: That we should have 200,000*l.* to defray Civil Offices,—to pay the Judges and other Officers; to defray the charges of the Council in sending embassies, in keeping intelligence, and doing what is necessary; and to support the Governor in Chief.\* All this is, by the Instrument, supposed and intended. But it is not of the *esse* so much; nor 'is it' limited 'so strictly' as 'even' the number of soldiers is,—20,000 Foot and 10,000 Horse. [*Guard even afar off against any sinking below the minimum in that!*] Yet if the spirits of men were composed, 5,000 Horse and 10,000 Foot might serve. These things are 'Circumstantial,' are between the Chief Officer and the Parliament, to be moderated, 'regulated,' as occasion shall offer.

Of this sort there are many circumstantial things, which are not like the laws of the Medes and Persians. But the things which shall be necessary to deliver over to Posterity, these should be unalterable. Else every succeeding Parliament will be disputing to alter the Government; and we shall be as often brought into confusion† as we have Parliaments, and so make our remedy our disease. The Lord's Providence, evil 'effects' appearing, and good appearing, and better judgment 'in ourselves,' will give occasion for ordering of things to the best interest of the People. Those things, 'Circumstantial things,' are the matter of consideration between you and me.

I have indeed almost tired myself. What I have farther to say is this [*Does not yet say it*].—I would it had not been needful for me to call you hither to expostulate these things with you, and in such a manner as this! But Necessity hath no law. Feigned necessities, imaginary necessities,—'certainly these' are the greatest cozenage that men can put upon the Providence of God, and make pretences to break known rules by. 'Yes;' but it is *as* legal, 'contrary to God's free Grace,' as carnal, and as stupid [*A tone of anger*], to think that there are no Necessities which are manifest 'and real,' because necessities may be abused

\* Instrument of Government, Art. 27 (Somers Tracts, vi., 294).

† Means 'into anarchy.'

or feigned ! And truly that were my case,\* if I should so think 'here ; and I hope none of you so think. I have to say [*Says it now*] : The wilful throwing away of this Government, such as it is, so owned by God, so approved by men, so witnessed to (in the Fundamentals of it) as was mentioned above, 'were a thing which,'—and in reference 'not to my good, but' to the good of these Nations and of Posterity,—I can sooner be willing to be rolled into my grave and buried with infamy, than I can give my consent unto ! [*Never !—Do you catch the tone of that voice, reverberating, like thunder from the roof of the Painted Chamber, over the heads of Bradshaw, Haselrig, Scott and Company ; the aspect of that face, with its lion-mouth, and mournful eyes, kindled now and radiant all of it, with sorrow, with rebuke, and wrathful defiance ?—Bradshaw and Company look on it unblanched ; but will be careful not to provoke such a one. There lie penalties in him !*]

You have been called hither to save a Nation,—Nations. You had the best People, indeed, of the Christian world put into your trust, when you came hither. You had the affairs of these Nations delivered over to you in peace and quiet ; you were, and we all are, put into an undisturbed possession, nobody making title to us. Through the blessing of God, our enemies were hopeless and scattered. We had peace at home ; peace with almost all our Neighbors round about,—apt 'otherwise' to take advantages where God did administer them. 'These things we had few days ago when you came hither. And now ?'—To have our peace and interest, whereof those were our hopes the other day, thus shaken, and put under such a confusion ; and ourselves [*Chiefly "I"*] rendered hereby almost the scorn and contempt of those strangers [*Dutch Ambassadors and the like*] who are amongst us to negotiate their masters' affairs ! To give *them* opportunity to see our nakedness as they do : "A people that have been unhinged this twelve-years day,† and are unhinged still,"—as if scattering, division, and confusion came upon us like things we desired : '*these*,' which are the greatest plagues that God ordinarily lays upon Nations for sin !

I would be loath to say these are matters of our desire.‡ But if not, then why not matters of our *care*,—as wisely as by our utmost endeavors we might, to *avoid* them ! Nay if, by such actings as these 'now' are, these poor Nations shall be thrown into heaps and confusion, through blood, and ruin, and trouble§—And upon the saddest account

\* To be legal, and carnal and stupid. † An old phrase ; 'day' emphatic

‡ Politely oblique for 'your desire.'

§ 'what shall we then say ?' his Highness means, but does not complete the sentence,—as is sometimes his habit.

that ever was, if breaking 'and confusion' should come upon us ;—all because we would not settle when we could, when God put it into our hands ! Your affairs now almost settled everywhere : and to have all recoil upon us ; and ourselves 'to be' shaken in our affections, loosened from all known and public interests :—as I said before, who shall answer for these things to God ?

Who can answer for these things to God, or to men ? 'To men'—to the People who sent you hither ; who looked for refreshment from you ; who looked for nothing but peace and quietness, and rest and settlement ? When we come to give an account to them, we shall have it to say, "Oh, we quarrelled for the *Liberty of England* ; we contested, and 'went to confusion,' for that !"—"Now," Wherein, I pray you, for the "*Liberty of England* ?" I appeal to the Lord, that the desires and endeavors we have had—Nay the things will speak for themselves. The "*Liberty of England*," the Liberty of the People ; the avoiding of tyrannous impositions either upon men as men, or Christians as Christians ;—is made so safe by this Act of Settlement, that it will speak for itself. And when it shall appear to the world what 'really' hath been said and done by all of us, and what our real transactions were—For God can discover ; no Privilege [*What ! Not even Privilege of Parliament ?*] will hinder the Lord from discovering ! No Privilege, or condition of man can hide from the Lord ; He can and will make all manifest, if He see it for His glory !\*—And when these 'things, as I say,' shall be manifested : and the People will come and ask, "Gentlemen, what condition is this we are in ? We hoped for light ; and behold darkness, obscure darkness ! We hoped for rest after ten-years Civil War, but are plunged into deep confusion again !" —Ay ; we know these consequences will come upon us, if God Almighty shall not find out some way to prevent them.

I had a thought within myself, That it would not have been dishonest nor dishonorable, nor against true Liberty, no not 'the Liberty' of Parliaments, 'if,' when a Parliament was so chosen 'as you have been,' in pursuance of this Instrument of Government, and in conformity to it, and with such an approbation and consent to it,—some Owning of your Call and of the Authority which brought you hither, had been required before your entrance into the House. [*Deep silence in the audience.*] This was declined, and hath not been done, because I am persuaded scarce any man could doubt you came with contrary minds. And I have reason to believe the people that sent you least of all doubted thereof. And therefore I must

\* 'Privilege' of Parliament, in those days, strenuously forbids *reporting* but it will not serve in the case referred to !

deal plainly with you : What I forbore upon a just confidence at first, you necessitate me unto now ! [*Paleness on some faces*]. Seeing the Authority which called you is so little valued, and so much slighted,—till some such Assurance be given and made known, that the Fundamental Interest shall be settled and approved according to the proviso in the Writ of' Return, and such a consent testified as will make it appear that the same is accepted, I HAVE CAUSED A STOP TO BE PUT TO YOUR ENTRANCE INTO THE PARLIAMENT HOUSE. [*You understand that, my honorable friends ?*]

I am sorry, I am sorry, and I could be sorry to the death, that there is cause for this ! But there is cause : and if things be not satisfied which are reasonably demanded, I, for my part, will do that which becomes me, seeking my counsel from God.—There is therefore Somewhat [*A bit of written Parchment !*] to be offered to you ; which, I hope, will answer, being understood with the qualifications I have told you,—‘namely, of’ reforming as to Circumstantials, and agreeing in the Substance and Fundamentals, ‘that is to say,’ in the Form of Government now settled, which is expressly stipulated in your Indentures “not to be altered.” The making of your minds known in that by giving your assent and subscription to it, is the means that will let you in, to act those things as a Parliament which are for the good of the People. And this thing [*The Parchment !*], ‘when once it is’ shown to you and signed as aforesaid, doth determine the controversy ; and may give a happy progress and issue to this Parliament. [*Honorable gentlemen look in one another’s faces,—find general blank*].

The place where you may come thus and sign, as many as God shall make free thereunto, is in the Lobby without the Parliament Door. [*My honorable friends, you know the way, don’t you ?*]—

The ‘Instrument of’ Government doth declare that you have a legislative power without a negative from me. As the Instrument doth express it, you may make any Laws ; and if I give not my consent, within twenty days, to the passing of your Laws, they are *ipso facto* Laws ; whether I consent or no,—if not contrary to the ‘Frame of’ Government. You have an absolute Legislative Power in all things that can possibly concern the good and interest of the public ; and I think you may make these Nations happy by this Settlement. And I, for my part, shall be willing to be bound more than I am, in anything concerning which I can become convinced that it may be for the good of the People, or tend to the preservation of the Cause and Interest so long contended for.\*

\* Old Pamphlet, brother to the foregoing ; reprinted in *Parliamentary History*, xx., 349-69.

Go your ways, my honorable friends, and sign, so many of you as God hath made free thereunto ! The place, I tell you, is in the Lobby without the Parliament Door. The 'Thing,' as you will find there, is a bit of Parchment with these words engrossed on it : *'I do hereby freely promise, and engage myself, to be true and faithful to the Lord Protector and the Commonwealth of England, Scotland and Ireland ; and shall not (according to the tenor of the Indenture whereby I am returned to serve in this present Parliament) propose, or give my consent, to alter the Government as it is settled in a Single Person and a Parliament.'*\* Sign that, or go home again to your countries.

Let honorable gentlemen therefore consider what they will do !—'About a Hundred signed directly, within an hour.' Guibon Goddard and all the Norfolk Members (except one, who was among the direct Hundred) went and 'had dinner together,' to talk the matter over ;—mostly thought it would be better to sign : and did sign, all but some two. The number who have signed this first day, we hear, is One-hundred-and-twenty, One-hundred-and-thirty, nay One-hundred-and-forty.† Blank faces of honorable gentlemen begin to take meaning again,—some mild, some grim. To-morrow being Fastday, there is an adjournment. The recusants are treated 'with all tenderness ;' most of them come in by degrees : 'Three-hundred before the month ends.'

Deep Republicans, Bradshaw, Haselrig, Thomas Scott and the like, would not come in ; still less would shallow noisy ones, as Major Wildman ;—went home to their countries again, their blank faces settling into permanent grim. My Lord Protector molested no man for his recusancy ; did indeed take that absence as a comparative favor from the parties. Harrison and other suspect persons are a little looked after : the Parliament resumes its function as if little had happened. With a singular acquiescence on the part of the Public, write our correspondents, Dutch and other. The Public, which I have known rebel against crowned Kings for twitching the tippet of a Parliament, permits this Lord Protector to smite it on the cheek, and say, "Have a care, wilt thou !" Perhaps this Lord Protector is believed to

\* Whitlocke, p. 587

† Goddard, Whitlocke, Letter in *Thurlos*



mean better than the King did? There is a difference in the objects of men, as the Public understands;—a difference in the men too for rebelling against! At any rate, here is singular submission everywhere; and my Lord Protector getting ready a powerful Sea-Armament, neither his Parliament nor any other creature can yet guess for what.\*

Goddard's report of this Parliament is distinct enough; brief, and not without some points of interest; 'the misfortune is,' says one Commentator, 'he does not give us *names*.' Alas, a much greater misfortune is, that Parliament itself is hardly worth naming! It did not prove a successful Parliament;—it held on by mere Constitution-building; and effected, so to speak, nothing Respectable Pedant persons; never doubting but the Ancient sacred Sheepskins would serve for the New Time, which also has its sacredness; thinking, full surely, constitutional logic was the thing England now needed of them! Their History shall remain blank, to the end of the world. I have read their Debates, and counsel no other man to do it. Wholly upon the 'Institution of Government,' modelling, new-modelling of that: endless anxious spider-webs of constitutional logic; vigilant checks, constitutional jealousies, &c., &c. To be forgotten by all creatures.

They had a Committee of Godly Ministers sitting in the Jerusalem Chamber; a kind of miniature Assembly of Divines; intent upon 'Scandalous Ministers and Schoolmasters,' upon tender consciences, and the like objects: but there were only Twenty in this Assembly; they could hardly ever get fairly under way at all;—and have left in English History no trace that I could see of their existence, except a very reasonable Petition, noted in the Record, That the Parliament would be pleased to advance them a little money towards the purchase of fire and candle,—in these cold dark months. The Parliament, I hope, allowed them coals and a few tallow-lights; but neither they nor it could accomplish anything towards the Settling of a Godly Ministry in England: my Lord Protector and *his* Commissions will have to settle that too; an object dear to all good men. The Parliament spent its

\* Dutch Ambassadors, French, &c., in *Thurloe*, ii., 606, 613, 638 (15th, 18th Sept.; 9th Oct.).

time in constitutional jangling, in vigilant contrivance of balances, checks, and that species of entities. With difficulty could, at rare intervals, a hasty stingy vote, not for the indispensable Supplies, but for some promise of them, be wrung. An unprofitable Parliament.

For the rest, they had Biddle the Socinian before them; a poor Gloucester Schoolmaster once, now a very conspicuous Heresiarch, apparently of mild but entirely obstinate manners,—poor devil: him they put into the Gatehouse; him and various others of that kidney. Especially ‘Theauro John, who laid about him with a drawn sword at the door of the Parliament House one day,’\*—a man clearly needing to be confined. ‘Theauro John:’ his name had originally been John Davy, if I recollect; but the Spirit, in some preternatural hour, revealed to him that it ought to be as above. Poor Davy: his labors, life-adventures, financial arrangements, painful biography in general, are all unknown to us; till, on this ‘Saturday, 30th December, 1654, he very clearly knocks loud at the door of the Parliament House,’ as much as to say, “What is this *you* are upon?” and ‘lays about him with a drawn sword;’—after which all again becomes unknown. Seemingly a kind of Quaker. Does the reader know James Nayler, and the devout women worshipping him? George Fox, in his suit of leather, independent of mankind, looks down into the soft Vale of Belvoir, native ‘Vale of Bever:’ Do not the whispering winds and green fields, do not the still smoke-pillars from these poor cottages under the eternal firmaments, say in one’s heart, “George, wilt thou not help us from the wrath to come?” George finds in the Vale of Bever ‘a very tender people.’ In fact, most singular Quakerisms, frightful Socinianisms, and other portents are springing up rife in England.

Oliver objected, now and always, to any very harsh punishment of Biddle and Company, much as he abhorred their doctrines. Why burn, or brand, or otherwise torment them, poor souls? They, wandering as we all do seeking for a door of hope into the Eternities, have, being tempted of the Devil as we all likewise are, *missed* the door of hope; and gone tumbling into dan-

\* Whitlocke, p. 592. See Goddard (in Burton, i., *Introd.*, cxxvi).

gerous gulfs,—dangerous, but not yet beyond the mercy of God. Do not burn them. They meant, some of them, *well*; bear visibly to me the scars of stern true battle against the Enemy of Man. Do not burn them;—lock them up, that they may not mislead others. On frugal wholesome diet in Pendennis Castle, or Elizabeth Castle in Jersey, or here in the Clink Prison at London, they will not cost you much, and may arrive at some composure. Branding and burning is an ugly business;—as little of that as you can.

*Friday, 29th September, 1654.* His Highness, say the old Lumber-Books, went into Hyde Park; made a small picnic dinner under the trees, with Secretary Thurloe, attended by a few servants;—was, in fact, making a small pleasure excursion, having in mind to try a fine new team of horses, which the Earl or Duke of Oldenburg had lately sent him. Dinner done, his Highness himself determined to drive,—two in hand, I think, with a postillion driving other two. The horses, beautiful animals, tasting of the whip, became unruly; galloped, would not be checked, but took to plunging; plunged the postillion down; plunged or shook his Highness down, ‘dragging him by the foot for some time,’ so that ‘a pistol went off in his pocket,’ to the amazement of men. Whereupon? Whereupon—his Highness got up again, little the worse; was let blood; and went about his affairs much as usual!\* Small anecdote that figures, larger than life, in all the Books and Biographies. I have known men brown from their horses on occasion, and less noise made about it, my erudite friend! But the essential point was, his Highness wore a pistol.—Yes, his Highness is prepared to defend himself; has men, and also truculent-flunkies, and devils and devil’s-servants of various kinds, to defend himself against;—and wears pistols, and what other furniture outward and inward may be necessary for the object. Such of you as have an eye that way can take notice of it!—

*Thursday, 16th November, 1654.* On the other hand, what a glimpse into the interior domesticities of the Protector Household, have we in the following brief Note! Amid the darkness and buzzard dimness, one light-beam, clear, radiant, mournfully

\* Thurloe, i., 652, 3; Ludlow, ii., 508.

beautiful, like the gleam of a sudden star, disclosing for a moment many things to us! On Friday, Secretary Thurloe writes incidentally: ‘My Lord Protector’s Mother, of Ninety-four years old, died last night. A little before her death she gave my Lord her blessing, in these words: “The Lord cause His face to shine upon you; and comfort you in all your adversities; and enable you to do great things for the glory of your Most High God, and to be a relief unto His people. My dear Son, I leave my heart with thee. A good night!”’\*—and therewith sank into her long sleep. Even so. Words of ours are but idle. Thou brave one, Mother of a Hero, farewell!—Ninety-four years old: the royalties of Whitehall, says Ludlow very credibly, were of small moment to her: ‘at the sound of a musket she would often be afraid her Son was shot; and could not be satisfied unless she saw him once a day at least.’† She, old, weak, wearied one, she cannot help him with his refractory Pedant Parliaments, with his Anabaptist plotters, Royalist assassins, and world-wide confusions; but she bids him, Be strong, be comforted in God. And so Good night! And in the still Eternities and divine Silences—Well, *are* they not divine?—

*December 26th, 1654.* The refractory Parliament and other dim confusions still going on, we mark as a public event of some significance, the sailing of his Highness’s Sea-Armament. It has long been getting ready on the Southern Coast; sea-forces, land-forces;—sails from Portsmouth on Christmas morrow, as above marked.‡—None yet able to divine whither bound; not even the Generals, Venables and Penn, till they reach a certain latitude. Many are much interested to divine! Our Brussels Correspondent writes long since, ‘The Lord Protector’s Government makes England more formidable and considerable to all Nations than ever it has been in my days.’§

\* Thurloe to Pell, 17 Nov., 1654: in Vaughan’s *Protectorate of Oliver Cromwell* (London, 1839), i., 81.

† Ludlow, ii., 488.

‡ Penn’s Narrative, in *Thurloe*, iv., 28.

§ Thurloe, i., 160 (11 March, 1653-4).

## LETTERS CXXXIV., CXXXV.

HERE are two small Letters, harmlessly reminding us of far interests and of near;—otherwise yielding no new light; but capable of being read without commentary. Read them; and let us hasten to dissolve the poor Constitutioning Parliament, which ought not to linger on these pages, or on any page.

## LETTER CXXXIV.

*To Richard Bennet, Esq., Governor of Virginia: These.*

Whitehall, 12th January, 1654.

SIR,

Whereas the differences between the Lord Baltimore and the Inhabitants of Virginia, concerning the Bounds by them respectively claimed, are depending before our Council, and yet undetermined; and whereas we are credibly informed, you have notwithstanding gone into his Plantation in Maryland, and countenanced some people there in opposing the Lord Baltimore's Officers; whereby, and with other forces from Virginia, you have much disturbed that Colony and People, to the engendering of tumults and much bloodshed there, if not timely prevented:

We therefore, at the request of the Lord Baltimore, and 'of' divers other Persons of Quality here, who are engaged by great adventures in his interest, do, for preventing of disturbances or tumults there, will and require you, and all others deriving any authority from you, To forbear disturbing the Lord Baltimore, or his Officers or People in Maryland; and to permit all things to remain as they were before any disturbance or alteration made by you, or by any other upon pretence of authority from you, till the said Differences above mentioned be determined by us here, and we give farther order therein.

We rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.\*

Thurloe, i., 724. The signature only is Oliver's; signature, and sense.

Commissioners, it would appear, went out to settle the business ; got it, we have no doubt, with due difficulty, settled. See Letter CXL.,—26th September, 1655, ‘To the Commissioners of Maryland.’

---

### LETTER CXXXV.

HERE again, while the Pedant Parliament keeps arguing and constitutioning, are discontents in the Army that threaten to develope themselves. Dangerous fermentings of Fifth-Monarchy and other bad ingredients, in the Army and out of it ; encouraged by the Parliamentary height of temperature. Charles Stuart, on the word of a Christian King, is extensively bestirring himself. Royalist preparations, provisions of arms ; Anabaptist Petitions : abroad and at home very dangerous designs on foot : but we have our eye upon them.

The Scotch Army seems, at present, the questionablest. ‘The pay of the men is thirty weeks in arrear,’ for one thing ; the Anabaptist humor needs not that addition ! Colonel Alured, we saw, had to be dismissed the Service, last year ; Overton and others were questioned, and not dismissed. But now some desperate scheme has risen among the Forces in Scotland, of deposing General Monk, of making Republican Overton Commander, —and so marching off, all but the indispensable Garrison-troops, south into England, *there* to seek pay and other redress.\* This Parliament, now in its Fourth Month, supplies no money ; nothing but constitutional debatings. My Lord Protector had need be watchful ! He again, in this December, summons Overton from Scotland ; again questions him ;—sees good, this time, to commit him to the Tower,† and end his military services. The Army, in Scotland and elsewhere, with no settlement yet to its vague fermenting humors, and not even money to pay its arrears, is dangerous enough.

Thurloe has jotted on the back of this : ‘A duplicate also hereof was writ, signed by his Highness.’

\* *Postea*, Speech IV. ; and Thurloe, iii., 110, &c.

† 16 January, 1654–5 (Overton’s Letter, *Thurloe*, iii., 110).

Does the reader recollect, a good while ago, Three Troopers, notable at the moment, who appeared once before the Long Parliament, with a Petition from the Army in the year Forty-seven? Army Adjutors, sturdy fellows, fit for business: the names of them were Allen, Sexby, and another.\* I think they got promotion shortly after; were made Cornets, Captains, with hope of rising farther. One of them we have met since, and hardly recognized him,—Ludlow sleepily reminds me that he is the same man:† Adjutant-General Allen who was deep in the Prayer-Meeting at Windsor.‡ Sexby too we shall again, in sad circumstances, fall in with. Here is poor Allen for the third, and we hope last time.

Allen has been in Ireland, since that Prayer-Meeting; in Ireland and elsewhere, resolutely fighting, earnestly praying, as from of old; has had many darkenings of mind; expects, for almost a year past, ‘little good from the Governments of this world,’ one or the other. He has honored, and still would fain honor, ‘the Person now in chief place,’ having seen in him much ‘uprightheartedness to the Lord;’ must confess, however, ‘the late Change hath more stumbled me than any ever did;’—and on the whole knows not what he will resolve upon.§ We find he has resolved on quitting Ireland, for one thing; has come over to ‘his Father-in-law, Mr. Huish’s in Devonshire;’—and, to all appearance, is not building established-churches there! ‘Captain Unton Crook,’ of whom we shall hear afterwards, is an active man, son of a learned Lawyer;|| very zealous for the Protector’s interest;—zealous for his own and his Father’s promotion, growls Ludlow. Desborow, who fitted out the late mysterious Sea-Armament on the Southern Coast (not too judiciously, I doubt), is Commander-in-chief in those parts.

\* *Antea*, vol. i., 215, 216.

† Ludlow, i., 189: ‘William Allen,’ ‘Edward Sexby;’ but in the name of the third Trooper he is mistaken; calling him instead of *Sheppard*, ‘Philips.’

‡ *Antea*, vol. i., 252.

§ Two intercepted Letters of Allen’s (Thurloe, ii., 214, 15), ‘Dublin, 6 April, 1654.’

|| Made Sergeant Crook in 1655 (Heath, p. 693).

*'For Captain Unton Crook at Exeter: These.*

Whitehall, 20th January, 1654.

SIR,

Being informed by a Letter of yours and General Desborow, also by a Letter from the High Sheriff of Devon, that Adjutant-General Allen doth very ill offices by multiplying dissatisfaction in the minds of men to the present Government, I desire you and the High Sheriff to make diligent inquiry after him, and try to make out what can be made in this kind, and to give me speedy notice thereof. Not doubting of your care herein, I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.

If he be gone out of the Country, learn whither he is gone, and send me word by next post.\*

Allen was not gone out of the Country; he was seized by Crook 'in his Father-in-law Mr. Huish's house,' on the 31st of January, 1654-5; his papers searched, and himself ordered to be and continue prisoner, at a place agreed upon,—Sand in Somersetshire,—'under his note of hand.' So much we learn from the imbrolios of *Thurloe*;† where also are authentic Depositions concerning Allen, 'by Captains John Copleston and the said Unton Crook;' and two Letters of Allen's own,—one to the Protector; and one to 'Colonel Daniel Axtel,' the Regicide Axtel, 'Dr. Philip Carteret, or either of them,' enclosing that other Letter, and leaving it to them to present it or not, he himself thinking earnestly that they should. Both of these Letters, as well as Unton Crook's to the Protector, and the authentic Deposition of Copleston and Crook against Allen, are dated February 7th, 1654-5.

The witnesses depose,‡ That he has bragged to one 'Sir John Davis, baronet,' of an interview he had with the Protector not long since,—wherein he, Allen, told the Protector a bit of his mind; and left him in a kind of huff, and even at a nonplus; and so came off to the West Country in a triumphant manner. Farther, he talks questionable things of Ireland, of discontents

\* Lansdowne MSS., 1236, fol. 102. Superscription torn off;—only the Signature is in Oliver's hand: Address supplied here by inference.

† iii 143; see p. 140, 1.

‡ Ibid., iii., 140.



there, and in laud of Lieutenant-General Ludlow ; says, There is plenty of discontent in Ireland ; he himself means to be there in February, but will first go to London again. The Country rings with rumor of his questionable speeches. He goes to 'meetings' about Bristol, whither many persons convene,—for Anabaptist or other purposes. Such meetings are often on week-days. Questionabler still, he rides thither 'with a vizard or mask over his face ;' 'with glasses over his eyes,'—barnacles, so to speak ! Nay, questionablest of all, riding, 'on Friday, the 5th of last month,' month of January, 1654-5, 'to a meeting at Luppit near Honiton, Devon,' there rode also (but not I think to the same place !) a Mr. Hugh Courtenay, once a flaming Royalist Officer in Ireland, and still a flaming zealot to the lost Cause ; who spake nothing all that afternoon but mere treason, of Anabaptists that would rise in London, of, &c., &c. Allen, as we say, on the last morning of January was awoke from sleep in his Father-in-law, Mr. Huish's, by the entrance of two armed troopers ; who informed him that Captain Crook and the High Sheriff were below, and that he would have to put on his clothes, and come down.

Allen's Letter to the Lord Protector, from Sand in Somersetshire, we rather reluctantly withhold, for want of room. A stubborn, sad, stingily respectful piece of writing : Wife and baby terribly ill off at Sand ; desires to be resigned to the Lord, before whom both of us shall ere long nakedly appear ;'—petitions that at least he might be allowed 'to attend ordinances ;' which surely would be reasonable ! Are there not good horses that require to be ridden with a dextrous bridle-hand,—delicate, and yet hard and strong ? Clearly a strenuous Anabaptist, this Allen ; a rugged, true-hearted, not easily governable man ; given to Fifth-Monarchy and other notions, though with a strong head to control them. Fancy him duly cashiered from the Army duly admonished and dismissed into private life. Then add the Colonel Overtons and Colonel Alureds, and General Ludlows and Major-General Harrisons, and also the Charles Stuarts and Christian Kings ;—and reflect once more what kind of task this of my Lord Protector's is, and whether he needs refractory Pedant Parliaments to worsen it for him !

## SPEECH IV.

FINDING this Parliament was equal to nothing in the Spiritual way but tormenting of poor Heretics, receiving Petitions for a small advance towards coal and candle ; and nothing in the Temporal, but constitutional air-fabrics and vigilant checkings and balancings,—under which operations such precious fruits at home and abroad were ripening,—Oliver's esteem for this Parliament gradually sank to a marked degree. Check, check,—like maladroit ship-carpenters hammering, adzing, sawing at the Ship of the State, instead of diligently caulking and paying it ; idly gauging and computing, nay recklessly tearing up and re-modelling ;—when the poor Ship could hardly keep the water as yet, and the Pirates and Sea-Krakens were gathering round ! All which most dangerous, not to say half-frantic operations, the Lord Protector discerning well, and swallowing in silence as his hest was,—had for a good while kept his eye upon the Almanac with more and more impatience for the arrival of the Third of February. That will be the first deliverance of the poor laboring Commonwealth, when at the end of Five Months we send these Parliament philosophers home to their countries again. Five Months by the Instrument they have to sit ;—O fly, lazy Time ; it is yet but Four Months and — — Somebody suggested, Is not the Soldier-Month counted by Four weeks ? Eight-and-twenty days are a Soldier's Month : they have, in a sense, already sat five months, these vigilant Honorable Gentlemen !

Oliver Protector, on Monday morning, 22d January, 1654–5, surprises the Constitutioning Parliament with a message to attend him in the Painted Chamber, and leave 'Settling of the Government' for a while. They have yet voted no Supplies ; nor meant to vote any. They thought themselves very safe till February 3d, at soonest. But my Lord Protector, from his high place speaks, and dissolves.

Speech Fourth, ‘printed by Henry Hills, Printer to his Highness the Lord Protector,’ is the only one of these Speeches, concerning the reporting, printing or publishing of which there is any visible charge or notice taken by the Government of the time. It is ordered in this instance, by the Council of State, That nobody except Henry Hills or those appointed by him shall presume to print or reprint the present Speech, or any part of it. Perhaps an official precaution considered needful ; perhaps also only a matter of copyright ; for the Order is so worded as not to indicate which. At all events, there is no trace of the Report having been anywhere interfered with ; which seems altogether a spontaneous one ; probably the product of Rushworth or some such artist.\*

The Speech, if read with due intensity, can be understood ; and what is equally important, be believed ; nay, be found to contain in it a manful, great and valiant meaning,—in tone and manner very resolute, yet very conciliatory ; intrinsically not ignoble but noble. For the rest, it is, as usual, sufficiently incondite in phrase and conception ; the hasty outpouring of a mind which is *full* of such meanings. Somewhat difficult to read. Practical Heroes, unfortunately, as we once said, do not speak in blank-verse ; their trade does not altogether admit of that ! Useless to look here for a Greek Temple with its porticoes and entablatures, and *styles*. But the Alp Mountain, with its chasms and cataracts and shaggy pine-forests, and huge granite masses rooted in the Heart of the World : this, too, is worth looking at, to some. I can give the reader little help ; but will advise him to try.

GENTLEMEN,

I perceive you are here as the House of Parliament, by your Speaker whom I see here, and by your faces which are in a great measure known to me. [*Doubtless we are here, your Highness !*]

When I first met you in this room, it was to my apprehension the hopefulest day that ever mine eyes saw, as to the considerations of this world. For I did look at, as wrapt up in you together with myself, the hopes and the happiness of,—though not of the greatest,—yet a very great ‘People ;’ and the best People in the world. And truly and unfeignedly I thought ‘it’ so : as a People that have the highest and clear-

\* See Burton’s *Diary*.

est profession amongst them of the greatest glory, namely Religion . as a People that have been, like other Nations, sometimes up and sometimes down in our honor in the world, but yet never so low but we might measure with other Nations :—and a People that have had a stamp upon them from God [*Hah!*] ; God having, as it were, summed up all our former honor and glory in the things that *are* of glory to Nations, in an Epitome, within these Ten or Twelve years last past ! So that we knew one another at home, and are well known abroad.

And if I be not very much mistaken, we were arrived,—as I, and truly I believe as many others, did think,—at a very safe port ; where we might sit down and contemplate the Dispensations of God, and our Mercies ; and might know our Mercies not to have been like to those of the Ancients,—who did make out their peace and prosperity, as they thought, by their own endeavors ; who could not say, as we, That all ours were let down to us from God Himself ! Whose appearances and providences amongst us are not to be outmatched by any Story. [*Deep silence ; from the old Parliament and from us.*] Truly this was our condition. And I know nothing else we had to do, save as Israel was commanded in that most excellent Psalm of David : “The things which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us, we will not hide them from our children ; showing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and His strength, and His wonderful works that He hath done. For He established a Testimony in Jacob, and appointed a Law in Israel, which He commanded our fathers that they should make known to their children ; that the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born, who should arise and declare them to *their* children : that they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep His commandments.”\*

This I thought had been a song and a work worthy of England, whereunto you might happily have invited them,—had you had hearts unto it. [*Alas !*] You had this opportunity fairly delivered unto you. And if a history shall be written of these Times and Transactions, it will be said, it will not be denied, that these things that I have spoken are true ! [*No response from the Moderns : mere silence, stupor, not without sadness.*] This talent was put into your hands. And I shall recur to that which I said at the first : I came with very great joy and contentment and comfort, the first time I met you in this place. But we and these Nations are, for the present, under some disappointment !—If I had proposed to have played the Orator,—which I never did affect, nor do, nor I hope shall [*Hear !*],—I doubt not but upon easy suppositions,

\* Psalm lxxviii., 3-7

which I am persuaded every one among you will grant, we did meet upon such hopes as these.

I met you a second time here : and I confess, at that meeting I had much abatement of my hopes ; though not a total frustration. I confess that that which damped my hopes so soon was somewhat that did look like a parricide. It is obvious enough unto you that the 'then' management of affairs did savor of a Not owning of the Authority that called you hither. But God left us not without an expedient that gave a second possibility,—shall I say possibility ? It seemed to me a probability of recovering out of that dissatisfied condition we were all then in, towards some mutuality of satisfaction. And therefore by that Recognition [*The Parchment we had to sign : Hum-m-m !*], suiting with the Indenture that returned you hither ; to which afterwards was also added your own Declaration,\* conformable to, and in acceptance of, that expedient :—thereby, 'I say,' you had, though with a little check, another opportunity renewed unto you to have made this Nation as happy as it could have been if everything had smoothly run on from that first hour of your meeting. And indeed,—you will give me liberty of my thoughts and hopes,—I did think, as I have formerly found in that way that I have been engaged in as a soldier, That some affronts put upon us, some disasters at the first, have made way for very great and happy successes :† and I did not at all despond but the stop put upon you, in like manner, would have made way for a blessing from God. That Interruption being, as I thought, necessary to divert you from violent and destructive proceedings ; to give time for better deliberations ;—whereby leaving the Government as you found it, you might have proceeded to have made those good and wholesome Laws which the People expected from you, and might have answered the Grievances, and settled those other things proper to you as a Parliament : for which you would have had thanks from all that entrusted you. [*Doubtful "Hum-m-m !" from the old Parliament.*]

What hath happened since that time I have not taken public notice of ; as declining to intrench on Parliament privileges. For sure I am you will all bear me witness, That from your entering into the House upon the Recognition, to this day, you have had no manner of interruption or hindrance of mine in proceeding to what blessed issue the heart of a good man could propose to himself,—to this very day 'none.' You see you have me very much locked up, as to what you have transacted among yourselves, from that time to this. [*"None dare report us, or whisper what we do."*] But some things I shall take liberty to speak of to you.

\* Commons Journals (vii., 368), 14 Sept., 1654.

† Characteristic sentence, and sentiment ;—not to be meddled with.

As I may not take notice what you have been doing; so I think I have a very great liberty to tell you That I do not know what you have been doing! [*With a certain tone; as one may hear!*] I do not know whether you have been alive or dead. I have not once heard from you all this time; I have not: and that you all know. If that be a fault that I have not, surely it hath not been mine!—If I have had any melancholy thoughts, and have sat down by them,—why might it not have been very lawful for me to think that I was a Person judged unconcerned in all these businesses? I can assure you I have not so reckoned myself! Nor did I reckon myself unconcerned in you. And so long as any just patience could support my expectation, I would have waited to the uttermost to have received from you the issue of your consultations and resolutions.—I have been careful of your safety, and the safety of those that you represented, to whom I reckon myself a servant.—

But what messages have I disturbed you withal? What injury or indignity hath been done, or offered, either to your persons or to any privileges of Parliament, since you sat? I looked at myself as strictly obliged by my Oath, since your recognizing the Government in the authority of which you were called hither and sat, To give you all possible security, and to keep you from any unparliamentary interruption. Think you I could not say more upon this subject, if I listed to expatiate thereupon? But because my actions plead for me, I shall say no more of this. [*Old Parliament dubiously rolls its eyes.*]—I say, I have been caring for *you*, for your quiet sitting; caring for your privileges, as I said before, that they might not be interrupted; have been seeking of God, from the great God a blessing upon you, and a blessing upon these Nations. I have been consulting if possibly I might, in anything, promote, in any place, the real good of this Parliament, of the hopefulness of which I have said so much unto you. And I did think it to be my business rather to see the utmost issue, and what God would produce by you, than unseasonably to intermeddle with you.

But, as I said before, I have been caring for you, and for the peace and quiet of these Nations: indeed I have; and that I shall a little presently manifest unto you. And it leadeth me to let you know somewhat,—which, I fear, I fear, will be, through some interpretation, a little too justly put upon *you*; whilst you have been employed as you have been, and,—in all that time expressed in the Government, in that Government, I say in that Government,—have brought forth nothing that you yourselves say *can* be taken notice of without infringement of your privileges!\* I will tell you somewhat, which, if it be not *reus*

\* An embarrassed sentence; characteristic of his Highness. “You have done nothing noticeable upon this ‘Somewhat’ that I am about to speak

to you, I wish you had taken very serious consideration of. If it be news, I wish I had acquainted you with it sooner. And yet if any man will ask me why I did it not, the reason is given already : Because I did make it my business to give you no interruption.

There be some trees that will not grow under the shadow of other trees : There be some that choose,—a man may say so by way of allusion,—to thrive under the shadow of other trees. I will tell you what hath thriven,—I will not say what you have *cherished*, under your shadow ; that were too hard. Instead of Peace and Settlement,—instead of mercy and truth being brought together, and righteousness and peace kissing each other, by ‘your’ reconciling the Honest People of these Nations, and settling the woful distempers that are amongst us ; which had been glorious things and worthy of Christians to have proposed,—weeds and nettles, briars and thorns have thriven under your shadow ! Dissettlement and division, discontent and dissatisfaction ; together with real dangers to the whole,—have been more multiplied within these five months of your sitting, than in some years before ! Foundations have also been laid for the future renewing of the Troubles of these Nations by all the enemies of them abroad and at home. Let not these words seem too sharp : for they are true as any mathematical demonstrations are, or can be. I say the enemies of the peace of these Nations abroad and at home, the discontented humors throughout these Nations,—which ‘products’ I think no man will grudge to call by that name, of briars and thorns,—*they* have nourished themselves under your shadow ! [*Old Parliament looks still more uneasy.*]

And that I may clearly be understood : They have taken their opportunities from your sitting, and from the hopes they had, which with easy conjecture they might take up and conclude that there would be no Settlement ; and they have framed their designs, preparing for the execution of them accordingly. Now whether,—which appertains not to me to judge of, on their behalf—they had any occasion ministered for this, and from whence they had it, I list not to make any scrutiny or search. But I will say this : I think they had it not from me. I am sure they had not ‘from me.’ From whence they had, is not my business now to discourse : but *that* they had, is obvious to every man’s sense. What preparations they have made, to be executed in such a season as

of,—nor indeed, it seems, upon *any* Somewhat ;—and *this* was one you may, without much ‘interpretation,’ be blamed for doing nothing upon.” ‘Government’ means *Instrument of Government* : ‘the time expressed’ therein is *Five Months*,—now, by my way of calculating it, expired : Which may account for the embarrassed iteration of the phrase, on his Highness’s part.

they thought fit to take their opportunity from: that I know, not as men know things by conjecture, but by certain demonstrable knowledge. That they have been for some time past furnishing themselves with arms; nothing doubting but they should have a day for it; and verily believing that, whatsoever their former disappointments were, they should have more done for them by and from our own divisions, than they were able to do for themselves. I desire to be understood That in all I have to say of this subject, you will take it that I have no reservation in my mind,—as I have not,—to mingle things of guess and suspicion with things of fact; but ‘that’ the things I am telling of are fact; things of evident demonstration.

These weeds, briars and thorns,—they have been preparing, and have brought their designs to some maturity, by the advantages given to them, as aforesaid, from your sitting and proceedings. [*“Hum-m-m!”*] But by the Waking Eye that watched over that Cause that God will bless, they have been, and yet are, disappointed. [*“Yea!”*] And having mentioned that Cause, I say, that slighted Cause,—let me speak a few words in behalf thereof; though it may seem too long a digression. Whosoever despiseth it, and will say, It is *non Causa pro Causa*, ‘a Cause without a Cause,’—the All-searching Eye before mentioned will find out that man; and will judge him, as one that regardeth not the works of God nor the operations of His hands! [*Moderns look astonished.*] For which God hath threatened that He will cast men down, and not build them up. That ‘man who,’ because he can dispute, will tell us he knew not when the Cause began, nor where it is: but modelleth it according to his own intellect: and submits not to the Appearances of God in the World; and therefore lifts up his heel against God, and mocketh at all His providences; laughing at the observations, made up not without reason and the Scriptures, and by the quickening and teaching Spirit which gives life to these other;—calling such observations “enthusiasms;” such men, I say, no wonder if they “stumble, and fall backwards, and be broken, and snared and taken,”\* by the things of which they are so wilfully and maliciously ignorant! The Scriptures say, “The Rod has a voice, and He will make Himself known by the judgments which He executed.” And do we not think He will, and does, by the providences and mercy and kindness which He hath for His People and their just liberties: “whom He loves as the apple of His eye?” Doth He not by them manifest Himself? And is He not thereby also seer, giving kingdoms for them, “giving men for them, and people for their

\* Isaiah, xxviii., 13. A text that had made a great impression upon Oliver; see Letter to the General Assembly, *antea*, i., 448.



lives"—As it is in Isaiah Forty-third ?\* Is not this as fair a lecture and as clear speaking, as anything our dark reason, left to the letter of the Scriptures, can collect from them ? By this voice has God spoken loud on behalf of His People, by judging their enemies in the late War, and restoring *them* a liberty to worship with the freedom of their estates and persons when they do so. And thus we have found the Cause of God by the works of God ; which are the testimony of God. Upon which rock whosoever splits shall suffer shipwreck. But it is your glory,—and it is mine, if I have any in the world concerning the Interest of those that have an interest in a better world,—it is my glory that I know a Cause which yet we have *not* lost : but do hope we shall take a little pleasure rather to lose our lives than lose ! [*Hah !*] But you will excuse this long digression. —

I say unto you, Whilst you have been in the midst of these Transactions, that Party, that Cavalier Party have been designing and preparing to put this Nation in blood again, with a witness. But because I am confident there are none of that sort here, therefore I shall say the less to that. Only this I must tell you : They have been making great preparations of arms ; and I do believe it will be made evident to you that they have raked out many thousands of arms, even all that this City could afford, for divers months last past. But it will be said, "May we not arm ourselves for the defence of our houses ? Will anybody find fault for that ?" Not for that. But the reason for *their* doing so hath been as explicit, and under as clear proof, as the fact of doing so. For which I hope, by the justice of the land, some will, in the face of the Nation, answer it with their lives : and then the business will be pretty well out of doubt.—Banks of money have been framing, for these and other such like uses. Letters have been issued with Privy-seals, to as great Persons as most are in the Nation, for the advance of money,—which 'Letters' have been discovered to us by the Persons themselves. Commissions for regiments of horse and foot, and command of castles, have been likewise given from Charles Stuart, since your sitting. And what the general insolences of that Party have been, the Honest People have been sensible of, and can very well testify.

It hath not only been thus. But as in a quinsy or pleurisy, where the humor fixeth in one part, give it scope, all 'disease' will gather to that place, to the hazarding of the whole : and it is natural to do so till it destroy life in that person on whomsoever this befalls. So likewise will *these* diseases take accidental causes of aggravation of their distemper. And this was that which I did assert, That they have taken acci-

\* Isaiah, xliii., 3, 4 : Another prophecy of awful moment to his Highness : see Speech I., p. 49.

dental causes for the growing and increasing of those distempers,—as much as would have been in the natural body if timely remedy were not applied. And indeed things were come to that pass,—in respect of which I shall give you a particular account,—that no mortal physician, if the Great Physician had not stepped in, could have cured the distemper. Shall I lay this upon your account, or my own? I am sure I can lay it upon God's account: That if He had not stepped in, the disease had been mortal and destructive!

And what is all this? 'What are these new diseases that have gathered to this point?' Truly I must needs still say: "A company of men like briars and thorns;" and worse, if worse can be. Of another sort than those before mentioned to you. These also have been and yet are endeavoring to put us into blood and into confusion; more desperate and dangerous confusion than England ever yet saw. [*Anabaptist Levellers!*] And I must say, as when Gideon commanded his son to fall upon Zeba and Zalmunna, and slay them, they thought it more noble to die by the hand of a man than of a stripling,—which shows there is some contentment in the hand by which a man falls: so it is some satisfaction if a Commonwealth must perish, that it perish by men, and not by the hands of persons differing little from beasts! That if it must needs suffer, it should rather suffer from rich men than from poor men, who, as Solomon says, "when they oppress, leave nothing behind them, but are as a sweeping rain." Now such as these also are grown up under your shadow. But it will be asked, What have they done? I hope, though they pretend "Commonwealth's Interest," they have had no encouragement from you; but have, as in the former case, rather taken it than that you have administered any cause unto them for so doing. 'Any cause' from delays, from hopes that this Parliament would not settle, from Pamphlets mentioning strange Votes and Resolves of yours; which I hope did abuse you! But thus you see that, whatever the grounds were, these have been the effects. And thus I have laid these things before you; and you and others will be easily able to judge how far you are concerned.

"What these men have done?" They also have labored to pervert, where they could, and as they could, the Honest-meaning People of the Nation. They have labored to engage some in the Army:—and I doubt that not only they, but some others also, very well known to you, have helped to this work of debauching and dividing the Army. They have, they have! [*Overton, Allen and Company, your Highness?*] I would be loath to say Who, Where, and How; much more loath to say they were any of your number. But I can say: Endeavors have been 'made' to put the Army into a distemper, and to feed that which is the worst humor

in the Army. Which though it was not a mastering humor, yet these took advantage from delay of the Settlement, and the practices before mentioned, and the stopping of the pay of the Army, to run us into Free-quarter, and to bring us into the inconveniences most to be feared and avoided.—What if I am able to make it appear in fact, That some amongst you have run into the City of London, to persuade to Petitions and Addresses to you for reversing your own Votes that you have passed? Whether these practices were in favor of your Liberties, or tended to beget hopes of Peace and Settlement from you; and whether debauching the Army in England, as is before expressed, and starving it, and putting it upon Free-quarter, and occasioning and necessitating the greatest part thereof in Scotland to march into England, leaving the remainder thereof to have their throats cut there; and kindling for the rest a fire in our own bosoms, were for the advantage of affairs here, let the world judge!

This I tell you also: That the correspondence held with the Interest of the Cavaliers, by that Party of men called Levellers, who call themselves Commonwealth's-men, 'is in our hands.' Whose Declarations were framed to that purpose, and ready to be published at the time of their 'projected' common Rising: whereof, 'I say,' we are possessed; and for which we have the confession of themselves now in custody; who confess also they built their hopes upon the assurance they had of the Parliament's not agreeing to a Settlement:—whether these humors have not nourished themselves under your boughs, is the subject of my present discourse; and I think I shall say not amiss, if I affirm it to be so. [*His Highness looks animated!*] And I must say it again, That that which hath been their advantage, thus to raise disturbance, hath been by the loss of those golden opportunities which God had put into your hands for Settlement. Judge you whether these things were thus, or not, when you first sat down. I am sure things were not thus! There was a very great peace and sedateness throughout these Nations; and great expectations of a happy Settlement. Which I remembered to you at the beginning in my Speech; and hoped you would have entered on your business as you found it. [*"Hum-m" We had a Constitution to make!"*]

There was a Government 'already' in the possession of the People,—I say a Government in the possession of the People, for many months. It hath now been exercised near Fifteen Months: and if it were needful that I should tell you *how* it came into their possession, and how willingly they received it; how all Law and Justice were distributed from it, in every respect, as to life, liberty and estate; how it was owned by God, as being the dispensation of His providence after Twelve Years War; and sealed and witnessed unto by the People,—I should but repeat what I said in my last Speech unto you in this place: and therefore I forbear

When you were entered upon this Government ; ravelling into it—You know I took no notice what you were doing—[*Nor will now, your Highness ; let the Sentence drop !* ]—If you had gone upon that foot of account, To have made such good and wholesome provisions for the Good of the People of these Nations ‘ as were wanted ;’ for the settling of such matters in things of Religion as would have upheld and given countenance to a Godly Ministry, and yet ‘ as ’ would have given a just liberty to godly men of different judgments,—‘ to ’ men of the same faith with them that you call the Orthodox Ministry in England, as it is well known the Independents are, and many under the form of Baptism who are sound in the faith, and though they may perhaps be different in judgment in some lesser matters, yet as true Christians both looking for salvation only by faith in the blood of Christ, men professing the fear of God, and having recourse to the name of God as to a strong tower—I say you might have had opportunity to have settled peace and quietness amongst all professing Godliness ; and might have been instrumental, if not to have healed the breaches, yet to have kept the Godly of all judgments from running one upon another ; and by keeping them from being overrun by a Common Enemy, ‘ have ’ rendered them and these Nations both secure, happy and well satisfied. [*And the Constitution ! Hum-m-m !* ]

Are these things done ; or any things towards them ? Is there not yet upon the spirits of men a strange itch ? Nothing will satisfy them unless they can press their finger upon their brethren’s consciences, to pinch them there. To do this was no part of the Contest we had with the Common Adversary. For ‘ indeed ’ Religion was not the thing at first contested for ‘ at all :’\* but God brought it to that issue at last ; and gave it unto us by way of redundancy ; and at last it proved to be that which was most dear to us. And wherein consisted this more than In obtaining that liberty from the tyranny of the Bishops to all species of Protestants to worship God according to their own light and consciences ? For want of which many of our brethren forsook their native countries to seek their bread from strangers, and to live in howling wildernesses [*Our poor brethren of New England !* ] ; and for which also many that remained here were imprisoned, and otherwise abused and made the scorn of the Nation. Those that were sound in the faith, how proper was it for them to labor for liberty, that men might not be trampled upon for their consciences ! Had not they ‘ themselves ’ labored, but lately, under the weight of persecution ? And was it fit for them to sit heavy upon others ? Is it ingenuous to ask liberty, and not to give it ? What greater hypocrisy than for those who were oppressed by the Bishops to become the

\* Power of the Militia was the point upon which the actual War began  
A statement not false ; yet truer in form than it is in essence.

greatest oppressors themselves, so soon as their yoke was removed? I could wish that they who call for liberty now also had not too much of that spirit, if the power were in their hands!—As for profane persons, blasphemers, such as preach sedition; the contentious railers, evil-speakers, who seek by evil words to corrupt good manners; persons of loose conversation,—punishment from the Civil Magistrate ought to meet with these. Because, if they pretend conscience; yet walking disorderly and not according but contrary to the Gospel, and even to natural lights,—they are judged of all. And their sins being open, make them subjects of the Magistrate's sword, who ought not to bear it in vain.—The discipline of the Army *was* such, that a man would not be suffered to remain there, of whom we could take notice he was guilty of such practices as these.—

And therefore how happy would England have been, and you and I, if the Lord had led you on to have settled upon such good accounts as these are, and to have discountenanced such practices as the other, and left men in disputable things free to their own consciences! Which was well provided for by the 'Instrument of' Government; and liberty left to provide against what was apparently evil. Judge you, Whether the contesting for things that were provided for by this Government hath been profitable expense of time, for the good of these Nations! By means whereof you may see you have wholly elapsed your time, and done just nothing!—I will say this to you, in behalf of the Long Parliament: That, had such an expedient as this Government been proposed to them; and could they have seen the Cause of God thus provided for; and been, by debates, enlightened in the grounds 'of it,' whereby the difficulties might have been cleared 'to them,' and the reason of the whole enforced, and the circumstances of time and persons, with the temper and disposition of the People, and affairs both abroad and at home when it was undertaken might have been well weighed 'by them.' I think in my conscience,—well as they were thought to love their seats,—they would have proceeded in another manner than you have done! And *not* have exposed things to these difficulties and hazards they now are at; nor given occasion to leave the People so dissettled as they now are. Who, I dare say, in the soberest and most judicious part of them, did expect, not a questioning, but a doing of things in pursuance of the 'Instrument of' Government. And if I be not misinformed, very many of you came up with this satisfaction; having had time enough to weigh and consider the same.

And when I say "such an expedient as this Government,"—wherein I dare assert there is a just liberty to the People of God, and the just Rights of the People in these Nations provided for,—I can put the issue

thereof upon the clearest reason ; whatsoever any go about to suggest to the contrary. But this not being the time and place of such an avowment, 'I forbear at present.' For satisfaction's sake herein, enough is said in a Book entitled '*A State of the Case of the Commonwealth*,' published in January, 1653.\* And for myself, I desire not to keep my place in this Government an hour longer than I may preserve England in its just rights, and may protect the People of God in such a just Liberty of their Consciences as I have already mentioned. And therefore if this Parliament have judged things to be otherwise than as I have stated them,—it had been huge friendliness between persons who had such a reciprocation in so great concerns to the public, for *them* to have convinced me in what particulars therein my error lay ! Of which I never yet had a word from you ! But if, instead thereof, your time has been spent in setting up somewhat else, upon another bottom than this stands 'upon,'—it looks as if the laying grounds for a *quarrel* had rather been designed than to give the People *settlement*. If it be thus, it's *well* your labors have not arrived to any maturity at all ! [*Old Parliament looks agitated ; agitated, yet constant !*]

This Government called you hither ; the constitution thereof being limited so,—a Single Person and a Parliament. And this was thought most agreeable to the general sense of the Nation ; having had experience enough, by trial, of other conclusions ; judging this most likely to avoid the extremes of Monarchy on the one hand, and of Democracy on the other ;—and yet not to found *Dominium in Gratia* 'either.' [*Your Highness does not claim to be here as Kings do, By Grace, then ? No !*] And if so, then certainly to make the Authority more than a mere notion, it was requisite that it should be as it is in this 'Frame of' Government ; which puts it upon a true and equal balance. It has been already submitted to the judicious, true and honest People of this Nation, Whether the balance be not equal ? And what their judgment is, is visible,—by submission to it ; by acting upon it ; by restraining their Trustees from meddling with it. And it neither asks nor needs any better ratification ! [*Hear !*] But when Trustees in Parliament shall, by experience, find any evil in any parts of this 'Frame of' Government, 'a question' referred by the Government itself to the consideration of the Protector and Parliament,—of which evil or evils Time itself will be the best discoverer :—how can it be reasonably imagined that a Person or Persons, coming in by election, and standing under such obli

\* Read it he who wants satisfaction : 'Printed by Thomas Newcomb, London, 1653-4':—'wrote with great spirit of language and subtlety of argument,' says the *Parliamentary History* (xx., 419).

gations, and so limited, and so necessitated by oath to govern for the People's good, and to make *their* love, under God, the best underpropping and only safe footing :—how can it, I say, be imagined that the present or succeeding Protectors will refuse to agree to alter any such thing in the Government as may be found to be for the good of the People ? Or to recede from anything which he might be convinced casts the balance too much to the Single Person ? And although, for the present, the keeping up and having in his power the Militia seems the hardest 'condition,' yet if the power of the Militia should be yielded up at such a time as this, when there is as much need of it to keep this Cause (now most evidently impugned by all Enemies), as there was to *get* it 'for the sake of this Cause ;'—what would become of us all ! Or if it should not be equally placed in him and the Parliament, but yielded up *at any time*,—it determines his power either for doing the good he ought, or hindering Parliaments from perpetuating themselves ; from imposing what Religion they please on the consciences of men, or what Government they please upon the Nation. Thereby subjecting us to dissettlement in every Parliament, and to the desperate consequences thereof. And if the Nation *shall* happen to fall into a blessed Peace, how easily and certainly will their charge be taken off, and their forces be disbanded ! And then where will the danger be to have the Militia thus stated ?

What if I should say : If there *be* a disproportion, or disequality as to the power, it is on the other hand ! And if this be so, Wherein have you had cause to quarrel ? What demonstrations have you held forth to settle me to your opinion ? I would you had made me so happy as to have let me known your grounds ! I have made a free and ingenuous confession of my faith to *you*. And I could have wished it had been in your hearts to have agreed that some friendly and cordial debates might have been toward mutual conviction. Was there none amongst you to move such a thing ? No fitness to listen to it ? No desire of a right understanding ? If it be not folly in me to listen to Town-talk, such things *have* been proposed ; and rejected, with stiffness and severity, once and again. Was it not likely to have been more advantageous to the good of this Nation ? I will say this to you for myself ; and to that I have my conscience as a thousand witnesses, and I have my comfort and contentment in it ; and I have the witness 'too' of divers here, who I think truly 'would' scorn to own me in a lie : That I would not have been averse to any alteration, of the good of which I might have been convinced. Although I could not have agreed to the taking it off the foundation on which it stands ; namely, the acceptance and consent of the People. [" *Our sanction not needed, then !*"]

I will not presage what you have been about, or doing, in all this

time. Nor do I love to make conjectures. But I must tell you this: That as I undertook this Government in the simplicity of my heart and as before God, and to do the part of an honest man, and to be true to the Interest,—which in my conscience ‘I think’ is dear to many of you; though it is not always understood what God in His wisdom may hide from us, as to Peace and Settlement:—so I can say that no particular interest, either of myself, estate, honor or family, are, or have been, prevalent with me to this undertaking. For if you had, upon the old Government,\* offered me this one, this one thing—I speak as thus advised, and before God; as having been to this day of this opinion; and this hath been my constant judgment, well known to many who hear me speak:—if, ‘I say,’ this one thing had been inserted, this one thing, That the Government should have been placed in my Family hereditarily, I would have rejected it!† And I could have done no other according to my present conscience and light. I will tell you my reason;—though I cannot tell what God *will* do with me, nor with you, nor with the Nation for throwing away precious opportunities committed to us.

This hath been my principle; and I liked it, when this Government came first to be proposed to me, That it puts us off that hereditary way. Well looking that God hath declared what Government He delivered to the Jews; and ‘that He’ placed it upon such Persons as had been instrumental for the Conduct and Deliverance of His People. And considering that Promise in *Isaiah*, “That God would give Rulers as at the first, and Judges as at the beginning,” I did not know but that God might ‘now’ begin,—and though at present, with a most unworthy person; yet, as to the future, it might be after this manner; and I thought this might usher it in! [*A noble thought, your Highness!*] I am speaking as to my judgment against making Government hereditary. To have men chosen, for their love to God, and to Truth and Justice; and not to have it hereditary. For as it is in the *Ecclesiastes*: “Who knoweth whether he may beget a fool or a wise man?” Honest or not honest, whatever they be, they must come in, on that plan; because the Government is made a patrimony!—And this I perhaps do declare with too much earnestness; as being my own concernment;—and know not what place it may have in your hearts, and in those of the Good People in the Nation. But however it be, I have comfort in this my truth and plainness.

\* Means ‘the existing Instrument of Government’ without modification of yours.

† The matter in debate, running very high at this juncture, in the Parliament, was with regard to the Single Person’s being *hereditary*. Hence partly the Protector’s emphasis here.



I have thus told you my thoughts ; which truly I have declared to you in the fear of God, as knowing He will not be mocked ; and in the strength of God, as knowing and rejoicing that I am supported in my speaking ;—especially when I do not form or frame things without the compass of integrity and honesty ; ‘so’ that my own conscience gives me not the lie to what I say. And then in what I say, I can rejoice.

Now to speak a word or two to you. Of that, I must profess in the name of the same Lord, and wish there had been no cause that I should have thus spoken to you ! I told you that I came with joy the first time ; with some regret the second ; yet now I speak with most regret of all ! I look upon you as having among you many persons that I could lay down my life individually for. I could, through the grace of God, desire to lay down my life for you. So far am I from having an unkind or unchristian heart towards you in your particular capacities ! I have this indeed as a work most incumbent upon me ; ‘this of speaking these things to you.’ I consulted what might be my duty in such a day as this ; casting up all considerations. I must confess, as I told you, that I did think occasionally, This Nation had suffered extremely in the respects mentioned ; as also in the disappointment of their expectations of that justice which was due to them by your sitting thus long. ‘Sitting thus long ;’ and what have you brought forth ? I did not nor cannot comprehend what it is. I would be loath to call it a Fate ; that were too paganish a word. But there has been Something in it that we had not in our expectations.

I did think also, for myself, That I am like to meet with difficulties ; and that this Nation will not, as it is fit it should not, be deluded with *pretexts* of Necessity in that great business of raising of Money. And were it not that I can make some dilemmas upon which to resolve some things of my conscience, judgment and actions, I should sink at the very prospect of my encounters. Some of them are general, some are more special. [*Hear the “dilemmas.”*] Supposing this Cause or this Business must be carried on, it is either of God or of man. If it be of man, I would I had never touched it with a finger. [*Hear !*] If I had not had a hope fixed in me that this Cause and this Business was of God, I would many years ago have run from it. If it be of God, He will bear it up. [*Yea !*] If it be of man, it will tumble ; as everything that hath been of man since the world began hath done. And what are all our Histories, and other Traditions of Actions in former times, but God manifesting Himself, that He hath shaken, and tumbled down, and trampled upon, everything that He had not planted ? [*Yes, your Highness ; such is, was and for ever will be, the History of Man, deeply as we poor Moderns have now forgotten it : and the Bible of every Nation is*

*its Own History ; if it have, or had, any real Bible !*] And as this is, so let' the All-wise God deal with it. If this be of human structure and invention, and if it be an old Plotting and Contriving to bring things to this Issue, and that they are not the Births of Providence,—then they will tumble. But if the Lord take pleasure in England, and if He will do us good,—He is very able to bear us up ! Let the difficulties be whatsoever they will, we shall in His strength be able to encounter with them. And I bless God I have been inured to difficulties ; and I never found God failing when I trusted in Him. I can laugh and sing, in my heart, when I speak of these things to you or elsewhere. And though some may think it an hard thing To raise Money without Parliamentary Authority upon this Nation ; yet I have another argument to the Good People of this Nation, if they would be safe, and yet have no better principle : Whether they prefer the having of their will though it be their destruction, rather than comply with things of Necessity ? That will excuse me. But I should wrong my native country to suppose this.

For I look at the People of these Nations as the blessing of the Lord : and they are a People blessed by God. They have been so ; and they will be so, by reason of that immortal seed which hath been, and is, among them : those Regenerated Ones in the land, of several judgments ; who are all the Flock of Christ, and lambs of Christ. 'His,' though perhaps under many unruly passions, and troubles of spirit ; whereby they give disquiet to themselves and others : yet they are not so to God ; since to us He is a God of other patience ; and He will own the least of Truth in the hearts of His People. And the People being the blessing of God, they will not be so angry but they will prefer their safety to their passions, and their real security to forms, when Necessity calls for Supplies. Had they not well been acquainted with this principle, they had never seen this day of Gospel Liberty.

But if any man shall object, "It is an easy thing to talk of Necessities when men create Necessities : would not the Lord Protector make himself great and his family great ? Doth not he make these Necessities ? And then he will come upon the People with his argument of Necessity !" —This were something hard indeed. But I have *not* yet known what it is to "make Necessities," whatsoever the thoughts or judgments of men are. And I say this, not only to this Assembly, but to the world, That the man liveth not who can come to me and charge me with having, in these great Revolutions, "made Necessities." I challenge even all that fear God. And as God hath said, "My glory I will not give unto another," let men take heed and be twice advised how they call His Revolutions, the things of God, and His working of

things from one period to another,—how, I say, they call them Necessities of men's creation! For by so doing, they do vilify and lessen the works of God, and rob Him of His glory; which He hath said He will not give unto another, nor suffer to be taken from Him! We know what God did to Herod, when he was applauded and did not acknowledge God. And God knoweth what He will do with men, when they call His Revolutions human designs, and so detract from His glory. These issues and events have not been forecast; but 'were' sudden Providences in things: whereby carnal and worldly men are enraged; and under and at which, many, and I fear some good men, have murmured and repined, because disappointed of their mistaken fancies. But still all these things have been the wise disposings of the Almighty; though instruments have had their passions and frailties. And I think it is an honor to God to acknowledge the Necessities to have been of God's imposing, when truly they have been so, as indeed they have. Let us take our sin in our actions to ourselves; it's much more safe than to judge things so contingent, as if there were not a God that ruled the Earth!

We know the Lord hath poured this Nation from vessel to vessel, till He poured it into your lap, when you came first together. I am confident that it came so into your hands; and was not judged by you to be from counterfeited or feigned Necessity, but by Divine Providence and Dispensation. And this I speak with more earnestness, because I speak for God and not for men. I would have any man to come and tell of the Transactions that have been, and of those periods of time wherein God hath made these Revolutions; and find where he can fix a feigned Necessity! I could recite particulars, if either my strength would serve one to speak, or yours to hear. If you would consider\* the great Hand of God in His great Dispensations, you would find that there is scarce a man who fell off, at any period of time when God had any work to do, who can give God or His work at this day a good word.

"It was," say some, "the cunning of the Lord Protector,"—I take it to myself,—"it was the craft of such a man, and his plot, that hath brought it about!" And, as they say in other countries, "There are five or six cunning men in England that have skill; they do all these things." Oh! what blasphemy is this! Because men that are without God in the world, and walk not with Him, know not what it is to pray or believe, and to receive returns from God, and to be spoken unto by the Spirit of God, who speaks without a Written Word sometimes, yet according to it! God hath spoken heretofore in divers manners.

\* 'if that you would revolve' *in orig.*

Let Him speak as He pleaseth. Hath He not given us liberty, nay is it not our duty, To go to the Law and the Testimony? And there we shall find that there *have* been impressions, in extraordinary cases, as well without the Written Word as with it. And therefore there is no difference in the thing thus asserted from truths generally received,—except we will exclude the Spirit; without whose concurrence all other teachings are ineffectual. [*Yea, your Highness; the true God's-Voice, Voice of the Eternal, is in the heart of every Man;—there, wherever else it be.*] He doth speak to the hearts and consciences of men; and leadeth them to His Law and Testimony, and there 'also' He speaks to them; and so gives them double teachings. According to that of Job: "God speaketh once, yea twice;" and to that of David: "God hath spoken once, yea twice have I heard this." These men that live upon their *mumpsimus* and *sumpsimus* [*Bulstrode looks astonished*], their Masses and Service-Books, their dead and carnal worship,—no marvel if they be strangers to God, and to the works of God, and to spiritual dispensations. And because *they* say and believe thus, must we do so too? We, in this land, have been otherwise instructed; even by the Word, and Works, and Spirit of God.

To say that men bring forth these things when God doth them,—judge you if God will bear this? I wish that every sober heart, though he hath had temptations upon him of deserting this Cause of God, yet may take heed how he provokes and falls into the hands of the Living God by such blasphemies as these! According to the Tenth of the *Hebrews*: "If we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sin." 'A terrible word.' It was spoken to the Jews who, having professed Christ, apostatized from Him. What then? Nothing but a fearful "falling into the hands of the Living God!"—They that shall attribute to this or that person the contrivances and production of those mighty things God hath wrought in the midst of us: and 'fancy' that they have not been the Revolutions of Christ Himself, "upon whose shoulders the government is laid,"—they speak against God, and they fall under His hand without a Mediator. That is, if we deny the Spirit of Jesus Christ the glory of all His works in the world; by which He rules kingdoms, and doth administer, and is the rod of His strength,—we provoke the Mediator: and He may say: I will leave you to God, I will not intercede for you; let Him tear you to pieces! I will leave thee to fall into God's hands; thou deniest me my sovereignty and power committed to me: I will not intercede nor mediate for thee: thou fallest into the hands of the Living God!—Therefore whatsoever you may judge men for, howsoever you may say, "This is cunning, and politic, and subtle,"

—take heed again, I say, how you judge of His Revolutions as the product of men's inventions !—I may be thought to press too much upon this theme. But I pray God it may stick upon your hearts and mine. The worldly-minded man knows nothing of this, but is a stranger to it, and thence his atheisms, and murmurings at instruments, yea repining at God Himself. And no wonder; considering the Lord hath done such things amongst us as have not been known in the world these thousand years, and yet notwithstanding is not owned by us !—

There is another Necessity, which you have put upon us, and we have not sought. I appeal to God, Angels and Men,—if I shall ‘now’ raise money according to the Article in the Government ‘whether I am not compelled to do it!’ Which ‘Government’ had power to call you hither; and did;—and instead of seasonably providing for the Army, you have labored to overthrow the Government, and the Army is now upon Free-quarter! And you would never so much as let me hear a tittle from you concerning it. Where is the fault? Has it not been as if you had a purpose to put this extremity upon us and the Nation? I hope, this was not in your minds. I am not willing to judge so:—but such is the state into which we are reduced. By the designs of some in the Army who are now in custody, it was designed to get as many of them as possible,—through discontent for want of money, the Army being in a barren country, near thirty weeks behind in pay, and upon other specious pretences,—to march for England out of Scotland; and, in discontent to seize their General there [*General Monk*], a faithful and honest man, that so another [*Colonel Overton*] might head the Army. And all this opportunity taken from your delays. Whether will this be a thing of feigned Necessity? What could it signify, but “The Army are in discontent already; and we will make them live upon stones; we will make them cast off their governors and discipline?” What can be said to this? I list not to unsaddle myself, and put the fault upon your backs. Whether it hath been for the good of England, whilst men have been talking of this thing or the other [*Building Constitutions*], and pretending liberty and many good words,—whether it has been as it should have been? I am confident you cannot think it has. The Nation will not think so. And if the worst should be made of things, I know not what the Cornish men nor the Lincolnshire men may think, or other Counties; but I believe they will all think *they are not safe*. A temporary suspension of “caring for the greatest liberties and privileges” (if it were so, which is denied) would not have been of such damage as the not providing against Free-quarter hath run the Nation upon. And if it be my “liberty” to walk abroad in the fields, or to take a journey, yet it is not my wisdom to do so when my house is on fire !—

I have troubled you with a long Speech ; and I believe it may not have the same resentment \* with all that it hath with some. But because that is unknown to me, I shall leave it to God ;—and conclude with this : That I think myself bound, as in my duty to God, and to the People of these Nations for their safety and good in every respect,—I think it my duty to tell you that it is not for the profit of these Nations, not for common and public good, for you to continue here any longer. And therefore I do declare unto you, That I do dissolve this Parliament.†

So ends the First Protectorate Parliament ; suddenly, very unsuccessfully. A most poor hidebound Pedant Parliament ; which reckoned itself careful of the Liberties of England ; and was careful only of the Sheepskin Formulas of these ; very blind to the Realities of these ! Regardless of the facts and clamorous necessities of the Present, this Parliament considered that its one duty was to tie up the hands of the Lord Protector well ; to give him no supplies, no power ; to make him and keep him the bound vassal and errand-man of this and succeeding Parliaments. This once well done, they thought all was done ;—Oliver thought far otherwise. Their painful new-modelling and rebuilding of the Instrument of Government, with an eye to this sublime object, was pointing towards completion, little now but the key-stones to be let in :—when Oliver suddenly withdrew the centres ! Constitutional arch and ashlar-stones, scaffolding, workmen, mortar-troughs and scaffold-poles sink in swift confusion ; and disappear, regretted or remembered by no person,—not by this Editor for one.

By the arithmetical account of heads in England, the Lord Protector may surmise that he has lost his Enterprise. But by the real divine and human worth of thinking-souls in England, he still believes that he has it ; by this, and by a higher mission too ;—and “ will take a little pleasure to lose his life ” before he loses it ! He is not here altogether to count heads, or to count costs, this Lord Protector ; he is in the breach of battle ; placed there, as he understands, by his Great Commander : whatsoever his difficulties be, he must fight them, cannot quit them ; must

\* Means ‘ sense excited by it.’

† Old Pamphlet : reprinted in *Parliamentary History*, xx., 404-431.

fight there till he die. That is the law of his position, in the eye of God, and also of men. There is no return for him out of this Protectorship he has got into. Called to this post as I have been, placed in it as I am, "To quit it, is what I will be willing to be rolled into my grave, and buried with infamy, before I will consent unto!"

**CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.**

---

**PART IX.**

**THE MAJOR-GENERALS.**

**1655—1656.**





## CHRONOLOGICAL.

THE Plots and perils to the Commonwealth, which my Lord Protector spoke of to his honorable Members, were not an imagination, but a very tragic reality. Under the shadow of this Constitutioning Parliament, strange things had been ripening : without some other eye than the Parliament's, Constitution and Commonwealth in general had been by this time in a bad way ! A universal rising of Royalists combined with Anabaptists is in a real state of progress. Dim meetings there have been of Royalist Gentlemen, on nocturnal moors, in this quarter and in that, 'with cart-loads of arms,'—terrified at their own jingle, and rapidly dispersing again till the grand hour come. Anabaptist Levellers have had dim meetings, dim communications ; will prefer Charles Stuart himself to the traitor Oliver, who has dared to attempt actual 'governing' of men. Charles Stuart has come down to Middleburgh, on the Dutch coast, to be in readiness ; 'Hyde is cock-sure.\*' From the dreary old *Thurloes*, and rubbish-containers, of Spy Letters, Intercepted Letters, Letters of Intelligence ; where, scattered at huge intervals, the History of England for those years still lies entombed, it is manifest enough what a winter and spring this was in England. A Protector left without supplies, obliged to cut his Parliament adrift, and front the matter alone ; England, from end to end of it, ripe for an explosion ; for a universal blazing-up of all the heterogeneous combustibilities it had : the Sacred Majesty waiting at Middleburg, and Hyde cock-sure !

Nevertheless it came all to nothing ;—there being a Protector in it. The Protector, in defect of Parliaments, issued his own Ordinance, the best he could, for payment of old rates and taxes ; which, as the necessity was evident, and the sum fixed upon was low, rather lower than had been expected, the country quietly

\* Manning's Letter in *Thurloe*. iii., 384.

complied with. Indispensable supply was obtained ; and as for the Plots, the Protector had long had his eye on them, had long had his nooses round them ;—the Protector strangled them everywhere at the moment suitablest for him, and lodged the ringleaders of them in the Tower. Let us, as usual, try to extricate a few small elucidative facts from the hideous old Pamphletary Imbroglia, where facts and figments, ten thousand facts of no importance to one fact of some, lie mingled, like the living with the dead, in noisome darkness all of them ; once extricated, they may assist the reader's fancy a little. Of Oliver's own in reference to this period, too characteristic a period to be omitted, there is little or nothing left us : a few detached Letters, hardly two of them very significant of Oliver ; which cannot avail us much, but shall be inserted at their due places.

*February 12th, 1654–5.* News came this afternoon that Major John Wildman, chief of the *frantic* Anabaptist Party, upon whom the Authorities have had their eye of late, has been seized at Exton, near Marlborough, in Wilts ; ‘ by a party of Major Butler's horse.’ In his furnished lodging ; ‘ in a room up stairs ;’ his door stood open : stepping softly up, the troopers found him leaning on his elbow, dictating to his clerk ‘ A Declaration of the free and well-affected People of England now in Arms’ (or shortly to be in Arms) ‘ against the tyrant Oliver Cromwell :’\* a forcible piece, which can still be read, but only as a fragment, the zealous Major never having had occasion to finish it. They carried him to Chepstow Castle ; locked him up there : and the free and well-affected People of England never got to Arms against the Tyrant, but were only in hopes of getting. Wildman was in the last Parliament ; but could not sign the Recognition ; went away in virtuous indignation, to act against the Tyrant by stratagem henceforth. He has been the centre of an extensive world of Plots this winter, as his wont from of old was : the mainspring of Royalist Anabaptistry, what we call the *frantic* form of Republicanism, which hopes to attain its object by assisting even Charles Stuart against the Tyrant Oliver. A stirring man ; very flamby

\* Whitlocke, p. 599 : Cromwelliana, p. 151.

and very fuliginous : perhaps, since Freeborn John was sealed up in Jersey, the noisiest man in England. The turning of the key on him in Chepstow will be a deliverance to us henceforth.

We take his capture as the termination of the Anabaptist-Royalist department of the Insurrection. Thurloe has now got all the threads of this Wildman business in his hand : the ringleaders are laid in prison, Harrison, Lord Grey of Groby, and various others ; kept there out of harm's way ; dealt with in a rigorous, yet gentle, and what we must call great and manful manner. It is remarked of Oliver that none of this Party was ever brought to trial : his hope and wish was always that they might yet be reconciled to him. Colonel Sexby, one of Wildman's people, has escaped on this occasion : better for himself had he been captured now, and saved from still madder courses he got into.

*Sunday, March 11, 1694-5*, in the City of Salisbury, about midnight, there occurs a thing worth noting. What may be called the general outcome of the Royalist department of the Insurrection. This, too, over England generally, has, in all quarters where it showed itself, found some 'Major Butler' with due 'troops of horse' to seize it, to trample it out, and lay the ringleaders under lock and key. Hardly anywhere could it get the length of fighting : too happy if it could but gallop and hide. In Yorkshire, there was some appearance, and a few shots fired ; but to no effect ; poor Sir Henry Slingsby, and a Lord Malevrer, and others were laid hold of here ; of whom the Lord escaped by stratagem ; and poor Sir Henry lies prisoner in Hull,—where it will well behove him to keep quiet if he can ! But on the Sunday night above mentioned, peaceful Salisbury is awakened from its slumbers by a real advent of Cavaliers. Sir Joseph Wagstaff, 'a jolly knight' of those parts, once a Royalist Colonel ; he with Squire or Colonel Penruddock, 'a gentleman of fair fortune,' Squire or Major Grove, also of some fortune, and about Two-hundred others, actually rendezvoused in arms about the big Steeple, that Sunday night, and rang a loud alarm in those parts.

It was Assize-time ; the Judges had arrived the day before. Wagstaff seizes the Judges in their beds, seizes the High Sheriff, and otherwise makes night hideous ;—proposes on the morrow to hang the Judges, as a useful warning, which Mr. Hyde thinks it

would have been ; but is overruled by Penruddock and the rest. He orders the High Sheriff to proclaim King Charles ; High Sheriff will not, not though you hang him ; Town-crier will not, not even he though you hang him. The Insurrection does not speed in Salisbury, it would seem. The Insurrection quits Salisbury on Monday night, hearing that troopers are on foot ; marches with all speed towards Cornwall, hoping for better luck there. Marches ;—but Captain Unton Crook, whom we once saw before, marches also in the rear of it ; marches swiftly, fiercely ; overtakes it at South Molton, in Devonshire, ‘on Wednesday, about ten at night,’ and there in few minutes puts an end to it. ‘They fired out of windows on us,’ but could make nothing of it. We took Penruddock, Grove, and long lists of others ; Wagstaff unluckily escaped.\* The unfortunate men were tried, at Exeter, by a regular assize and jury ; were found guilty, some of High Treason, some of ‘Horse-stealing.’ Penruddock and Grove, stanch Royalists both and gallant men, were beheaded ; several were hanged ; a great many ‘sent to Barbadoes ;’—and this Royalist conflagration too, which should have blazed all over England, is entirely damped out, having amounted to smoke merely, whereby many eyes are bleared ! Indeed so prompt and complete is the extinction, thankless people begin to say there had never been anything considerable to extinguish. Had they stood in the middle of it,—had they seen the nocturnal rendezvous at Marston Moor, seen what Shrewsbury, what Rufford Abbey, what North Wales in general, would have grown to on the morrow,—in that case, thinks the Lord Protector not without some indignation, they had known !† Wagstaff has escaped, and Wilmot Earl of Rochester so-called ; right glad to be beyond seas again ; and will look twice at an Insurrection before they embark in it in time coming.

A terrible Protector this ; no getting of him overset ! He has the ringleaders all in his hand, in prison or still at large ;—as

\* Crook’s Letter, ‘South Molton, 15 March, 1654, two or three in the morning’ (King’s Pamphlets, small 4to., no. 637, § 15). State Trials, v. 767 *et seq.* ; Whitlocke, p. 601 ; Thurloe, iii., 365, 384, 391, 445 ; Cromwelliana, pp. 152–3.

† *Postea*, Speech V.

they love their estates and their life, let them be quiet. He can take your estate :—is there not proof enough to take your head, if he pleases ? He dislikes shedding blood ; but is very apt ‘ to *‘ barbadoes ’* an unruly man,—has sent and sends us by hundreds to Barbadoes, so that we have made an active verb of it : ‘ Barbadoes you.’\* Safest to let this Protector alone ! Charles Stuart withdraws from Middleburg into the interior obscurities ; and Mr. Hyde will not be so cock-sure another time. Mr. Hyde, much pondering how his secret could have been let out, finds that it is an underling of his, one Mr. Manning, a gentleman by birth, ‘ fond of fine clothes,’ and in very straitened circumstances at present, who has been playing the traitor. Indisputably a traitor ; wherefore the King in Council has him doomed to death ; has him shot, in winter following, ‘ in the Duke of Newburgh’s territory.’† Diligent Thurloë finds others to take his place.

*May 28th, 1655.* Desborow, who commands the Regular Troops in that insurrectionary Southwest region, is, by Commission bearing date this day, appointed *Major-General* of the Militia-forces likewise, and of all manner of civic and military forces at the disposal of the Commonwealth in those parts. Major-General over six counties specified in this Document ; with power somewhat enlarged, and not easy to specify,—power in fact to look after the peace of the Commonwealth there, and do what the Council of State shall order him.‡ He coerces Royalists ; questions, commits to custody suspected persons ; keeps down disturbance by such methods as, on the spot, he finds wisest. A scheme found to answer well. The beginning of a universal Scheme of MAJOR-GENERALS, which developes itself into full maturity in the autumn of this year ; the Lord Protector and his Council of State having well considered it in the interim, and found it the feasiblest ; ‘ if not *good*, yet best.’

By this Scheme, which we may as well describe here as afterwards, All England is divided into Districts ; Ten Districts, a Major-General for each : let him be a man most carefully chosen, a man of real wisdom, valor and veracity, a man fearing God and

\* Intercepted Letters, Thurloe, iii.

† Clarendon, iii., 752 ; Whitlocke, p. 618 (Dec. 1655) ; Ludlow, ii., 608

‡ Thurloe, iii., 486.

hating covetousness ; for his powers are great. He looks after the Good of the Commonwealth, spiritual and temporal, as he finds wisest. Ejects, or aids in ejecting, scandalous ministers ; summons disaffected, suspected persons before him ; demands an account of them ; sends them to prison, failing an account that satisfies him ;—and there is no appeal except to the Protector in Council. His force is the Militia of his Counties ; horse and foot, levied and kept in readiness for the occasion ; especially troops of horse. Involving, of course, new expense ;—which we decide that the Plotting Royalists, who occasion it, shall pay. On all Royalist disaffected Persons the Major-General therefore, as his first duty, is to lay an *Income-tax of Ten per cent* ; let them pay it quietly, or it may be worse for them. They pay it very quietly. Strange as it may seem, the Country submits very quietly to this arrangement ;—the Major-Generals being men carefully chosen. It is an arbitrary government ! murmur many. Yes ; arbitrary, but beneficial. These are powers unknown to the English Constitution, I believe ; but they are very necessary for the Puritan English Nation at this time. With men of real wisdom, who do fear God and hate covetousness, when you can find such men, you may to some purpose entrust considerable powers !

It is in this way that Oliver Protector coerces the unruly elements of England ; says to them : “Peace, ye ! With the aid of Parliament and venerable Parchment, if so may be ; without it, if so may not be,—I, called hither by a very good Authority, will hold you down. Quiet shall you, for your part, keep yourselves ; or be ‘barbadoesed,’ and worse. Mark it ; not while I live shall you have dominion, you nor the Master of you !”—Cock-matches, Horse-races and other loose Assemblages are, for limited times, forbidden ; over England generally, or in Districts where it may be thought somewhat is a-brewing. Without cock-fighting we can do ; but not without Peace, and the absence of Charles Stuart and his Copartneries. It is a Government of some arbitrariness.

And yet singular, observes my learned friend, how popular it seems to grow. These considerable infringements of the constitutional fabric, prohibition of cockfights, amercings of Royalists

axing without consent in Parliament, seem not to awaken the indignation of England; rather almost the gratitude and confidence of England. Next year, we have 'Letters of great appearances of the Country at the Assizes; and how the Gentlemen of the greatest quality served on Grand Juries; which is fit to be observed.'\*

We mention, but cannot dwell upon it, another trait belonging to those Spring Months of 1665: the quarrel my Lord Protector had in regard to his Ordinance for the Reform of Chancery. Ordinance passed merely by the Protector in Council; never confirmed by any Parliament; which nevertheless he insists upon having obeyed. How our learned Bulstrode, learned Widdrington, two of the Keepers of the Great Seal, durst not obey; and Lisle the other Keeper durst;—and Old-Speaker Lenthall, Master of the Rolls, "would be hanged at the Rolls Gate before he would obey." What profound consults there were among us; buzz in the Profession, in the Public generally. And then how Oliver Protector, with delicate patient bridle-hand and yet with resolute spur, made us all obey, or else go out of that,—which latter step Bulstrode and Widdrington, with a sublime conscientious feeling, preferred to take, the big heart saying to itself, "I have lost a thousand pounds a-year!" And Lenthall, for all his bragging, was not hanged at the Rolls Gate; but kept his skin whole, and his salary whole, and did as he was bidden. The buzz in the Profession, notwithstanding much abatement of fees, had to compose itself again.†—Bulstrode adds, some two months hence, 'The Protector being good-natured, and sensible of his harsh proceeding against Whitlocke and Widdrington,' made them Commissioners of the Treasury, which was a kind of compensation. There, with Montague and Sydenham, they had a moderately good time of it; but saw, not without a sigh, the Great Seal remain with Lisle who durst obey, and for colleague to him a certain well-known Nathaniel Fiennes, a shrewd man, Lord Say and Sele's son,—who knew nothing of that business, says Bulstrode, nay Lisle himself knew nothing of it till he learned it from *us*.‡

\* Whitlocke, p. 624 (April, 1656).

† Ibid., pp. 602–8.

‡ Ibid., p. 608.



Console thyself, big heart. How seldom is sublime virtue rewarded in this world !

*June 3d, 1655.* This day come sad news out of Piedmont ; confirmation of bad rumors there had been, which deeply affects all pious English hearts, and the Protector's most of all. It appears the Duke of Savoy had, not long since, decided on having certain poor Protestant subjects of his converted at last to the Catholic Religion. Poor Protestant people, who dwell in the obscure Valleys ' of Lucerna, of Perosa and St. Martin,' among the feeders of the Po, in the Savoy Alps : they are thought to be descendants of the old Waldenses ; a pious inoffensive people ; dear to the hearts and imaginations of all Protestant men. These, it would appear, the Duke of Savoy, in the past year, undertook to himself to get converted ; for which object he sent friars to preach among them. The friars could convert nobody ; one of the friars, on the contrary, was found assassinated,—signal to the rest that they had better take themselves away. The Duke thereupon sent other missionaries : six regiments of Catholic soldiers ; and an order to the People of the Valleys either to be converted straightway, or quit the country at once. They could not be converted all at once : neither could they quit the country well ; the month was December ; among the Alps ; and it was their home for immemorial years ! Six regiments, however, say they must ; six Catholic regiments ;—and three of them are Irish, made of the banished *Kurisees* we knew long since ; whose humor, on such an occasion, we can guess at ! It is admitted they behaved ' with little ceremony ;' it is not to be denied they behaved with much bluster and violence : ferocities, atrocities, to the conceivable amount, still stand in authentic black-on-white against them. The Protestants of the Valleys were violently driven out of house and home, not without slaughters and tortures by the road ;—had to seek shelter in French Dauphiné or where they could ; and, in mute or spoken supplication, appeal to all generous hearts of men. The saddest confirmation of the actual banishment, the actual violences done, arrives at Whitehall this day 3d June, 1655.\*

\* Letter of the French Ambassador (in *Thurloe*, iii., 470)

Pity is perennial : “ Ye have *compassion* on one another,” — is it not notable, beautiful ? In our days too, there are Polish Balls and such like ; but the pity of the Lord Protector and Puritan England for these poor Protestants among the Alps is not to be measured by ours. The Lord Protector is melted into tears, and roused into sacred fire. This day the French treaty, not unimportant to him, was to be signed : this day he refuses to sign it till the King and Cardinal undertake to assist him in getting right done in those poor Valleys.\* He sends the poor exiles 2,000*l.* from his own purse ; appoints a day of Humiliation and a general Collection over England for that object ; — has, in short, decided that he will bring help to these poor men ; that England and he will see them helped and righted. How Envoys were sent ; how blind Milton wrote Letters to all Protestant States, calling on them for co-operation ; how the French Cardinal was shy to meddle, and yet had to meddle, and compel the Duke of Savoy, much astonished at the business, to do justice and *not* what he liked with his own : all this recorded in the unreadable stagnant deluges of old Official Correspondence,† is very certain, and ought to be fished therefrom and made more apparent.

In all which, as we can well believe, it was felt that the Lord Protector had been the Captain of England, and had truly expressed the heart and done the will of England ; — in this, as in some other things. Milton’s Sonnet and Six Latin Letters are still readable ; the Protector’s Act otherwise remains mute hitherto. Small damage to the Protector, if no other suffer thereby ! Let it stand here as a symbol to us of his foreign policy in general ; which had this one object, testified in all manner of negotiations and endeavors, noticed by us and not noticed, To make England Queen of the Protestant world ; she, if there were no worthier Queen. To unite the Protestant world of struggling Light against the Papist world of potent Darkness. To stand upon God’s Gospel, as the actual intrinsic Fact of this Practical Earth ; and defy all potency of Devil’s Gospels on the strength of that. Wherein, again, Puritan England felt gradually that this Oliver

\* Thurloe, *ubi supra*.

† Thurloe (much of vol. iii.) ; Vaughan’s Protectorate, &c

was her Captain; and in heart could not but say, Long life to him; as we now do.

Let us note one other small private trait of Oliver in these months; and then hasten to the few Letters we have. Dull Bulstrode has jotted down: 'The Protector feasted the Commissioners for Approbation of Ministers.'<sup>\*</sup> Means the Commission of Triers; † whom he has to dinner with him in Whitehall. Old Sir Francis, Dr. Owen and the rest. 'He sat at table with them; and was cheerful and familiar in their company.' Hope you are getting on, my friends: how this is, and how that is? 'By such kind of little caresses,' adds Bulstrode, 'he gained much upon many persons.' Me, as a piece of nearly matchless law-learning and general wisdom, I doubt he never sufficiently respected; though he knew my fat qualities too, and was willing to use and recognize them!—

Whitlocke, April, 1655

† *Antea*, pp. 74, 75.

## LETTERS CXXXVI.—CXL.

FIVE Letters of somewhat miscellaneous character ; which we must take in mass, and with no word of Commentary that can be spared. Straggling accidental light beams, accidentally preserved to us, and still transiently illuminating this feature or that of the Protector and his business,—let them be welcome in the darkness for what they are.

## LETTER CXXXVI.

BESIDES the great Sea-Armament that sailed from Portsmouth last December, and went Westward, with sealed orders, which men begin to guess were for the Spanish West Indies,—the Protector had another Fleet fitted out under Blake, already famous as a Sea-General ; which has been in the Mediterranean, during these late months ; exacting reparation for damages, old or recent, done to the English Nation or to individuals of it, by the Duke of Florence or by others ; keeping an eye on Spain too, and its Plate Fleets, apparently with still ulterior objects.

The Duke of Florence has handsomely done justice ; the Dey of Tunis was not so well advised, and has repented of it. There are Letters, dated March last, though they do not come till June ; ‘ Letters that General Blake demanding at Tunis reparation for the losses of the English from Turkish Pirates, the Dey answered him with scorn, and bade him behold his Castles.’ Blake did behold them ; ‘ sailed into the Harbor within musket-shot of them ; and though the shore was planted with great guns, he se. upon the Turkish ships, fired nine of them,’ and brought the Dey to reason, we apprehend.\*

\* Whitlocke, p. 608 (8 June, 1655).

*To General Blake 'at Sea.'*

Whitehall, 13th June, 1655.

SIR,

I have received yours of the 25th of March, which gives account of the late Transactions between yourself and the Governors of Tunis, concerning the losses which the English have sustained by the piracies of that place ; and ' of ' the success it pleased God to give in the attempt you made upon their shipping, after their positive refusal to give you satisfaction upon your just demands. And as we have great cause to acknowledge the good hand of God towards us in this Action,—who, in all the circumstances thereof, as they have been represented by you, was pleased to appear very signally with you ; so I think myself obliged to take notice of your courage and good conduct therein ; and do esteem that you have done therein a very considerable service to this Commonwealth.

I hope you have received the former Despatches which were sent unto you by the way of Legorne, for your coming into Cadiz Bay with the Fleet ; as also those which were sent by a Ketch immediately from hence ; whereby you had also notice of three-months provisions then preparing to be sent,—which have since been sent away, under convoy of the Frigates the *Centurion* and *Dragon* : and ' I ' hope they are safely arrived with you, they sailing from hence about the 28th of April.

With this come farther Instructions concerning your disposing of the Fleet for the future ; whereunto we do refer you. Besides which, we, having taken into consideration the present Design we have in the West Indies, have judged it necessary, That not only the King of Spain's Fleets coming from thence be intercepted (which as well your former Instructions as those now sent unto you require and authorize you to do), but that we endeavor also, as much as in us lies, to hinder him from sending any relief or assistance thither. You are therefore, during your abode with the Fleet in those seas, to inform yourself, by the best means you can, concerning the going of the King of Spain's Fleet for the West Indies ; and shall, according to such information as you can gain, use your best endeavors to intercept at sea, and fight with and take them, or otherwise to fire and sink them ; as also any other of his ships which you shall understand to be bound for the West Indies with provisions of War, for the aid and assistance of his subjects there ; carrying yourself towards other of his ships and people as you are directed by your general Instructions.

' I rest,

' Your loving friend,

' OLIVER P. '\*

\* Thurloe, iii., 547.

The Sea-Armament *was* for the West Indies, then : good news of it were welcome !

Here is a short Letter of Blake's to the Protector, dated just the day before ; in cipher ;—which the reader, having never perhaps seen another Letter of Blake's, will not be displeased with Unimportant ; but bringing the old Seas, with their Puritan Sea-kings, with their 'Plate Fleets,' and vanished populations and traffics, bodily before us for moments.

"George, 12th June, 1655.

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HIGHNESS,

"The secret Instructions sent by your Highness, referring me to a former Instruction, touching the Silver Fleet of Spain coming from America, I have received ; and shall carefully observe the same. We had information at Cadiz that the Fleet was expected about a month or five weeks hence. We are now off Cape Mary's ; intending to spread with our Fleet what we can, and to range this sea, according to the wind and the information we can get plying likewise over towards Cape Sprat, it being their most likely and usual course. They of Cadiz are very distrustful of us ; and there being four Galeons designed for the Mediterranean, and six for New Spain, it is doubtful how they may be employed.

"We shall use our best endeavors to put the Instructions in execution, as God shall afford an opportunity ; desiring your Highness to rest assured of our diligence, and of the integrity of,—your most humble and faithful servant,

"ROBERT BLAKE."\*

June 13th is Wednesday. On the morrow is universal Fast-Day, Humiliation and Prayer, and public Collection of Money for the Protestants of Piedmont. A day of much pious emotion in England ; and of liberal contribution, which continued on the following days. 'Clerks come to every man's house,' says a disaffected witness ; 'come with their papers, and you are forced to contribute.' The exact amount realized I never could very authentically learn. The Dutch Ambassador says 100,000*l*. The disaffected witness says, 'London City itself gave half-a-million,'—or seemed as it would give. 'The Ministers played their part to the full,'—the Ministers and the People and their Ruler. Nc

\* Thurloe, iii., 541.

French Treaty signed or signable till this thing be managed. At length the French were obliged to manage it ; 9th September of this same year the thing was got managed ;\*—and by and by was got improved and still better managed, the Protector continuing all his days to watch over it, and over other similar things as they occurred, and to insist on seeing justice done respecting them.

---

### LETTER CXXXVII.

THE scheme of Major-Generals for England is not yet come to maturity ; but it is coming : new occasional arrests and *barbadoes*-ings continue, as the threads of old Plots are traced farther and farther. Monk keeps Scotland quiet ; the hydra is for the present well under foot.

Meanwhile Henry Cromwell is despatched for Ireland, to see with his own eyes how matters stand there. A reverend godly Mr. Brewster, hardly known to us otherwise, is also proceeding thither ; with whom the Lord Protector thinks good to salute his Son-in-law, Fleetwood, the Lord Deputy, Ireton's successor in Ireland. Henry Cromwell was there once before, on a somewhat similar mission, and acquitted himself well.† His title, this second time, is Major-General of the Army in Ireland. He is to command the forces in Ireland ; one easily believes farther, he is to observe well and report faithfully how affairs are ; and do his best to assist in rectifying them. Lord Deputy Fleetwood is by some thought to be of too lax temper for his place : he, with his Ludlows, Axtels and discontented Republicans, not to speak of other businesses, would need energy, if he have it not. Rumor has even risen that Henry Cromwell is now sent to supersede him ; which, however, the Protector expressly contradicts.

The rumor nevertheless proved, if not true, yet prophetic of the truth. Henry Cromwell acquitted himself well this second time also ; being, as we judge, a man of real insight, veracity and resolution ; very fit for such a service. Many of his Letters, all

\* See Thurloe, iii., 549, 623, 745, &c

† March, 1653-4 (Thurloe, ii., 149).

creditable to him, are in *Thurloe*: 'Petitions' from certain Irish parties come likewise to view there, that *he* might be appointed Deputy; which Petitions are, for the present, carefully 'suppressed, yet have in the end to be complied with;—they and the nature of the case, we suppose, require compliance. \* Some fifteen months hence, Henry is appointed Lord Deputy; \* Fleetwood, in some handsome way, recalled. In which situation Henry continues till the end of the Protectorate, making really an honorable figure; and then, the scene having altogether changed, retires from it into total obscurity. still in a very manful, simple and noble way.†

'My dear Biddy,' in this Letter, is Bridget Fleetwood, whom we once saw as Bridget Ireton;‡ who, for her religious and other worth, is 'a joy to my heart.' Of 'Mr. Brewster,' and the other reverend persons, Spiritual Fathers, held in such regard by the Lord Protector as is due to Spiritual Fatherhood, and pious nobleness of Intellect under whatever guise, I can say nothing: they are Spiritual Great-grandfathers of ours, and we have had to forget them! Some slight notices of Brewster, who I think was a Norfolk man, and more of Cradock, who was Welsh,—zealous Preachers both,—are in the *Milton State-Papers*: § they prove the fervent zeal, faith and fearlessness of these worthies;—not necessary to extract in this place. Cradock writes to Cromwell in 1652 that his heart overflows with prayers and praise to God for sending such a man; that he has often stepped aside to pray for him, in some thicket or ditch by the wayside, while travelling along, and thinking of him;—which Dryasdust Nicols, the Editor of these *Milton State-Papers*, considers a very ludicrous proceeding. Godly 'Mr. Tillinghurst,' so noble a phenomenon to Oliver and Fleetwood, is to us fallen altogether silent:—seemingly some godly Preacher, of very modest nature; who, in his old days, being brought once before the Lord Protector, cried it was a 'shame' to trouble any Lord Protector, or Sovereign Person, with the like of him! The venerable hoary man. And godly Mr. Troughton or

\* 21 November, 1657 (*Thurloe*, vi., 632)

† His Letter to Clarendon, in *Thurloe*.

‡ *Antea*, vol. i., p. 201.

§ Pp. 85, 158, &c.



‘Throughton,’ too, was there. O Tillinghurst, O Troughton, how much lies buried!

‘*To the Lord Fleetwood, Lord Deputy of Ireland.*’

‘Whitehall,’ 22d June, 1655.

DEAR CHARLES,

I write not often : at once I desire thee to know a most dearly love thee ; and indeed my heart is plain to thee as thy heart can well desire : let nothing shake thee in this. The wretched jealousies that are amongst us, and the spirit of calumny turn all into gall and wormwood. My heart is for the People of God : that the Lord knows, and will in due time manifest ; yet thence are my wounds ;—which, though it grieves me, yet through the grace of God doth not discourage me totally. Many good men are repining at everything though indeed very many good ‘are’ well satisfied, and satisfying daily. The will of the Lord will bring forth good in due time.

It’s reported that you are to be sent for, and Harry to be Deputy ; which truly never entered into my heart. The Lord knows, my desire was for him and his Brother to have lived private lives in the country : and Harry knows this very well, and how difficultly I was persuaded to give him his commission for his present place. This I say as from a simple and sincere heart. The noise of my being crowned, &c., are similar\* malicious figments.

Use this Bearer, Mr. Brewster, kindly. Let him be near you : indeed he is a very able holy man ; trust me you will find him so. He was a bosom-friend of Mr. Tillinghurst ; ask him of him ; you will thereby know Mr. Tillinghurst’s spirit. This Gentleman brought him to me a little before he died, and Mr. Cradock—Mr. Throughton, a godly minister being by, with ‘Mr. Tillinghurst’ himself, who cried “Shame !”

Dear Charles, my dear love to thee ; ‘and’ to my dear Biddy, who is a joy to my heart, for what I hear of the Lord in her. Bid her be cheerful, and rejoice in the Lord once and again : if she knows the Covenant,† she cannot but do ‘so.’ For that Transaction is without *her* ;‡ sure and steadfast, between the Father and the Mediator in His blood : therefore, leaning upon the Son, or looking to Him, thirsting

\* ‘like’ *in orig.*

† Covenant of Grace ; much expounded, and insisted on, by Dr. Owen, among others ; and ever a most fundamental point of God’s Arrangement, according to the theory of Oliver.

‡ Independent of her

after Him, and embracing Him, we are His Seed ;—and the Covenant is sure to all the Seed. The Compact is for the Seed : God is bound in faithfulness to Christ, and in Him to us ; the Covenant is without *us* ; a Transaction between God and Christ.\* Look up to *it*. God engageth in it to pardon us ; to write His Law in our heart ; to plant His fear ‘so’ that we shall never depart from Him. We, under all our sins and infirmities, can daily offer a perfect Christ ; and thus we have peace and safety, and apprehension of love, from a Father in Covenant,—who cannot deny Himself. And truly in this is all my salvation ; and this helps me to bear my great burdens.

If you have a mind to come over with your dear Wife, &c., take the best opportunity for the good of the Public and your own convenience. The Lord bless you all. Pray for me, that the Lord would direct, and keep me his servant. I bless the Lord I am not my own ;—but my condition to flesh and blood is very hard. Pray for me ; I do for you all. Commend me to all friends.

I rest,

Your loving father,

OLIVER P. †

Courage, my brave Oliver ! Thou hast but some three years more of it, and then the coils and puddles of this Earth, and of its poor unthankful doggery of a population, are all behind thee ; and Carrion Heath, and Chancellor Hyde, and Charles Stuart the Christian King, can work their will ; for thou hast done with it, thou art above it in the serene azure forevermore !—

Fleetwood, I observe, did come over : in January next we find the ‘Lord Deputy’ busy here in London with Bulstrode, and others of the Treasury, on high matters of State.‡ He did not return to Ireland ; got into Major-Generalings, into matters of State, on this side the Channel ; and so ended his Deputyship ;—dropping without violence, like fruit fully ripe ; the management of Ireland having gradually all shifted into Henry Cromwell’s hand in the interim.

\* The reader who discerns no spiritual meaning in all this, shall try again, if I may advise him.

† Thurloe, iii., 572.

‡ Whitlocke, p. 618 (7 Jan., 1655-6)

## LETTER CXXXVIII.

WE fear there is little chance of the Plate Fleet this year ; bad rumors come from the West Indies too, of our grand Armament and Expedition thither. The Puritan Sea-king meanwhile keeps the waters ; watches the coasts of Spain ;—which, however, are growing formidable at present.

The ‘Person bound for Lisbon’ is Mr. Meadows, one of Secretary Thurloe’s Under-secretaries ; concerning whom and whose business there will be farther speech by and by. Of the ‘Commissioners of the Admiralty’ we name only Colonel Montague of Hinchinbrook, who is getting very deep in these matters, and may himself be Admiral one day.

*To the General of the Fleet, ‘General Blake, at Sea.’*

Whitehall, 30th July, 1655

SIR,

We have received yours of the 4th, as also that of the 6th instant, both at once ; the latter signifying the great preparations which are making against you.

Some intelligence of that nature is also come to us from another hand. Which hath occasioned us to send away this Despatch unto you, immediately upon the receipt of yours, to let you know That we do not judge it safe for you, whilst things are in this condition, to send away any part of the Fleet, as you were directed by our Instructions of the 13th of June ;\* and therefore, notwithstanding those Orders, you are to keep the whole Fleet with you, until you have executed the Secret Instructions,† or find the opportunity is over for the doing thereof.

We think it likewise requisite that you keep with you the two Frigates which conveyed the victuals to you, as also the *Nantwich*, which was sent to you with a Person bound for Lisbon with our instructions to that King. And for the defects of the Fleet, the Commissioners of the Admiralty will take care thereof ; and be you confident that nothing shall be omitted which can be done here for your supply and encouragement.

I beseech the Lord to be present with you. I rest,

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.‡

\* *Antea*, Letter CXXXVI.

† *Ibid.*, in Blake’s Letter ;—they concern the ‘Silver Fleet,’ most likely

‡ Thurloe, iii., 688.

Copied 'in Secretary Thurloe's hand ;' who has added the following Note : ' With this Letter was sent the intelligence of the twenty ships coming across the Straits, and of the thirty-one ships and eight fire-ships—[*word lost* ]—in Cadiz ;'—dangerous ships and fire-ships, which belong all now to the vanished generations ; and have sailed, one knows not whence, one knows not whither !

---

### COMPLIMENT.

PRECISELY in those same summer days there has come a brilliant Swedish gentleman, as Extraordinary Ambassador to this Country from the King of Swedeland. A hot, high-tempered, clear-shining man ; something fierce, metallic, in the lustre of him. Whose negotiations, festivities, impatiences, and sudden heats of temper, occupy our friend Bulstrode almost exclusively for a twelvemonth. We will say only, he has come hither to negotiate a still stricter league of amity between the two Countries ; in which welcome enterprise the Lord Protector seems rather to complicate him by endeavoring to include the Dutch in it, the Prussians and Danes in it,—to make it in fact a general League, or basis for a League, of Protestants against the Power of Rome, and Antichristian Babylon at large ; which in these days, under certain Austrian Kaisers, Spanish Kings, Italian Popes, whose names it may be interesting not to remember, is waxing very formidable. It was an object the Protector never ceased endeavoring after ; though in this, as in other instances, with only partial, never with entire success.

Observe, however, as all Old London observes, on the night of Saturday, July 28th, 1655, the far-shining Procession by torch-light. Procession 'from Tower-wharf to the late Sir Abraham Williams's in Westminster ;' this brilliant Swedish Gentleman with numerous gilt coaches and innumerable outriders and onlookers, making his advent then and thus ; Whitlocke, Montague, Strickland (for we love to be particular) officially escorting him. Observe next how he was nobly entertained three days in the

Williams House, at the Protector's charges ; and on the third day had his audience of the Protector ; in a style of dignity worth noting by Bulstrode. Sir Oliver Flemming ; 'galleries full of ladies,' 'Lifeguards in their grey frock-coats with velvet welts ;' lanes of gentlemen, seas of general public : conceive it all ; truly dignified, decorous ; scene 'the Banqueting House of Whitehall, hung with arras :' and how at the upper end of the room the Lord Protector was seen standing 'on a footpace and carpet, with a chair of state behind him ;' and how the Ambassador saluted thrice as he advanced, thrice lifting his noble hat and feathers, as the Protector thrice lifted his ; and then—Bulstrode shall give the rest :

'After a little pause, the Ambassador put off his hat, and began to speak, and then put it on again : and whensoever, in his speech, he named the King his master, or Sweden, or the Protector, or England, he moved his hat : especially if he mentioned anything of God, or the good of Christendom, he put off his hat very low ; and the Protector still answered him in the like postures of civility. The Ambassador spake the Swedish language ; and after he had done, being but short, his Secretary Berkman did interpret it in Latin to this effect' — — Conceivable, without repetition, to ingenious readers. A stately, far-shining speech, done into Latin ; 'being but short.'

And now, 'after his Interpreter had done, the Protector stood still a pretty while ; and, putting off his hat to the Ambassador, with a carriage full of gravity and state, he answered him in English to this effect :'

My Lord Ambassador, I have great reason to acknowledge, with thankfulness, the respects and good affection of the King your master towards this Commonwealth, and towards myself in particular. Whereof I shall always retain a very grateful memory ; and shall be ready upon all occasions to manifest the high sense and value I have of his Majesty's friendship and alliance.

My Lord, you are welcome into England ; and during your abode here, you shall find all due regard and respect to be given to your person, and to the business about which you come. I am very willing to enter into a "nearer and more strict alliance and friendship with the King of Swedeland," as that which, in my judgment, will tend much to the

honor and commodity of both Nations, and to the general advantage of the Protestant Interest. I shall nominate some Persons to meet and treat with your Lordship, upon such particulars as you shall communicate to them.

After which, Letters were presented, *etceteras* were transacted, and then with a carriage full of gravity and state, they all withdrew to their ulterior employments, and the scene vanishes.\*

---

### LETTER CXXXIX.

It is too sad a truth, the Expedition to the West Indies has failed! Sea-General Penn, Land-General Venables have themselves come home, one after the other, with the disgraceful news; and are lodged in the Tower, a fortnight ago, for quitting their post without orders. Of all which we shall have some word to say anon. But take first these glimpses into other matters, foreign and domestic, on sea and land,—as the Oblivions have chanced to leave them visible for us. ‘Cascais Bay’ is at the mouth of the Tagus: General Blake seems still king of the waters in those parts.

‘*To General Blake, at Sea.*’

Whitehall, 13th September, 1655.

SIR,

We have received yours from Cascais Bay, of the 30th of August; and were very sensible of the wants of the Fleet as they were represented by your last before; and had given directions for three-months provisions,—which were all prepared, and sent from Portsmouth, some time since, under the convoy of the *Bristol* Frigate. But the Commissioners of the Admiralty have had Letters yesterday that they were forced back, by contrary winds, into Plymouth, and are there now attending for the first slack of wind, to go to sea again. And the Commissioners of the Admiralty are instructed† to quicken them by an express; although it is become very doubtful whether those provisions can ‘now’ come in time for supplying of your wants.

\* Whitlocke, pp. 609, 10.

† ‘commands of the Admiralty are required,’ *in orig.*

And for what concerns the fighting of the Fleet of Spain, whereof your said Letter makes mention, we judge it of great consequence and much for the service of the Commonwealth that this Fleet were fought; as well in order to the executing your former Instructions, as for the preservation of our ships and interest in the West Indies: and our meaning was, by our former Order, and still is, That the Fleet which shall come for the guarding of the Plate Fleet, as we conceive this doth, should be attempted. But in respect we have not certain knowledge of the strength of the Spanish Fleet, nor of the condition of your Fleet, which may alter every day,—we think it reasonable, at this distance, not to oblige you by any positive order to engage; but must, as we do hereby, leave it to you, who are upon the place, and know the state of things, to handle the rein as you shall find your opportunity and the ability of the Fleet to be:—as we also do for your coming home, either for want of provisions or in respect of the season of the year, at such time as you shall judge it to be for the safety of the Fleet. And we trust the Lord will guide and be with you in the management of this thing.

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.

‘P.S.’ In case your return should be so soon as that you should not make use of the Provisions now sent you, or but little thereof, we desire you to cause them to be preserved; they may be applied to other uses.\*

---

#### LETTER CXL.

‘*To the Commissioners of Maryland.*’

Whitehall, 26th September, 1655.

SIRS,

It seems to us by yours of the 29th of June, and by the relation we received by Colonel Bennet, that some mistake or scruple hath arisen concerning the sense of our Letters of the 12th of January last,—as if, by our Letters, we had intimated that we would have a stop put to the proceedings of those Commissioners who were authorized to settle the Civil Government of Maryland. Which was not at all intended by us; nor so much as proposed to us by those who made addresses to us to

\* Thurloe, i., 724,—in cypher; and seemingly of Thurloe’s composition

obtain our said Letter : but our intention (as our said Letter doth plainly import) was only, To prevent and forbid any force or violence to be offered by either of the Plantations of Virginia or Maryland, from one to the other, upon the differences concerning their bounds ; the said differences being then under the consideration of Ourselves and Council here. Which, for your more full satisfaction, we have thought fit to signify to you ; and rest,

Your loving friend,

‘OLIVER P.’\*

A very obscure American Transaction ;—sufficiently lucid for our Cisatlantic purposes ; nay shedding a kind of light or twilight into extensive dim regions of Oblivion on the other side of the Ocean. Bancroft, and the other American authorities, who have or have not noticed this Letter, will with great copiousness explain the business to the curious.

---

The Major-Generals are now all on foot, openly since the middle of August last ;† and an Official Declaration published on the subject. Ten military Major-Generals, Ten or finally Twelve, with militia-forces, horse and foot, at their back ; coercing Royalist Revolt, and other Anarchy ; ‘decimating’ it, that is, levying Ten per cent. upon the Income of it ; summoning it, cross-questioning it,—peremptorily signifying to it that it will not be allowed here, that it had better cease in this Country. They have to deal with Quakers also, with Anabaptists, Scandalous Ministers, and other forms of Anarchy. The powers of these men are great : much need that they be just men and wise, men fearing God and hating covetousness ;—all turns on that ! They will be supportable, nay welcome and beneficial, if so. Insupportable enough, if not so :—as indeed what official person, or man under any form, except the form of a slave well-collared and driven by whips, is or ought to be supportable ‘if not so ?’ We subjoin a

\* Thurloe, iv., 55.

† Order-Book of the Council of State ; cited in Godwin (iv., 228).



list of their names, as historically worthy, known or unknown to the reader, here.\*

Soon after this Letter, 'in the month of October, 1655,' there was seen a strange sight at Bristol in the West. A Procession of Eight Persons; one, a man on horseback, riding single; the others, men and women, partly riding double, partly on foot, in the muddiest highway, in the wettest weather; singing, all but the single-rider, at whose bridle splash and walk two women: "Hosannah! Holy, holy! Lord God of Sabaoth!" and other things, 'in a buzzing tone,' which the impartial hearer could not make out. The single-rider is a raw-boned male figure, 'with lank hair reaching below his cheeks;' hat drawn close over his brows; 'nose rising slightly in the middle;' of abstruse 'down look,' and large dangerous jaws strictly closed: he sings not; sits there covered, and is sung to by the others bare. Amid pouring deluges, and mud knee-deep: 'so that the rain ran in at their necks, and they vented it at their hose and breeches:' a spectacle to the West of England and Posterity! Singing as above; answering no question except in song. From Bedminster to Ratcliff Gate, along the streets, to the High Cross of Bristol: at the High Cross they are laid hold of by the Authorities;—turr

\* *General Desborow* has the Counties: Gloucester, Wilts, Dorset, Somerset, Devon, Cornwall.

*Colonel Kelsey*: Kent and Surrey.

*Colonel Goffe*: Sussex, Hants, Berks.

*Major-General Skippon*: London.

*Colonel Barkstead* (Governor of the Tower): Middlesex and Westminster.

*Lord-Deputy Fleetwood* (who never returns to Ireland): Oxford, Bucks, Herts; Cambridge, Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk,—for these four last he can appoint a substitute (*Colonel Haynes*).

*General Whalley*: Lincoln, Notts, Derby, Warwick, Leicester.

*Major Boteler*: Northampton, Bedford, Rutland, Huntingdon.

*Colonel Berry* (Richard Baxter's friend, once a Clerk in the Iron-works) Hereford, Salop, North Wales.

*General* (Sea-General) *Dawkins*: Monmouth and South Wales.

*Colonel Worseley*: Cheshire, Lancashire, Staffordshire.

*The Lord Lambert*: York, Durham, Cumberland, Westmoreland, Northumberland,—can appoint substitutes (*Colonel Robert Lilburn*, *Colonel Charles Howard*).

out to be James Nayler and Company. James Nayler, 'from Andersloe' or Ardsley 'in Yorkshire,' heretofore a Trooper under Lambert; now a Quaker and something more. Infatuated Nayler and Company; given up to Enthusiasm,—to Animal-Magnetism, to Chaos and Bedlam in some shape or other! Who will need to be coerced by the Major-Generals, I think;—to be forwarded to London, and there sifted and cross-questioned.\* Is not the Spiritualism of England developing itself in strange forms? The Hydra, royalist and sansculottic, has many heads.

George Fox, some time before this, had made his way to the Protector himself; to represent to him the undeserved sufferings of Friends,—and what a faithful people they were, though sansculottic, or wearing suits sometimes merely of perennial leather. George's huge *Journal*, to our regret, has no dates; but his Interview with the Protector, once in these late months, is authentic, still visible to the mind. George, being seized in Leicestershire, 'carried up to the Mews,' and otherwise tribulated by subaltern authorities, contrived to make the Protector hear some direct voice of him, appoint some hour to see him. 'It was on a morning:' George went; was admitted to the Protector's bed-chamber, 'where one Harvey, who had been a little among Friends,' but had not proved entirely obedient, was dressing him. "Peace be in this House!" George Fox 'was moved to say.' Peace, O George. 'I exhorted him,' writes George, 'to keep in the Fear of God, whereby he might receive wisdom from God,' which would be a useful guidance for any Sovereign Person. In fact, I had 'much discourse' with him; explaining what I and Friends had been led to think 'concerning Christ and His Apostles' of old time, and His Priests and Ministers of new; concerning Life and concerning Death;—concerning this unfathomable Universe in general, and the Light in it that is from Above, and the Darkness in it that is from Below: to all which the Protector 'carried himself with much moderation.' Yes, George; this Protector has a sympathy with the Perennial; and feels it across the Temporary: no hulls, leathern or other, can entirely hide it from the sense of him. 'As I spake, he several times said,

\* Examination of them (in *Harleian Miscellany*, vi., 424-39).

“That is very good,” and, “That is true.”’—Other persons coming in, persons of quality so called, I drew back ; lingered ; and then was for retiring : ‘he caught me by the hand,’ and with moist-beaming eyes, ‘said “Come again to my house ! If thou and I were but an hour of the day together, we should be nearer one to the other. I wish no more harm to thee than I do to my own soul.”’—“Hearken to God’s voice !” said George in conclusion : “Whosoever hearkens to *it*, his heart is not hardened ;” *his* heart remains true, open to the Wisdoms, to the Noblenesses ; with him it shall be well !—‘Captain Drury’ wished me to stay among the Lifeguard gentlemen, and dine with them ; but I declined, not being free hereto.\*

\* Fox’s Journal (Leeds 1836), i., 265.

## LETTERS CXLI.—CXLIH.

## JAMAICA.

WE said already the grand Sea-Armament, which sailed from Portsmouth at Christmas, 1654, had proved unsuccessful. It went westward; opened its Sealed Instructions at a certain latitude; found that they were instructions to attack Hispaniola, to attack the Spanish Power in the West Indies; it did attack Hispaniola, and lamentably failed; attacked the Spanish Power in the West Indies, and has hitherto realized almost nothing,—a mere waste Island of Jamaica, to all appearance little worth the keeping at such cost. It is hitherto the unsuccessfullest enterprise Oliver Cromwell ever had concern with. Desborow fitted it out at Portsmouth, while the Lord Protector was busy with his First refractory Pedant Parliament; there are faults imputed to Desborow but the grand fault the Lord Protector imputes to himself, That he chose or sanctioned the choice of Generals improper to command it. Sea-General Penn, Land-General Venables, they were unfortunate, they were incompetent; fell into disagreements, into distempers of the bowels; had critical Civil Commissioners with them, too, who did not mend the matter. Venables lay ‘six weeks in bed,’ very ill of sad West-India maladies; for the rest, a covetous lazy dog, who cared nothing for the business, but wanted to be home at his Irish Government again. Penn is Father of Penn the Pennsylvanian Quaker; a man somewhat quick of temper, ‘like to break his heart’ when affairs went wrong; unfit to right them again. As we said, the two Generals came voluntarily home, in the end of last August, leaving the wreck of their forces in Jamaica; and were straightway lodged in the Tower for quitting their post.

A great Armament of Thirty, nay of Sixty ships; of Four-thousand soldiers, two regiments of whom were veterans, the rest a somewhat sad miscellany of broken Royalists, unruly Level

lers, and the like, who would volunteer,—whom Venables augmented at Barbadoes, with a still more unruly set, to Nine-thousand : this great Armament the Lord Protector has strenuously hurled, as a sudden fiery bolt, into the dark Domdaniel of Spanish Iniquity in the far West ; and it has exploded there, almost without effect. The Armament saw Hispaniola, and Hispaniola with fear and wonder saw it, on the 14th of April, 1655 : but the Armament, a sad miscellany of distempered unruly persons, durst not land ‘ where Drake had landed,’ and at once take the Town and Island : the Armament hovered hither and thither ; and at last agreed to land some sixty miles off ; marched therefrom through thick-tangled woods, under tropical heats, till it was nearly dead with mere marching ; was then set upon by ambuscadoes ; fought miserably ill, the unruly persons of it, or would not fight at all ; fled back to its ships a mass of miserable disorganised ruin ; and ‘ dying there at the rate of two-hundred a day,’ made for Jamaica.\*

Jamaica, a poor unpopulous Island, was quickly taken, as rich Hispaniola might have been, and the Spaniards were driven away : but to men in biliary humor it seemed hardly worth the taking or the keeping. ‘ Immense droves of wild cattle, cows and horses, run about Jamaica ;’ dusky Spaniards dwell in *hatos*, unswept shealings ; ‘ 80,000 hogs are killed every year for the sake of their lard, which is sold under the name of *hog’s-butter* at Carthage.’ but what can we do with all that ! The poor Armament continuing to die as if by murrain, and all things looking worse and worse to poor biliary Generals, Sea-General Penn set sail for home, whom Land-General Venables swiftly followed ; leaving ‘ Vice-Admiral Goodson,’ ‘ Major-General Fortescue,’ or almost whosoever liked, to manage in their absence, and their ruined moribund forces to die as they could ;—and are now lodged in the Tower, as they deserved to be. The Lord Protector, and virtually England with him, had hoped to see the dark empire of bloody Antichristian Spain a little shaken in the West ; some reparation got for its inhuman massacrings and long-con-

\* Journal of the English Army in the West Indies : by an Eye-witness (in *Harl. Miscell* , vi., 372–390.) A lucid and reasonable Narrative.

tinued tyrannies,—massacrings, exterminations of us, ‘at St. Kitts in 1629, at Tortuga in 1637, at Santa Cruz in 1650 :’ so, in the name of England, had this Lord Protector hoped ; and he has now to take his disappointment.

The ulterior history of these Western Affairs, of this new Jamaica under Cromwell, lies far dislocated, drowned deep, in the Slumber-Lakes of *Thurloe* and Company ; in a most dark, stupified, and altogether dismal condition. A history, indeed, which, as you painfully fish it up and by degrees reawaken it to life, is in itself sufficiently dismal. Not much to be intermeddled with here. The English left in Jamaica, the English successively sent thither, prosper as ill as need be ; still die, soldiers and settlers of them, at a frightful rate per day ; languish, for most part, astonished in their strange new sultry element ; and cannot be brought to front with right manhood the deadly inextricable jungle of tropical confusions, outer and inner, in which they find themselves. Brave Governors, Fortescue, Sedgwick, Brayne, one after the other, die rapidly, of the climate and of broken heart ; their life-fire all spent there, in that dark chaos, and as yet no result visible. It is painful to read what misbehavior there is, what difficulties there are.\*

Almost the one steady light-point in the business is the Protector’s own spirit of determination. If England have now a ‘ West-India Interest,’ and Jamaica be an Island worth something, it is to this Protector mainly that we owe it. Here too, as in former darkneses, ‘ Hope shines in him, like a pillar of fire, when it has gone out in all the others.’ Having put his hand to this work, he will not for any discouragement turn back. Jamaica shall yet be a colony ; Spain and its dark Domdaniel shall yet be smitten to the heart,—the enemies of God and His Gospel, by the soldiers and servants of God. It must, and it shall. We have failed in the West, but not wholly ; in the West and in the East, by sea

\* *Thurloe*, iii., iv.,—in very many places, all in a most unedited, confused condition. Luminous Notices too in *Carte’s Ormond Papers*, ii. Long’s *History of Jamaica* (London, 1774), i., 221 *et seq.*, gives in a vague but tolerably correct way some of the results of *Thurloe* ; which *Byron Edwards* has abridged. *Godwin* (iv., 192-200) is exact, so far as he goes.

and by land, as occasion shall be ministered, we will try it again and again.

‘On the 28th of November, 1655, the Treaty with France is proclaimed by heralds and trumpets,’ say the old Newspapers.\* Alliance with France, and *Declaration* against Spain,—within the tropics where there is never Peace, and without the tropics where Peace yet is, there shall now be War with Spain. Penn and Venables, cross-questioned till no light farther could be had from them, are dismissed; in Penn’s stead, Montague is made Admiral.† We will maintain Jamaica, send reinforcement after reinforcement to it; we will try yet for the Spanish Plate Fleets; we will hurl yet bolt after bolt into the dark Domdaniel, and have no Peace with Spain. In all which, as I understand, the spirit of England, mindful of Armadas, and wedded once for all to blessed Gospel Light and Progress, and not to accursed Papal Jesuitry and Stagnancy, coöperates well with this Protector of the Commonwealth of England. Land-fighting too we shall by and by come upon; in all ways, a resolute prosecution of hostilities against Spain. Concerning the ‘policy’ of which, and real wisdom and unwisdom of which, no reader need consult the current Sceptical Red-tape Histories of that Period, for they are much misinformed on the matter.—

Here are Three Official Letters, or Draughts of Letters, concerning the business of Jamaica; which have come to us in a very obscure, unedited condition, Thomas Birch having been a little idle. Very obscure; and now likely to remain so, they and the others,—unless indeed Jamaica should produce a Poet of its own, pious towards the Hero-Founder of Jamaica, and courageous to venture into the Stygian Quagmires of *Thurloe* and the others, and vanquish\* them on his and its behalf!

Apparently these Official Letters are First-draughts, in the hand of *Thurloe* or some underling of his; dictated to him, as is like, by the Protector: they would afterwards be copied-fair, dated, and duly despatched; and only the rough originals, unhappily without date, are now left us. Birch has put them

\* In *Cromwelliana*, p. 134. † Jan. 1655-6 (*Thurloe*, iv., 338).

lown without much criticism ; the arrangement of some is palpably wrong. By the spelling and punctuation we judge them to be of *Thurloe's* handwriting ; but the sense is clearly *Oliver's*, and probably, with some superficial polishings, the composition. They cannot, after much inquiry, be dated except approximately ; the originals are gone with *Birch*, who has not even told us in whose handwriting they were, much less has tried to make any sense of them for himself, the idle ineffectual Editor ! In fact, *Thurloe* in regard to these Jamaica businesses has had to go without editing ; lies wide-spread, dislocated, dark ; and, in this passage, read by *Birch's* light, is mere darkness visible. One of the Letters, we at length find, is even misaddressed,—seemingly by idle *Birch*, at random. Happily it is with the sense alone that we are much concerned ; and that is in good part legible. Fancy *Penn* and *Venables* dismissed, after some light got out of them by cross-questioning ; fancy ‘ Vice-Admiral Goodson, Major-General Fortescue, Daniel Serle Governor of Barbadoes, and Major-General Sedgwick’ new from England, made Commissioners, with Instructions,\* with full power over Jamaica ;—and then read.

---

#### LETTER CXLI.

VICE-ADMIRAL GOODSON, as his title indicates, went out as second under *Penn* ; whose place he now fills as chief. Letters of his in *Thurloe* indicate a thick blunt stout-hearted sailor character, not nearly so stupid as he looks ; whose rough piety, sense, stoicism, and general manfulness grow luminous to us at last. The Protector hopes ‘ the Lord may have blessed Goodson to have lighted upon some of the Enemy’s vessels, and burnt them ;’—which is a hope fulfilled : for Goodson has already been at *St. Martha* on the *Spanish Main*, and burnt it ; but got few ‘ ships,’ nor any right load of plunder either ; the people having had him in sight for six hours before landing, and run away with everything to the woods. He got ‘ thirty brass guns and two *bases*,’ whatever these

\* *Thurloe*, iv., 634.



are. The rest of the plunder, being 'accurately sold at the mast of each ship' by public auction, yielded just 471*l.* sterling, which was a very poor return. At the Rio de Hacha ('Rio de hatch,' as we here write it) 'the bay was so shoal' no great ships could get near; and our 'hoys' and small craft, on trying it, saw nothing feasible; wherefore we had drawn back again. Santa Martha, and plunder sold by auction to the amount above stated, was all we could get.\*

*To Vice-Admiral Goodson at Jamaica.*

Whitehall, 'October, 1655.'

SIR,

I have written to Major-General Fortescue divers advertisements of our purpose and resolution, the Lord willing, to prosecute this Business; and you shall not want bodies of men nor yet anything in our power for the carrying on of the work. I have also given divers hints unto him of things which may probably be attempted, and should† be very diligently looked after by you both; but are left to your better judgments upon the place. Wherein I desire you would consult together how to prosecute your affairs with that brotherly kindness that upon no color whatsoever any divisions or distractions should be amongst you, but that you may have one shoulder to the work; which will be very pleasing to the Lord; and not unnecessary, considering what an enemy you are like to have to deal withal.

We hope that you have with 'you' some of those ships which came last, near Twenty men-of-war; which I desire you to keep equipt, and make yourselves as strong as you can to beat the Spaniard, who will doubtless send a good force into the Indies. I hope, by this time the Lord may have blessed you to have light upon some of their vessels,—whether by burning them in their harbors or otherwise. And it will be worthy of you to improve your strength, what you can, both to weaken them by parcels, and to engage them as you have opportunity,—which, at such a distance I may probably guess, would be best 'managed' by not suffering, if you can help it, the new Fleet, which comes from Spain, to go unfought, before they join with the ships that are to the Leeward of you.

We are sending to you, with all possible speed, Seven more stout men-of-war, some of them forty guns, and the rest not under thirty, for your assistance. This Ship goes before, with instructions to encourage you to go on in the work; and also with instruction to Mevis,

\* Goodson's Letter, in Thurloe, iv., 159 *et seq.*

† 'would' in orig.

and the other Windward Islands, to bring so many of the Plantations as are free to come, 'that they may settle with you at Jamaica.' And I desire you, with your lesser merchant-ships or such others as you can spare, to give all possible assistance for their removal and transplantation, from time to time, as also all due encouragement to remove them.

You will see by the Enclosed what I have writ to Major-General Fortescue. And I hope your counsels will enter into that which may be for the glory of God and good of this Nation. It is not to be denied but the Lord hath greatly humbled us in that sad loss sustained at Hispaniola; and we doubt we have provoked the Lord; and it is good for us to know and to be abased for the same. But yet certainly His name is concerned in the work: and therefore though we should, and I hope do, lay our mouths in the dust, yet He would not have us despond, but I trust give us leave to make mention of His name and of His righteousness, when we cannot make mention of our own. You are left there; and I pray you set up your banners in the name of Christ; for undoubtedly it is His cause. And let the reproach and shame that hath been for our sins; and through (also we may say) the misguidance of some, work up your hearts to confidence in the Lord, and for the redemption of His honor from the hands of men who attribute their success to their Idols, the work of their own hands. And though He hath torn us, yet He will heal us; though He hath smitten us, yet He will bind us up; after two days He will revive us, in the third day He will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight.\* The Lord Himself hath a controversy with your Enemies; even with that Roman Babylon, of which the Spaniard is the great underpropper. In that respect, we fight the Lord's battles;—and in this the Scriptures are most plain. The Lord therefore strengthen you with faith, and cleanse you from all evil: and doubt not but He is able, and I trust as willing, to give you as signal success as He gave your enemies against you. Only the Covenant-fear of the Lord be upon you.†

If we send you not by this, I trust we shall by the next, our Declaration setting forth the justness of this War.

I remain,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.‡

The *Declaration* here alluded to, of War with Spain, came out on Tuesday, 23d October, 1655;§ which with sufficient ap-

\* Hosea, vi., 1, 2.

† No other fear; nor is there need of any other hope or strength!

‡ Thurloe, iv., 130.

§ Ibid., iv., 117; Godwin, iv., 217.

proximation dates this Letter for us. By obscure intimations, allusions to events, and even by recurrence of phrases, the following Letter seems to have the same or a closely subsequent date; but no sense could be made of it till the Address, 'Major-General Fortescue at Jamaica' (which, being nonsense, we have to impute to Birch), was erased,—was altered, by dim lights\* and guessings still a little uncertain, as below.

---

### LETTER CXLII.

*'To Daniel Serle, Esquire, Governor of Barbadoes.'*

Whitehall, October, 1655.

SIR,

These are first to let you know that myself and this Government reckon ourselves beholden † to you for the ready expressions of your love in giving assistance to our late Designs. ‡ Which indeed, though it hath miscarried in what we hoped for, through the disposing hand of God, for reasons best known to Himself, and as we may justly conceive for our sins,—yet is not this Cause the less His, but will be owned by Him, as I verily believe: and therefore we dare not relinquish it; § but shall, the Lord assisting, prosecute it with what strength we can, hoping for 'a' blessing for His name's sake.

You will receive some Instructions, || with encouragements to remove your people thither. Whereto I refer you: only let me tell you that if you shall think to desire some other things which are not mentioned in those Instructions, 'you may' rest upon my word that we shall be most ready to supply what they may be defectivè in or you may reasonably demand, when once you are upon the place,—where certainly you may be better able to judge what may tend most to your accommodation than at a distance. Surely the sooner you remove thither, ¶

\* Thurloe, iv., 633, &c., &c.

† 'beholding' *in orig.*; as the old phrase usually is.

‡ Hispaniola to which Serle, at Barbadoes, had given due furtherance, as the Expedition passèd.

§ No!

|| Thurloe, iv., 633-7; worth reading, though in great want of editing.

¶ Will mean, if our Addressing of this Letter is correct, that it had at one time been intended and decided to send Serle of Barbadoes, an experienced man, the ablest and principal English Governor in the West Indies.

you will have the more time to strengthen yourself, in such place and upon such part as you shall like of. And for your own part, I have named you one of the Commissioners there for managing of the whole affair; whereby you will have your vote and interest in that Government.

Having said this, I think fit to let you know that we have Twenty men-of-war already there, and are sending Eight more, many whereof have forty guns and upwards, and the rest above thirty.\* We hope the Plantation is not wanting in anything; having at the least Seven-thousand fighting men upon the place: and we are providing to supply them constantly with fresh men: and we trust they are furnished with a twelvemonth's victuals;—and I think, if we have it in England, they shall not want.

We have also sent to the Colonies of New England like offers with yours,† To remove thither; our resolution being to people and plant that Island. And indeed we have very good reason to expect considerable numbers from thence, forasmuch as the last winter was very destructive, and the summer hath proved so very sickly.

I pray God direct you; and rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.‡

Undoubtedly to 'Daniel Serle,' or else to 'Major-General Sedgwick' the other of the Four new Commissioners, this Letter must have been addressed. With either of which Addresses it remains historically somewhat obscure; but is legible enough for our purposes with it here. The next seems to be of slightly later date.

### LETTER CXLIII.

*To Major-General Fortescue at Jamaica.*

Whitehall, November, 1655

SIR,

You will herewith receive Instructions for the better carrying-on of your business; which is not of small account here, though

to take charge of Jamaica himself. Which, however, in the quick succession of new lights and occurrences, never came to pass.

\* Same phrase in the preceding Letter.

† Encouragements to them, as to 'your' Colony, to emigrate thither.

‡ Thurloe, iv., 130.

our discouragements have been many; for which we desire to humble ourselves before the Lord, who hath very sorely chastened us. I do commend, in the midst of others' miscarriages, your constancy and faithfulness to your trust in every 'situation'\* where you are, and 'your taking care of a "company of poor sheep left by their shepherd;"† and be assured that, as that which you have done hath been good in itself, and becoming an honest man, so it hath a very good savor here with all good Christians and all true Englishmen, and will not be forgotten by me, as opportunity shall serve.

I hope you have long before this time received that good supply which went from hence in July last,‡ whereby you will perceive that you have not been forgotten here. I hope also the ships sent for New England are, before this time, with you;§—and let me tell you, as an encouragement to you and those with you to improve the utmost diligence, and to excite your courage in this business, though not to occasion any negligence in prosecuting that affair, nor to give occasion to slacken any improvement of what the place may afford, That you will be followed with what necessary supplies as well for comfortable subsistence as for your security against the Spaniard, this place may afford, or you want.

And therefore study first your security by fortifying: and although you have not monies for the present, to do it in such quantities as were to be wished; yet, your case being as that of a marching army, wherein every soldier, out of principles of nature, and according to the practice of all discipline, ought to be at pains to secure the common quarter,—we hope no man amongst you will be so wanting to himself, considering food is provided for you, as not to be willing to help to the uttermost therein. And therefore I require you and all with you, for the safety of the whole, that this be made your most principal intention. The doing of this will require that you be very careful not to scatter, till you have begun a security in some one place.—Next I desire you that you would consider how to form such a body of good Horse as may, if the Spaniard should attempt upon you at his next coming into the Indies with his Galeons, be in a readiness to march to hinder his landing; who will hardly land upon a body of horse; and if he shall land, 'you will' be in a posture to keep the provisions of the country

\* Word torn.

† Fortescue's own expression: in a Letter of 21 July, 1655 (Thurloe, iii., 675).

‡ Vaughan, i., 303; Thurloe, iv., 4.

§ Thurloe, iv., 157; one, the first of them, did arrive, Nov. 1st: 'sent from Jamaica to New England for provisions.'

from him, or him from the provisions, if he shall endeavor to march towards you.

We have sent Commissioners and Instructions into New England, to try what people may be drawn thence.\* We have done the like to the Windward English Islands; and both in England and Scotland and Ireland, you will have what men and women we can well transport

We think, and it is much designed amongst us, to strive with the Spaniard for the mastery of all those seas; and therefore we could heartily wish that the Island of Providence were in our hands again: believing that it lies so advantageously in reference to the Main, and especially for the hindrance of the Peru trade and Carthagena, that you would not only have great advantage thereby of intelligence and surprisal, but 'might' even block up Carthagena.† It is discoursed here that, if the Spaniard do attempt upon you, it is most likely it will be upon the East end of the Island, towards Cuba; as also 'that' Cuba, in its chief Town, is a place‡ easily attempted, and hath in it a very rich copper-mine. It would be good, for the first, as you have opportunity, to inform yourself: and if there be need, to make a good work upon the East end of your Island, to prevent them. And for the other, and all things of that kind, we must leave them to your judgment upon the place, to do therein as you shall see cause.

To conclude: As we have cause to be humbled for the reproof God gave us at St. Domingo, upon the account of our own sins as well as 'others,' so, truly upon the reports brought hither to us of the extreme avarice, pride and confidence, disorders and debauchedness, profaneness and wickedness, commonly practised amongst the Army, we can not only bewail the same, but desire that all with you may do so; and that a very special regard may be had so to govern, for time to come, as that all manner of vice may be thoroughly discountenanced, and severely punished: and that such a frame of government may be exercised that virtue and godliness may receive due encouragement.

'I rest,

'Your loving friend,

'OLIVER P.§

The brave Fortescue never received this Letter: he already

\* Long Correspondences about it, and details, from assiduous Mr. Gookin, chief of those Commissioners, in Thurloe, iv.

† 'the same' *in orig.*

‡ 'Cuba upon Cuba is a place,' as the original has it. The first 'Cuba' here must, of course, mean Cuba *Town*, now Havanna.

§ Thurloe, iv., 634

lay in his grave when it was written ; had died in October last,\* a speedy victim of the bad climate and desperate situation. Brave Sedgwick, his Partner and Successor, soon died also :† a very brave, zealous and pious man, whose Letters in *Thurloe* are of all others the best worth reading on this subject. Other brave men followed, and soon died ; spending heroically their remnant of life-fire there,—as heroes do, ‘making paths through the impassable.’ But we must leave the heroisms of Oliver Protector and his Puritans, in this Jamaica Business, to the reader’s fancy henceforth,—till perhaps some Jamaica *Poet* rise to resuscitate and extricate them. Reinforcement went on the back of reinforcement, during this Protector’s lifetime : ‘a Thousand Irish Girls’ went ;‡ not to speak of the rogue-and-vagabond species from Scotland,—‘we can help you’ at any time ‘to two or three hundred of these.’§ And so at length a West-India Interest did take root ; and bears spices and poisons, and other produce, to this day.

\* *Thurloe*, iv., 153.

† 24 June, 1656 (*Long’s History of Jamaica*, i., 257).

‡ *Long*, i., 244.

§ *Thurloe*, iv., 692, 5.

## LETTERS CXLIV.—CXLVIII.

TAKE the following Letters in mass; and make some aim History of Eleven Months from them, as best may be.

---

## LETTER CXLIV.

HENRY CROMWELL has no Major-Generals in Ireland, but has his anarchies there also to deal with. Let him listen to this good advice on the subject.

*For my Son, Henry Cromwell, at Dublin, Ireland.*

‘Whitehall,’ 21st November, 1655.

Son,

I have seen your Letter writ unto Mr. Secretary Thurloe; and do find thereby that you are very apprehensive of the carriage of some persons with you, towards yourself and the public affairs.

I do believe there may be some particular persons who are not very well pleased with the present condition of things, and may be apt to show their discontent as they have opportunity: but this should not make too great impressions in you. Time and patience may work them to a better frame of spirit, and bring them to see that which, for the present, seems to be hid from them; especially if they shall see your moderation and love towards them, if they are found in other ways towards you. Which I earnestly desire you to study and endeavor, all that lies in you. Whereof both you and I too shall have the comfort, whatsoever the issue and event thereof be.

For what you write of more help, I have long endeavored it, and shall not be wanting to send you some farther addition to the Council, so soon as men can be found out who are fit for the trust. I am also thinking of sending over to you a fit person who may command the North of Ireland; which I believe stands in great need of one; and ‘I’ am of your opinion that Trevor and Colonel Mervin are very dangerous persons, and may be made the heads of a new rebellion. And there-



fore I would have you move the Council that they be secured in some very safe place, and the farther out of their own countries the better.

I commend you to the Lord; and rest,

Your affectionate father,

OLIVER P.\*

‘The Letter writ unto Mr. Secretary Thurloe’ which is responded to in this wise and magnanimous manner, does not appear in *Thurloe* or elsewhere. November 14, the day before the date of this, Henry writing to Thurloe excuses his present brevity, his last Letter having been so very copious: that copious Letter, now lost, is probably the one in question here.

‘*November 22d,*’ the day after this Letter, ‘came several accounts from the Major-Generals out of divers Counties. Out of Norfolk it was certified that Cleveland the Poet and one Sherland a wild Parson were apprehended’ at Norwich ‘by Colonel Haynes,† the Lord Fleetwood’s Substitute in those regions. This is John Cleveland the famed Cantab Scholar, Royalist Judge-Advocate, and thrice-illustrious Satirist and son of the Muses; who ‘had gone through eleven editions’ in those times, far transcending all Miltons and all mortals,—and does not now need any twelfth edition, that we hear of. Still recognizable for a man of lively parts and brilliant petulant character; directed, alas, almost wholly to the *worship of clothes*,—which is by nature a transient one! His good fortune quitted him, I think, nine years ago, when David Lesley took him prisoner in Newark. A stinging satire against the Scots had led Cleveland to expect at least martyrdom on this occasion; but Lesley merely said, “Let the poor knave go and sell his ballads;”‡ and dismissed him,—towards thin diet, and a darkness which has been deepening ever since. Very low, now at Norwich, where he is picked up by Colonel Haynes: ‘Thirty pounds a year;’ ‘lives with a gentleman to whom he is giving some instruction;’—unfortunate son of the Muses. He indites a highflown magnanimous epistle to Crom-

\* *Thurloe*, i. 726.

† *Newspapers* (in *Cromwelliana*, p. 154); *Thurloe*, iv., 185.

‡ *Biog. Britan.* (2d edit.), iii., 531:—very ignorantly told there

well, on this new misfortune ; who likewise magnanimously dismisses him,\* to 'sell his ballads' at what little they will bring.

*Wednesday, December 12th, 1655.* This day 'in a withdrawing-room at Whitehall,' presided over by his Highness, who is much interested in the matter, was held 'a Conference concerning the Jews ;'†—of which the modern reader too may have heard something. Conference, one of Four Conferences, publicly held, which filled all England with rumor in those old December days ; but must now contract themselves into a point for us. Highest official Persons, with Lord Chief Barons, Lord Chief Justices, and chosen Clergy have met here to advise, by reason, Law-learning, Scripture-prophecy, and every source of light for the human mind, concerning the proposal of admitting Jews, with certain privileges as of alien-citizens, to reside in England. They were banished near Four-hundred years ago : shall they now be allowed to reside and trade again ? The Proposer is 'Manasseh Ben Israel,' a learned Portuguese Jew of Amsterdam ; who, being stirred up of late years by the great things doing in England, has petitioned one and the other, Long Parliament and Little Parliament, for this object ; but could never, till his Highness came into power, get the matter brought to a hearing. And so they debate and solemnly consider ; and his Highness spake ;—and says one witness, "I never heard a man speak so well."‡ His Highness was eager for the scheme, if so might be. But the Scripture-prophecies, Law-learnings, and lights of the human mind seemed to point another way : zealous Manasseh went home again ; the Jews could not settle here except by private sufferance of his Highness ;—and the matter contracts itself into a point for us.§

This same Jew-Wednesday, Wednesday, the 12th, as a laborious unimportant computation shows, was the 'evening' when Republican Ludlow had the first interview with his Highness and certain of his Council 'in the Protector's bedchamber.'|| Solid

\* Life of Cleveland, prefixed to his Poems.

† Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 154).

‡ Sir Paul Rycaut (in Spence's Anecdotes, p. 77 ;—as cited by Godwin iv., 299).

§ Godwin, iv., 243-9.

|| Ludlow ii., 55 *et seq*

Ludlow has been in Ireland; dreadfully sulky ever since this Protectorate began. Solid Ludlow never would acknowledge any Single Person, never he; not though the Single Person "were his own father." He has nevertheless, by certain written 'engagements,' contrived to get across from Ireland, with much trouble by the road; but will now give any promise satisfactory to his Highness. "He will be peaceable; yes, so long as he sees no chance otherwise: but if he see a chance!—Should like, notwithstanding, to breathe a little air in his own country; that is all he is wanting for the present!" In fact, our solid friend is firm as brass, or oak-timber; altogether obstinate indeed, not to say dogged and mulish. The Protector, who has a respect for the solid man, and whose course is conciliation in such cases, permits him to reside in Essex; keeping his eye upon him.

We might speak also of the famed 'Committee of Trade,' which has now begun its sessions 'in the old House of Lords.' An Assembly of Dignitaries, Chief Merchants, Political Economists, convened by summons of his Highness;\* consulting zealously how the Trade of this country may be improved. A great concernment of the Commonwealth, 'which his Highness is eagerly set upon.' They consulted of 'Swedish Copperas,' and such like; doing faithfully what they could.

Of these things we might speak; but prefer to end the year by this small interesting fraction of Domestic Gossip, coming to us in a small flute-voice across the loud Disturbances, which are all fallen silent now, more silent now than even it! Sorry only that nobody can inform us who this blameworthy 'person' in the Lord Henry Cromwell's house is, or what her misdoings are: but the reader, skilled in perennial human nature, can sufficiently supply these, and listen to the ancient small flute-voice with intelligence:

\* Whitlocke, p. 618 (2 November, 1655).

*The Lady Mary Cromwell to Henry Cromwell, Major-General of the Army in Ireland.*

“ ‘ Hampton-Court,’ 7th December, 1655

“DEAR BROTHER,—I cannot be any longer without begging an excuse for my so long silence. You cannot but hear of my Sister’s illness ; which indeed has been the only cause of it. You might justly take it ill otherwise, and think there were want of that affection I owe unto you.

“Indeed, dear Brother, it was a great deal of trouble to me to think I should give you any occasion to think amiss of me : for I can truly say it, you are very dear to me ; and it is a great trouble to me to think of the distance we are from one another : and would be more, if I did not think you are doing the Lord’s service ;—and truly that ought to satisfy us, for while we are here, we cannot expect but that we must be separated. Dear Brother, the Lord direct you in His ways, and keep your heart close unto Himself. And I am sure, therein you will have true comfort ; and that will last when all this world shall pass away.

“I cannot but give you some item of One that is with you, who, ‘it’ is so much feared by your friends that love you, is some dishonor to you and my dear Sister, if you have not a great care. For it is reported here, that she rules much in your Family ; and truly it is feared that she is a discountenancer of the Godly People. Therefore, dear Brother, take it not ill, that I give you an item of her ; for, truly, if I did not love both you and your honor, I would not give you notice of her. Therefore I hope you will not take it ill, that I have dealt thus plainly with you. I suppose you know who it is I mean, therefore I desire to be excused for not naming her. I desire not to be seen in it ; and therefore desire you that you would not take the least notice of my writing to you about it : because I was desired not to speak of it ;—nor should I, but that I know you will not take it amiss from your poor Sister who loves you.

“Dear Brother, I take leave to rest—your sister and servant,

“MARY CROMWELL.

“Her Highness ‘our Mother’ desires to have her love to you and my Sister ; and my Sister Franke her respects to you both.”\*

‘My Sister Franke’ and the Lady Mary, these are my ‘two little wenches,’ grown now to be women ; with dress-caps, fresh.

\* Thurloe, iv., 293.

blossoming hearts, musical glib tongues,—not uninteresting to men! Anthony Ashley Cooper, I am told, is looking towards this Lady Mary; now turned of Eighteen,\* and a desirable match for any youth of ambition,—but not attainable I doubt by Ashley.

---

### LETTER CXLV.

NEW Sea-Armaments, and ever new, are fitted out against the Spaniards and their Papist Domdaniel. Penn being dismissed, Councillor Colonel Montague, already in the Admiralty, was made Sea-General last January in his stead; and now Blake and he have their flags flying, somewhere off Cadiz Bay, it would appear.

*To Generals Blake and Montague, at Sea.*

Whitehall, 28th April, 1656.

MY LOVING FRIENDS,

You have, as I verily believe and am persuaded, a plentiful stock of prayers going ‘on’ for you daily, sent up by the soberest and most approved Ministers and Christians in this Nation; and, notwithstanding some discouragements, very much wrestling of faith for you: which is to us, and I trust will be to you, matter of great encouragement. But notwithstanding all this, it will be good for you and us to deliver up ourselves and all our affairs to the disposition of our All-wise Father; who, not only out of prerogative, but because of His wisdom, goodness and truth, ought to be resigned unto by His creatures, and most especially by those who are children of His begetting through the Spirit. We have been lately taught† that it is not in man to direct his way. Indeed all the dispensations of God, whether adverse or prosperous, do fully read that lesson. We can no more turn away the Evil, as we call it, than attain the Good: And therefore Solomon’s counsel, of doing what we have to do with all our might, ‘and’ getting our hearts wholly submitted, if not to rejoicing, at least to contentation with whatsoever shall be dispensed by Him to whom alone the issues of all things do belong, is worthy to be received by us.‡

Wherefore we have thought fit to send this honest man, Captain Lloyd, who is known to us to be a person of integrity, to convey to you

\* *Antea*, vol. i., 67.

† *Ir.* the affair of Hispaniola, &c.

‡ Yes, I should say so;—as indeed the whole Universe, since it first had any glimmerings of intelligence in it, has said!

some thoughts,—wherein we do only offer to you such things as do arise to us, partly upon intelligence, and partly upon such a measure as we at such a distance take of that great affair wherein you are engaged; desiring to give no rule to you; but building, under God, much more upon your judgments on the place than ‘upon’ our own; forasmuch as our intelligences, coming much upon the examination of Merchants’ ships and such ways, may not be true oftentimes in matter of fact. And therefore we do offer what we have to say rather as queries than as resolutions.

We are informed that not many of the Plate Fleet are come home, *viz.* two Galeons and two Pataches;\* and we hear they are not so rich as they gave out. We are informed also that the Spaniards’ Fleet in Cadiz is in no preparation to come out; and some think they will not come forth, but delay you upon the coast, until your victuals are spent, and you forced to come home. We apprehend that, when General Blake was there last year, they could not have told how to have manned out a Fleet, if the Merchants there and gentlemen interested had not (principally for their own interest in the return of the ‘Plate’ Fleet) done it.

We are informed that they sent what men they could well spare, by those Six or Seven ships which they sent to the West Indies in March last. We know also that it hath ever been accounted that the Spaniards’ great want is men,—as well as money at this time. What numbers are in and about Cadiz you best know. We only discourse probabilities: Whether now it might not be worthy to be weighed by you and your council of war, whether this Fleet of theirs now in Cadiz might not be burnt or otherwise destroyed? Whether Puntal and the Forts are so considerably stronger as to discourage from such an attempt? Whether Cadiz itself be unattemptable; or the Island on which it stands be noways to be separated from relieving the Town by the Bridge,† the Island being so narrow in some parts of it? Whether any other place be attemptable; especially that of the Town and Castle of Gibraltar,—which if possessed and made tenable by us,‡ would it not be both an advantage to our trade and an annoyance to the Spaniard; and enable us, without keeping so great a fleet on that coast, with six nimble

\* *Galeone*, in the Spanish Dictionary, is defined as an ‘Armed ship of burden used for trade in time of war;’ *Patache* as ‘a Tender, or smaller ship to wait upon the *Galeone*.’

† Means ‘noways to be separated from the Mainland, by ruining its Bridge:’ Cadiz were thus in reality *isolated*.

‡ Hear, hear!

frigates lodged there to do the Spaniard more harm than by a fleet, and ease our own charge?

You may discourse freely with the Bearer concerning anything contained in this Letter, to whom the whole was communicated, that so he might be able to bring back to us a more particular account of things. The Lord guide you to do that which may be pleasing in His sight.

I remain,

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.\*

---

### LETTER CXLVI.

CADIZ could not be attempted. Here, eight days later, is another message to the same parties, concerning another business. ‘The Portugal,’ it appears, has been behaving in a very paltry fashion; and now ‘Mr. Meadows,’ one of Thurloe’s Under-Secretaries, is gone out to him; whose remonstrances, the Fleet lending them its emphasis, will probably be effectual!

*To Generals Blake and Montague, at Sea.*

Whitehall, 6th May, 1656

GENTLEMEN,

You will perceive, by the Instructions† herewith sent you, what is expected by the Council and myself at your hands. And although we are satisfied that you will believe we have sufficient grounds to give you these Directions, yet we have thought fit, for the farther strengthening you unto this Action, to give you a short knowledge of the true state of the Difference between us and the King of Portugal.

You very well know that it is very near two years since we and the Ambassador of Portugal did agree a Treaty; they having wronged us and our Merchants, and taken part with the late King against us. When the Articles were fully agreed by the Ambassador, who had full power and authority to conclude with us, we on our part ratified and confirmed the same, and sent it to the King of Portugal to be ratified and executed by him also. He, delaying to do it according to the first Agreement, in which there were some preliminaries to be performed by him before we could enter upon the whole body of a Treaty,—not only refused to give

\* Thurloe, iv., 744.

† Thurloe, iv., 769: brief ‘instructions,’ To seize the Portugal’s ships, fleets, almost the Portugal’s self, if he will not do justice.

us satisfaction therein, but instead thereof sent us a pretended Ratification of a Treaty, so different from what was agreed by his Ambassador that it was quite another thing. In 'regard' to some essential Articles, it was proposed that if we would condescend to some amendments, the King of Portugal would 'then' agree to confirm the whole.

Whereupon we sent Mr. Maynard to have the Treaty consummated : but finding by the answer he gave us,\* that there was little reality, and nothing but delays intended, we could not satisfy ourselves without sending another Person, fully instructed, and authorized by us to take away all scruples by yielding to their own amendments ; thereby to discern whether they were sincere† or not. But, contrary to all expectation, we find, by the account the said Person hath given us, that we are put upon it to recede from all those things that were provisional, either for the good of the State or of our Merchants, or else we must have no peace with them.‡

In one of the Articles agreed with the Ambassador, it was expressed, That the Merchants should enjoy liberty of conscience, in the worship of God in their own houses and aboard their ships ; enjoying also the use of English Bibles, and other good books ; taking care that they did not exceed this liberty. Now, upon the sending of Mr. Meadows,—unless we will agree to submit this Article to the determination of the Pope, we cannot have it : whereby he would bring us to an owning of the Pope ; which, we hope, whatever befall us, we shall not, by the grace of God, be brought unto.§ And upon the same issue is that Article put whereby it is provided and agreed by his Ambassador, That any ships coming to that harbor, any of their company that shall run away from the said ships shall be brought back again by the Magistrate ; and the Commanders of the said ships 'shall' not 'be' required to pay the said runaways their wages, upon pretence 'that' they are turned Catholics,—which may be a color for any knave to leave his duty, or for the Roman Catholics to seduce our men. This we thought necessary to be provided against. Yet to this also, as I said before, they would not consent without the approbation of the Pope, although it was agreed by their Ambassador too.

Upon the whole matter, we find them very false to us, who intended nothing but what was simply honest. And truly we cannot believe that Article that was for our good, was 'ever' really intended by them. And we may now plainly see what the effect is like to be of any Treaty had or made with people or states guided by such principles, who, when they have agreed, have such an evasion as these people have manifestly

\* 'by his return' *in orig.* † 'real' *in orig.* ‡ Let them have a care !  
§ Hear, hear !



held forth in their dealing with us. Wherefore we pray you to be very exact in your prosecution of your Instructions; which truly I hope do not arise from the hope of gain, but from a sense of duty. For, seeing we cannot secure our People in their lives, liberties, and estates, by a Pretence of Treaty; nor yet answer the just demands this Nation hath for wrongs done them; but must in some sort be guilty of bringing our People as it were into a net, by such specious shows which have nothing but falseness and rottenness in them;—we are necessitated, having amongst ourselves found out no possible expedient, though we have industriously sought it, to salve these things; we, out of necessity ‘I say,’ and not out of choice, have concluded to go in this way.

You will receive herewith the Copy of an Instruction given and sent to Mr. Meadows, wherein is a time limited for the King’s answer: and we desire that this may not be made use of by the King to delay or deceive us: nor that you, upon the first sight hereof, delay to take the best course you can to effect your Instructions,—or that the Portugal should get his Fleet home before you get between him and home, and so the birds be flown.

We know not what your affairs are at the present; but are confident that nothing will be wanting on your part for the effectual accomplishment of this Service. But knowing that all ways, and works, and ourselves, are ever at the perfect disposition of the Lord and His providence, and that our times are in His hands,—we therefore recommend you to the grace and guidance of our good God, who, we hope, hath thoughts of mercy towards us: and that He would guide and bless you is the prayer of,

Your very loving friend,  
‘OLIVER P.’\*

In Thurloe’s handwriting; but very evidently Oliver’s composition every sentence of it. There will clearly be no living for the Portugal, unless he decide to throw away his jockeyings and jesuitries, and do what is fair and square!

---

#### LETTER CXLVII.

A SMALL Note still extant; relating to very different, altogether domestic matters.

\* Thurloe, iv., 768.

‘For my loving Son, Richard Cromwell, Esquire, at Hursley: These.

‘Whitehall,’ 29th May, 1656.

Son

You know there hath often been a desire to sell Newhall, because in these four years last past it hath yielded very little or no profit, at all, nor did I ever hear you ever liked it for a seat.

It seems there may be a chapman had, who will give 18,000*l.* It shall either be laid out where you shall desire; at Mr. Wallop’s, or elsewhere, and the money put into feoffees’ hands in trust to be so disposed: or I shall settle Burleigh; which yields near 1,300*l.\* per annum*, besides the woods. Waterhouse will give you farther information.

I rest,

Your loving father,

OLIVER P.

‘P.S.’ My love to your Father and Mother,† and your dear Wife.‡

Newhall is the House and Estate in Essex which had once belonged to the great Duke of Buckingham. Burleigh I guess to be Burleigh House near Stamford, which Oliver in the beginning of his military services had known well: he took it by assault in 1643. Of Oliver’s Lands, or even of his Public Lands granted by the Parliament, much more of the successive phases his Estate assumed by new purchase and exchange, there is, as we once observed already, no exact knowledge now anywhere to be had. Obscure incidental notices flit through the Commons Journals and other Records; but the sum of the matter alike with the details of it are sunk in antique Law-Parchments, in obliterated Committee-Papers, far beyond human sounding. Of the Lands he *died* possessed of, there is a List extant, more or less accurate; which is worth looking at here. On quitting the Protectorship in 1659, Richard Cromwell, with the hope of having his debts paid and some fixed revenue allowed him, gave in a Schedule of his Liabilities and of his Properties, the latter all in Land; which Schedule poor Noble has found *somewhere* § and copied, probably

\* Written above is ‘1,260*l.*

† Mr. and Mrs. Mayor of Hursley.

‡ Original in the possession of Henry William Field, Esq., of the Royal Mint.

§ *Not* where he says he did, ‘in Commons Journals, 14 May, 1659’ (Noble, i, 333-4).

with blunders. Subjoined is his List of the Properties, some of them misspelt, most likely; the exact localities of which, no indication being given or sought by Noble, may be a problem for persons learned in such matters.\* To us, only Burleigh and Newhall are known or of importance here.

Newhall, we can observe, was not sold on the occasion of this Letter, nor at all sold; for it still stands in the List of 1659; and with some indication, too, as to what the cause of now trying to sell it may have been. 'For a Portion to my Sister Frances,' namely. Noble's citations from Morant's *History of Essex*; his and Morant's blunderings and somnambulancies, in regard to this matter of Newhall, seem almost to approach the sublime.†

Leaving these, let us attend a little to the 'Portion for my Sister Frances;' concerning which and whom a few lines of musical domestic gossip, interesting to the mind, are once more audible, from the same flute-voice above listened to. 'Mr. Rich,' we should premise, is the Lord Rich's son, the Earl of Warwick's Grandson; heir-apparent, though he did not live to be heir:—pious old Earl of Warwick, whom we have seen heretofore as Admiral in the Long-Parliament time; the poor Earl of Holland's

\* REAL ESTATE IN 1659.

Dalby	} settled on my Brother Henry Crom- Broughton } well upon marriage: worth a-year Gower }	{ £989 9 1 533 8 8 479 0 0
Newhall with woods, settled for security of 15,000 <i>l</i> . for a Portion for my Sister Frances.....1200 0 0		
Chepstall .....		549 7 3
Magore .....		448 0 0
Tydenham .....		3121 9 6
Woolaston .....		664 16 6
Chaulton, with woods .....		500 0 0
Burleigh.....		1236 12 8
Okham .....		326 14 11
Egleton .....		79 11 6

These are all the Lands at this date in the possession of the Oliver Family. As to poor Richard's finance-budget, encumbered 'with 2,000*l*. yearly to my Mother,' 'with 3,000*l*. of debt contracted in my Father's lifetime,' and plentifully otherwise,—it shall not concern us farther.

† Noble, pp. 334, 335.

Brother. Here are affairs of the heart, romances of reality, such as have to go on in all times, under all dialects and fashions of dress-caps, Puritan-Protectoral and other.

*The Lady Mary Cromwell to Henry Cromwell, Major-General of the Forces in Ireland.*

‘Hampton Court,’ 23d June, 1656.

“DEAR BROTHER,—Your kind Letters do so much engage my heart towards you, that I can never tell how to express in writing the true affection and value I have for you,—who, truly I think, none that knows you but you may justly claim it from.\*

“I must confess myself in a great fault in omitting to write to you and your dear Wife so long a time. But I suppose you cannot be ignorant of the reason, which truly has been the only cause; which is this business of my Sister Frances and Mr. Rich. Truly I can truly say it, for these three months I think our Family, and myself in particular, have been in the greatest confusion and trouble as ever poor Family can be in. The Lord tell us His ‘mind’† in it; and settle us, and make us what He would have us to be! I suppose you heard of the breaking-off of the business; and, according to your desire in your last Letter, as well as I can, shall give you a full account of it. Which is this:

“After a quarter of a year’s admittance, my Father and my Lord Warwick began to treat about the Estate; and it seems my Lord did not offer that which my Father expected. I need not name particulars; for I suppose you have had them from better hands: but if I may say the truth, I think it was not so much estate, as from private reasons which my Father discovered to none but to my Sister Frances and his own Family;—which was a dislike to the young person. Which he had from some reports of his being a vicious man, given to play and such-like things; which office was done by some who had a mind to break-off the match. My Sister hearing these things was resolved to know the truth of it;‡ and truly did find all the reports to be false that were recited of him. And to tell you the truth, they were so much engaged in affection before this, that she could not think of breaking it off. So that my Sister engaged me and all the friends she had, who truly were very few to speak in her behalf to my Father. Which we did; but could not be heard to any purpose: only this my Father promised, That if he were satisfied as to the report, the estate should not break it off. With which she was satisfied.

\* Young Lady’s Grammar!

† Word torn out.

‡ Poor little Frances!

"And so after this, there was a second Treaty; and my Lord Warwick desired my Father, To name what it was he demanded more; and to his utmost he would satisfy him. So my Father upon this made new propositions; which my Lord Warwick has answered as much as he can. But it seems there are Five-hundred pounds a year in my Lord Rich's hands; which he has power to sell: and there are some people, who persuade his Highness, that it would be dishonorable for him to conclude it unless these 500*l.* a year be settled upon Mr. Rich, after his father's death. And my Lord Rich having no esteem at all of his son, because he is not so bad as himself, will not agree to it; and these people upon this persuade my Father, That it would be a dishonor to him to yield upon these terms; it would show, that he was made a fool of by my Lord Rich. So the truth is, how it shall be, I cannot understand, nor very few else;\* and truly I must tell you privately, they are so far engaged, that the match cannot be broke off! She acquainted none of her friends with her resolution, when she did it.

"Dear Brother, this is, as far as I can tell, the state of the business. The Lord direct them what to do. And all, I think, ought to beg of God to pardon her in her doing of this thing;—which I must say truly she was put upon by the 'course'† of things. Dear, let me beg my excuses to my Sister for not writing. My best respects to her. Pardon this trouble; and believe me that I shall ever strive to approve myself,—dear Brother, your affectionate sister and servant,

"MARY CROMWELL."‡

Poor little Fanny Cromwell was not yet much turned of Seventeen, when she had these complex things to do, with her friends, 'who truly were very few.' What 'people' they were that put, or strove to put, such notions into his Highness's head, with intent to frustrate the decidedly eligible Mr. Rich, none knows. I could suspect Ashley Cooper, or some such hand, if his date of favor still lasted. But it is gone, long months ago. Ashley is himself frustrated; cannot obtain this musical glib-tongued Lady Mary, says Ludlow;§—goes over to opposition in consequence; is dis-

\* Good little Mary!

† Torn out.

‡ Thurloe, v., 146.

§ Here is the passage, not hitherto printed; one of several 'suppressed' passages from *Ludlow's Memoirs*; which still exist in the handwriting of John Locke (now in the possession of Lord Lovelace), having been duly copied out by Locke for his own poor *Life* of the Earl of Shaftesbury, to whom they all relate:

'Sir\*Anthony Ashley Cooper, who was first for the King, then for the

missed from his Highness's Council of State: and has to climb in this world by another ladder.—Poor Fanny's marriage did nevertheless take effect. Both Mary and she were duly wedded, Fanny to Rich, Mary to Lord Fauconberg, in November next year, within about a week of each other:\* our friends, 'who truly were very few,' and our destinies, and our own lively wits, brought all right in the end.

---

### LETTER CXLVIII.

IT was last Spring Assizes, as we saw, that the 'great appearances of country gentlemen and persons of the highest quality' took place; leading to the inference generally that this Protectorate Government is found worth acknowledging by England. Certainly a somewhat successful Government hitherto; in spite of difficulties great and many. It carries eternal Gospel in the one hand, temporal drawn Sword in the other. Actually it has compressed the turbulent humors of this Country, and encouraged the better tendencies thereof, hitherto; it has set its foot resolutely on the neck of English Anarchy, and points with its armed hand to noble onward and upward paths. All which, England, thank-

'Parliament; then in Cromwell's first Assembly,' the Little Parliament, was 'for the reformation; and afterwards for Cromwell against the reformation. Now,' again, 'being denied Cromwell's Daughter Mary in marriage, he appears against Cromwell's design in the last Assembly,' the constitutioning Parliament, where his behavior was none of the best; and is therefore dismissed the Council, Cromwell being resolved to act there as the chief juggler himself; and one Colonel Mackworth, a Lawyer about Shrewsbury, a person fit for his purpose, is chosen in his room.\*—Mackworth was a Soldier as well as Lawyer; the same who, as Governor of Shrewsbury, gave negative response to Charles Second, when he summoned him on the road to Worcester, once upon a time. Mackworth was in the Council, and had even died, and entirely left the Council, before Anthony Ashley left it (Thurloe, iii., 581; and Godwin, iv., 288). My solid friend, absent in Ireland, sulkily breathing the air in Essex, falls into some errors! Court-rumor, this of his; truth in the heart of it, details rather vague; not much worth verifying or rectifying here.

\* *Antea*, vol. i., 68.

ful at lowest for peace and order, by degrees recognizes ; with acquiescence, not without some slow satisfactory feeling. England is in peace at home ; stands as the Queen of Protestantism abroad ; defies Spain and Antichrist, protects poor Piedmont Protestants and servants of Christ ;—has taken, all men admit, a nobler attitude than it ever had before.

Nor has the task been easy hitherto ; nor is it like to be. No nolyday work, governing such an England as this of Oliver Protector's ; with strong Papistry abroad, and a Hydra of Anarchies at home ! The domestic Hydra is not slain ; cannot, by the nature of it, be *slain* ; can only be scotched and mowed down, head after head, as it successively protrudes itself ;—till, by the aid of Time, it slowly *die*. As yet on any hint of foreign encouragement, it revives again, requires to be scotched and mowed down again. His exiled Majesty Charles Stuart has got a new lever in hand by means of this War with Spain.

Seven years ago his exiled Majesty's 'Embassy to Spain,' embassy managed by Chancellor Hyde and another, proved rather a hungry affair : and ended, I think, in little,—except the murder of poor Ascham, the then Parliament's Envoy at Madrid ; whom, like Dutch Dorislaus, as 'an accursed regicide or abetter of regicides,' certain cut-throat servants of the said hungry Embassy broke in upon, one afternoon, and slew. For which violent deed no full satisfaction could be got from Spain—the murderers having taken 'sanctuary,' as was pleaded.\* With that rather sorry result, and no other noticeable, Chancellor Hyde's Embassy took itself away again ; Spain ordering it to go. But now, this fierce Protestant Protector breathing nothing but war, Spain finds that the English domestic Hydra, if well operated upon by Charles Stuart, might be a useful thing ; and grants Charles Stuart some encouragements for that. His poor Majesty is coming to the sea-shore again ; is to have 'Seven-thousand Spaniards' to invade England,—if the domestic Hydra will stir with effect. The domestic Hydra, I think, had better lie quiet for a while ! This Letter to Henry Cromwell is to bid him too, for his part, be awake in Ireland to these things.

\* Clarendon, iii., 498-509 ; Process and Pleadings in the Court of Spain upon the death of Anthony Ascham (in *Harl. Miscell* , vi., 236-47).

For the Hydra is not dead ; and its heads are Legion. Major Wildman, for example, sits safe in Chepstow : but Sexby, the Anabaptist Colonel, whom we could not take on that occasion, is still busy ; has been ‘ trying to seduce the Fleet,’ trying to do this and that ; is now fairly gone to Spain, to treat with Antichrist himself for the purpose of bringing-in a Reign of Christ,—the truly desperate Anabaptist Colonel !\* It is a Hydra like few. Spiritual and Practical : Mugglestonians, mad Quakers riding into Bristol, Fifth-Monarchists, Hungry Flunkeys : ever scheming, plotting with or without hope, to ‘ seduce the Protector’s Guard,’ ‘ to blow up the Protector in his bed-room,’ and do “ other little fiddling things,” as the Protector calls them,—which one cannot waste time in specifying ! Only the slow course of Nature can kill that Hydra : till a Colonel Sexby die, how can you keep him quiet ?—

But what doubtless gives new vitality to plotting in these weeks, is the fact that a General Election to Parliament is going on. There is to be a new Parliament ;—in which may lie who knows what contentions. The Protector lost it last time, by the arithmetical account of heads ; will he gain it this time ? Account of heads is not exactly the Protector’s basis ; but he hopes he may now gain it even so. At all events, this wide foreign and domestic Spanish War cannot be carried on without supplies ; he will first try it so,—then otherwise if not so.

*‘ To Henry Cromwell, Major-General of the Army in Ireland.’*

*‘ Whitehall,’ 26th August, 1656.*

SON HARRY,

We are informed, from several hands, that the old Enemy are forming designs to invade Ireland, as well as other parts of the Commonwealth ; and that he and Spain have very great correspondence with some chief men in that Nation, for raising a sudden rebellion there.

Therefore we judge it very necessary that you take all possible care to put the Forces into such a condition as may answer anything that may fall out in this kind. And to that end, that you contract the Garrisons in Ireland, as many as may be ; and get a considerable marching Army into the field, in two or three bodies, to be left in the most proper and advantageous places for service, as occasion shall require. Taking also,

\* Clarendon, iii., 852 ; Thurloe, iv., 698, &c.



in all other things, your best care you can to break and prevent the designs and combinations of the Enemy ;—and a very particular regard is to be had to the North, where, without question, busy and discontented persons are working towards new disturbances. I do not doubt but you will communicate this thing to Colonel Cowper, to the end he may be more watchful and diligent in looking to this danger, I rest,

Your loving father,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

‘Colonel Cowper’ commands the Forces in Ulster. Plenty of details about him in Thurloe’s Fourth Volume :—our readers can sufficiently conceive him without details. We are more interested to state, from a Letter of Thurloe’s which goes along with this, that there are ‘Fourteen Spanish ships plying about the Isle of Islay,’ doubtless with an eye to Carrickfergus ; that we hope, and indeed believe, my Lord Henry will be on the alert. For the rest, the elections are going well ; all ‘for peace and settlement,’ as we hear, ‘and great friends to the Government.’ Ashley Cooper, indeed, has been chosen for Wilts ; but, on the other hand, Bradshaw has missed in Cheshire ; Sir Henry Vane has tried in three places and missed in all.† This is of date 26th August, 1656 ; poor England universally sifting itself ; trying what the arithmetical account of heads will do for it, once more.

About a fortnight ago, August 13th, learned Bulstrode went with the Swedish Ambassador to dine with a famed Sea-General, Sir George Ayscough ; who lives for the present, retired from service, ‘at his House in Surrey ;’ House not known to me ; which by the aid of ‘ponds, moats,’ and hydraulic contrivances, he has made to ‘stand environed in water like a ship at sea,’—very charming indeed ; and says he has ‘cast anchor’ here. Our entertainment was superb. The brilliant Swedish Ambassador and Sir George spake much about frigates, their rates of sailing, their capabilities of fighting, and other technical topics ; which a learned man might without much tedium listen to. ‘After dinner, the Ambassador came round by Hampton Court, to take his leave

\* Sloane MSS., 4157, f. 209 ; and (with insignificant variations) Thurloe, , 348.

† Thurloe to Henry Cromwell, date 26 Aug. (v., 349.)

of the Lady Claypole and her Sisters ;\*—which latter small fact, in the ancient Autumn afternoon, one rather loves to remember ! As for this Swedish Ambassador, he is just about quitting England, the high-tempered, clear-glancing man ; having settled ‘copperas,’ ‘contrabanda,’ and many other things, to mutual satisfaction ;—nay it is surmised he has thoughts of inviting Ayscough into Sweden to teach them seamanship there ; which, however, shall not concern us on this occasion.†

\* Whitlocke, pp. 638, 9.

† Biog. Britan., § Ayscough.

## SPEECH V.

BUT the new Parliament is now about assembling ; where'n we shall see what conclusions will be tried ! A momentous question for his Highness and the Council of State ; who have been, with interest enough, perusing and pondering the List of Names returned. On the whole, a hopeful Parliament, as Thurloe had expected : Official persons, these, and others known as friends to this Government, are copiously elected : the great body of the Parliament seems to consist of men well-affected to his Highness, and even loyal to him ; who, witnessing the course he follows, wish him heartily God-speed thereon. Certain others there are, and in considerable number, of stiff Republican ways, or given to turbulence in general, a Haselrig, a Thomas Scott, an Ashley Cooper : these, as a mass of leaven which might leaven the whole lump, and produce one knows not what in the way of fermentation, are clearly very dangerous. But for these also his Highness and the Council of State, in the present anomalous condition of the Nation, have silently provided an expedient. Which we hope may be of service. On the whole, we hope this Parliament may prove a better than the last.

At all events, on Wednesday, 17th September, 1656, Parliament, Protector, all in due state, do assemble at the Abbey Church ; and, with reverence and credence, hear Doctor Owen, Vice-Chancellor of Oxford, very pertinently preach to them from these old words of Isaiah,—old, and yet always new and true : *What shall one then answer to the Messengers of the Nation ? The Lord hath founded Zion, and the Poor of His People shall trust in it.\** After which, all having removed, still in due state, to the Painted Chamber, and there adjusted themselves, the Protector rising in his elevated place and taking off his hat, now speaks

The Speech, reported by one knows not whom, lies in old Manuscript in the British Museum; and printed in late years in the Book called *Burton's Diary*; here and there in a very dreary, besmeared, unintelligible condition; from which, as heretofore, a pious Editor strives to rescue it. Sufficiently studied, it becomes intelligible, nay luminous. Let the reader too read with piety, with a real endeavor to understand.

GENTLEMEN,

When I came hither, I did think that a duty was incumbent upon me a little to pity myself; because, this being a very extraordinary occasion, I thought I had very many things to say unto you, 'and was somewhat burdened and straitened thereby.' But truly now, seeing *you* in such a condition as you are,\* I think I must turn off 'my pity' in this, as I hope I shall in everything else;—and consider *you* as certainly not being able long to bear that condition and heat that you are now in.——'So far as possible, on this large subject, let us be brief; not studying the Art of Rhetoricians.' Rhetoricians, whom I do not pretend to 'much concern with;' neither with them, nor with what they use to deal in: Words!

Truly *our* business is to speak Things! The Dispensations of God that are upon us do require it; and that subject upon which we shall make our discourse is somewhat of very great interest and concernment, both for the glory of God, and with reference to His Interest in the world. I mean His peculiar, His most peculiar Interest, 'His Church, the Communion of the faithful Followers of Christ;'—and that will not leave any of us to exclude His general Interest, which is the concernment of the Living People, 'not as Christians but as human creatures,' within these three Nations, and all the Dependencies thereupon. I have told you I should speak to *things*; things that concern these Interests: The Glory of God, and His Peculiar Interest in the world,—which 'latter' is more extensive, I say more extensive, than the People of all these three Nations with the appurtenances, or the countries and places belonging unto them.†

The first thing, therefore, that I shall speak to is *That* that is the first lesson of Nature: Being and Preservation. [*Begin at the basis: How*

\* Place crowded, weather hot.

† "more extensive:" *more important* would have better suited what went before: yet "extensive" is in all likelihood the word, for his Highness was here branching out into a second idea, which he goes on to blend with the primary one, of "the concernment of the general mass of the People."

*are we to get continued at all as a Nation, not trampled under foot by Invaders, Anarchies, and reduced to wreck?*] As to that of Being, I do think I do not ill style it the *first* consideration which Nature teacheth the Sons of Adam :—and then I think we shall enter into a field large enough when we come to consider that of Well-being. But if Being itself be not first well laid, I think the other will hardly follow !

Now in order to this, to the Being and Subsistence of these Nations with all their Dependencies : The conservation of that, ‘namely of our National Being,’ is first to be viewed with respect to those who seek to undo it, and so make it *not to be* ; and then very naturally we shall come to the consideration of what will make it *be*, of what will *keep* its being and subsistence. [*His Highness’s head of method.*]

‘Now’ that which plainly seeks the destruction of the Being of these Nations is, out of doubt : The endeavor and design of all the common Enemies of them. I think, truly, it will not be hard to find out who those Enemies are ; nor what hath made them so. I think, they are all the wicked men in the world, whether abroad or at home, that are the Enemies to the very Being of these Nations ;—and this upon a common account from the very enmity that is in them ‘to all such things.’ Whatsoever could serve the glory of God and the interest of His People,—which they see to be more eminently, yea more eminently patronized and professed in this Nation (we will not speak it with vanity) than in all the Nations in the world : *this* is the common ground of the common enmity entertained against the prosperity of our Nation, against the very Being of it.—But we will not, I think, take up our time, contemplating who these Enemies are, and what they are, in the general notion : we will labor to *specificate* our Enemies ; to know what persons and bodies of persons they practically are that seek the very destruction and\* Being of these Three Nations.

And truly I would not have laid such a foundation but to the end I might very particularly communicate with you ‘about that same matter.’ For which ‘above others,’ I think you are called hither at this time :—That I might particularly communicate with you about the many dangers these Nations stand in, from enemies abroad and at home ; and advise with you about the remedies, and means to obviate these dangers. ‘Dangers’ which,—say I, and I shall leave it to you whether you will join with me or no,—strike at the very Being and ‘vital’ interest of these Nations. And therefore, coming to particulars, I will shortly represent to you the estate of your affairs in that respect : in respect ‘namely’ of the Enemies you are engaged with ; and how you come to be engaged with those Enemies, and how they came to be, *as* heartily, I believe, en-

\* ‘of the’ would be more grammatical ; but much less Oliverian.

gaged against you. [*His Highness's utterance is terribly rusty hitherto; creaky, uncertain, difficult! He will gather strength by going. Wait till the axles get warm a little!*]

Why, truly, your great enemy is the Spaniard. He is a natural enemy. He is naturally so; he is naturally so throughout,—by reason of that enmity that is in him against whatsoever is of God. ‘Whatsoever is of God’ which is in *you*, or which may be in you; contrary to that which *his* blindness and darkness, led on by superstition, and the implicitness of his faith in submitting to the See of Rome, actuate\* him unto!—With this King and State, I say, you are at present in hostility. We put you into this hostility. You will give us leave to tell you how. [*By sending out your Hispaniola Fleet, Christmas gone a year,—which has issued rather sorrowfully, your Highness!*] For we are ready to excuse ‘this and’ most of our actions,—and to justify them too, as well as to excuse them,—upon the ground of Necessity. ‘And’ the ground of Necessity, for justifying of men’s actions, is above all considerations of instituted Law; and if this or any other State should go about,—as I know they never will,—to make Laws against Events, against what *may* happen, ‘then’ I think it is obvious to any man, they will be making Laws against Providence; events, and issues of things, being from God alone, to whom all issues belong.

The Spaniard is your enemy; and your enemy, as I tell you, naturally, by that antipathy which is in him,—‘and also’ providentially,† and this in divers respects. You could not get an honest or honorable Peace from him: it was sought by the Long Parliament; it was not attained. It could not be attained with honor and honesty. I say, it could not be attained with honor and honesty. And truly when I say that, ‘I do but say,’ He is naturally throughout *an enemy*; an enmity is put into him by God. “I will put an enmity between thy seed and her seed;”‡—which goes but for little among statesmen, but is more considerable than all things! [*Yea, your Highness; it is!—Listen to what his Highness himself says of his reasons for going to war with Spain. “Statesmen” too if they can separate therein what is transitory from what is perennial and eternal, may find it still very worthy of attention. He who has in him, who manifests in the ways of him, an “enmity to God,” and goes about patronizing unveracities, rotten delusions, brazen falsities, pestilent injustices,—with him, whatever his seeming extent of monied-capital and*

\* ‘acts’ *in orig.*, now as always.

† Means, not ‘luckily’ as now, but simply ‘by special ordering of Providence.’

‡ Genesis, iii., 15.

worldly prosperity may be, I would advise no nation nor statesman nor man to be prompt in clapping up an alliance. He will not come to good, I think; not he, for one. Bad security in his firm; have no trade with him. With him your only fit trade is, Duel to the death, when the time comes for that!] And he that considers not such natural enmity, the providential enmity, as well as the accidental, I think he is not well acquainted with Scripture and the things of God. And the Spaniard is not only our enemy accidentally, but he is providentially so; God having in His wisdom disposed it so to be, when we made a breach with the Spanish Nation 'long ago.'

No sooner did this Nation form what is called (unworthily) the Reformed Religion [*It was not half reformed!*] after the death of Queen Mary, by the Queen Elizabeth of famous memory,—we need not be ashamed to call her so! [*No, your Highness; the Royal court-phrase expresses in this case an exact truth. She was and is "of famous memory."*—]—but the Spaniard's design became, By all unworthy, unnatural means, to destroy that Person, and to seek the ruin and destruction of these Kingdoms. For me to instance in particulars upon that account, were to trouble you at a very unseasonable time: there is a Declaration extant [*The Council's "Declaration," in October last*], which very fully hath in it the origin of the Spaniard venting himself upon this Nation; and a series of it\* from those very beginnings to this present day. But his enmity was partly upon that general account which all are agreed 'about.' The French, all the Protestants in Germany, all have agreed, That his design was the empire of the whole Christian World if not more;—and upon *that* ground he looks 'and hath looked' at this Nation as his greatest obstacle. And as to what his attempts have been for that end,—I refer you to that Declaration, and to the observations of men who read History. It would not be difficult to call to mind the several Assassinations designed upon that Lady, that great Queen: the attempts upon Ireland, the Spaniards' invading of it; their designs of the same nature upon *this* Nation,—public designs, private designs, all manner of designs, to accomplish this great and general end. Truly King James made a Peace; but whether this Nation, and the interest of all Protestant Christians, suffered not more by that Peace, than ever by Spain's hostility, I refer to your consideration!

Thus a State which you can neither have peace with nor reason from,—that is the State with which you have enmity at this time, and against which you are engaged. And give me leave to say this unto you, because it is truth, and most men know it, That the Long Parlia

\* Of 'his ventings,' namely.

ment did endeavor, but could not obtain satisfaction ‘from the Spaniard all the time they sat: for their Messenger [*Poor Ascham!*] was murdered: and when they asked satisfaction for the blood of your poor people unjustly shed in the West Indies [*Yes, at Tortuga, at St. Kitts; in many a place and time!*], and for the wrongs done elsewhere; when they asked liberty of conscience for your people who traded thither,—satisfaction in none of these things would be given, but was denied. I say, they denied satisfaction either for your Messenger that was murdered, or for the blood that was shed, or the damages that were done in the West Indies. No satisfaction at all; nor any reason offered *why* there should not be liberty ‘of conscience’ given to your people that traded thither. Whose trade was very considerable there, and drew many of your people thither; and begot an apprehension in us ‘as to their treatment there,’—whether in *you* or no, let God judge between you and Himself. I judge not: but all of us know that the people who went thither to manage the trade there, were imprisoned. We desired ‘but’ such a liberty as ‘that’ they might keep their Bibles in their pockets, to exercise their liberty of religion for themselves, and not be under restraint. But there is not liberty of conscience to be had ‘from the Spaniard;’ neither is there satisfaction for injuries, nor for blood. When these two things were desired, the Ambassador told us, “It was to ask his Master’s two eyes;”<sup>\*</sup> to ask both his eyes, asking these things of him!—

Now if this be so, why, truly then here is some little foundation laid to justify the War that has been entered upon† with the Spaniard! And not only so: but the plain truth of it is, Make any peace with any State that is Popish and subjected to the determination of Rome and ‘of’ the Pope himself,—you are bound, and they are loose. It is the pleasure of the Pope at any time to tell you, That though the man is murdered [*Poor Ascham, for example!*], yet his murderer hath got into the sanctuary! And equally true is it, and hath been found by common and constant experience, That Peace is but to be kept so long as the Pope saith Amen to it. [*What is to be done with such a set of people?*]—We have not ‘now’ to do with any Popish State except France; and it is certain that *they* do not think themselves under such a tie to the Pope; but think themselves at liberty to perform honesties with nations in agreement with them, and protest against the obligation of such a thing as that,—‘of breaking your word at the Pope’s bidding.’ *They* are able to give us an explicit answer to anything reasonably demanded of them: and there is no

<sup>\*</sup> ‘these two things.’ Exemption to our traders from injury in the West Indies, and Liberty to have Bibles and worship:—See Thurloe (i., 760, 1); Bryan Edwards (i., 141–3); &c.

† ‘that was had’ *in orig.*



other Popish State we can speak of, save this only, but will break their promise or keep it as they please upon these grounds,—being under the lash of the Pope, to be by him determined, ‘and made to decide.’

In the time when Philip Second was married to Queen Mary, and since that time, through Spanish power and instigation, Twenty-thousand Protestants were murdered in Ireland. We thought, being denied just things,—we thought it our duty to get that by the sword which was not to be had otherwise! And this hath been the spirit of Englishmen; and if so, certainly it is, and ought to be, the spirit of men that have *higher* spirits! [*Yes, your Highness: “Men that are Englishmen and more,—Believers in God’s Gospel, namely!”—Very clumsily said; but not at all clumsily meant, and the very helplessness of the expression adding something of English and Oliverian character to it.*—] With that State you are engaged. And it is a great and powerful State:—though I may say also, that with all other Christian States you are at peace. All these ‘your other’ engagements were upon you before this Government was undertaken: War with France, Denmark,—nay, upon the matter, War, ‘or as good as War,’ with Spain ‘itself.’ I could instance how it was said ‘in the Long Parliament time,’ “We will have a war in the Indies, though we fight them not at home.” I say, we are at peace with all other Nations, and have only a war with Spain. I shall say somewhat ‘farther’ to you, which will let you see our clearness ‘as’ to that, by and by.

Having thus ‘said, we are’ engaged with Spain,—‘that is the root of the matter;’ that is the party that brings *all* your enemies before you. [*Coming now to the Home Malignants.*] It doth: for so it is now that Spain hath espoused that Interest which you have all along hitherto been conflicting with,—Charles Stuart’s Interest. And I would but meet the gentleman upon a fair discourse who is willing that that Person should come back again!—but I dare not believe any in this room is [*Heavens, no; not one of us!*] And I say it doth not detract at all from your Cause, nor from your ability to make defence of it, That God by His providence hath so disposed that the King of Spain should espouse that Person. And I say ‘farther’ [*His Highness’s spirit gets somewhat tumultuous here, and blazes up with several ideas at once,—producing results of “some inextricableness,” as he himself might phrase it*], No man but might be very well satisfied that it is not for aversion to that Person [*Not for his sake that we have gone to war with Spain:—the Cavaliers talk loudly so, and it is not so!*—] And the “choosing out” (as was said to-day)\* “a Captain to lead us *back into Egypt*,” ‘what honest man has *not* an aversion to that?’—if there *be* such a place? I mean metaphorically and alle

\* In Owen’s Sermon

gorically such a place; 'if there be,' that is to say, A *returning* on the part of some' to all those things we have been fighting against, and a destroying of all that good (as we had some hints to-day) which we have attained unto?—I am sure my Speech 'and defence of the Spanish war' will signify very little, if such grounds [*Grounds indicated, in this composite "blaze of ideas," which is luminous enough, your Highness; but too simultaneous for being very distinct to strangers!*] go not for good! Nay I will say this to you, Not a man in England that is disposed to comply with Papists and Cavaliers, but to him my Speech here is the greatest parable, the absurdest discourse! And in a word, we could wish they were all where Charles Stuart is, all who declare [*"By their cavilling at Spanish Wars and so on."* his Highness looks animated!] that they are of that spirit. I do, with all my heart;—and I would help them with a boat to carry them over, who are of that mind! Yea, and if you shall think it a duty to drive them over by arms, I will help in that also!—

You are engaged with such an Enemy; a foreign enemy, who hath such allies among ourselves:—this last said hath a little vehemency in it [*His Highness repents him of blazing up into unseemly heat*]: but it is well worth your consideration.

Though I seem to be, all this while, upon the justice of the business, yet my desire is to let you see the dangers 'and grand crisis' this Nation stands in 'thereby.' All the honest interests; yea, all interests of the Protestants, in Germany, Denmark, Helvetia and the Cantons, and all the interests in Christendom, are the same as yours. If you succeed, if you succeed well and act well, and be convinced what is God's Interest, and prosecute it, you will find that you act for a very great many who are God's own. Therefore I say that your danger is from the common Enemy abroad; who is the head of the Papal Interest, the head of the Antichristian Interest,—who is so described in Scripture, so forespoken of, and so fully, under that characteral name of 'Antichrist' given him by the Apostle in the *Epistle to the Thessalonians*, and likewise so expressed in the *Revelations*; which are sure and plain things! Except you will deny the truth of the Scriptures, you must needs see that that State is so described in Scripture to be Papal and Antichristian. [*Who would not go to war with it!*] I say, with this Enemy, and upon this account, you have the quarrel,—with the Spaniard.

And truly he hath an Interest in your bowels;\* he hath so. The Papists in England,—they have been accounted, ever since I was born, Spaniolised. There is not a man among us can hold up his face against

\* Old phrase for 'the interior of your own country.'

that. [*The justifying of the Spanish War is a great point with his Highness !*] They never regarded France; they never regarded any other Papist State where a 'hostile' Interest was, 'but Spain only.' Spain was their patron. Their patron all along, in England, in Ireland and Scotland: no man can doubt of it. Therefore I must needs say, this 'Spanish' Interest is also, in regard to your home-affairs, a great source of your danger. It is, and it evidently is; and will be more so—upon that account that I told you of: He hath espoused Charles Stuart! With whom he is fully in agreement; for whom he hath raised Seven or Eight Thousand men, and has them now quartered at Bruges; to which number Don John of Austria has promised that, so soon as the campaign is ended, which it is conceived will be in about five or six weeks, he shall have Four or Five Thousand added. And the Duke of Newburgh who is a Popish Prince, hath promised good assistance according to his power: and other Popish States the like. In this condition you are with that State 'of Spain;' and in this condition through unavoidable necessity; because your Enemy was *naturally* an enemy, and is providentially too become so. [*Always, by the law of his being, as Antichristian to Christian, a VIRTUAL enemy; and now Providence, with beneficent wisdom, has developed him into an ACTUAL one.*—"That was his Highness's fundamental reason for rushing at him in the West Indies? Because he was Antichrist?" ask some moderns.—*Why yes, it might help, my red-tape Friends! I know well, if I could fall in with Antichrist anywhere, with Supreme Quack and Damnability anywhere, I should be right happy to have a stroke at him if there seemed any chance !*]

And now farther,—as there is a complication of these Interests abroad, so there is a complication of them here. Can we think that Papists and Cavaliers shake not hands in England? It is unworthy, Unchristian, Un-English-like,\* 'say you.' Yes; but it doth serve to let you see, and for that end I tell it you that you may see, your danger, and the source thereof. Nay it is not only thus, in this condition of hostility, that we stand towards Spain: and towards all the Interest which would make void and frustrate everything that has been doing for you: namely, towards the Popish Interest, Papists and Cavaliers;—but it is also—[*His Highness finds this sentence will not do, and so tries it another way*].—That is to say, your danger is so great, if you will be sensible of it, by reason of Persons who pretend other things! [*Coming now to the great Miscellany of Anabaptists, Republicans, Levellers; your Allens, Sexbys, Overtons.*] 'Pretend, I say; yea who, though perhaps they do not all suit in their hearts with the said 'Popish' Interest—

\* To combine with Papists, even for Royalists to do so.

[*Sentence left ruinous : sense gradually becomes visible*].—Yet every man knows, and must know, that discontented spirits are among us somewhere! They must expect backing and support somewhere. They must end in the Interest of the Cavalier at the long-run. That must be their support!—I could have reckoned this in another ‘head’ [*Hal’s soliloquising, his Highness ; giving us a glimpse into the strange seething, simmering inner man of him.*].—But I give you an account of things as they arise to me. Because I desire to clear them to you! Not discursively, in the oratoric way; but to let you see the matter of fact, —to let you see how the state of your affairs stands. [*Well, your Highness ; that certainly is the grand object of speaking to us. To show me what THOU seest, what is in THEE : why else should one human being dare to wag his tongue to another ? It is frightful otherwise. One almost loves this incondite half-articulation of his Highness, in comparison.*]

Certain it is, there was, not long since, an endeavor to make an Insurrection in England. [*Penruddock at Salisbury ;—we heard of Wagstaff and him !*] It was going on for some time before it broke out. It was so before the last Parliament sat. ‘Nay,’ it was so not only from the time of the undertaking of this Government; but the spirit and principle of it did work in the Long-Parliament ‘time.’ From that time to this hath there been nothing but enterprising and designing against you. And this is no strange or new thing to tell you: Because it is true and certain that the Papists, the Priests and Jesuits have a great influence upon the Cavalier Party; they and the Cavaliers prevail upon the discontented spirits of the Nation,—who are not all so apt to see where the dangers lie, nor to what the management of affairs tends. Those ‘Papists and Cavaliers’ do foment all things that tend to *disservice*; to propagate discontentments upon the minds of men. And if we would instance, in particulars, those that have manifested this,—we could tell you how Priests and Jesuits have insinuated themselves into men’s society; pretending the same things that *they* pretended;—whose ends, ‘these Jesuits’ ends,’ have, out of doubt, been what I have told you. [*Dark spectres of Jesuits ; knitting up Charles Stuart, the Spaniard, and all manner of Levellers and discontented Persons, into one Antichristian mass, to overwhelm us therewith !*]

We had that Insurrection. It was intended first to the assassination of my person;—which I would not remember as anything at all considerable, to myself or to you [*Very well, your Highness !*]: for they would have had to cut throats beyond calculation before they could have been able to effect their design. But you know it very well, ‘this of the assassination;’—it is no fable. Persons were arraigned for it before the Parliament sat; and tried, and upon proof condemned [*Gerard ana*

*Vowel; we remember them!*—for their designs to cut the throat of myself, and three or four more; whom they had singled out as being, a little beyond ordinary, industrious to preserve the peace of the Nation. And did think to make a very good issue ‘in that way,’ to the accomplishment of their designs! I say, this was made good upon the Trial. Before the Parliament sat, all the time the Parliament sat, they were about it. We did hint these things to the Parliament people by several persons, who acquainted them therewith. But what fame we lay under I know not! [*Suspicious of us in that Parliament!*] It was conceived, it seems, we had things\* which rather intended to persuade agreement and consent, and bring money out of the people’s purses, or I know not what:—in short nothing was believed [*Very beautifully rebutted, your Highness; without even anger at it; as the Lion walks quietly on through cobwebs. We had “things” which rather intended to, &c., &c. What most articulate rhetoric could match this half-articulate,—articulate enough for the occasion!*]; though there was a series of things distinctly and plainly communicated to many Members.

The Parliament rose about the middle of January. By the 12th of March after, the people were in arms. But “they were a company of mean fellows,”—alas!—“not a lord, nor a gentleman, nor a man of fortune, nor a this nor that, among them: but it was a poor headstrong people, a company of rash fellows who were at the undertaking of this,”—and that was all! And by such things [*His Highness’s face indicates that he means “no-things,” “babblements”*] have men ‘once well-affected’ lost their consciences and honors, complying, ‘coming to agreement with Malignants,’ upon such notions as these!—Give me leave to tell you, We know it; we are able to prove. And I refer you to that Declaration† which was for guarding against Cavaliers (as I did before to that other ‘Declaration’ which set down the grounds of our war with Spain); Whether these things were true or no? If men will not believe,—we are satisfied, we do our duty. [*A suspicious people, your Highness: nay not suspicious, so much as incredulous, obstinate, dreadfully thick of skin and sense,—and unused to such phenomena as your Highness!*] If we let you know things and the ground of them, it is satisfaction enough to us; But to see how men can reason themselves out of their honors and consciences in their compliance with those sort of people—!—Which, truly I must needs say, some men had compliance with, who I thought never *would* for all the world: I must tell you so.—

These men rise in March. And that it was a general Design, I think

\* Means ‘we made statements;’ very Oliverian expression.

† Can be read in *Parliamentary History*, xx., 434 *et seq*

all the world must know and acknowledge. For it is as evident as the day that the King [*We may call him "King"*] sent Sir Joseph Wagstaff and another, the Earl of Rochester, to the North. And that it was general, we had not by suspicion or imagination; but we know individuals! We are able to make appear, That persons who carried themselves the most demurely and fairly of any men in England were engaged in this business. And he that gave us our intelligence lost his life for it in Newburgh Country [*Yes, Manning was shot there; he had told us Hyde was cock-sure*];—I think I may now speak of that, because he is dead:—but he did discover, from time to time, a full intelligence of these things. Therefore, How men of wicked spirits may traduce us in that matter; or, notwithstanding all that hath been done, may still continue their compliances 'with the Malignants';—I leave it. [*Yes, let THEM look to that.*] I think England cannot be safe unless Malignants be carried far away!—

There was never any design on foot but we could hear it out of the Tower. He who commanded there\* would give us account, That within a fortnight or such a thing† there would be some stirrings; for a great concourse of people were coming to them, and they had very great elevation of spirits. [*Vigilant Barkstead!*] And not only there; but in all the Counties of England. We have had informations that they were upon designs all over England (besides some particular places which came to our particular assurance), by knowledge we had from persons in the several Counties of England.

And if this be so; then, as long as commotions can be held on foot, you are in danger of your War with Spain; with whom all the Papal Interest is joined. This Pope‡ is a person all the world knows to be a person of zeal for his Religion,—wherein perhaps he may shame us,—and a man of contrivance, and wisdom, and policy; and his Designs are known to be, all over, nothing but an Endeavor to unite all the Popish Interests in all the Christian world, against this Nation above any, and against all the Protestant Interest in the world.—If this be so, and if you will take a measure of these things; if we must still hold the esteem that we have had 'for Spaniards,' and be ready to shake hands with them and the Cavaliers,—what doth this differ from the Bishop of Canterbury [*Poor old Laud, and his Surplices!*] 'striving' to reconcile mat-

\* Barkstead, a goldsmith once, a severe vigilant Colonel now; who has seen much service.

† "Time" might be the word; but I am getting to love this "thing."

‡ One *Chigi* by natural name, called Alexander VII. as Pope; an "Anti-jansenist Pope," say the Books. With whom, beyond the indispensable, let us crave not to be acquainted.

ters of Religion ; if this temper be upon us to unite with these ‘Popish men in Civil Things? Give me leave to say, and speak what I know! If this be men’s mind, I tell you plainly,—I hope I need not ; but I wish all the Cavaliers in England, and all the Papists, heard me declare it, and many besides yourselves have ‘heard me.’ There are a company of poor men that are ready to spend their blood against such compliance! [*Right so, your Highness ; that is the grand cardinal certainty! An irrevocable Act of Legislature passed in one’s own heart. In spite of all clamors and jargons, and constitutional debates in Parliament and out of it, there is a man or two will have himself cut in pieces before that “shaking of hands” takes place. In fact, I think Christ and Antichrist had better not try shaking of hands ; no good will come of it! Does not his Highness look uncommonly animated!*];—and I am persuaded of the same thing in you!

If this be our condition,—with respect had to this, truly let us go a little farther. For I would lay open the danger, wherein I think in my conscience we stand ; and if God give not your hearts to see and discern what is obvious, we shall sink, and the house will fall about our ears,—upon even ‘what are called’ “such sordid attempts” as these same! Truly there are a great many people in this Nation, who “would not reckon up every pitiful thing,”—perhaps like the nibbling of a mouse at one’s heel ; but only “considerable dangers!” I will tell you plainly ‘what to me seems dangerous ;’ it is not a time for compliments nor rhetorical speeches. I have none, truly ;—but to tell you how we find things.\*

There is a generation of men in this Nation who cry up nothing but righteousness and justice and liberty [*Coming now to the Levellers and “Commonwealth’s-men.”*] and these are diversified into several sects, and sorts of men ; and though they may be contemptible, in respect they are many, and so not like to make a solid vow to do you mischief,—yet they are apt to agree *in aliquo tertio*. They are known (yea, well enough) to shake hands with,—I should be loath to say with Cavaliers, —but with all the scum and dirt of this Nation [*Not loath to say that, your Highness?*] to put you to trouble. And, when I come to speak of the *Remedies*, I shall tell you what are the most apt and proper remedies in these respects. I speak now of the very time when there was an Insurrection at Salisbury, ‘your Wagstaffs and Penruddocks openly in arms’ — [*Sudden prick of anger stings his Highness at the thought of that great Peril, and how it was treated and scouted by the incredulous*

\* Paragraph irretrievably misreported ; or undecipherable for want of the tones and looks accompanying it ;—in a dim uncertain manner, displays the above as a kind of meaning.

*Thickskinned ; and he plunges in this manner* ]— — I doubt whether it believed there ever was any rising in North Wales ‘at the same time ; at Shrewsbury ; at Rufford Abbey, where were about Five-hundred horse ; or at Marston Moor ; or in Northumberland, and the other places, —where all these Insurrections were at that very time ! [*Truly it is difficult to keep one’s temper : sluggish mortals saved from destruction ; and won’t so much as admit it !*]— — There was a Party which was very proper to come between the Papists and Cavaliers ; and that *Levelling* Party hath some accession lately, which goes under a *finer* name or notion ! I think they would now be called “Commonwealth’s-men,”—who perhaps have right to it little enough. And it is strange that men of fortune and great estates [*Lord Grey of Groby ; he is in the Tower ; he and others.*] should join with such a people. But if the *fact* be so, there will need no stretch of wit to make it evident, being so by demonstration. [*His Highness still harps on the incredulity of a thickskinned public, naturally very provoking to him in these perilous, abstruse, and necessarily SECRET operations of his.*]

I say, this people at that very time, they were pretty numerous,—and do not despise them !—at the time when the Cavaliers were risen, this very Party had prepared a Declaration against all the things that had been transacted ‘by us ;’ and called them by I know not what ‘names,’ “tyranny,” “oppression,” things “against the liberty of the subject ;” and cried out for “justice,” and “righteousness,” and “liberty :”—and what was all this business for, but to join the Cavaliers to carry on that Design ? And these are things,—not words ! That Declaration we got ; and the Penner of it we got [*Locked him fast in Chepstow ; the unruly Wildman !*] : and we have got intelligence also how the business was laid and contrived ;—which was hatched in the time of the Sitting of that Parliament. I do not accuse anybody : but that was the *time* of it ;—an unhappy time ! And a plausible Petition had been penned, which must come to me, forsooth [*Through that obtuse Constitutioning Parliament, I fancy !*], “To consider of these things, and to give redress and remedies.” And this was so.—

Now indeed I must tell you plainly, we suspected a great deal of violence then ; and we did hunt it out. I will not tell you these are high things [*Call them “low” if you like ; mice nibbling at one’s heel !*] : but at that time when the Cavaliers were to rise, a Party was to seize upon General Monk in Scotland, and to commit him to Edinburgh Castle, upon this pretence of “liberty ;” and when they had seized him, and clapped him by the heels, ‘him’ and some other true and faithful Officers, they had resolved a number at the same time should march away for London ; leaving a party behind them,—to have their throats



cut by the Scots! Though I will not say they would have ‘purposely’ brought it to this pass; yet it cannot be thought but that a considerable part of the Army would have followed them ‘hither’ at the heels.— And not only thus: but this same spirit and principle designed some little fiddling things upon some of your Officers, to an assassination;\* and an officer was engaged, who was upon the Guard, to seize me in my bed. This was true. And other foolish designs there were,—as To get into a room, to get gunpowder laid in it, and to blow up the room where I lay. And this, we can tell you, is *true*. These are Persons not worthy naming; but the things are *true*. And such is the state we have stood in, and had to conflict with, since the last Parliament. And upon this account, and in this combination,† it is that I say to you, That the ringleaders to all this are none but your old enemies the Papists and Cavaliers. We have some ‘of them’ in prison for these things.

Now we would be loath to tell you of notions mere seraphical! [*His Highness elevating his brows; face assuming a look of irony, of rough banter.*] These are poor and low conceits. We have had very seraphical notions! We have had endeavors to deal between two Interests;—one some section of that Commonwealth Interest; and another which was a notion of a Fifth-Monarchy Interest! [A “NOTION;” not even worth calling a “SECTION” or “PARTY”—such moonshine was it.]—Which ‘strange operation’ I do not recite, nor what condition it is in, as thinking it not worthy our trouble. But *de facto* it hath been so, That there have been endeavors;—as there were endeavors to make a reconciliation between Herod and Pilate that Christ might be put to death, so there have been endeavors of reconciliation between the Fifth-Monarchy men and the Commonwealth men that there might be union in order to an end,—no end can be so bad as *that* of Herod’s was,—but in order to end in blood and confusion! And, that you may know, ‘to tell you candidly,’ I profess I do not believe of these two last, of Commonwealth men and Fifth-Monarchy men, but that they have stood at a distance, ‘aloof from Charles Stuart.’ [*The Overtons, the Harrisons are far above such a thing.*] I think they did not participate. I would be so charitable, I would be, That they did not. But this I will tell you, That as for the others, *they* did not only set these things on work; but they sent a fellow [*Sexby, the miserable outcast!*], a wretched creature, an apostate from religion and all honesty,—they sent him to Madrid to advise with the King of Spain to land forces to invade this Nation. Promising satisfaction that they would comply and concur with him to have both men and mo-

\* Means: ‘they attempted to persuade some of your Officers to that “little fiddling thing.”’

† Identity of time and attempt.

nies; undertaking both to engage the Fleet to mutiny, and also your Army to gain a garrison 'on the coast;' to raise a party 'so' that, if the Spaniard would say where he would land, they would be ready to assist him!—This person was sometimes\* a Colonel in the Army. He went with Letters to the Archduke Leopoldus and Don John. That was an "Ambassador;"—and gave promise of much monies: and hath been soliciting, and did obtain monies; which he sent hither by Bills of Exchange:—and God, by His providence, we being exceeding poor, directed that we lighted on some of them, and some of the monies! [*Keep hold of them, your Highness!*] Now if they be payable, let them be called for! [*He won't call, I believe.*]—If the House shall think fit to order any inspection into these things, they may have it.

We think it our duty to tell you of these things; and we can make them good. Here is your danger; that is it! Here is a poor Nation that hath wallowed in its blood;—though, thanks be to God, we have had Peace these four or five years: yet here is the condition we stand in. And I think I should be false to you, if I did not give you this true representation of it.

I am to tell you, by the way, a word to justify a Thing [*Coming to the Major-Generals.*] which, I hear, is much spoken of. When we knew all these Designs before mentioned; when we found that the Cavaliers would not be quiet— —No quiet; "there is no peace to the wicked," saith the Scripture (*Isaiah*, Fifty-seventh): "They are like the troubled sea, which cannot rest; whose waters throw up mire and dirt."† They cannot rest,—they have no peace with God in Jesus Christ to the remission of sins! They do not know what belongs to that [*My brave one!*]; therefore they know not how to be at rest; therefore they can no more cease from their actions than they can cease to live,—nor so easily neither!— —Truly when that insurrection was, and we saw it in all the roots and grounds of it, we did find out a little poor Invention, which I hear has been much regretted. I say, there was a little thing invented; which was the erecting of your Major-Generals [*Yes!*]: To have a little inspection upon the People thus divided, thus discontented, thus dissatisfied, 'split' into divers interests,—and the workings of the Popish Party! 'Workings' of the Lord Taffe and others;‡ the most consisting of Natural-Irish rebels, and all those men

\* Means 'at one time;' as almost all know.

† *Isaiah*, lvii., 20, 21.

‡ His Highness suddenly breaks off after new quarry on mention of this Party. The Lord Taffe is even now very busy, at Antwerp (Thurloe, v.), with Chancellor Hyde, "throwing up mire and dirt" of the insurrection

you have fought against in Ireland, and have expelled from thence, as having had a hand in that bloody Massacre;—of him and of those that were under his power; who were now to have joined in this excellent business of Insurrection!—

And upon such a Rising as that was,—truly I think if ever anything were justifiable as to Necessity, and honest in every respect, this was. And I could as soon venture my life with it as with anything I ever undertook! [*His Highness looks animated.*] We did find,—I mean myself and the Council did,—That, if there were need to have greater forces to carry on this work, it was a most righteous thing to put the charge upon that Party which was the cause of it. [*Yea!*] And if there be any man that hath a face averse to this, I dare pronounce him to be a man against the Interest of England!—Upon this account, upon this ground of necessity; when we saw what game they were upon; and knew individual persons, and of the greatest rank, not a few, engaged in this business (I knew one man that laid down his life for it) [*“Name?” ‘He must go unnamed, this one!’*]; and had it by intercepted Letters made as clear as the day;—we did think it our duty To make that class of persons who, as evidently as anything in the world, were in the combination ‘of the insurrectionists,’ bear their share of the charge. ‘Bear their share,’ one with another, for the raising of the Forces which were so necessary to defend us against those Designs! And truly if any man be angry at it,—I am plain, and shall use an homely expression: *Let him turn the buckle of his girdle behind him!*\* If this were to be done again, I would do it.

How the Major-Generals have behaved themselves in that work? I hope they are men, as to their persons, of known integrity and fidelity; and men who have freely adventured their blood and lives for that good Cause,—if it ‘still’ be thought such, and it was well stated, ‘this morning,’ against all the ‘new’ humors and fancies of men!— —And truly England doth yet receive one day more of Lengthening out its tranquillity, by that same service of theirs.† —

Well; your danger is as you have seen. And truly I am sorry it is

kind Hé was in trouble long ago at the beginning of the Long Parliament, on the score of the Irish Massacre; sat some time in the Tower (Clarendon, ii., 216) with Lord Dillon and others; a generation “who can no more cease from their practices than they can cease to live, nor so easily neither!”

\* The Proverb is in *Ray*; but without commentary. I suppose it means, ‘Let him seek what is uneasy in himself, and try to alter that; the thing he is angry at is not wrong, and cannot be altered. Perhaps his *girdle* will sit easier the reverse way?’

† ‘that occasion’ *in. orig.*

so great. But I wish it to cause no despondency ;—as truly, I think, it will not : for we are Englishmen ; that is one good fact. And if God give a Nation the property of valor and courage, it is honor and a mercy ‘from Him.’ [*Yes, it is a great thing, your Highness !*] And much more ‘than English !’ Because, you all, I hope, are Christian Men, who know Jesus Christ [*Yea !*], and know that cause which hath been mentioned to you this day.

Having declared to you my sense and knowledge,—pardon me if I say so, my knowledge,—of the condition of these poor Nations, for it hath an influence upon them all, it concerneth them all very palpably : I should be to blame if I did not a little offer to you the Remedies. [*Second head of Method : the Remedies.*] I would comprehend them under two considerations. They are both somewhat general. The one is, The Considering all things that may be done, and ought to be done, in order to Security ; that is one. And truly the other is a common head, ‘a general, nay a universal consideration,’—the other is, Doing all things that ought to be done in order to Reformation : and with that I will close my Discourse. All that hath hitherto been hinted at was but to give you a sense of the danger ; which ‘truly’ is most material and significant ; for which principally you are called hither to advise of the remedies.—I do put them, ‘the remedies,’ into this twofold method, not but that I think they are scarcely distinct. I do believe, truly, upon serious and deliberate consideration : That a true Reformation, as it may, and will through God’s acceptance, and by the endeavors of His poor servants, be,—That that, ‘I say,’ will be pleasing in His sight ; and will prove not only what shall avert the present danger, but be a worthy return for all the blessings and mercies which you have received. So, in my conscience, if I were put to show it, this hour, Where the security of these Nations will lie ?—forces, arms, watchings, posts, strength ; your being and freedom ; be as politic and diligent, and as vigilant as you can be,—I would say in my conscience, and as before Almighty God I speak it : I think your Reformation, if it be honest and thorough and just, *it will be your best security !* [*Hear him ; hear, hear !*]

First, ‘however,’ with regard to Security ‘outwardly considered.’ We will speak a little distinctly to that. [*“Be ye wise as serpents withal !”*] You see where your War is. It is with the Spaniard. You have Peace with all ‘other’ Nations, or the most of them ; Swede, Dane, Dutch. At present, I say, it is well ; it is at present so. And so likewise with the Portugal, with France,—the Mediterranean Sea. Both these States ; both Christian and Profane ; the Mahometan ;—you have Peace with them all. Only with Spain, you have a difference, you have a War. I pray consider it. Do I come to tell you that I would *tie* you to this

War? No. 'According' as you shall find your spirits and reasons grounded in what hath been said, so let you and me join in the prosecution of that War,—'according' as we are satisfied, and as the cause shall appear to our consciences in the sight of the Lord. But if you *can* come to prosecute it, prosecute it vigorously or don't do it at all!—

Truly I shall speak a very great word,—one may ask a very great question: "*Unde*, Whence shall the means of it come?" Our Nation is overwhelmed in debts! Nevertheless I think it my duty to deal plainly; I shall speak what even Nature teacheth us. If we engage in a business,—a recoiling man may *haply* recover of his enemy: but the wisdom of a man surely will be in the keeping of his ground! Therefore that is what I advise you, That we join together to prosecute it *vigorously*. In the second place I would advise you to deal effectually—even *because* there is such a "complication of interests," 'as some keep objecting.' If you believe that there is such a complication of interests,—why, then, in the name of God, that excites you the more to do it! Give me leave to tell you, I do not believe that in any war that ever was in former times, nor in any engagements that you have had with other 'enemies,' this Nation had more obligation upon it to look to itself,—to forbear waste of time, precious time! Needlessly to mind things that are not essential; to be quibbling about words, and comparatively about things of no moment; and in the meantime, being in such a case as I suppose you know we are,—to suffer ourselves to be wanting to a just defence against the common Enemies abroad, or not to be thoroughly sensible of the Distempers that are at home\*—!—I know, perhaps there are many considerations which may teach you, which may incline you to keep your own hands tender from men of one Religion 'with ourselves,'† and of an interest that is so spread in the Nation. However, if they seek the eradication of the Nation; if they be active as you have seen, and 'as' it hath been made manifest so as not to be denied, to the carrying on of their Designs; if England must be eradicated by persons complicated with the Spaniard; if this must be brought upon us through distempers and falseness of men among themselves,—then the question is no more than this: Whether any consideration whatsoever shall lead us, for fear of eradicating distempers, to suffer all the honest Interests of this Nation to be eradicated? Therefore, speaking generally of any of their distempers, 'which are' of all sorts,—where a member cannot be cured, the rule is plain, *Ense rescindendum est immedicabile vulnus*. And I think it is of such an advantage that nothing ever could more properly be put in practice‡ since this or any Nation 'first' was.

\* Original sentence incomplete; or tacked with radical incoherency to the foregoing: the sense, on either hypothesis, is very visible.

† Royalists, and other Discontented; Protestants, though Plotters

‡ 'used' *in orig*

As to those lesser Distempers of people that pretend Religion, yet which from the whole consideration of Religion, would fall under one of the heads of Reformation,—I had rather put these under this head;\* and I shall the less speak to it, because you have been so well spoken to already to-day ‘elsewhere.’ I will tell you the truth: Our practice since the last Parliament hath been, To let all this Nation see that whatever pretensions to Religion would continue quiet, peaceable, they should enjoy conscience and liberty to themselves;—and *not* to make Religion a pretence for arms and blood. Truly we have suffered them, and that cheerfully, so to enjoy their own liberties. Whatsoever is contrary, ‘and not peaceable’ let the pretence be never so specious,—if it tend to combination, to interests and factions, we shall not care, by the grace of God, *whom* we meet withal, though never so specious, ‘if they be not quiet!’ And truly I am against all “liberty of conscience” repugnant to *this*. If men will profess,—be they those under Baptism, be they those of the Independent judgment simply, or of the Presbyterian judgment,—in the name of God, encourage them, countenance them; so long as they do plainly continue to be thankful to God, and to make use of the liberty given them to enjoy their own consciences! For as it was said to-day, undoubtedly “*this* is the peculiar Interest all this while contended for.” [*An excellent “Interest;” very indispensable in a state of genuine Protestantism, which latter has itself for some time been indispensable enough.*]

Men who believe in Jesus Christ—that is the Form that gives being to true religion, ‘namely,’ to Faith in Christ and walking in a profession answerable to that Faith;—men who believe the remission of sins through the blood of Christ, and free justification by the blood of Christ; who live upon the grace of God: those men who are certain they are so [*Faith of assurance*],—‘they’ are members of Jesus Christ and are to Him the apple of His eye. Whoever hath this Faith, let his Form be what it will; he walking peaceably, without prejudice to others under other Forms:—it is a debt due to God and Christ; and He will require it, if that Christian may not enjoy his liberty. [*True tolerance; a noble thing: patience, indifference as to the Unessential; liveliest impatience, inexorable INTOLERANCE for the want of the Essential!*]

If a man of one form will be trampling upon the heels of another form; if an Independent, for example, will despise him ‘who is’ under Baptism, and will revile him, and reproach and provoke him,—I will **not** suffer it in him. If, on the other side, those of the Anabaptist ‘judg-

\* Of ‘doing all we can for Security;’ they will stand better under *this*, thinks his Highness. His Highness half-soliloquising, suddenly bethinking himself, again shows us a glimpse of his Speech in a state of genesis.

ment' shall be censuring the Godly Ministers of the Nation who profess under that of Independency; or if those that profess under Presbytery shall be reproaching or speaking evil of them, traducing and censuring of them,—as I would not be willing to see the day when England shall be in the power of the Presbytery to impose upon the consciences of others that profess faith in Christ,—so I will not endure any reproach to them. But God give us hearts and spirits to keep things *equal*. Which, truly I must profess to you, hath been my temper. I have had some boxes 'on the ear,' and rebukes,—on the one hand and on the other; some censuring me for Presbytery; others as an inletter to all the Sects and Heresies of the Nation. I have borne my reproach: but I have, through God's mercy, not been unhappy in hindering any one Religion to impose upon another. And truly I must needs say (I speak it experimentally): I have found it, I have, that those of the Presbyterian judgment—[“*Do themselves partly approve my plan;” he means to say; but starting off into broken sentences, as he is liable to do, never says it*]—

—I speak it knowingly, as having received from very many Counties—I have had Petitions, and acknowledgments and professions, from whole Counties; as from Cornwall, Devon, Somerset, and other Counties. Acknowledgments that they, 'the Presbyterians there,' do but desire they may have liberty and protection in the worshipping of God according to their own judgments; for the purging of their congregations, and the laboring to attain more purity of faith and repentance;—and that, in their outward profession, they will not strain themselves beyond their own line. I have had those Petitions; I have them to show. And I confess I look at that as the blesseddest thing which hath been since the adventuring upon this Government, 'or' which these times produce. And I hope I gave them fair and honest answers. And if it shall be found to be the Civil Magistrate's real endeavor to keep all professing Christians in this relation to one another; not suffering any to say or do what will justly provoke the others;—I think he that would have more liberty than this, is not worthy of any.

This therefore I think verily, if it may be under consideration for Reformation:—I say if it please God to give you and me hearts to keep this straight, 'it may be a great means' in giving countenance to just Ministers—[*In such semi-articulate uneasy way does his Highness hustle himself over into the discussion of a new Topic*]—in countenancing a just maintenance to them, by Tithes or otherwise. For my part I should think I were very treacherous if I took away Tithes, till I see the Legislative Power settle Maintenance to Ministers another way. But whoever they be that shall contend to destroy Tithes,—it doth as surely cut their 'the Minister's' throats as it is a drift to take Tithes away before another mode of maintenance, or way of preparation towards

such, be had. Truly I think all such practices and proceedings should be discountenanced. I have heard it from as gracious a Minister as any in England; I have had it professed: That it would be a far greater satisfaction to them to have maintenance another way,—if the State will provide it. [*Sensation among the Voluntaries !— —His Highness proceeds no farther in that direction at present. The next sentence suddenly drawing itself up into a heap; comprising both ideas, “TITHES” and “EQUALITY,” and in free-flowing half-articulate manner uttering them both at once, must be given precisely as it stands,—Grammar yielding place to something still needfuller, to TRANSPARENCY of Speech with or without grammar.*]—Therefore I think, for the keeping of the Church and people of God and professors in their several forms in this liberty—I think as it, ‘this of tithes, or some other maintenance,’ hath been a thing that is the root of visible Profession [*No public maintenance, no regular priest*], the upholding of this—I think you will find a blessing in it:—if God keep your hearts to keep things in this posture and balance which is so honest and so necessary. [*Better keep up Tithes, till we see !*]

Truly, there might be some other things offered to you, in point of Reformation: a Reformation of Manners, to wit—But I had forgot one thing which I must remember! It is the Church’s work, you know, in some measure: yet give me leave to ask, and I appeal unto your consciences, Whether or there hath not been an honest care taken for the ejecting of Scandalous Ministers, and for the bringing-in of them that have passed an Approbation? [*Our two Commissions, of Triers and Expurgators.*] I dare say such an Approbation as never passed in England before! And give me leave to say, It hath been with this difference ‘from the old practice,’ that neither Mr. Parson nor Doctor in the University hath been reckoned stamp enough by those that made these Approbations;—though, I can say too, they have a great esteem for Learning; and look at Grace as most useful when it falls unto men *with* rather than without ‘that addition;’ and wish, with all their hearts, the flourishing of all those Institutions of Learning, as much as any. I think there hath been a conscience exercised, both by myself and the Ministers, towards them that have been Approved. I may say, such an one, as I truly believe was never known in England, ‘in regard to this matter.’ And I do verily believe that God hath, for the Ministry, a very great seed in the youth ‘now’ in the Universities; who instead of studying Books, study their own hearts. I do believe, as God hath made a very great and flourishing seed to that purpose; so this Ministry of England—I think in my very conscience that God will bless and favor it; and hath blessed it, to the gaining of very many souls. It was



never so upon the thriving hand since England was, as at this day. Therefore I say, in these things, 'in these arrangements made by us,' which tend to the profession of the Gospel and Public Ministry, 'I think' you will be so far from hindering, that you will farther them. And I shall be willing to join with you.

I did hint to you my thoughts about the Reformation of Manners. And those abuses that are in this Nation through disorder, are a thing which should be much in your hearts. It is that, which, I am confident, is a description and character of the Interest you have been engaged against, 'the Cavalier Interest:' the badge and character of countenancing Profaneness, Disorder and Wickedness in all places—[*A horrible "character," your Highness ; not undeserved hitherto : and under our new Defender of the Faith (if you could see into futurity) what a height of evidence will it rise to !*—and whatever is most of kin to these, and most agrees with what is Popery, and 'with' the profane Nobility and Gentry of this Nation ! In my conscience, it was a shame to be a Christian, within these fifteen, sixteen or seventeen years, in this Nation ! Whether "in Cæsar's house," or elsewhere ! It was a shame, it was a reproach to a man ; and the badge of "Puritan" was put upon it.—We would keep up [*He bethinks him of the above word "profane"*] Nobility and Gentry :—and the way to keep them up is, Not to suffer them to be patronisers or countenancers of debauchery and disorders ! And you will hereby be as laborers in that work 'of keeping them up.' And a man may tell as plainly as can be what becomes of us, if we grow indifferent and lukewarm 'in repressing evil,' under I know not what weak pretensions. [*Yes, your Highness ; even so,—were you and I in a minority of Two upon it ? "Merry Monarchs" of the Nell-Gwynn Defender-kind, and the gallantest Sir Charles Sedleys in their tavern-balcony in Bow Street, are and remain a most mournful phenomenon to me ; mournfuller than Death ;—equal to Death with a Grimaldi mask clapt on it !*] If it lives in us, therefore ; I say, if it be in the general 'heart of the Nation,' it is a thing I am confident our liberty and prosperity depend upon,—Reformation. 'Make it a shame to see men bold in sin and profaneness, and God will bless you. You will be a blessing to the Nation ; and by this, will be more repairers of breaches than by anything in the world. Truly these things do respect the souls of men, and the spirits,—which are the men. The mind is the man. If that be kept pure, a man signifies somewhat ; if not, I would very fain see what difference there is betwixt him and a beast. He hath only some activity to do some more mischief. [*A real "Head of the Church," this "King ;" not an imaginary one !*]

There are some things which respect the Estates of men ; and there

is one general Grievance in the Nation. It is the Law. [*"Hear, hear!" from all quarters of the Nation.*] Not that the Laws are a grievance; but there are Laws that are; and the great grievance lies in the execution and administration. I think I may say it, I have as eminent Judges in this land as have been had, as the Nation has had, for these many years. [*Hale and others; yea!*]—Truly I could be particular as to the executive part 'of it,' as to the administration 'of the Law;' but that would trouble you. The truth of it is, There are wicked and abominable Laws, which 'it' will be in your power to alter. To hang a man for Six-and-eight-pence, and I know not what; to hang for a trifle, and acquit murder,—is in the ministration of the Law, through the ill-framing of it. I have known in my experience abominable murders acquitted. And to see men lose their lives for petty matters: this is a thing God will reckon for. [*Your Highness actually says so, believes so?*] And I wish it may not lie upon this Nation a day longer than you have an opportunity to give a remedy; and I hope I shall cheerfully join with you in it. This hath been a great grief to many honest hearts and conscientious people and I hope it is in all your hearts to rectify it.

I have little more to say to you, being very weary; and I know you are so 'too.' Truly I did begin with what I thought was 'the means' to carry on this War (if you will carry it on), That we might join together in that vigorously. And I did promise an answer to an objection: "But what will you prosecute it with? The State is hugely in debt; I believe it comes to ——— [*Reporter cannot hear; on his Paper is mere Blank;—nay I think his Highness stutters, does not clearly articulate any sum.*]"—The Treasure of the State is run out. We shall not be an enemy to your inspection; but desire it,—that you should inspect the Treasury, and how monies have been expended. And we are not afraid to look the Nation in the face upon this score. And therefore we will say negatively, *first*, No man can say we have misemployed the Treasures of this Nation, and embezzled it to particular and private uses.

It may be we have not been,—as the world terms it,—so fortunate in all our successes, 'in the issues of all our attempts?' [*Hispaniola was a terrible affair, your Highness; and Jamaica is yet—a load to crush any but a Man of Hope!*] Truly if we are of mind that God may not decide for us in these things, I think we shall be quarrelling with what God 'Himself' will answer 'for.' And we hope we are able,—it may be weakly, I doubt not,—to give an answer to God, and to give an answer to every man's conscience in the sight of God, of the reason of things. But we shall tell you, it—"It," the principal "reason" we could give, was the Plotting of the Cavaliers; whereat his Highness bursts into sudden

*spontaneous combustion again!*])—was part of the Arch-Fire, which hath been in this your time; wherein there were flames good store, fire enough;—and it will be your wisdom and skill, and God's blessing upon you, to *quench* them both here and elsewhere! I say it again, our endeavors—by those that have been appointed, by those that have been Major-Generals; I can repeat it with comfort,—they have been effectual for the Preservation of your Peace! [*What worlds of old terror, rage, and endeavor, all dead now; what continents of extinct fire, of life-volcanoes once blazing, now sunk in eternal darkness, do we discern with emotion, through this chance crevice in his Highness!*] It hath been more effectual towards the discountenancing of Vice and settling Religion, than anything done these fifty years: I will abide by it, notwithstanding the envy and slander of foolish men! [*Poor Oliver, noble Oliver!*] But I say there was a Design—I confess I speak that to you with a little vehemency—But you had not peace two months together, ‘nothing but plot after plot;’ I profess I believe it as much as ever I did anything in the world; and how instrumental *they*, ‘these Major-Generals,’ have been to your peace and for your preservation, by such means,—which, we say, was Necessity! More ‘instrumental’ than all instituted things in the world!— If you would make laws against whatever things God may please to send, ‘laws’ to meet everything that may *happen*,—you make a law in the face of God; you tell God you will meet all His dispensations, and will stay things whether He will or no!\* But if you make good laws of Government, that men may know how to obey and to act for Government, they may be laws that have frailty and weakness: ay, and ‘yet’ good laws to be observed. But if nothing should ‘ever’ be done but what ‘is according to Law,” the throat of the Nation may be cut while we send for some to make a Law! [*The Tyrant's plea?—Yes; and the true Governor's, my friend; for extremes meet.*] Therefore certainly it is a pitiful beastly notion to think, though it be for ordinary Government to live by law and rule, yet†—‘if a Government in extraordinary circumstances go beyond the law even for self-preservation, it is’ to be clamored at, and blotted at. [*His Highness still extremely animated; wants as if more tongues than one to speak all he feels!*] When matters of Necessity come,

\* “Laws against events,” insisted on before, p. 221. The “event” there could be no law against beforehand, was the universal rising of the cutthroat Cavaliers; a thing not believed in by the thick-skinned, but too well known to his Highness as a terrible verity,—which the thickest skin would have got acquainted with, moreover, had it not been for him! Evidently a most provoking topic.

† A small hiatus in the ms. (Burton, p. clxxii.), which imagination can easily fill

then without guilt extraordinary remedies may not be applied? Who can be so pitiful a person!—

I confess, if Necessity be *pretended*, there is so much the more sin. A laying the irregularity of men's actions upon God as if He had sent a Necessity;—who doth indeed send Necessities! But to *anticipate* these—For as to an appeal to God, I own it, 'own this Necessity,' conscientiously to God; and the principles of Nature dictate the thing:—but if there be a *supposition*, I say, of a Necessity which is *not*, every *act* so done hath in it the more sin. This 'whether in a given case, there is a Necessity or not,' perhaps is rather to be disputed than otherwise: But I must say I do not know one action 'of this Government,' no not one, but it hath been in order to the peace and safety of the Nation. And the keeping of some in prison [*Lilburn, Wildman, Overton, Grey of Groby, Willoughby of Parham, occasionally Harrison and others: a fair stock of Prisoners up and down!*] hath been upon such clear and just grounds that no man can except against it. I know there are some imprisoned in the Isle of Wight, in Cornwall and elsewhere; and the cause of their imprisonment was, They were all found acting things which tended to the disturbance of the Peace of the Nation. Now these principles made us say to them: "Pray live quietly in your own countries; you shall not be urged with bonds or engagements, or to subscribe to the Government." But they would not so much as say, "We will promise to live peaceably." If others are imprisoned, it is because they have done such things. And if other particulars strike,\* we know what to say—as having endeavored to walk as those that would not only give an account to God of their actings in Authority, but had 'withal' to give an account of them to men. [*Anticlimax;—better than some Climaxes; full of simplicity and discretion.*]

I confess I have digressed much. [*Yes, your Highness; it has been a very loose-flowing Discourse; like a big tide on shallow shores, with few banks or barriers!*]*—*I would not have you be discouraged if you think the State is exceeding poor. Give me leave to tell you, we have managed the Treasury not unthrifely, nor to private uses; but for the use of the Nation and Government;—and shall give you this short account. When the Long Parliament sat,† this Nation owed 700,000*l.* We examined it; it was brought unto that,—in that short Meeting 'of the Little Parliament,' within half a year after the Government came into our hands. I believe there was *more* rather than less. They, 'the Long-Parliament people' had 120,000*l.* a-month; they had the King's, Queen's, Prince's, Bishops' Lands; all Delinquents' Estates, and the

\* Means 'give offence.'

† Polite for 'ceased to sit.'

Dean-and-Chapter Lands ;—which was a very rich Treasure. As soon as ever we came to the Government, we abated 30,000*l.* the first half year, and 60,000*l.* after. We had no benefits of those Estates, at all considerable ; [*Only the merest fractions of them remaining now unsold.*] I do not think, the fiftieth part of what they had :—and give me leave to tell you, *You are not so much in debt as we found you.\** We know it hath been maliciously dispersed, as if we had set the Nation into 2,500,000*l.* of debt : but I tell you, you are not so much in debt, by some thousands,—I think I may say, by some hundreds of thousands ! This is true that I tell you. We have honestly,—it may be not so wisely as some others would have done,—but with honest and plain hearts, labored and endeavored the disposal of Treasure to Public Uses ; and labored to pull off the common charge 60,000*l.* a-month, as you see. And if we had continued that charge that was left upon the Nation, perhaps we could have had as much money ‘in hand,’ as now we are in debt.—These things being thus, I did think it my duty to give you this account—though it be wearisome even to yourselves and to me.

Now if I had the tongue of an Angel ; if I was so certainly Inspired as the holy Men of God have been, I could rejoice, for your sakes, and for these Nations’ sakes, and for the sake of God, and of His Cause which we have all been engaged in, If I could move affections in you to that which, if you do it, will save this Nation ! If *not*—you plunge it (to all human appearance), ‘it’ and all Interests, yea and all Protestants in the world, into irrecoverable ruin !—

Therefore I pray and beseech you, in the name of Christ, Show yourselves to be men ; “quit yourselves like men !” It doth not infer any reproach if you do show yourselves men : *Christian* men,—*which alone will make you “quit yourselves.”* I do not think that, to this work you have in hand, a neutral spirit will do. That is a Laodicean spirit ; and we know what God said of that Church : it was “lukewarm,” and therefore He would “spew it out of His mouth !” It is not a neutral spirit that is incumbent upon you. And if not a neutral spirit, it is much less a stupefied spirit, inclining you, in the least disposition, the *wrong way* ! Men are, in their private consciences, every day making shipwreck ; and it’s no wonder if these can shake hands with persons of reprobate Interests :—such, give me leave to think, are the Popish Interests. For the Apostle brands them so, “Having seared consciences.” Though I do not judge every man :—but the ringleaders † are

\* *Antea*, p. 241.

† Of the Insurrectionary persons, and the general Miscellany who favor the Popish Interests ; it is on these more than on Papists proper that his Highness is now again coming to glance.

such. The Scriptures foretold there should be such. It is not such a spirit that will carry this work on! It is men in a Christian state; who have *works* with *faith*; who know how to lay hold on Christ for remission 'of sins,' till a man be brought to "glory in hope." Such an hope kindled in men's spirits will actuate them to such ends as you are tending to: and so many as are partakers of that, and do own your standings,\* wherein the Providence of God hath set and called you to this work, 'so many' will carry it on.

If men, through scruple, be opposite, you cannot take them by the hand to *carry* them 'along with you,'—it were absurd: if a man be scrupling the plain truth before him, it is in vain to meddle with him. He hath placed another business in *his* mind; he is saying, "O, if we could but exercise wisdom to gain Civil Liberty,—Religion would follow!" [*His Highness thinks Religion will PRECEDE,—as I hope thou also, in a sense, emphatically thinkest. His Highness does not much affect Constitution-builders, Oceana Harringtons, and Members of the Rota Club. Here however he has his eye principally upon the late Parliament, with its Constitution-pedantries and parchments.*] Certainly there are such men, who are not *maliciously* blind, whom God, for some cause, exercises. [*Yes, your Highness; we poor Moderns have had whole shoals of them, and still have,—in the later sections of that same "work" you are engaged in.*] It cannot be expected that they should do anything! [*Profound silence.*] These men,—they must demonstrate that they are in bonds.— — Could we have carried it thus far, if we had sat disputing in that manner? I must profess I reckon that difficulty more than all the wrestling with flesh and blood. [*What could so try one as that Pedant Parliament did; disputing, doling out pennyweights of distilled constitution; and Penruddock, Charles Stuart and the Spaniards waiting momentarily to come in, with Ate and the Scarlet Woman in their rear?*] Doubting, hesitating men, they are not fit for your work. You must not expect that men of hesitating spirits, under the bondage of scruples, will be able to carry on this work, much less such as are merely carnal, natural; such as having an "outward profession of Godliness," whom the Apostle speaks of so often, "are enemies to the cross of Christ: whose god is their belly; whose glory is in their shame; who mind earthly things." [*A really frightful kind of character;—and not yet obsolete, though its dialect is changed!*] Do you think these men will rise to such a spiritual heat for the Nation as shall carry you a Cause like this; as will meet 'and defy' all the oppositions that the Devil and wicked men can make? [*Not to BE ex-*

\* Present official positions.

*pected, your Highness ; not at all. And yet we, two hundred years later now do we go on expecting it,—by the aid of Ballot-Boxes, Reform-Club Attorneys, &c., &c. !]*

Give me leave to tell you,—those that are called to this work, it will not depend ‘for them’ upon formalities, nor notions, nor speeches ! [*A certain truculency on his Highness’s visage.*] I do not look the work should be done by these. ‘No ;’ but by men of honest hearts, engaged to God : strengthened by Providence ; enlightened in His words, to know His Word,—to which He hath set His Seal, sealed with the blood of His Son, with the blood of His Servants ; *that* is such a spirit as will carry on this work. [*Scant in the Pedant Parliament, scant in the Rota Club ; not to be found in the Reform-Club Attorney, or his Ballot-Box, at all.*]

Therefore I beseech you, do not dispute of unnecessary and unprofitable things which may divert you from carrying on so glorious a work as this is. I think *every* objection that ariseth is not to be answered ; nor have I time for it. I say, look up to God ; have peace among yourselves. Know assuredly that if I have interest,\* I am by the voice of the People the Supreme Magistrate ; [*We will have no disputing about that,—you are aware !*] and, it may be, do know somewhat that might satisfy my conscience, if I stood in doubt ! But it is a union, really it is a union, ‘this’ between you and me : and both of us united in faith and love to Jesus Christ, and to His peculiar Interest in the world,—*that* must ground this work. And in *that*, if I have any peculiar Interest which is personal to myself, which is not subservient to the Public end,—it were not an extravagant thing for me to *curse* myself : because I know God will curse me, if I have ! [*Look in that countenance of his Highness !*] I have learned too much of God, to dally with Him, and to be bold with Him, in these things. And I hope I never shall be bold with Him ;—though I can be bold with men, if Christ be pleased to assist !—

I say, if there be love between us, so that the Nations† may say, “These are knit together in one bond, to promote the glory of God against the Common Enemy ; to suppress everything that is Evil ; and encourage whatsoever is of Godliness,”—yea, the Nation will bless you ! And really that and nothing else will work off these Disaffections from the minds of men ; which are great,—perhaps greater than all the ‘other’ oppositions you can meet with. I do know what I say. When I speak of these things, I speak my heart before God ;—and, as I said before, I dare not be bold with Him. I have a little faith : I have a little lived by faith, and therein I may be “bold.” If I spoke other than

\* Means ‘if you see me in power.’

† The Three Nations.

the affections and secrets of my heart, I know he would not bear it at my hands ! [*Deep silence ; his Highness's voice, in sonorous bass, alone audible in the Painted Chamber.*] Therefore in the fear and name of God : Go on, with love and integrity, against whatever arises of contrary to those ends which you know and have been told of ; and the blessing of God go with you,—and the blessing of God will go with you ! [*Amen !*]

I have but one thing more to say. I know it is troublesome :—But I did read a Psalm yesterday ; which truly may not unbecome both me to tell you of, and you to observe. It is the Eighty-fifth Psalm ;\* it is very instructive and significant : and though I do but a little touch upon it, I desire your perusal at pleasure. [*We will many of us read it, this night ; almost all of us, with one view or the other ;—and some of us may sing a part of it at evening worship.*]

It begins : “Lord, Thou hast been very favorable to Thy Land ; Thou hast brought back the captivity of Jacob. Thou hast forgiven the iniquity of Thy People ; Thou hast covered all their sin. Thou hast taken away all the fierceness of Thy wrath : Thou hast turned Thyself from the fierceness of Thine anger. Turn us, O God of our salvation, and cause Thine anger toward us to cease. Wilt Thou be angry with us for ever ; wilt thou draw out Thine anger to all generations ? Wilt Thou not revive us again, that Thy People may rejoice in Thee ?” Then he calls upon God as “the God of his salvation,”† and then saith he : “I will hear what God the Lord will speak : for He will speak peace unto His People, and to His Saints ; but let them not turn again to folly. Surely His salvation is nigh them that fear Him ;” Oh—“that glory may dwell in our land ! Mercy and Truth are met together ; Righteousness and Peace have kissed each other. Truth shall spring out of the Earth, and Righteousness shall look down from Heaven. Yea the Lord shall give that which is good, and our Land shall yield her increase. Righteousness shall go before Him, and shall set us in the way of his steps.” [*What a vision of celestial hope is this : vista into Lands of Light, God's Will done on Earth ; this poor English Earth an Emblem of Heaven ; where God's blessing reigns supreme ; where ghastly Falsity and brutal Greed and Baseness, and Cruelty and Cowardice, and Sin and Fear, and all the Helldogs of Gehenna shall lie chained under our feet ; and Man, august in divine*

\* Historical : Tuesday, 16th Sept., 1656 ; Oliver Protector reading the Eighty-fifth Psalm in Whitehall. We too might read it ; but as his Highness recites it all here except one short verse, it is not so necessary.

† Verse 7, ‘Show us Thy mercy, O Lord, and grant us Thy salvation.’



*manhood, shall step victorious over them, heavenward, like a god! O Oliver, I could weep,—and yet it steads not. Do not I too look into “Psalms,” into a kind of Eternal Psalm, unalterable as adamant,—which the whole world yet will look into? Courage, my brave one!]*

Truly I wish that this Psalm, as it is written in the Book, might be better written in our hearts. That we might say as David, “*Thou hast done this,*” and “*Thou hast done that;*” “*Thou hast pardoned our sins; Thou hast taken away our iniquities!*” Whither can we go to a better God? For “*He hath done it.*” It is to Him any Nation may come in their extremity, for the taking away of His wrath. How did He do it? “*By pardoning their sins, by taking away their iniquities!*” If we can but cry unto Him, He will “*turn and take away our sins.*”—Then let us listen to Him. Then let us consult, and meet in Parliament; and ask Him counsel, and hear what He saith, “*for He will speak peace unto His People.*” If you be the People of God, He will speak *peace*;—and we will not turn again to folly.

“*Folly:*” a great deal of grudging in the Nation that we cannot have our horse-races, cock-fightings, and the like! [*Abolished, suspended for good reasons!*] I do not think these are lawful, except to make them recreations. That we will not endure ‘for necessary ends’ [*For preventing Royalist Plots, and such like*] to be abridged of them:—Till God hath brought us to another spirit than this, He will not bear with us. Ay, “*but He bears with them in France;*” “*they in France are so and so!*”—Have they *the Gospel* as we have? They have seen the sun but a little; we have great lights.—If God give you a spirit of Reformation, you will preserve this Nation from “turning again” to those fooleries:—and what will the end be? Comfort and blessing. Then “*Mercy and Truth shall meet together.*” Here is a great deal of “*truth*” among professors, but very little “*mercy!*” They are ready to cut the throats of one another. But when we are brought into the right way, we shall be *merciful* as well as orthodox: and we know who it is that saith, “*If a man could speak with the tongues of men and angels, and yet want that, he is but sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal!*”—

Therefore I beseech you in the name of God, set your hearts to this ‘work.’ And if you set your hearts to it, then you will sing Luther’s Psalm.\* That is a rare Psalm for a Christian!—and if he set his heart

\* Psalm Forty-sixth; of which Luther’s Paraphrase, *Eine feste Burg ist unser Gott*, is still very celebrated. Here is the original Psalm.

‘God is our refuge and strength; a very present help in trouble: therefore we will not fear,—though the Earth be removed, and though the moun-

open, and can approve it to God, we *shall* hear him say, "God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in time of trouble." If Pope and Spaniard, and Devil and all, set themselves against us,—though they should "compass us like bees," as it is in the Hundred-and-eighteenth Psalm,—yet in the name of the Lord we should destroy them! And, as it is in this Psalm of Luther's: "We will not fear, though the Earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the middle of the sea; though the waters thereof roar and be troubled; though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof." [*A terrible scene indeed:—but there is something in the Heart of Man, then, greater than any "scene;" which, in the name of the Highest, can defy any "scene" or terror whatsoever? "Yea," answers the Hebrew David; "Yea," answers the German Luther; "Yea," the English Cromwell. The Ages responsive to one another; soul hailing soul across the dead Abysses; deep calling unto deep.*] "There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the City of God. God is in the midst of her: she shall not be moved." [*No!*] Then he repeats two or three times, "The Lord of Hosts is with us: the God of Jacob is our refuge." [*What are the King of Spain, Charles Stuart, Joseph Wagstaff, Chancellor Hyde, and your triple-hatted Chimera at Rome? What is the Devil in General, for that matter,—the still very extensive Entity called "Devil," with all the force he can raise?*]

I have done. All I have to say is, To pray God that He may bless you with His presence; that He who hath your hearts and mine would show His presence in the midst of us.

I desire you will go together, and choose your Speaker.\*

tains be carried into the midst of the sea; though the waters roar and be troubled; though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof!

'There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the City of God, the Holy Place of the Tabernacles of the Most High. God is in the midst of her; she shall not be moved: God shall help her, and that right early. The Heathen raged, the Kingdoms were moved: He uttered His voice, the Earth melted. The Lord of Hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge.

'Come behold the works of the Lord; what desolations He hath made in the Earth! He maketh wars to cease unto the ends of the Earth; He breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; He burneth the chariot in the fire;—Be still, and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the Heathen, I will be exalted in the Earth! The Lord of Hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge.'

\* Burton's Diary, i., Intro., p. clxxx. *et seq.* (from *Additional Ayscough MSS.*, no. 6125).

The latest of the Commentators expresses himself in reference to this Speech in the following singular way :

‘No Royal Speech like this was ever delivered elsewhere in the world ! It is,—with all its prudence, and it is very prudent, sagacious, courteous, right royal in spirit,—perhaps the most artless transparent piece of Public Speaking this Editor has ever studied. Rude, massive, genuine ; like a block of unbeaten gold. A Speech not so fit for Drury Lane, as for Valhalla, and the Sanhedrim of the Gods. The man himself, and the England he presided over, there and then, are to a singular degree visible in it ; open to our eyes, to our sympathies. He who would see Oliver, will find more of him here than in most of the history-books yet written about him.

‘On the whole, the cursory modern Englishman cannot be expected to read this Speech :—and yet it is pity ; the Speech might do him good, if he understood it. We shall not again hear a Supreme Governor talk in this strain ; the dialect of it is very obsolete ; much more than the grammar and diction, for ever obsolete,—not to my regret the dialect of it. But the spirit of it is a thing that should never have grown obsolete. The spirit of it will have to revive itself again ; and shine out in *new* dialect and vesture, in infinitely wider compass, wide as God’s known Universe *now* is,—if it please Heaven ! Since that spirit went obsolete, and men took to “dallying” with the Highest, to “being bold” with the Highest, and not “bold with men” (only Belial, and not “Christ” in any shape, assisting them), we have had but sorry times, in Parliament and out of it. There has not been a Supreme Governor worth the meal upon his periwig, in comparison,—since this spirit fell obsolete. How could there ? Belial is a desperately bad sleeping partner in any concern whatever ! Cant did not ever yet, that I know of, turn ultimately to a good account, for any man or thing. May the Devil swiftly be compelled to call in large masses of our current stock of Cant, and withdraw it from circulation ! Let the people “run for gold,” as the Chartist say ; demand Veracity, Performance, instead of mealy-mouthed Speaking ; and force him to recal his Cant. Thank Heaven, stern Destiny, merciful were it even to death, does now compel them

verily to "run for gold:" Cant in all directions is swiftly ebbing into Bank it was issued by.'—

Speech being ended, the Honorable Members 'went to the House,' says Bulstrode;\* and in the Lobby, with considerable crowding I think, 'received, from the Chancery Clerk, Certificates in this form,'—for instance :

'COUNTY OF BUCKS. *These are to certify that* Sir Bulstrode Whitlocke *is returned by Indenture one of the Knights to serve in this present Parliament for the said County, and approved by his Highness's Council.* NATH. TAYLER, *Clerk of the Commonwealth in Chancery.*'

Mr. Tayler has received Four-hundred 'Indentures' from Honorable Gentlemen ; but he does not give out Four-hundred 'Certificates,' he only gives Three-hundred and odd. Near One-hundred Honorable Gentlemen can get no Certificate from Mr. Tayler,—none provided for *you* ;—and without Certificate there is no admittance. Soldiers stand ranked at the door ; no man enters without his Certificate ! Astonishing to see. Haselrig, Scott and the stiff Republicans, Ashley Cooper and the turbulent persons, who might have leavened this Parliament into strange fermentation, cannot, it appears, get in ! No admittance here : saw Honorable Gentlemen ever the like ?—

The most flagrant violation of the Privileges of Parliament that was ever known ! exclaim they. A sore blow to Privilege indeed. With which the Honorable House, shorn of certain limbs in this rude way, knows not well what to do. The Clerk of the Commonwealth, being summoned, answers what he can ; Nathaniel Fiennes, for the Council of State, answers what he can : the Honorable House, actually intent on Settling the Nation, has to reflect that in real truth this will be a great furtherance thereto ; that matters do stand in an anomalous posture at present ; that the Nation should and must be settled. The Honorable House, with an effort, swallows this injury ; directs the petitioning Excluded Members 'to apply to the Council.'† The Excluded Members, or some one Excluded Member, redacts an indignant Protest,

\* Whitlocke, p. 639. † Commons Journals, vii., 424, 5, 6 (Sept., 18–22)

with all the names appended;\* prints it, privately circulates it, 'in boxes sent by carriers, a thousand copies in a box:'—and there it rests; his Highness saying nothing to it; the Honorable House and the Nation saying nothing. In this Parliament, different from the last, we trace a real desire for Settlement.

As the power of the Major-Generals, 'in about two months hence,'† or three months hence, was, on hint of his Highness himself, to the joy of Constitutional England, withdrawn, we may here close *Part Ninth*. Note first, however, as contemporary with this event, the glorious news we have from Blake and Montague at sea; who, in good hour, have at last got hold of a Spanish Fleet, and in a tragic manner burnt it, and taken endless silver therein.‡ News of the fact comes in the beginning of October: in the beginning of November comes, as it were, the fact itself,—some Eight-and-thirty wagonloads of real silver; triumphantly jingling up from Portsmouth, across London pavements to the Tower, to be coined into current English money there. The Antichrist King of Spain has lost Lima by an earthquake, and infinite silver there also. Heaven's vengeance seems awakening. 'Never,' say the old Newspapers,§ 'never was there a more terrible visible Hand of God in judgment upon any People, since the time of Sodom and Gomorrah! Great is the Lord; marvellous are His doings, and to be had in reverence of all the Nations. England holds universal Thanksgiving Day; sees Eight-and-thirty wagonloads of silver, sees hope of Settlement, sees Major-Generals abolished; and piously blesses Heaven.

\* Copy of it and them in *Whitlocke*, p. 641-3; see also *Thurloe*, v., 456 490.

† Kimber, p. 211. The real date and circumstances may be seen in Burton's Diary, i., 310 (7 Jan., 1656-7), Commons Journals, vii., 483 (29 Jan.); compared with Ludlow, ii., 581, 2. See Godwin, iv., 328.

‡ Captain Stayner's Letter (9 Sept., 1656, *Thurloe*, v., 399); *Genera*. Montague's Letter (*Ib.*, p. 433); *Whitlocke*, p. 643; &c.

§ 6 October (in *Cromwelliana*, p. 160).

**CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.**

---

**PART X.**

**SECOND PROTECTORATE PARLIAMENT.**

**1657—1658.**



## LETTERS CXLIX., CL.

Two Letters near each other in date, and now by accident brought contiguous in place ; which offer a rather singular contrast ; the one pointing as towards the Eternal Heights, the other as towards the Tartarean Deepes ! Between which two Extremes the Life of men and Lord Protectors has to pass itself in this world, as wisely as it can. Let us read them, and hasten over to the new Year Fifty-Seven, and last Department of our subject.

---

### LETTER CXLIX.

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, or the Municipal Authorities there, as we may perceive, are rather of the Independent judgment ; and have a little dread of some encouragement his Highness has been giving to certain of the Presbyterian sect in those parts. This Letter ought to be sufficient reassurance.

*To the Mayor of Newcastle : To be communicated to the Aldermen and others whom it doth concern.*

Whitehall, 18th December, 1656.

GENTLEMEN AND MY VERY GOOD FRIENDS,

My Lord Strickland, who is one of our Council, did impart to us a Letter written from yourselves to him, according to your desire therein expressed ; which occasions this return from us to you.

As nothing that may reflect to the prejudice of your outward Good, either Personal or as you are a Civil Government, shall easily pass with us : so, much less what shall tend to your discouragement, as you are Saints, to your Congregations, gathered in that way of fellowship commonly known by the name of Independents, whether of one judgment or other :—‘ this ’ shall be far from being actually discountenanced, or passively ‘ left to ’ suffer damage, by any applying themselves to me. I



do, once for all, give you to understand, that I should thereby destroy and disappoint one of the main ends for which God hath planted me in the station I am in.

Wherefore I desire you in that matter to rest secure. True it is that two Ministers, one Mr. Cole and one Mr. Pye, did present to me a Letter in the name of divers Ministers of Newcastle, the Bishoprick of Durham and Northumberland; of an honest and Christian purpose: the sum whereof I extracted, and returned an Answer thereunto;—a true Copy whereof I send you here enclosed. By which I think it will easily appear, that the consideration of my kindness is well deserved by them; provided they observe the condition ‘there’ expressed: which in charity I am bound to believe they will: and without which their own consciences and the world will know how to judge of them.

Having said this, I, or rather the Lord, require of you, ‘That you walk in all peaceableness and gentleness, inoffensiveness, truth and love towards them, as becomes the Servants and Churches of Christ. Knowing well that Jesus Christ, of whose diocese both they and you are, expects it. Who, when He comes to gather His People, and to make Himself “a name and praise amongst all the people of the earth,”—He “will save her that halteth, and gather her that was driven out, and will get them praise and fame in every land, where they have been put to shame.”\* And such “lame ones” and “driven out ones” were not the Independents only, and Presbyterians, a few years since, by the Popish and Prelatical Party in these Nations; but such are and have been the Protestants in all lands,—persecuted, and faring alike with you, in all the Reformed Churches. And therefore, knowing your charity to be as large as all the Flock of Christ who are of the same Hope and Faith of the Gospel with you; I thought fit to commend these few words to you;—being well assured it is written in your heart, So to do with this that I shall stand by you in the maintaining of all your just privileges to the uttermost.

And committing you to the blessing of the Lord, I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

---

### LETTER CL.

CARDINAL MAZARIN, the governing Minister of France in those days, is full of compliance for the Lord Protector; whom, both

\* Zephaniah, iii., 19, 20. † Thurloe, v., 714: in Secretary Thurloe’s hand

for the sake of France and for the Cardinal's sake, it is very requisite to keep in good humor. On France's score, there is Treaty with France and War with its enemy Spain; on the Cardinal's are obscure Court-intrigues, Queen-mothers, and one knows not what: in brief, the subtle Cardinal has found, after trial of the opposite course too, that friendship, or even at times obedient-servantship to Cromwell, will be essentially advantageous to him.

Some obscure quarrel has fallen out between Charles Stuart and the Duke of York his Brother. Quarrel complicated with open politics, with Spanish War and Royalist Revolt, on Oliver's side; with secret Queen-mothers and back-stairs diplomacies on the Cardinal's:—of which there flit in the dreariest manner this and the other enigmatic vestige in the Night-realm of *Thurloe*;\* and which is partly the subject of this present Letter. A Letter unique in two respects. It is the only one we have of Oliver Cromwell, the English Puritan King, to Giulio Mazarini, the Sicilian-French Cardinal, and King of Shreds and Patches; who are a very singular pair of Correspondents brought together by the Destinies! It is also the one glimpse we have from Oliver himself of the subterranean Spy-world, in which by a hard necessity so many of his thoughts had to dwell. Oliver, we find, cannot quite grant Toleration to the Catholics; but he is well satisfied with this 'our weightiest affair,'—not without weight to *me* at least, who sit expecting Royalist Insurrections backed by Spanish Invasions, and have Assassins plotting for my life at present 'on the word of a Christian King!'—

Concerning the 'affair' itself, and the personages engaged in it, let us be content that they should continue spectral for us, and dwell in the subterranean Night-realm which belongs to them. The 'Person' employed from England, if anybody should be curious about him, is one Colonel Bamfield, once a flaming Presbyterian Royalist, who smuggled the Duke of York out of this Country 'in woman's clothes;' and now lives as an Oliverian Spy, very busy making mischief for the Duke of York. 'Berkley' is the Sir John Berkley who rode with Charles First to the Isle of Wight long since;† the Duke of York's Tutor at present. Of 'Lock-

\* iv., 506; v., 753; &c., &c

† *Antea*, i., 236.

nart,' Oliver's Ambassador in France, we shall perhaps hear again. The others,—let them continue spectral to us. Let us conceive, never so faintly, that their 'affair' is to maintain in the Duke of York some Anti-Spanish notion; notion of his having a separate English interest, independent of his Brother's, perhaps superior to it; wild notion, of one or the other sort, which will keep the quarrel wide:—as accordingly we find it did for many months,\* whatever notion it was. We can then read with intelligence sufficient for us.

'To his Eminency Cardinal Mazarin.'

'Whitehall,' 26th December, 1656.

The obligations, and many instances of affection, which I have received from your Eminency, do engage 'me' to make returns suitable to your merits. But although I have this set home upon my spirit, I may not (shall I tell you, I cannot?) at this juncture of time, and as the face of my affairs now stands, answer to your call for Toleration.†

I say, I cannot, as to a public Declaration of my sense in that point; although I believe that under my Government your Eminency, in the behalf of Catholics, has less reason for complaint as to rigor upon men's consciences than under the Parliament. For I have of some, and those very many, had compassion; making a difference. Truly I have (and I may speak it with cheerfulness in the presence of God, who is a witness within me to the truth of what I affirm) made a difference; and, as Jude speaks, "plucked many out of the fire,"‡—the raging fire of persecution, which did tyrannize over their consciences, and encroached by an arbitrariness of their power upon their estates. And herein it is my purpose, as soon as I can remove impediments, and some weights that press me down, to make a farther progress, and discharge my promise to your Eminency in relation to that.

And now I shall come to return your Eminency thanks for your judicious choice of that Person to whom you have entrusted our weightiest Affair: an Affair wherein your Eminency is concerned, though not in an equal degree and measure with myself. I must confess that I had

\* Thurloe, iv., v., vi.; see also *Biog. Brit.* (2d edition), ii., 154

† To the Catholics here.

‡ Verses 22, 23: a most remarkable *Epistle*, to which his Highness often enough solemnly refers, as we have seen.

some doubts of its success, till Providence cleared them to me by the effects. I was, truly, and to speak ingenuously, not without doubtings; and shall not be ashamed to give your Eminency the grounds I had for much doubting. I did fear that Berkley would not have been able to go through and carry on that work; and that either the Duke would have cooled in his suit,\* or condescended to his Brother. I doubted also that those Instructions which I sent over with 290† were not clear enough as to expressions; some affairs here denying me leisure at that time to be so particular as, 'in regard' to some circumstances, I would. If I am not mistaken in his 'the Duke's' character, as I received it from your Eminency, that fire which is kindled between them will not ask bellows to blow it and keep it burning. But what I think farther necessary in this matter I will send 'to' your Eminency by Lockhart.

And now I shall boast to your Eminency my security upon a well-built confidence in the Lord: for I distrust not but if this breach 'be' widened a little more, and this difference fomented, with a little caution in respect of the persons to be added to it,—I distrust not but that Party, which is already forsaken of God as to an untoward dispensation of mercies, and noisome to their countrymen, will grow lower in the opinion of all the world.

If I have troubled your Eminency too long in this, you may impute it to the resentment of joy which I have for the issue of this Affair; and 'I' will conclude with giving you assurance that I will never be backward in demonstrating, as becomes your brother and confederate, that I am,

Your servant,

OLIVER P.‡

\* His suit, I understand, was for leave to continue in France; an Anti-Spanish notion.

† Cipher for some Man's Name, now undecipherable; to all appearance, Bamfield.

‡ Thurloe, v., 735. In the possession of a 'Mr. Theophilus Rowe of Hampstead in Middlesex,' says Birch. Where did Rowe get it? Is it in the original hand, or only a copy? Birch is silent even as to the latter point. The style sufficiently declares it to be a genuine Letter.

## SPEECH VI. .

SINDERCOMB.

THE Spanish Invasion and Royalist Insurrection once more came to no effect : on mature judgment of the case, it seemed necessary to have Oliver Protector assassinated first ; and that, as usual, could not be got done. Colonel Sexby, the frantic Anabaptist, he and others have been very busy ; ‘ riding among his Highness’s escort’ in Hyde Park and elsewhere, with fleet horses, formidable weapons, with ‘ gate-hinges ready filed through,’ if the deed could have been done ;—but it never could. Sexby went over to Flanders again, for fresh consultations ; left the assassination-affair in other hands, with 1,600*l.* of ready money, ‘ on the faith of a Christian King.’ Quartermaster Sindercomb takes Sexby’s place in this great enterprise ; finds, he too, that there is nothing but failure in it.

Miles Sindercomb, now a cashiered Quartermaster living about Town, was once a zealous Deptford lad, who enlisted to fight for Liberty, at the beginning of these Wars. He fought strongly on the side of Liberty, being an earnest, fierce young fellow ;—then gradually got astray into Levelling courses, and wandered ever deeper there, till daylight forsook him, and it became quite dark. He was one of the desperate misguided Corporals, or Quartermasters, doomed to be shot at Burford, seven years ago : but he escaped over night, and was not shot there ; took service in Scotland ; got again to be Quartermaster ; was in the Overton Plot, for seizing Monk and marching into England, lately : whereupon Monk cashiered him : and he came to Town ; lodged himself here, in a sulky, threadbare manner,—in Alsatia or elsewhere. A gloomy man and Ex-Quartermaster ; has become one of Sexby’s people, ‘ on the faith of a Christian King ;’ nothing now left of him but the fierceness, groping some path for itself in the utter

*dark.* Henry Toope, one of his Highness's Lifeguard, gives us, or will give us, an inkling of Sindercomb; and we know something of his courses and inventions, which are many. He rode in Hyde Park, among his Highness's escort, with Sexby; but the deed could not then be done. Leave me the 1,600*l.*, said he; and I will find a way to do it. Sexby left it him, and went abroad.

Inventive Sindercomb then took a House in Hammersmith; Garden-House, I think, 'which had a banqueting-room looking into the road;' road very narrow at that part;—road from Whitehall to Hampton Court on Saturday afternoons. Inventive Sindercomb here set about providing blunderbusses of the due explosive force,—ancient 'infernai-machines,' in fact,—with these he will blow his Highness's Coach and Highness's self into small pieces, if it please Heaven. It did not please Heaven,—probably not Henry Toope of his Highness's Lifeguard. This first scheme proved a failure.

Inventive Sindercomb, to justify his 1,600*l.*, had to try something. He decided to fire Whitehall by night, and have a stroke at his Highness in the tumult. He has 'a hundred swift horses, two in a stable, up and down:'—set a hundred stout ruffians on the back of these, in the nocturnal fire; and try. Thursday, 8th January, 1656-7; that is to be the Night. On the dusk of Thursday, January 8th, he with old-trooper Cecil, his second in the business, attends Public Worship in Whitehall Chapel; is seen loitering there afterwards, 'near the Lord Lambert's seat.' Nothing more is seen of him: but about half-past eleven at night, the sentinel on guard catches a smell of fire;—finds holed wainscots, picked locks; a basket of the most virulent wildfire, 'fit to burn through stones,'—with lit match slowly creeping towards it, computed to reach it in some half-hour hence, about the stroke of midnight!—His Highness is summoned, the Council is summoned;—alas, Toope of the Lifeguard is examined, and Sindercomb's lodging is known. Just when the wildfire should have blazed, two Guardsmen wait upon Sindercomb; seize him, not without hard defence on his part, 'wherein his nose was nearly cut off;' bring him to his Highness. Toope testifies; Cecil reaches :—inventive Sindercomb has failed for the *last time*. To

the Tower with him, to a jury of his country with him!—The emotion in the Parliament and in the Public, next morning, was great. It had been proposed to ring an alarm at the moment of discovery, and summon the Trainbands; but his Highness would not bear of it.\*

'This Parliament, really intent on settling the Nation, could not want for emotions in regard to such a matter! Parliament adjourns for a week, till the roots of the Plot are investigated somewhat. Parliament, on reassembling, appoints a day of Thanksgiving for the Nation; Friday come three weeks, which is February 20th, that shall be the general Thanksgiving Day: and in the meantime we decide to go over in a body, and congratulate his Highness. A mark of great respect to him.†

Parliament accordingly goes over in a body, with mellifluous Widdrington, whom they have chosen for Speaker, at their head, to congratulate his Highness. It is Friday, 23d January, 1656-7; about Eleven in the morning; scene, Banqueting-house, Whitehall. Mellifluous Widdrington's congratulation, not very prolix, exists in abstract;‡ but we suppress it. Here is his Highness's Reply;—rather satisfactory to the reader. We have only to regret that in passing from the Court up to the Banqueting-house, 'part of an ancient wooden staircase,'\* or balustrade of a staircase, 'long exposed to the weather, gave way in the crowding;§ and some honorable Gentlemen had falls, though happily nobody was seriously hurt. Mellifluous Widdrington having ended, his Highness answers:

MR. SPEAKER,

I confess with much respect that you have put this trouble on yourselves upon this occasion:—but I perceive there be two things that fill me full of sense. One is, The mercy on a poor unworthy creature; the second is, This great and, as I said, unexpected kindness

\* Burton, i., 322, 3, 355; Official Narrative (in Cromwelliana, p. 160-1); State-Trials, v., § Sindercomb.

† Commons Journals, vii., 481, 493; Burton's Diary, i., 369, 377.

‡ Burton, ii., 488

§ Cromwelliana, p. 162. See *Thurloe* (vi., 49), and correct poor *Noble* (i., 161), who, with a double or even triple blunder, says My Lord Richard Cromwell had his leg broken on this occasion, and dates it August, 1657

of Parliament, in manifesting such a sense thereof as this is which you have now expressed. I speak not this with compliment ! That which detracts from the thing, in some sense, is the inconsiderableness and unworthiness of the person that hath been the object and subject of this deliverance, to wit, myself. I confess ingenuously to you, I do lie under the daily sense of my unworthiness and unprofitableness, as I have expressed to you : and if there be, as I most readily acknowledge there is, a mercy in it to me, I wish I may never reckon it on any other account than this, That the life that is lengthened, may be spent and improved to His honor who hath vouchsafed the mercy, and to the service of you, and those you represent.

I do not know, nor did I think it would be very seasonable for me, to say much to you upon this occasion ; being a thing that ariseth from yourselves. Yet, methinks, the kindness you bear should kindle a little desire in me ; even at this present, to make a short return. And, as you have been disposed hither by the Providence of God, to congratulate my mercy ; so give me leave, in a very word or two, to congratulate with you. [*Rusty, but sincere.*]

Congratulations are ever conversant about good, bestowed upon men, or possessed by them. Truly, I shall in a word or two congratulate you with good *you* are in possession of, and in some respect, I also with you. God hath bestowed upon you, and you are in possession of it,—Three Nations, and all that appertains to them. Which, in either a geographical, or topical consideration, are Nations. [*Indisputably !*] In which also there are places of honor and consideration, not inferior to any in the known world,—without vanity it may be spoken. Truly God hath not made so much soil, furnished with so many blessings, in vain ! [*Here is an idea of one's own.*] But it is a goodly sight, if a man behold it *uno intuitu*. And therefore this is a possession of yours, worthy of congratulation.

This is furnished,—give me leave to say, for I believe it is true,—with the best People in the world, possessing so much soil. A People in civil rights,—in respect of their rights and privileges,—very ancient and honorable. And *in* this People, in the midst of this People, ‘ you have what is still more precious,’ a *People* (I know every one will hear ‘ and acknowledge ’ it) that are to God “ as the apple of His eye,”—and he says so of them, be they many or be they few ! But they are many. A People of the blessing of God ; a People under His safety and protection. A People calling upon the name of the Lord ; which the Heathen do not. A People knowing God ; and a People (according to the ordinary expressions) fearing God. [*We hope so !*] And you have of this no



parallel ; no, not in all the world ! You have in the midst of you glorious things.

Glorious things : for you have Laws and statutes, and ordinances, which, though not all of them so conformable as were to be wished to the Law of God, yet, on all hands, pretend not to be long rested in farther than *as* they are conformable to the just and righteous Laws of God. Therefore, I am persuaded, there is a heart and spirit in every good man to wish they did all of them answer the Pattern. [*Yea !*] I cannot doubt but that which is in the heart will in due time break forth. [*And we shall actually have just Laws, your Highness thinks ?*] That endeavors will be ‘made’ that way, is another of your good things, with which in my heart ‘I think’ you are worthily to be congratulated. And you have a Magistracy ; which, in outward profession, in pretence, in endeavor, doth desire to put life into these Laws. And I am confident that among *you* will rest the true desire to promote every desire in others, and every endeavor, that hath tended or shall tend to the putting of these Laws in execution.

I do ‘also’ for this congratulate you : You have a Gospel Ministry among you. That have you ! Such an one as,—without vanity I shall speak it ; or without caring at all for any favor or respect from *them*, save what I have upon an account above flattery, or good words,—such an one as hath excelled itself ; and, I am persuaded,—to speak with confidence before the Lord,—is the most growing blessing (one of the most growing blessings) on the face of this Nation.

You have a good Eye ‘to watch over you,’—and in that I will share with your good favors. A good God ; a God that hath watched over you and us. A God that hath visited these Nations with a stretched-out arm ; and borne His witness against the unrighteousness and ungodliness of men, against those that ‘would’ have abused such Nations,—such mercies throughout, as I have reckoned up unto you ! A God that hath not only withstood such to the face ; but a God that hath abundantly blessed you with the evidence of His goodness and presence. And He “hath done things wonderful amongst us,” “by terrible things in righteousness.”\* He hath visited us by “wonderful things !” [*A Time of Miracle ; as indeed all “Times” are, your Highness, when there are MEN alive in them !*] In mercy and compassion hath He given us this day of freedom and liberty to speak this, one to another ; and to speak of His mercies, as He hath been pleased to put into our hearts. [*Where now are the Starchambers, High Commissions, Council-Chambers ; pitiless oppressors of God’s Gospel in this land ? The Hangmen with their whips and red-hot branding-irons, with their*

\* Isaiah, xxv., 1 ; Psalm lxx., 5.

*Three blood-sprinkled Pillories in old Palaceyard, and Four clean Surplines at Allhallowtide,—Where are they? Vanished. Much has vanished; fled from us like the Phantasms of a Nightmare Dream !]*

Truly this word in conclusion. If these things be so, give me leave to remember you but one word ; which I offered to you with great love and affection the first day of meeting with you, this Parliament. It pleased God to put into my heart then to mention a Scripture to you, which would be a good conclusion of my Speech now at this time to you. It was, That we being met to seek the good of so great an Interest, as I have mentioned, and the glory of that God who is both yours and mine, how could we better do it than by thinking of such words as these, “His salvation is nigh them that fear Him,” “that glory may dwell in our land !” I would not comment upon it. I hope I fear Him ;—and let us more fear Him ! If this ‘present’ mercy at all concern you, as I see it doth,—let me, and I hope you will with me, labor more to fear Him ! [Amen !] Then we have done, ‘that includes all ;’ seeing such a blessing as His salvation “is nigh them that fear Him,”—seeing we are all of us representatives of all the good of all these lands, ‘to endeavor with our whole strength’ “that glory may dwell in our land.”

‘Yes,’ if it be so, “Mercy and Truth shall meet together, Righteousness and Peace shall kiss each other.” We shall know, you, and I as the father of this family, how to dispose our mercies to God’s glory ; and how to dispose our severity. How to distinguish between obedient and rebellious children ;—and not to do as Eli did, who told his sons “he did not hear well of them,” when perhaps he saw ill by them. And we know the severity of that. And, therefore, let me say,—though I will not descant upon the words,—that Mercy must be joined with Truth : Truth, in that respect, that we think it our duty to exercise a just severity, as well as to apply kindness and mercy. And, truly, Righteousness and Mercy must kiss each other. If we will have Peace without a worm in it, lay we foundations of Justice and Righteousness. [Hear this Lord Protector !] And if it shall please God so to move you, as that you marry this redoubtable Couple together, Mercy and Truth, Righteousness and Peace,—you will, if I may be free to say so, be blessed whether you will or no ! And that you and I may, for the time the Lord shall continue us together, set our hearts upon this, shall be my daily prayer. And I heartily and humbly acknowledge my thankfulness to you.\*

On Monday, 9th February, Sindercomb was tried by a jury in the Upper Bench ; and doomed to suffer as a traitor and assassin.

\* Burton’s Diary (from Lansdown mss., 755, no. 244), ii., 490-3

on the Saturday following. The night before Saturday his poor Sister, though narrowly watched, smuggled him some poison : he went to bed, saying, “ Well, this is the last time I shall go to bed ;” the attendants heard him snore heavily, and then cease ; they looked, and he lay dead. ‘ He was of that wretched sect called *Soul-Sleepers*, who believe that the soul falls *asleep* at death :’ \* a gloomy, far-misguided man. They buried him on Tower-hill with due ignominy, and there he rests ; with none but Frantic-Anabaptist Sexby, or Deceptive-Presbyterian Titus, to sing his praise.†

Next Friday, Friday, the 20th, which was Thanksgiving Day, ‘ the Honorable House, after hearing two Sermons at Margaret’s, Westminster, partook of a most princely Entertainment,’ by invitation from his Highness, at Whitehall. ‘ After dinner his Highness withdrew to the Cockpit ; and there entertained them with rare music, both of voices and instruments, till the evening ;’ ‡ his Highness being very fond of music. In this manner end, once more, the grand Assassination projects, Spanish-Invasion projects ; unachievable even the Preface of them ;—and now we will speak of something else.

\* Cromwelliana, p. 162.

† ‘ Equal to a Roman in virtue,’ says the noisy Pamphlet *Killing no Murder*, which seems to have been written by Sexby, though Titus, as adroit King’s-Flunkey, at an after-period, saw good to claim it. A Pamphlet much noised of in those months and afterwards ; recommending all persons to *assassinate* Cromwell ;—has this merit, considerable or not, and no other worth speaking of.

‡ Newspapers (in Burton, i., 377) ; Commons Journals, vii., 493.

## LETTER CLI.; SPEECHES VII.—XIII.

## KINGSHIP.

THIS Second Protectorate Parliament, at least while the fermenting elements or 'hundred Excluded Members' are held aloof from it, unfolds itself to us as altogether reconciled to the rule of Oliver, or even right thankful for it; and really striving towards Settlement of the Nation on that basis. Since the First constitutioning Parliament went its ways, here is a great change among us: three years of successful experiment have thrown some light on Oliver, and his mode of ruling, to all Englishmen. What can a wise Puritan Englishman do but decide on complying with Oliver, on strengthening the hands of Oliver? Is he not verily doing the thing we all wanted to see done? The old Parchments of the case may have been a little hustled, as indeed in a Ten-Years Civil War, ending in the Execution of a King, they could hardly fail to be;—but the divine Fact of the case, meseems, is well cared for! Here is a Governing Man, undeniably the most English of Englishmen, the most Puritan of Puritans,—the Pattern Man, I must say, according to the model of that Seventeenth Century in England; and a Great Man, denizen of all the Centuries, or he could never have been the Pattern one in that. Truly, my friends, I think, you may go farther and fare worse!—To the darkest head in England, even to the assassinative truculent-flunkey head in steeple-hat worn brown, some light has shone out of these three years of Government by Oliver. An uncommon Oliver, even to the truculent-flunkey. If not the noblest and worshipfullest of all Englishmen, at least the strongest and terriblest; with whom really it might be as well to comply; with whom, in fact, there is small hope in not complying!—

For its wise temper and good practical tendency, let us praise

this Second Parliament ;—admit nevertheless that its History, like that of most Parliaments, amounts to little. This Parliament did what they could : forbore to pester his Highness with quibblings and cavillings and constitution-pedantries ; accomplished respectably the Parliamentary routine ; voted, what perhaps was all that could be expected of them, some needful modicum of supplies ; ‘ debated whether it should be debated,’ ‘ put the question whether this question should be put,’—and in a mild way neutralised one another, and as it were handsomely *did nothing*, and left Oliver to do. A Record of their proceedings has been jotted down by one of their Members there present, who is guessed rather vaguely by Editorial sagacity to have been ‘one Mr. Burton.’ It was saved from the fire in late years, that Record ; has been printed under the title of *Burton’s Diary* ; and this Editor has faithfully read it, —not without wonder once more at the inadequacy of the human pen to convey almost any glimmering of insight to the distant human mind ! Alas, the human pen, oppressed by incubus of Parliamentary or other Pedantry, is a most poor matter. At bottom, if we will consider it, this poor Burton,—let us continue to call him ‘ Burton,’ though that was not his name,—cared nothing about these matters himself ; merely jotted them down *pedantically*, by impulse from without,—that he might seem, in his own eyes and those of others, a knowing person, enviable for insight into facts ‘ of an high nature.’ And now by what possibility of chance, can he interest thee or me about them ; now when they have turned out to be facts of no nature at all,—mere wearisome *ephemera*, cast-clothes of facts, gone all to dust and ashes now ; which the healthy human mind resolutely, not without impatience, tramples under its feet ! A Book filled, as so many are, with mere dim inanity, and moaning wind. Will nobody condense it into sixteen pages ; instead of four thick octavo volumes ? For there are, if you look long, some streaks of dull light shining even through *it* ; perhaps, in judicious hands, one readable sheet of sixteen pages might be made of it ;—and even the rubbish of the rest, with a proper Index, might be useful ; might at least be left to rot quietly, once it was known to be rubbish. But enough now of poor Mr. Burton and his *Diary*,—who, as we say, is not ‘ Mr. Burton ’ at all, if anybody cared to know who or what he

was!\* Undoubtedly some very dull man. Under chimerical circumstances he gives us, being fated to do it, an inane History of a Parliament now itself grown very inane and chimerical!—

This Parliament, as we transiently saw, suppressed the Major-Generals; refused to authorize their continued ‘Decimation’ or *Ten-per-centing* of the Royalists;† whereupon they were suppressed. Its next grand feat was that of James Nayler and his Procession which we saw at Bristol lately. Interminable Debates about James Nayler,—excelling in stupor all the Human Speech, even in English Parliaments, this Editor has ever been exposed to. Nayler, in fact, is almost all that survives with one, from *Burton*, as the sum of what this Parliament did. If they did aught else, the human mind, eager enough to carry off news of them, has mostly dropt it on the way hither. To Posterity they sit there as the James-Nayler Parliament. Four hundred Gentlemen of England, and I think a sprinkling of Lords among them, assembled from all Counties and Boroughs of the Three Nations, to sit in solemn debate on this terrific Phenomenon: a Mad Quaker fancying or seeming to fancy himself, what is not uncommon since, a new Incarnation of Christ. Shall we hang him, shall we whip him, bore the tongue of him with hot iron; shall we imprison him, set him to oakum; shall we roast, or boil, or stew him;—shall we put the question whether this question shall be put; debate whether this shall be debated;—in Heaven’s name, what shall we do with him, the terrific Phenomenon of Nayler? This is the history of Oliver’s Second Parliament for three long months and odd. Nowhere does unfathomable Deep of Dulness which our English character has in it, more stupendously disclose itself. Something almost grand in it; nay, something really grand, though in our impatience we call it “dull.” They hold by Use and Wont, these honorable Gentlemen, almost as by Laws

\* Compare the Diary, vol. ii., p. 404, line 2, and vol. ii., p. 347, line 7, with Commons Journals, vii., 588; and again Diary, vol. ii., p. 346, line 13, with Commons Journals, vii., 450, 580; Two Parliament-Committees, on both of which “I” the writer of the Diary sat; in neither of which is there such a name as *Burton*. Guess rather, if it were worth while to guess, one of the two Suffolk *Bacons*; most probably *Nathaniel Bacon*, Master of the ‘Court of Requests,’—a dim old Law-Court fallen obsolete now

† Commons Journals, 7 Jan.—29 Jan., 1656-7.

of Nature,—by Second Nature almost as by First Nature. Pious too; and would fain know rightly the way to new objects by the old roads, without trespass. Not insignificant this English character, which can placidly debate such matters, and even feel a certain smack of delight in them! A massiveness of eupeptic vigor speaks itself there, which perhaps the liveliest wit might envy. Who is there that has the strength of ten oxen, that is able to support these things? Couldst thou debate on Nayler, day after day, for a whole Winter? Thou, if the sky were threatening to fall on account of it, wouldst sink under such labor, appointed only for the oxen of the gods!—The honorable Gentlemen set Nayler to ride with his face to the tail, through various streets and cities; to be whipt (poor Nayler), to be branded, to be bored, through the tongue, and then to do oakum *ad libitum* upon bread and water; after which he repented, confessed himself mad, and this world-great Phenomenon, visible to Posterity and the West of England, was got winded up.\*

---

### LETTER CLI.

CONCERNING which, however, and by what power of jurisdiction the honorable Gentlemen did it, his Highness has still some inquiry to make;—for the limits of jurisdiction between Parliament and Law-Courts, Parliament and Single Person, are never yet very clear; and Parliaments uncontrolled by a Single Person have been known to be very tyrannous before now! On Friday 26th December, Speaker Widdrington intimates that he is honored with a Letter from his Highness; and reads the same in these words:

\* Sentence pronounced, Commons Journals, vii., 486, 7 (16th Dec., 1656); executed in part, Thursday 18 Dec., (ib., 470);—petitions, negotiations on it do not end till May 26, 1657. James Nayler's Recantation (Somers Tracts vi., 22-29).

*To our Right Trusty and Right-beloved Sir Thomas Widdrington,  
Speaker of the Parliament: To be communicated to the Parliament.*

O. P.

Right Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well. Having taken notice of a Judgment lately given by Yourselves against one James Nayler: Although we detest and abhor the giving or occasioning the least countenance to persons of such opinions and practices, or who are under the guilt of the crimes commonly imputed to the said Person: Yet We, being entrusted in the present Government, on behalf of the People of these Nations; and not knowing how far such Proceeding, entered into wholly without Us, may extend in the consequence of it,—Do desire that the House will let us know the grounds and reasons whereupon they have proceeded.

Given at Whitehall the 25th of December, 1656.\*

A pertinent inquiry; which will lead us into new wildernesses of Debate, into ever deeper wildernesses;—and in fact into our far notablest achievement, what may be called our little oasis, or island of refuge: That of reconstructing the Instrument of Government upon a more liberal footing, explaining better the boundaries of Parliament's and Single Person's jurisdiction; and offering his Highness the Title of King.—

Readers know what choking dust-whirlwind in certain portions of 'the Page of History' this last business has given rise to! Dust-History, true to its nature, has treated this as one of the most important businesses in Oliver's Protectorate; though intrinsically it was to Oliver, and is to us, a mere 'feather in a man's cap,' throwing no new light on Oliver; and ought to be treated with great brevity indeed, had it not to many thrown much new darkness, on him. It is now our painful duty to deal with this matter also; to extricate Oliver's real words and procedure on it from the detestable confusions and lumber-mountains of Human Stupidity, old and recent, under which as usual they lie buried Some Seven Speeches of Oliver, and innumerable Speeches of other persons on this subject have unluckily come down to us, **and** cannot yet be consumed by fire;—not yet till one has pain

\* Burton, i., 370; see Commons Journals, vii., 475.



fully extricated the real speakings and proceedings of Oliver, instead of the supposititious jargonings and imaginary dark pettifoggings of Oliver ; and asked candid mankind, Whether there is anything particular in them ? Mankind answering No, fire can be applied ; and mountains of rubbish, yielding or not some fractions of Corinthian brass, may once more be burnt out of men's way.

The Speeches and Colloquies, reported by one knows not whom, upon this matter of the Kingship, which extend from March to May of the year 1657, and were very private at the time, came out two years afterwards as a printed Pamphlet, when Kingship was once more the question, Charles Stuart's Kingship, and men needed incitements thereto. Of course it is with the learned Law-arguments in favor of Kingship that the Pamphleteer is chiefly concerned ; the words of Oliver, which again are our sole concern, have been left by him in a very accidental condition ! Most accidental, often enough quite meaningless distracted condition ;—growing ever more distracted, as each new Imaginary-Editor and unchecked Printer, in succession, did his part to them. Till now in *Somers Tracts*,\* which is our latest form of the business, they strike description silent ! Chaos itself is Cosmos in comparison with that Pamphlet in *Somers*. In or out of Bedlam, we can know well, gods or men never spake to one another in that manner ! Oliver Cromwell's meaning is there ; and that is *not* it. O Sluggardship, Imaginary-Editorship, Flunkeyism, Falsehood, Human Platitude in general—!—But we will complain of nothing. Know well, by experience of him, that Oliver Cromwell always had a meaning, and an honest manful meaning ; search well for that, after ten or twenty reperusals you will find it even there. Those frightful jungles, trampled down for two centuries now by mere bisons and hoofed cattle, you will begin to see, *were* once a kind of regularly planted wood !—Let the Editor with all brevity struggle to indicate so much, candid readers doing their part along with him ; and so leave it. A happier next generation will then be permitted to seek the aid of *fire* ; and this immense business of the Kingship, throwing little new light but

\* vi., 349-403.

also no new darkness upon Oliver Protector, will then reduce itself to very small compass for his Biographers.

*Monday, 23d February, 1656-7.* Amid the Miscellaneous business of this day, Alderman Sir Christopher Pack, one of the Members for London, a zealous man, craves leave to introduce 'Somewhat tending to the Settlement of the Nation,'—leave, namely, to read this Paper 'which has come to his hand,' which is written in the form of a 'Remonstrance from the Parliament' to his Highness; which if the Parliament please to adopt, they can modify it as they see good, and present the same to his Highness. Will not the Honorable House consent at least to hear it read? The Honorable House has great doubts on that subject; debates at much length, earnestly puts the question whether the question shall be put; at length however, after two divisions, and towards nightfall, decides that it will; and even resolves by overwhelming majority 'that a candle be brought in.' Pack reads his Paper: A new Instrument of Government, or improved Constitution for these Nations; increased powers to the Single Person, intimation of a *Second* House of Parliament, the Protector something like a King; very great changes indeed! Debate this matter farther to-morrow.

Debate it, manipulate it, day after day,—let us have a Day of Fasting and Prayer on Friday next; for the matter is really important.\* On farther manipulation, this 'Remonstrance' of Pack's takes improved form, increased development; and, under the name 'Petition and Advice presented to his Highness,' became famous to the world in those spring months. We can see, the Honorable House has 'a very good resentment of it.' The Lawyer-party is all zealous for it; certain of the Soldier-party have their jealousies. Already, notwithstanding the official reticence, it is plain to every clear-sighted man they mean to make his Highness King!

*Friday, 27th February.* 'The Parliament keep a Fast within their own House; Mr. Caryl, Mr. Nye, Mr. Manton, carrying on the work of the day; it being preparatory to the great work now on hand of Settling the Nation.'† In the course of which

\* Commons Journals, vii., 496, 7. † Newspapers (in Burton, i., 380)

same day, with an eye also to the same great work, though to the opposite side of it, there waits upon his Highness, Deputation of a Hundred Officers, Ex-Major-Generals and considerable persons some of them: To signify that they have heard with real dismay of some project now on foot to make his Highness King; the evil effects of which, as 'a scandal to the People of God,' 'hazardous to his Highness's person, and making way for the return of Charles Stuart,' are terribly apparent to them!—

Whereto his Highness presently makes answer, with dignity, not without sharpness: "That he now specifically hears of this project for the first time,—*he*" (with emphasis on the word, and a look at some individuals there) "has not been caballing about it, for it or against it. That the Title 'King' need not startle *them* so much; inasmuch as some of them well know" (what the Historical Public never knew before) "it was already offered to him, and pressed upon him by themselves when this Government was undertaken. That the Title King, a feather in a hat, is as little valuable to him as to them. But that the fact is, they and he have not succeeded in settling the Nation hitherto, by the schemes *they* clamored for. Their Little Parliament, their First Protectorate Parliament, and now their Major-Generalcies, have all proved failures;—nay, this Parliament itself, which they clamored for, had almost proved a failure. That the Nation is tired of Major-Generalcies, of uncertain arbitrary ways; and really wishes to come to a Settlement. That actually the original Instrument of Government does need mending in some points. That a House of Lords, or other check upon the arbitrary tendencies of a Single House of Parliament may be of real use: see what they, by their own mere vote and will, I having no power to check them, have done with James Nayler: may it not be any one's case some other day?" That, in short, the Deputation of a Hundred Officers had better go its ways, and consider itself again.—So answered his Highness, with dignity, with cogency, not without sharpness. The Deputation did as bidden. 'Three Major-Generals,' we find next week, 'have already come round. The House hath gone on with much unity.\*'

\* *Passages between the Protector and the Hundred Officers* (in Ad-

The House in fact is busy, day and night, modelling, manipulating its Petition and Advice. Amid the rumor of England, all through this month of March, 1659. ‘Chief Magistrate for the time being is to name his successor;’ so much we hear they have voted. What Title he shall have is still secret; that is to be the last thing. All men may speculate and guess!—Before March ends, the Petition and Advice is got ready; in Eighteen well-debated Articles;\* fairly engrossed on vellum: the Title, as we guessed, is to be *King*. His Highness shall adopt the whole Document, or no part of it is to be binding.

---

### SPEECH VII.

ON Tuesday, March 31, 1657, ‘the House rose at eleven o’clock, and Speaker Widdrington, attended by the whole House, repaired to his Highness at Whitehall,† to present this same Petition and Advice,’ ‘engrossed on vellum,’ and with the Title of “King” recommended to him in it. Banqueting House, Whitehall; that is the scene. Widdrington’s long flowery Speech‡ is omissible. As the interview began about eleven o’clock, it may now be past twelve; Oliver *loquitur*:

MR. SPEAKER,

This Frame of Government which it hath pleased the Parliament through your hand to offer to me,—truly I should have a very brazen forehead if it did not beget in me a great deal of consternation of spirit; it being of so high and great importance as, by your opening of it,§ and by the mere reading of it, is manifest to all men; the welfare, the peace and settlement of Three Nations, and all that rich treasure of the best people in the world|| being involved therein! I say, this consideration alone ought to beget in me the greatest reverence and fear of God that ever possessed a man in the world.

ditional Ayscough mss., no. 6125; printed in Burton, i., 382-4), a Fragment of a Letter, bearing date 7 March, 1656-7;—to the effect abridged as above.

\* Copy of it in Whitlocke, p. 646, *et seq.*

† Commons Journals, vii., 516.

‡ Burton, i., 397-413

§ In this long florid speech.

|| Us and all the Gospel Protestants in the world.

Truly I rather study to say no more at this time than is necessary for giving some brief general answer, suitable to the nature of the thing. The thing is of weight; the greatest weight of anything that was ever laid upon a man. And therefore, it being of that weight, and consisting of so many parts as it doth,—in each of which much more than my life is concerned,—truly I think I have no more to desire of you at present, but that you would give me time to deliberate and consider *what* particular answer I may return to so great a business as this.—

I have lived the latter part of my age in,—if I may say so,—the fire; in the midst of troubles. But all the things that have befallen me since I was first engaged in the affairs of this Commonwealth, if they could be supposed to be all brought into such a compass that I could take a view of them at once, truly I do not think they would ‘so move,’ nor do I think they ought so to move, my heart and spirit with that fear and reverence of God that becomes a Christian, as this thing that hath now been offered by you to me!—And truly my comfort in all my life hath been that the burdens which have lain heavy on me, they were laid upon me by the hand of God. And I have not known, I have been many times at a loss, which way to *stand* under the weight of what hath lain upon me:—except by looking at the conduct and pleasure of God in it. Which hitherto I have found to be a good pleasure to me.

And should I give any resolution in this ‘matter’ suddenly, without seeking to have an answer put into my heart, and so into my mouth, by Him that hath been my God and my Guide hitherto,—it would give you very little cause of comfort in such a choice as you have made [*Of me to be King*] in such a business as this. It would savor more to be of the flesh, to proceed from lust, to arise from arguments of self. And if,—whatsoever the issue of this ‘great matter’ be,—‘my decision’ it have *such* motives in me, have *such* a rise in me, it may prove even a curse to you and to these Three Nations. Who, I verily believe, have intended well in this business; and have had those honest and sincere aims\* towards the glory of God, the good of His People, the rights of the Nation. I verily believe these have been your aims: and God forbid that so good aims should suffer by any dishonesty and indirectness on my part. For although, in the affairs that are in the world, things may be intended well,—as they are always, or for the most, by such as love God, and fear God and make Him their aim (and such honest ends and purposes, I do believe, yours now are);—yet if these considerations† fall

\* *Subaudi*, but do not insert, ‘which you profess.

† Means ‘your choice in regard to such purpose;’ speaks delicately in an oblique way.

upon a person or persons whom God takes no pleasure in ; who perhaps may be at the end of his work ; [*Growing old and weak ? Say not that, your Highness !—A kind of pathos, and much dignity and delicacy in these tones.*] who, to please any of those humors or considerations which are of this world, shall run upon such a rock as this is,\*—without due consideration, without integrity, without approving the heart to God, and seeking an answer from Him ; and putting things to Him as if for life and death, that such an answer may be received ‘from Him’ as may be a blessing to the person [*Me*] who is to be used for these noble and worthy and honest intentions of the persons [*You*] that have prepared and perfected this work :—‘ why then,’ it would be like a match where a good and worthy and virtuous man *mistakes* in the person he makes love to ; and, as often turns out, it proves a curse to the man and to the family, through mistake ! And if this should be so to you, and to these Nations, whose good I cannot but be persuaded you have in your thoughts aimed at,—why then, it had been better, I am sure of it, that I had never been born !—

I have therefore but this one word to say to you : That seeing you have made progress in this Business, and completed the work on your part, I ‘on my side’ may have some short time to ask counsel of God and of my own heart. And I hope that neither the humor of any weak unwise people, nor yet the desires of any who may be lusting after things that are not good, shall steer me to give other than such an answer as may be ingenuous and thankful,—thankfully acknowledging your care and integrity ;—and such an answer as shall be for the good of those whom I presume you and I serve, and are made for serving.

And truly I may say this also : That as the thing will deserve deliberation, the utmost deliberation and consideration on my part, so I shall think myself bound to give as speedy an answer to these things as I can.†

## SPEECH VIII.

*Friday, 3d April, 1657.* Three days after the foregoing Speech, there comes a Letter from his Highness to Mr. Speaker, the purport of which we gather to have been, that now if a Committee will attend his Highness, they shall have answer to the Petition and Advice. Committee is nominated, extensive Committee of persons already engaged in this affair, among whom

\* ‘or may be.’ this of the Kingship

† Burton’s Diary, i., 413-16.

are Lord Broghil, General Montague, Earl of Tweeddale, Whalley, Desborow, Whitlocke and others known to us ; they attend his Highness at three o'clock that afternoon ; and receive what answer there is,—a negative, but none of the most decided.\*

MY LORDS,

I am heartily sorry that I did not make this desire of mine known to the Parliament sooner ; ' the desire ' which I acquainted them with, by Letter, this day. The reason was, Because some infirmity of body hath seized upon me these two last days, Yesterday and Wednesday. [*It is yet but three days, your Highness.*]

I have, as well as I could, taken consideration of the things contained in the Paper, which was presented to me by the Parliament, in the Banqueting-House, on Tuesday last ; and sought of God that I might return such an answer as might become me, and be worthy of the Parliament. I must needs bear this testimony to them, That they have been zealous of the two greatest Concernments that God hath in the world. The one is that of Religion, and of the just preservation of the professors of it ; to give them all due and just Liberty ; and to assert the Truth of God ; which you have done, in part, in this Paper ; and do refer it more fully to be done by yourselves and me. And as to the Liberty of men professing Godliness, you have done that which was never done before ! And I pray it may not fall upon the People of God as a fault in them, in any sort of them, if they do not put such a value upon this that is now done as never was put on anything since Christ's time, for such a Catholic interest of the People of God ! [*Liberty in non-essentials ; Freedom to all peaceable Believers in Christ to worship in such outward form as they will ; a very Catholic interest indeed.*] The other thing cared for is the Civil Liberty and Interest of the Nation. Which though it is, and indeed I think ought to be, subordinate to the more peculiar Interest of God,—yet it is the next best God hath given men in this world ; and if well cared for, it is better than any rock to fence men in their other interests. Besides, if any whosoever think the Interest of Christians and the Interest of the Nation inconsistent, ' or two different things,' I wish my soul may never enter into their secrets ! [*We will take another course than theirs, your Highness !*]

These are things I must acknowledge Christian and honorable ; and they are provided for by you like Christian men and also men of honor,—like yourselves, English men. And to this I must and shall bear my testimony. while I live, against all gainsayers whatsoever. And upon

\* Commons Journals, vii., 519, 20 ; Burton, i., 417

these Two Interests, if God shall account me worthy, I shall live and die. And I must say, If I were to give an account before a greater Tribunal than any earthly one ; if I were asked, Why I have engaged all along in the late War, I could give no answer that were not a wicked one if it did not comprehend these Two ends !—Meanwhile only give me leave to say, and to say it seriously (the issue will prove it serious), that you have one or two considerations which do stick with me. The one is, You have named me by another Title than I now bear. [*What SHALL I answer to that !*]

You do necessitate my answer to be categorical ; and you have left me without a liberty of choice save as to all. [*Must accept the whole Petition and Advice, or reject the whole of it.*] I question not your wisdom in doing so ; I think myself obliged to acquiesce in your determination ; knowing you are men of wisdom, and considering the trust you are under. It is a duty not to question the reason of anything you have done. [*Not even of the Kingship : say Yes, then !*]

I should be very brutish did I not acknowledge the exceeding high honor and respect you have had for me in this Paper. Truly, according to what the world calls good, it hath nothing but good in it,—according to worldly approbation of\* sovereign power. You have testified your value and affection as to my person, as high as you could ; for more you could not do ! I hope I shall always keep a grateful memory of this in my heart ;—and by you I return the Parliament this my grateful acknowledgment. Whatever other men's thoughts may be, I shall not own ingratitude.—But I must needs say, That that may be fit for you to offer, which may not be fit for me to undertake. [*Profound silence.*] And as I should reckon it a very great presumption, were I to ask the reason of your doing any one thing in this Paper,—(except 'in' some very few things, the 'new' Instrument, 'this Paper,' bears testimony to itself),—so you will not take it unkindly if I beg of you this addition to the Parliament's favor, love and indulgence unto me, That it be taken in tender part if I give such an answer as I find in my heart to give in this business, *without* urging many reasons for it, save such as are most obvious, and most to my advantage in answering : Namely, that I am not able for such a trust and charge. [*Won't have it, then !*]

And if the "answer of the tongue" as well as the preparation of the heart be "from God," I must say my heart and thoughts ever since I heard the Parliament were upon this business—[*Sentence breaks down*]  
—'For' though I could not take notice of your proceedings therein without breach of your privileges, yet as a common person I confess I heard

\* Means 'value for.'



of it in common with others.—I must say I have been able to attain no farther than this, That, seeing the way is hedged up so as it is to me, and I cannot accept the things offered unless I accept all, I have not been able to find it my duty to God and you to undertake this charge under that Title. [*Refuses, yet not so very peremptorily!*]

The most I said in commendation of the ‘new’ Instrument may be retorted on me;—as thus: “Are there such good things provided for ‘in his Instrument;’ will you refuse to accept of them because of such an ingredient?” Nothing must make a man’s conscience a servant. And really and sincerely it is my conscience that guides me to this answer. And if this Parliament be so resolved, ‘for the whole Paper or none of it,’ it will not be fit for me to use any inducement to you to alter their resolution.

This is all I have to say. I desire it may, and do not doubt but it will, be with candor and ingenuity represented unto them by you.\*

His Highness would not in all circumstances be inexorable, one would think!—No; he is groping his way through a very intricate business, which grows as he gropes; the final shape of which is not yet disclosed to any soul. The actual shape of it on this Friday afternoon, 3d April, 1657, I suppose he has, in his own manner, pretty faithfully, and not without sufficient skill and dignity, contrived to express. Many considerations weigh upon his Highness; and in itself it is a most unexampled matter, this of negotiating about being made a King! Need of wise speech; of wise reticence no less. Nay it is of the nature of a Courtship withal: the young lady cannot answer on the first blush of the business; if you insist on her answering, why then she must even answer, No!—

*Wednesday, 8th April.* The Parliament, justly interpreting this *No* of his Highness, has decided that it will adhere to its Petition and Advice, and that it will ‘present reasons to his Highness;’ has got, thanks to our learned Bulstrode and others, its reasons ready;—and, this day, walks over in a body to the Banqueting-House, Speaker Widdrington carrying in his hand the Engrossed Vellum, and in his head the ‘Reasons,’ to present the same.† The ‘Reasons,’ with Speaker Widdrington’s flowery

\* Additional Ayscough mss., no. 6125: printed in *Burton*, i., 417; and *Parliamentary History*, xxiii., 161.

† Commons Journals, vii., 520, 521 (6. 8 April); *Burton*, i., 421.

eloquence, and his Highness's Reply on this occasion, are happily all lost. Let us know only that the Honorable House has here actually gone a second time in a body, and not yet prevailed. We gather that his Highness has doubts, has scruples; on which, however, he is willing to be dealt with, 'to receive satisfaction,'—has intimated, in fact, that though the answer is still No, the Courtship may continue.

Committee to give satisfaction is straightway nominated Whitlocke, Lord Chief-Justice Glynn, Lord Broghil, Fiennes Old-Speaker Lenthall, Ninety-nine of them in all;\* and is ready to confer with his Highness. At this point, however, there occurs an extraneous Phenomenon which unexpectedly delays us for a day or two: a rising of the Fifth-Monarchy, namely. The Fifth-Monarchy, while men are meditating earthly Kingship, and Official Persons are about appointing an earthly tyrannous and traitorous King, thinks it ought to bestir itself, now or never;—explodes accordingly, though in a small way; testifying to us how electric this element of England now is.

*Tuesday, 9th April.* The Fifth-Monarchy, headed mainly by one Venner a Wine-Cooper, and other civic individuals of the old Peak-and-Powel species whom we have transiently seen emitting soot and fire before now, has for a long while been concocting under ground; and Thurloe and his Highness have had eye on it. The Fifth-Monarchy has decided that it will rise this Thursday; expel carnal sovereignties; and call on the Christian population to introduce a Reign of Christ,—which it is thought, if a beginning were once made, they will be very forward to do. Let us rendezvous on Mile-End Green this day, with sword and musket, and assured heart: perhaps General Harrison, Colonel Okey, one knows not who, will join us,—perhaps a miracle will be wrought, such as Heaven might work in such a case, and the Reign of Christ actually take effect. Alas, Heaven wrought no miracle: Heaven and his Highness sent a Troop of Horse into the Mile-End region early in the morning; seized Venner, and some Twenty Ringleaders, just coming from the rendezvous; seized chests of arms, many copies of a flaming Pamphlet or

\* List in Commons Journals, vii., 521; in Somers Tracts, vi., 351

War-manifesto with: title *A Standard set up*; seized also a War-flag with Lion Couchant painted on it, Lion of the Tribe of Judah, and this motto, "Who shall rouse him up?" O Reader, these are not fictions, these were once altogether solid facts in this brick London of ours; ancient resolute individuals, busy with wine-cooperage and otherwise, had entertained them as very practicable things!—But in two days time, these ancient individuals and they are all lodged in the Tower; Harrison, hardly connected with the thing, except as a well-wisher, he and others are likewise made secure: and the Fifth-Monarchy is put under lock and key.\* Nobody was tried for it: Cooper Venner died on the scaffold, for a similar attempt under Charles Second, some two years hence. The Committee of Ninety-nine can now proceed with its 'satisfaction to his Highness;' his Highness is now at leisure for them again.

This Committee did proceed with its satisfactions; had various Conferences with his Highness,—which unfortunately are not lost; which survive for us, in *Somers Tracts* and the old Pamphlets, under the Title of *Monarchy Asserted*; in a condition, especially his Highness's part of them, enough to drive any Editor to despair! The old Pamphleteer, as we remarked, was intent only on the learned law-arguments in favor of Kingship; and as to what his Highness said, seems to have taken it very easy; printing what vocables he found on his Note-paper, with or without meaning as it might chance. Whom new unchecked Printers and Imaginary-Editors following, and making the matter ever worse, have produced at last in our late time such a Coagulum of Jargon as was never seen before in the world! Let us not speak of it; let us endeavor to get through it,—through this also, now since we have arrived at it, and are not yet permitted to burn it! Out of this sad monument of Human Stupor too the imprisoned Soul of a Hero must be extricated. Souls of Heroes,—they have been imprisoned, enchanted into growing Trees, into glass Phials, into leaden Caskets sealed with Solomon's signet, and sunk in the deep sea;—but to this of *Somers Tracts* there wants yet a parallel! Have not we English a talent of musica

\* Narrative in Thurloe, vi., 184-8.

utterance? Here are men consummating the most *epic* of acts, Choosing their King; and it is with such melodious elegancies that they do it; it is in such soft-flowing hexameters as the following that the Muse gives record of it!—

My reader must be patient; thankful for mere Dulness, thankful that it is not madness over and above. Let us all be patient; walk gently, swiftly, lest we awaken the sleeping Nightmares! We suppress, we abridge, we elucidate; struggle to make legible his Highness's words,—dull but not insane. Notes where not indispensable are not given. The curious reader can, in all questionable places, refer to the Printed Coagulum of Jargon itself, and see whether we have read aright.

---

### SPEECH IX.

PROPERLY an aggregate of many short Speeches, and passages of talk: his Highness's part in this First Conference with the Committee of Ninety-nine. His Highness's part in it; the rest, covering many pages, is, so far as possible, strictly suppressed. One of the dullest conferences ever held, on an epic subject, in this world. Occupied, great part of it, on mere preliminaries, and beatings about the bush; throws light, even in its most elucidated state, upon almost nothing. Oliver is here—simply what we have known him elsewhere. Which so soon as Mankind once understand to be the fact, but unhappily not till then,—the aid of *fire* can be called in, as we suggested.

Fancy, however, that the large Committee of Ninety-nine has got itself introduced into some Council-room, or other fit locality in Whitehall, on Saturday, 11th April, 1657, 'about nine in the morning;' has made its salutations to his Highness, and we hope been invited to take seats;—and all men are very uncertain how to act. Who shall begin? His Highness wishes much *they* would begin; and in a delicate way urges and again urges them to do so; and, not till after great labor and repeated failures, succeeds. Fancy that old scene; the ancient honorable Gentlemen waiting there to do their epic feat: the ponderous respectable

Talent for Silence, obliged to break up and become a kind of Utterance in this thick-skinned manner :—really rather strange to witness, as dull as it is !—

The Dialogue has gone on for a passage or two, but the Reporter considers it mere preliminary flourishing, and has not taken it down. Here is his first Note,—in the abridged lucidified state :\*

LORD WHITLOCKE. “ Understands that the Committee is here only to receive what his Highness has to *offer* ; such the letter and purport of our Instructions ; which I now read. [*Reads it.*] Your Highness mentions ‘ the Government that now is,’ seems to hint thereby : The Government being well now, why change it ? If that be your Highness’s general objection, the Committee will give you satisfaction.”

THE LORD PROTECTOR. Sir, I think both parties of us meet here with a very good heart to come to some issue in this great business ; and truly that is what I have all the reason in the world to move me to. And I am exceeding ready to be ordered by you as to the manner of proceeding. Only I confess, according to the thoughts I have,—in preparing my thoughts for so great a work, I have formed this notion to myself :—That the Parliament having already done me the honor of Two Conferences ;† and now sent you again, their kind intention to me evidently is no other than this, That I should receive satisfaction. They might have been positive in the thing ; might have declared their Address itself to be enough, and insisted upon Yes or No to that. But I perceive that it is really and sincerely the satisfaction of my doubts that they aim at ; and there is one clause in the Paper itself, ‘ quoted by my Lord Whitlocke,’ which doth a little warrant that : “ To offer such reasons for his satisfaction,” &c. Now, Sir, it’s certain the occasion of all this ‘ Conference’ is the Answer I already made ; that’s the occasion of your having to come hither again. And truly, Sir, I doubt whether by your plan—If you will *draw out my reasons from me*, I will offer them to you : but on my own part, I doubt, if you should proceed that other

\* Somers Tracts, vi., 352.

† Two Conferences with the whole Parliament, and one with a Committee. We read two of his Highness’s Answers (Speeches,—March 31, April 3) ; the other (Second Conference with the Parliament, April 8) is happily lost.

way, it would a little put me out of the method of my own thoughts. And it being mutual satisfaction that is endeavored, if you will do me the favor—[“*To go by my method,*” his *Highness* means; “*to offer me your Reasons, and draw me out, rather than oblige me to come out*”]—I shall take it as a favor if it please you! I will leave you together to consider your own thoughts of it. [*Motioning to go.*]

LORD WHITLOCKE. “This Committee, being sent to wait upon your Highness, I do suppose cannot undertake to give the *Parliament’s* reasons for what the Parliament hath done. But any gentleman here may give for your Highness’s satisfaction his own particular apprehension of them. And if you will be pleased to go in the way you have propounded, and on any point *require* a satisfaction from the Committee, I suppose we shall be ready to do the best we can to give you satisfaction.” [*Bar Practice! Is not yet what his Highness wants.*]

THE LORD PROTECTOR. If this be so, then I suppose nothing can be said by you but what the Parliament hath dictated to you?—However I think it is clearly expressed that the Parliament intends satisfaction. Then it is as clear that there must be reasons and arguments which have light and conviction in them, in order to satisfaction! I speak for myself in this; I hope you will not take it otherwise.\* I say it doth appear to me you have the liberty of giving your own reasons. If I should write down any of *them*, I could not call that “the reason of Parliament.” [*Whitlocke, in a heavy manner, smiles respectful assent.*] But in Parliamentary and other such conclusions the efficient “reason” is diffused over the general body, and every man hath his particular share of it; yet when they have determined such and such a thing, certainly it was reason that led them up into it. And if you shall be pleased to make me partaker of some of that “reason”—!—I do very respectfully represent to you that I have a general dissatisfaction at the thing [*Glancing at the Engrossed Vellum: but meaning the Kingship*]; and do desire to be informed of the grounds that lead you, whom I presume to be all satisfied with it and with every part of it. And if you will be pleased, if you so think fit,—I will not urge it farther upon you,—to proceed in that way, it will be a favor to me. Otherwise, I deal plainly with you, it doth put me out of the method of my own conceptions: and in that case I shall beg that we may have an hour’s deliberation, and meet again in the afternoon.

\* As if meant to dictate to you, or tutor you in your duties.

LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE GLYN,—one of the old expelled Eleven, whom we saw in great straits in 1647; a busy man from the beginning, and now again busy; begs to say in brief: “The Parliament has sent us to give all the satisfaction which it is in our understandings to give. Certainly we will try to proceed according to what method your Highness finds best for that end. The Paper or Vellum Instrument, however, is general, consisting of many heads: and we can give but general satisfaction.”

THE LORD PROTECTOR. If you will please to give me leave [*Clearing his throat to get under way.*] I do agree, truly, the thing is a general; for it either falls under the notice of Settlement, which is a general consisting of many particulars; or if you call it by the name it bears in the Paper, “Petition and Advice,”—that again is a general; it is advice, desires and advice. What in it I have objected to is as yet, to say truth, but one thing. Only, the last time I had the honor to meet the Parliament,\* I did offer to them that they might put me in the way of getting satisfaction as to particulars, ‘any or all particulars.’ Now, no question I might easily offer something particular for debate, if I thought that would answer the end. [*What curious pickeering, flourishing, and fencing backwards and forwards, before the parties will come to close action. As in other affairs of courtship.*] For truly I know my end and yours is the same: To bring things to an issue one way or the other, that we may know where we are,—that we may attain the general end, which is Settlement. [*Safe ground here, your Highness!*] The end is in us both! And I durst contend with any one person in the world that it is not more in his heart than in mine! — I would go into some particulars [*Especially one particular, the Kingship.*] to ask a question, to ask a reason of the alteration ‘made;’ which might well enough let you into the business,—that it might.† Yet, I say, it doth not answer me. [*I had counted on being drawn out, not on coming out: I understood I was the young lady, and you the wooer!*] I confess I did not so strictly examine the terms of your Order from the Parliament, ‘which my Lord Whitlocke cites;’ whether I even read it or no I cannot tell.—[*Pause.*]—If you will have it that way, I shall, as well as I can, make such an objection as may occasion some answer, ‘and so let us into the business;’—though perhaps I shall object weakly enough! I shall very freely submit to you.

\* Wednesday last, 8 April, all record of which is happily lost.

† A favorite reduplication with his Highness; that it is!

GLYN (with official solemnity). "The Parliament hath sent us for that end, to give your Highness satisfaction."

LORD COMMISSIONER FIENNES,—Nathaniel Fiennes, alias Fines, alias Fenys, as he was once called when condemned to be shot for surrendering Bristol ; second son of 'Old Subtlety' Say and Sele ; and now again a busy man, and Lord Keeper,—opens his broad jaw, and short snub-face full of hard sagacity,\* to say : "Looking upon the Order, I find that *we* may offer your Highness *our* reasons, if your Highness's dissatisfaction be to the alteration of the Government, whether in general or in particular."—So that his Highness may have it his own way, after all ? Let us hope the preliminary flourishing is now near complete ! His Highness would like well to have it his own way.

THE LORD PROTECTOR. I am very ready to say, I have no dissatisfaction that it hath pleased the Parliament to find out a way, though it be of alteration, for bringing these Nations into a good Settlement. Perhaps you may have judged the Settlement we hitherto had was not so favorable to the great end of Government,—the Liberty and Good of the Nations, and the preservation of all honest Interests that have been engaged in this Cause. I say I have no objection to the general 'fact,' That the Parliament hath thought fit to take consideration of a new Settlement or Government. But you having done it in such way, and rendered me so far an interested party in it by making such an Overture to me [*As this of the Kingship, which modesty forbids me to mention*],—I shall be very glad 'to learn,' if you please to let me know it, besides the *pleasure* of the Parliament, somewhat of the *reason* they had for interesting me in this thing, by such an Overture.

Truly I think I shall, as to the other particulars, have less to object.† I shall be very ready to specify objections, in order to clear for you whatsoever it may be better to clear ; 'in order' at least to help myself towards a clearer understanding of these things ;—for better advantage 'to us all,' for that, I know, is in your hearts as well as mine. Though I cannot presume that I have anything to offer calculated to convince you ; yet, if you will take it in good part, I shall offer somewhat to every particular.

'And now,' if you please,—As to the *first* of the things [*Kingship*], I am clear as to the ground of the thing, being so put to me as it hath

\* Good Portrait of him in Lord Nugent's *Memorials of Hampden*.

† 'As to the other particulars, swallow this' *in orig*.



been put.\* And I think that some of the reasons which moved the Parliament to do it, would, 'if they were now stated to me,' lead us into such objections or doubts as I may have to offer; and would be a very great help to me in that. And if you will have me offer this or that or the other doubt which may rise methodically, I shall do it.

Whereupon LORD WHITLOCKE, summoning into his glassy coal-black eyes and ponderous countenance what animation is possible, lifts up his learned voice, and speaks several pages;†—which we abridge almost to nothing. In fact, the learned pleadings of these illustrious Official Persons, which once were of boundless importance, are now literally shrunk to zero for us; it is only his Highness's reply to them that is still something, and that not very much. Whitlocke intimates,

"That perhaps the former Instrument of Government having originated in the way it did, the Parliament considered it would be no worse for sanctioning by the Supreme Authority; such was their reason for taking it up. 'Their intentions I suppose were,'—this and that, at some length. As for the new Title, that of *Protector* was not known to the Lord; that of *King* is, and has been for many hundreds of years. If we keep the title of Protector, as I heard some argue, our Instrument has only its own footing to rest upon; but with that of *King* 'it will ground itself in all the ancient foundations of the Laws of England,' " &c., &c.

MASTER OF THE ROLLS,—old Sly-face Lenthall, once Speaker of the Long Parliament; the same whom Harrison helped out of his Chair,—him also the reader will conceive speaking for the space of half an hour:

"'May it please your Highness,' Hum-m-m! Drum-m-m! Upon due consideration you shall find that the whole body of the Law is carried upon this wheel' of the Chief Magistrate being called King. Hum—m—m! [*Monotonous humming for ten minutes.*] 'The title of Protector is not limited by any rule of Law that I understand;' the title of King is. Hum—m—m! King James wanted to change his Title, and that only from *King of England* to *King of Great Britain*; and the Parliament could

\* In our last Conference, 8 April, now happily lost.

† Somers, vi., 355

not consent, so jealous were they of new titles, bringing new unknown powers. Much depends upon a title! The Long Parliament once thought of changing its Title to *Representative of the People*; but durst not. Hum—m—m! ‘*Nolumus Leges Angliæ mutari.*’ Drum—m—m! ‘*Vox populi*: it is the voice of the Three Nations that offers your Highness this Title.’ Drum—m—m!’ — — Such, in abbreviated shape, is the substance of Lenthall’s Speech for us.\* At the ending of it a pause.

THE LORD PROTECTOR. I cannot deny but the things that have been spoken have been spoken with a great deal of weight. And it is not fit for me to ask any of you if you have a mind to speak farther of this. But if such had been your pleasure, truly then I think it would have put me into a way of more preparedness, according to the method and way I had conceived for myself, to return some answer. And if it had not been to you a trouble—Surely the business requires, from any man in the world in any case, and much more from me, that there be given to it serious and true answers! I mean such answers as are not feigned in my own thoughts; but such wherein I express the truth and honesty of my heart. [*Seems a tautology, and almost an impertinence, and ground of suspicion, your Highness;—but has perhaps a kind of meaning struggling half-developed in it. Many answers which call and even THINK themselves “true” are but “feigned in one’s own thoughts” after all; from that to “the truth and honesty of heart” is still a great way;—witness many men in most times; witness almost all men in such times as ours.*] That is what I mean by true answers.

I did hope that when I had heard you, so far as it might be your pleasure to speak on this head, I should then, having taken some short note of it as I do [*Glancing at his Note-paper*], have been in a condition, this afternoon [*Would still fain be off!*],—if it had not been a trouble to you, —to return my answer, upon a little advisement with myself. But seeing you have not thought it convenient to proceed that way,—truly I think I may very well say, I shall need to have a little thought about the thing before returning answer to it: lest our Debate should end on my part with a very vain discourse, and with lightness; as it is very like to do. [*A Drama COMPOSING itself as it gets ACTED, this; very different from the blank-verse Dramas.*]

I say therefore, if you had found good to proceed farther in speaking of these things, I should have made my own short animadversions on the

\* Somers, vi, 356-7.

whole, this afternoon, and have made some short reply. And this would have ushered me in not only to give the best answer I could, but to make my own objections 'too.' [*An interrogative look : evidently some of us must speak ! Glyn steps forward.*]

LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE GLYN steps forward, speaks largely ; then SIR CHARLES WOLSELEY steps forward ; and NATHANIEL FIENNES steps forward ; and LORD BROGHIL (Earl of Orrery that is to be) steps forward ; and all speak largely : whom, not to treat with the indignity poor Lenthall got from us, we shall abridge down to *absolute* nothing. Good speaking too ; but without interest for us. In fact it is but repetition, under new forms, of the old considerations offered by heavy Bulstrode and the Master of the Rolls. The only idea of the slightest novelty is this brought forward by Lord Broghil in the rear of all :\*

LORD BROGHIL. "By an Act already existing (the 11th of Henry VII.), all persons that obey a 'King *de facto*' are to be held guiltless ; not so if they serve a Protector *de facto*. Think of this.—And then 'in the 7th and last place,' I observe : The Imperial Crown of this country and the Pretended King are indeed divorced ;—nevertheless persons divorced may come together again ; but if the person divorced be married to another, there is no chance left of that !" —

Having listened attentively to perhaps some three hours of this, his Highness, giving up the present afternoon as now hopeless, makes brief answer.

THE LORD PROTECTOR. I have very little to say to you at this time. I confess I shall never be willing to deny or defer those things† that come from the Parliament to the Supreme Magistrate [*He accepts then?*], if they come in the bare and naked authority of such an Assembly as is known by that name, and is the representative of so many people as a Parliament of England, Scotland and Ireland is. I say this ought to have its weight ; and it hath so, and ever will have with me.

In all things a man is free to grant desires coming from Parliament. I may say, inasmuch as the Parliament hath condescended so far as to do me this honor (a very great one added to the rest) of giving me the

\* Somers, p. 363.

† Means 'anything,—the Kingship for one thing.'

privilege of counsel from so many members of theirs, so able, so intelligent of the grounds of things—[*Sentence breaks down*—] This is, I say, a very singular honor and favor to me; and I wish I may do, and I hope I shall do, what becomes an honest man in giving an answer to these things,—according to such insight\* either as I have, or as God shall give me, or as I may be helped into by reasoning with you. But indeed I did not in vain allege conscience in the first answer I gave you. [*Well!*] For I must say, I should be a person very unworthy of such favor if I should prevaricate in saying things did stick upon my conscience. Which I must still say they do! Only, I must ‘also’ say, I am in the best way I could be ‘in’ for information; and I shall gladly receive it.

Here have been divers things spoken by you to-day, with a great deal of judgment and ability and knowledge. I think the arguments and reasonings that have been used were upon these three heads: † *First*, Speaking to the thing simply, to the abstract notion of the Title, and to the positive reasons upon which it stands. Then ‘*secondly*, Speaking’ comparatively of it, and of the foundation of it: in order to show the goodness of it comparatively, ‘in comparison with our present title and foundation.’ It is alleged to be so much better than what we now have; and that *it* will do the work which this other fails in. And *thirdly*, Some things have been said by way of precaution; which are not arguments from the thing itself, but are considerations drawn from the temper of the English People, what will gratify them, ‘and so on;’—which is surely considerable. As also ‘some things were said’ by way of anticipation of me in my answer; speaking to some objections which others have made against this proposal. These are things, in themselves each of them considerable. [*The “objections?” or the “Three heads” in general? Uncertain; nay it is perhaps uncertain to Oliver himself! He mainly means the objections, but the other also is hovering in his head,—as is sometimes the way with him.*]

To answer objections, I know, is a very weighty business; and to make objections is very easy; and that will fall to my part. And I am sure I shall make them to men who know somewhat how to answer them,—‘to whom they are not strange,’ having already in part been suggested to them by the Debates already had.

But upon the whole matter, I having as well as I could taken those things [*Looking at his Notes*] that have been spoken,—which truly are to be acknowledged as very learnedly spoken,—I hope you will give me a

\* ‘*Desire*’ in *orig.*: but there is no sense in that. † ‘*accounts*’ in *orig.*

little time to consider of them. As to when it may be the best time for me to return hither and meet you again, I shall leave that to your consideration.

LORD WHITLOCKE. "Your Highness will be pleased to appoint your own time.'

THE LORD PROTECTOR. On Monday at nine of the clock I will be ready to wait upon you.\*

And so, with many bows, *exeunt*.—Thus they, doing their epic feat, not in the hexameter measure, on that old Saturday forenoon, 11 April, 1657 ; old London, old England, sounding manifoldly round them ;—the Fifth-Monarchy just locked in the Tower.

Our learned friend Bulstrode says : 'The Protector often advised about this' of the Kingship 'and other great businesses with the Lord Broghil, Pierrepont' (Earl of Kingston's Brother, an old Long-Parliament man), with 'Whitlocke, Sir Charles Wolseley, and Thurloe ; and would be shut up three or four hours together in private discourse, and none were admitted to come in to him. He would sometimes be very cheerful with them ; and laying aside his greatness, he would be exceeding familiar ; and by way of diversion would make verses,' play at crambo, 'with them, and every one must try his fancy. He commonly called for tobacco, pipes and a candle, and would now and then take tobacco himself ;' which was a very high attempt. 'Then he would fall again to his serious and great business' of the Kingship ; 'and advise with them in those affairs. And this he did often with them ; and their counsel was accepted and' in part 'followed by him in most of the greatest affairs,—as it deserved to be.†

---

## SPEECH X.

ON Monday, April 13th, at Whitehall, at nine in the morning,‡ according to agreement on Saturday last, the Committee of

\* Somers Tracts, vi., 351-365.

† Whitlocke, p. 647

‡ at 'eight,' say the Journals, vii., 522

Ninety-nine attend his Highness, and his Highness there speaks—addressing Whitlocke as reporter of the said Committee :

MY LORD,

I think I have a very hard task on my hand. Though it be but to give an account of *myself* ; yet I see I am beset on all hands here. I say but to give an account of “myself :” yet that is a business very comprehensive of others :—‘comprehending’ us all in some sense, and, as the Parliament have been pleased to shape it, comprehending all the interests of these Three Nations !

I confess I have two things in view. The *first* is, To return some answer to what was so well and ably said the other day on behalf of the Parliament’s putting that Title in the Instrument of Settlement. [*This is the First thing ; what the Second is, does not yet for a long while appear.*] I hope it will not be expected I should answer everything that was then said : because I suppose the main things that were spoken were arguments from ancient Constitutions and Settlements by the Laws ; in which I am sure I could never be well skilled,—and therefore must the more ask pardon for what I have already transgressed ‘in speaking of such matters,’ or shall now transgress, through my ignorance of them, in my ‘present’ answer to you.

Your arguments, which I say were chiefly upon the Law, seem to carry with them a great deal of necessary conclusiveness, to inforce that one thing of Kingship. And if your arguments come upon me to inforce upon me the ground of Necessity,—why, then, I have no room to answer : for what must be must be ! And therefore I did reckon it much of my business to consider whether there *were* such a necessity, or would arise such a necessity, from those arguments.—It was said : “Kingship is not a Title, but an Office, so interwoven with the fundamental Laws of this Nation, that they cannot, or cannot well be executed and exercised without ‘it,’—partly, if I may say so, upon a supposed ignorance which the Law hath of any other Title. It knows no other : neither doth any know another. And, by reciprocation,—this said Title, or Name, or Office, you were farther pleased to say, is understood ; in the dimensions of it, in the power and prerogatives of it : which are by the Law made certain ; and the Law can tell when it [*Kingship*] keeps within compass, and when it exceeds its limits. And the Law knowing this, the People can know it also. And the People do love what they know. And it will neither be *pro salute populi*, nor for our safety, to obtrude upon the People what they do not nor cannot understand.”

It was said also, "That the People have always, by their representatives in Parliament, been unwilling to vary Names,—seeing they love settlement and known names, as was said before." And there were two good instances given of that: the one, in King James's time, about his desire to alter somewhat of the Title: and the other in the Long Parliament, where they being otherwise rationally moved to adopt the word "Representative" instead of "Parliament," refused it for the same reason. [*Lenthall tries to blush.*]—It was said also, "That the holding to this word doth strengthen the 'new' Settlement; for hereby there is not anything *de novo* done, but merely things are revolved in their old current." It was said, "That it is the security of the Chief Magistrate, and that it secures all who act under him."—Truly these are the principal of those grounds that were offered the other day, so far as I do recollect.

I cannot take upon me to refel those grounds; they are so strong and rational. But if I am to be able to make *any* answer to them, I must not grant that they are necessarily conclusive; I must take them only as arguments which perhaps have in them much conveniency, much probability towards conclusiveness. For if a remedy or expedient may be found, they are not of *necessity*, they are not inevitable grounds: and if not necessary or concluding grounds, why then they will hang upon the reason of expediency or conveniency. And if so, I shall have a little liberty 'to speak;' otherwise I am concluded before I speak.—Therefore it will behove me to say what I can, Why these are not *necessary* reasons; why they are not—why *it*\* is not (I *should* say) so interwoven in the Laws but that the Laws may still be executed as justly, and as much to the satisfaction of the people, and answering all objections equally well, without such a Title as with it. And then, when I have done that, I shall only take the liberty to say a word or two for my own grounds.† And when I have said what I can say as to that 'latter point,'—I hope you will *think* a great deal more than I say. [*Not convenient to SPEAK everything in so ticklish a predicament; with Deputations of a Hundred Officers, and so many "scrupulous fellows," "considerable in their own conceit," glaring into the business, with eyes much sharper than they are deep!*]

Truly though Kingship be not a 'mere' Title, but the Name of an

\* The Kingship: his Highness finds that the grammar will require to be attended to.

† 'Grounds' originating with myself independently of yours. Is this the "second" thing, which his Highness had in view, but did not specify after the "first," when he started? The issue proves it to be so.

Office which runs through the 'whole of the' Law; yet is it not so *ratione nominis*, by reason of the name, but by reason of what the name signifies. It is a Name of Office plainly implying a Supreme Authority: is it more; or can it be stretched to more? I say, it is a Name of Office plainly implying the Supreme Authority: and if so, why then I should suppose,—I am not peremptory in anything that is matter of deduction or inference of my own,—but I should suppose that whatsoever name hath been or shall be the Name under which the Supreme Authority acts—[*Sentence abruptly stops; the conclusion being visible without speech?*] Why, I say, if it had been those Four or Five Letters or whatever else it had been—! That signification goes to the *thing* certainly it does; and not to the name. [*Certainly!*] Why, then, there can no more be said but this: As such a Title hath been fixed, so it may be unfixed. And certainly in the right of the Authority, I mean the Legislative Power,—in the right of the Legislative Power, I think the Authority that could christen it with such a name could have called it by another name. Therefore the name is only derived from that 'Authority.' And certainly they, 'the primary Legislative Authority,' had the disposal of it, and might have detracted 'from it,' changed 'it:—' and I hope it will be no offence to say to you, as the case now stands, "So may you." And if it be so that you may, why then I say, there is nothing of *necessity* in your argument; and all turns on consideration of the expedience of it. [*Is the Kingship expedient?*]

Truly I had rather, if I were to choose, if it were the original question,—which I hope is altogether *out* of the question [*His Highness means afar off, in a polite manner, "You don't pretend that I still need to be made Protector by you or by any creature!"*],—I had rather have any Name from this Parliament than any other Name without it: so much do I value the authority of the Parliament. And I believe all men are of my mind in that; I believe the Nation is very much of my mind,—though it be an uncertain way of arguing, *what* mind *they* are of.\* I think we may say it without offence; for I would give none! [*No offence to you, Honorable Gentlemen, who are here by function, to interpret and signify the Mind of the Nation. It is very difficult to do!*]

Though the Parliament be the truest way to know what the mind of the Nation is, yet if the Parliament will be pleased to give me a liberty to reason for myself; and if that be one of your arguments—["*That:— what, your Highness? That the mind of the Nation, well interpreted by this Parliament, is really for a King? That our Laws cannot go on without a King?—His Highness means the former mainly, but means the latter too; means several things together; as*

\* Naturally a delicate subject: some assert the Nation has never recognized his Highness,—his Highness being of a very different opinion indeed!



*his manner sometimes is, in abstruse cases !*—I hope I may urge against that the reason of my own mind is not quite to that effect. But I do say undoubtedly (let us think about other things, ‘about the mind of the Nation and such like,’ what we will), what the Parliament settles is what will run, ‘and have currency,’ through the Law ; and will lead the thread of Government through this Land equally well as what hath been. For I consider that what hath been was upon the same account, ‘by the same authority.’ Save that there hath been some long continuance of the thing [*This thing of Kingship*], it is but upon the same account ! It had its original somewhere ! And it was with consent of the whole,—there is the original of it. And consent of the whole will ‘still,’ I say, be the needle that will lead the thread through all [*The same tailor-metaphor a second time.*] and I think no man will pretend right against it, or wrong !

And if so, then, under favor to me, I think these arguments from the Law are all *not* as of necessity, but are to be understood as of *conveniency*. It is in your power to dispose and settle ; and beforehand we can have confidence that what you do settle will be as authentic as the things that were of old,—especially as this individual thing, the Name, or Title,—according to the Parliament’s appointment. ‘Is not this so ? It is question not of necessity ; we have power to settle it as *conveniency* directs.’ Why then, there will (with leave) be way made for me to offer a reason or two to the other considerations you adduced : otherwise, I say my mouth is stopped ! [*His Highness is plunging in deep brakes and imbroglios ; hopes, however, that he now sees daylight athwart them.*]

There are very many inforcements to carry on this thing. [*Thing of the Kingship.*] But I suppose it will ‘have to’ stand on its expediency—Truly I should have urged one consideration more which I forgot [*Looks over his shoulder in the jungle, and bethinks him !*],—namely, the argument not of reason only, but of *experience*. It is a short one, but it is a true one (under favor), and is known to you all in the fact of it (under favor) [*A damnable iteration ; but too characteristic to be omitted*] : That the Supreme Authority going by another Name and under another Title than that of King hath been, why it hath been already twice complied with ! [*Long Parliament, called “Keepers of the Liberties of England,” found compliance ; and now the “Protectorate” finds.*] ‘Twice : under the *Custodes Libertatis Angliæ*, and also since I exercised the place, it hath been complied with. And truly I may say that almost universal obedience hath been given by all ranks and sorts of men to both. Now this ‘on the part of both these Authorities,’ was a beginning with the highest degree of Magistracy at the first alteration ; and ‘at a time’ when that ‘Kingship’ was the name ‘established’ and the new

Name, though it was the name of an invisible thing, the very Name, I say, was obeyed, did pass current, was received and did carry on the 'Public' Justice of the Nation. I remember very well, my Lords the Judges were somewhat startled: yet upon consideration,—if I mistake not,—I believe so,—they, there being among them (without reflection) as able and as learned as have sat there,—though they did, I confess, at first, demur a little,—they did receive satisfaction, and did act as I said before. [*Untwist this extraordinary WITHE of a sentence; you will find it not inextricable, and very characteristic of Oliver!*] And as for my own part [*My own Protectorate*], I profess I think I may say: Since the beginning of that change,—though I should be loath to speak anything vainly,—but since the beginning of that change to this day, I do not think there hath been a freer procedure of the Laws, not even in those years called, and not unworthily, the "Halcyon Days of Peace,"—from the Twentieth of Elizabeth to King James's and King Charles's time. I do not think but the Laws have proceeded with as much freedom and justice, and with less of private solicitation, since I came to the Government, as they did in those years so named,—'Halcyon.' I do not think, under favor—[*His Highness gets more emphatic*],—that the laws had a freer exercise, more uninterrupted by any hand of Power, in those years than now; or that the Judge has been less solicited by letters or private interpositions either of my own or other men's in double so many years in all those times 'named'. "of Peace!" [*Sentence involving an incurable Irish-bull; the head of it eating the tail of it, like a Serpent-of-Eternity; but the meaning shining very clear through its contortions nevertheless!*] And if more of my Lords the Judges were here than now are, they could tell us perhaps somewhat farther.\*— And therefore I say, under favor: These two Experiences do manifestly show that it is not a Title, though never so interwoven with our Laws, that makes the Law to have its free passage and to do its office without interruption (as we venture to think it is now doing): 'not a Title, no;' and if a Parliament shall determine that another Name run through the Laws, I believe it will run with as free a passage as this 'of King ever did.' Which is all I have to say upon that head.

And if this be so, then truly other things may fall under a more indifferent consideration:† and so I shall arrive 'at the Second thing I had in view,' at some issue of answering for myself in this great matter. And all this while, nothing that I say doth any way determine as to my final resolution, or 'intimate any' thought against the Parliament's

\* Reform of Chancery; improvements made in Law.

† 'Other things,' your other arguments, may lose a great deal of their formidable air of cogency, as if Necessity herself were backing them

wisdom in this matter ; but ‘endeavoreth’ really and honestly and plainly towards such an answer as may be fit for me to give. The Parliament desires to have this Title. It hath stuck with me, and doth yet stick. And truly, as I hinted the other day,\* it seemed as if your arguments to me did partly give positive grounds for what was to be done, and partly comparative grounds ; stating the matter as you were then pleased to do,—for which I gave no cause that I know of, that is, for comparing the effects of Kingship with those of such a Name as I at present bear, with ‘those of’ the Protectorship ‘to wit.’ I say I hope it will not be understood that I contend for the name ; or for any name, or anything of a merely extraneous nature ;’ but truly and plainly ‘for the substance of the business,’—if I speak as in the Lord’s presence ; ay, in all right things, as a person under the disposal of the Providence of God,—neither “naming” one thing nor other ; but only endeavoring to give fit answer as to this proposed Name or Title.† For I hope I do not desire to give a rule to anybody—much less to the Parliament.’ I professed I had not been able,—and I truly profess I have not yet been able,—to give a rule to myself ‘in regard to your Proposal.’ I would be understood in this. [*Yes, your Highness. “That it is not doubt of the Parliament’s wisdom ; that it is not vain preference or postponence of one ‘name’ to another ; but doubt as to the substantial expediency of the thing proposed, uncertainty as to God’s will and monition in regard to it, —that has made and still makes me speak in this uncomfortable, haggling, struggling and wriggling manner. It is no easy thing forcing one’s way through a jungle of such depth ! An affair of Courtship moreover, which grows and has to grow by the very handling of it ! I would not be misunderstood in this.”*]

I am a man standing in the Place I am in [*Clearly, your Highness*] ; which Place I undertook not so much out of hope of doing any good, as out of a desire to prevent mischief and evil [*Note this*],—which I did see was imminent on the Nation. I say, we were running headlong into confusion and disorder, and would necessarily ‘have’ run into blood ; and I was passive to those that desired me to undertake the Place which I now have. [*With tones, with a look of sorrow, solemnity and nobleness ; the brave Oliver !*] A Place, I say, not so much of doing good,—which a man lawfully *may*, if he deal deliberately with God and his own conscience,—a man *may* (I say) lawfully, if he deal deliberately with God and his own conscience ; a man *may* lawfully, as the case

\* Saturday last, day before Yesterday.

† The original (*Somers*, vi., 368) unintelligible, illegible except with the powerfulest *lenses*, yields at last,—with some slight changes of the points and so forth,—this sense as struggling at the bottom of it.

may be (though it is a very tickle case), desire a Place to do good in: *'Window once more into his Highness! "Tickle" is the old form of TICKLISH: "a tickle case indeed," his Highness candidly allows: yet a case which does occur,—shame and wo to him, the poor cowardly Pedant, tied up in cobwebs and tapethrums, that neglects it when it does!'* I profess I had not that apprehension, when I undertook the Place, that I could so much do good; but I did think I might prevent imminent evil.—And therefore I am not contending for one "name" compared with another;—and therefore have nothing to answer to any arguments that were used for preferring 'the name' Kingship to Protectorship. For I should almost think any "name" were better than my "Name;" and I should altogether think any person fitter than I am for such business [*Your Highness?—But St. Paul too professed himself "the chief of sinners,"—and has not been altogether thought to "cant" in doing so!*]*]*—and I compliment not, God knows it! But this I should say, That I do think, you, in the settling of the peace and liberties of this Nation, which cries as loud upon you as ever Nation did for somewhat that may beget a consistence, 'ought to attend to that;' otherwise the Nation will fall in pieces! And in that, so far as I can, I am ready to serve not as a King but as Constable 'if you like!' For truly I have, as before God, often thought that I could not tell what my business was, nor what I was in the place I stood in, save comparing myself to a good Constable set to keep the peace of the Parish. [*Hear his Highness!*] And truly this hath been my content and satisfaction in the troubles I have undergone, That you yet have peace.

Why now, truly,—if I may advise,—I wish to God you may but be so happy as to keep the peace still! \* If you cannot attain to such perfection as to accomplish this 'that we are now upon,' I wish to God we may still have peace,—that I do! But "the fruits of righteousness" are shown in "meekness;" a better thing than we are aware of!—I say therefore, I do judge for myself there is no such necessity of this Name of King; for the other Names may do as well. I judge for myself. I must say a little (I think I have somewhat of conscience to answer as to the matter), why I cannot undertake this Name. [*We are now fairly entered upon the Second head of method.*] And truly I must needs go a little out of the way, to come to my reasons. And you will be able to judge of them when I have told you them. And I shall deal seriously, as before God.

If you do not all of you, I am sure some of you do, and it behoves me to say that I do, "know my calling from the first to this day." I was a

\* If I may advise, I should say the purport and soul of our whole inquiry at present ought to be that of keeping the peace.

person who, from my first employment, was suddenly preferred and lifted up from lesser trusts to greater; from my first being a Captain of a Troop of Horse; and did labor as well as I could to discharge my trust; and God blessed me 'therein' as it pleased Him. And I did truly and plainly,—and in a way of foolish simplicity, as it was judged by very great and wise men, and good men too,—desire to make my instruments help me in that work. And I will deal plainly with you: I had a very worthy Friend then; and he was a very noble person, and I know his memory is very grateful to all,—Mr. John Hampden. [*Hear, hear;—a notable piece of History!*] At my first going out into this engagement,\* I saw our men were beaten at every hand. I did indeed; and desired him that he would make some additions to my Lord Essex's Army, of some new regiments; and I told him I would be serviceable to him in bringing such men in as I thought had a spirit that would do something in the work. This is very true that I tell you; God knows I lie not.† "Your troops," said I, "are most of them old decayed serving-men, and tapsters, and such kind of fellows; and," said I, "their troops are Gentlemen's sons, younger sons and persons of quality: do you think that the spirits of such base and mean fellows will ever be able to encounter gentlemen, that have honor and courage and resolution in them?" Truly I did represent to him in this manner conscientiously; and truly I did tell him: "You must get men of a spirit: and take it not ill what I say,—I know you will not,—of a spirit that is likely to go on as far as gentlemen will go:—or else you will be beaten still." I told him so; I did truly. He was a wise and worthy person; and he did think that I talked a good notion, but an impracticable one. [*Very natural in Mr. Hampden, if I recollect him well, your Highness! With his close thin lips, and very vigilant eyes; with his clear official understanding; lively sensibilities to "unspotted character," "safe courses," &c., &c. A very brave man; but formidably thick-quilted, and with pincer-lips, and eyes very vigilant.—Alas, there is no possibility for poor Columbus at any of the Public Offices, till once he become an Actuality, and say, "Here is the America I was telling you of!"*] Truly I told him I could do somewhat in it. I did so—'did this somewhat:' and truly I must needs say this to you, 'The result was,'—impute it to what you please,—I raised such men as had the fear of God before them, as made some conscience of what they did; [*The Ironsides; yea!*] and from that day forward, I must

\* enterprise.

† A notable clause of a sentence, this latter too: physiognomic enough, —and perhaps very liable to be misunderstood by a modern reader. The old phrase, still current in remote quarters, "It's no lie," which signifies an emphatic and even courteous assent and affirmation, must be borne in mind

say to you, they were never beaten, and wherever they were engaged against the enemy, they beat continually. [*Yea!*] And truly this is matter of praise to God:—and it hath some instruction in it, To own men who are religious and godly. And so many of them as are peaceably and honestly and quietly disposed to live within ‘rules of’ Government, and will be subject to those Gospel rules of obeying Magistrates and living under Authority—[*Sentence catches fire abruptly, and explodes here*]—I reckon no Godliness without that circle! Without that spirit, let it pretend what it will, it is diabolical, it is devilish, it is from diabolical spirits, from the depth of Satan’s wickedness\*—[*Checks himself*]—Why truly I need not say more than to apply all this† ‘to the business we have in hand.’

I will be bold to apply this to our present purpose, because it is my all! I could say as all the world says, and run headily upon anything; but I must tender this ‘my present answer’ to you as a thing that sways upon my conscience; or else I were a knave and a deceiver. ‘Well;’ I tell you there are such men in this Nation; godly men of the same spirit, men that will not be beaten down by a worldly or carnal spirit while they keep their integrity. And I deal plainly and faithfully with you, ‘when I say:’ I cannot think that God would bless an undertaking of anything, ‘Kingship or whatever else,’ which would, justly and with cause, grieve *them*. True, they may be troubled *without* cause;—and I must be a slave if I should comply with any such humor as that. [*Leaves the matter open still!*] But I say there are honest men and faithful men, true to the great things of the Government, namely the Liberty of the People, giving them what is due to them, and protecting this Interest (and I think verily God will bless you for what you have done in that)—[*Sentence broken; try it another way*]—But if I know, as indeed I do, that very generally good men do not swallow this Title,—though really it is no part of their goodness to be unwilling to submit to what a Parliament shall settle over them, yet I must say, it is my duty and my conscience to beg of you that there may be no hard things put upon me: things, I mean, hard to *them*, which they cannot swallow. [*The Young Lady will and she will not!*] If the Nation may be as well provided for without these things we have been speaking of [*Kingships, &c.*] as, according to my apprehension, it may,—‘then’ truly I think it

\* Not ‘height of Jotham’s wickedness,’ as the lazy Reporter has it. Jotham was not ‘wicked’ at all (*Judges*, c., 9). Nay the lazy Reporter corrects himself elsewhere,—if he had not been asleep! Compare p. 369, line 16, of *Somers*, with p. 385, line 2.

† ‘this’ of my old proposal to Mr. Hampden; and now good it is to ‘own men who are religious and godly.’

will be no sin in you, it will be to you as it was to David in another case,\* “no grief of heart in time coming,” that you have a tenderness even possibly (if it be their weakness) to the weakness of those who have integrity and honesty and uprightness, and who are not carried away with the hurries I see some taken with—[“*A Standard lifted up,*” *the other day!* *We have had to turn the key upon them, in Chepstow, in the Tower and elsewhere*—that think their virtue lies in despising Authority, in opposing it! I think you will be the better able to root out of this Nation that ‘disobedient’ spirit and principle,—and to do so is as desirable as anything in this world,—by complying, indulging, and being patient to the weakness and infirmities of men who have been faithful, and have bled all along in this Cause;—and who *are* faithful, and will oppose all oppositions (I am confident of it) to the things that are Fundamentals in your Government, in your Settlement for Civil and Gospel Liberties. [*Not ill said, your Highness: and really could not well be better thought!* *The moral is: “As my old Ironsides, men fearing God, proved the successful soldiers; so in all things it is men fearing God that we must get to enlist with us. Without these we are lost: with these, if they will be soldiers with us (not noisy mutineers like Wildman, Harrison and Company, but true soldiers, rational persons that will learn discipline,)—we shall, as heretofore, hope to prevail against the whole world and the Devil to boot, and ‘never be beaten at all,’ no more than the Ironsides were. See therefore, that you do not disaffect THEM. Mount no foolish cockade or Kingship which can convert them, rational obedient men, true in all essential points, into mutineers.”*]

I confess, for it behoves me to deal plainly with you—[*Young Lady now flings a little weight into the other scale,—and the Sentence trips itself once or twice before it can get started*—I must confess I would say—I hope I may not be misunderstood in this, for indeed I must be tender in what I say to such an audience:—I say I would have it understood, That in this argument I do not make a parallel between men of a different mind, ‘mere dissentient individuals,’ and a Parliament, ‘as to,’ Which shall have their desires. I know there is no comparison. Nor can it be urged upon me that my words have the least color that way. For the Parliament seems to have given me liberty to say whatever is on my mind to you; as that ‘indeed’ is a tender of my humble reasons and judgment and opinion to *them*: and now if I think these objectors to the Kingship† are such ‘as I describe,’ and ‘that they’ will be such; ‘if I think’ that they are faithful servants and will be so to the Supreme Authority, and the Legislative wheresoever it is,—if, I say, I should *not* tell

\* Nebal’s and Abigail’s case (1 Samuel, xxv., 31).

† ‘They,’ *in orig.*

you, knowing their minds to be so, then I should not be faithful. I am bound to tell it you, to the end you may report it to the Parliament. [*Parliament very jealous lest the Army be thought of greater weight than it. We try to carry the scales even.*]

I will now say something for *myself*. As for my own mind I do profess it, I am not a man scrupulous about words, or names, or such things. I have not 'hitherto clear direction'\*—But as I have the Word of God, and I hope shall ever have, for the rule of my conscience, for my information and direction; so, truly, if men have been led into dark paths [*As this matter of the Kingship is to me even now; very "dark" and undecidable!*] through the providence and dispensations of God—why surely it is not to be objected to a man! For who can *love* to walk in the dark? But Providence doth often so dispose. And though a man may impute his own folly and blindness to Providence *sinfully*,—yet this must be at a man's own peril. This case may *be* that it is the Providence of God that doth lead men in darkness! I must needs say I have had a great deal of experience of Providence; and though such experience is no rule without or against the Word, yet it is a very good expositor of the Word in many cases. [*Yes, my brave one!*]

Truly the Providence of God hath lain aside this Title of King providentially *de facto*: and that not by sudden humor or passion; but it hath been by issue of as great deliberation as ever was in a Nation. It hath been by issue of Ten or Twelve Years Civil War, wherein much blood hath been shed. I will not dispute the justice of it when it was done; nor need I tell you what my opinion is in the case were it *de novo* to be done. [*Somewhat grim expression of face, your Highness!*] But if it be at all disputable; and a man comes and finds that God in His severity hath not only eradicated a whole Family, and thrust them out of the land, for reasons best known to Himself, but also hath made the issue and close of that to be the very eradication of a name or Title—! Which *de facto* is 'the case.' It was not done by me, nor by them that tendered me the Government I now act in: it was done by the Long Parliament,—that was it.† And God hath seemed Providential, 'seemed to appear as a Providence,' not only in striking at the Family but at the Name. And, as I said before, it is blotted out: it is a thing cast out by an Act of Parliament; it hath been kept out to this day. And as Jude saith, in another case, speaking of abominable sins that should be in the Latter Times,‡—he doth farther say, when he comes to exhort the Saints

\* Coagulated Jargon (*Somers*, p. 370) is almost worth looking at here:—never was such a Reporter since the Tower of Babel fell.

† Oliverian reduplication of the phrase.

‡ Very familiar with this passage of Jude; see Speech II., p. 91.



he tells them,—they should “hate even the *garments* spotted with the flesh.”\*

I beseech you think not that I bring this as an argument to prove anything. God hath seemed so to deal with the Persons and the Family that he blasted the very Title. And you know when a man comes, *a parte post*, to reflect, and see this *done*, this Title laid in the dust,—I confess I can come to no other conclusion. [*“But that God seems to have blasted the very Title;”—this, however, is felt to need some qualifying.*] The like of this may make a strong impression upon such weak men as I am;—and perhaps upon weaker men (if there be any such) it will make a stronger. I will not seek to set up that which Providence hath destroyed, and laid in the dust; I would not build Jericho again! And this is somewhat to me, and to my judgment and my conscience. This, in truth, it is this that hath an awe upon my spirit. (*Hear!*) And I must confess, as the times are,—they are very fickle, very uncertain, nay God knows you had need have a great deal of faith to strengthen you in your work, you had need look at Settlement!—I would rather I were in my grave than hinder you in anything that may be for Settlement of the Nation. For the Nation needs it, never needed it more! And therefore, out of the love and honor I bear you, I am for ever bound, whatever becomes of me, to do ‘what is best for that;’—‘and’ I am for ever bound to acknowledge you have dealt most honorably and worthily with me, and lovingly, and have had respect for one who deserves nothing.

Indeed, out of the love and faithfulness I bear you, and out of the sense I have of the difficulty of your work, I would not have you lose any help [*Help of the name King; help of the scrupulous Anti-King people: it is a dark case!*] that may serve you, that may stand in stead to you. I would willingly be a sacrifice [*King, Protector, Constable, or what you like*], that there might be, so long as God shall please to let this Parliament sit, a harmony, and better and good understanding between all of you. And,—whatever any man may think,—it equally concerns one of us as another to go on to Settlement: and where I meet with any that is of another mind, indeed I could almost curse him in my heart. And therefore, to deal heartily and freely, I would have you lose nothing [*Not even the Scrupulous.*] that may stand you in stead in this way. I would advise, if there be ‘found’ any of a froward, unmannerly or

\* Grammar a little imperfect. Really one begins to find Oliver would, as it were, have needed a *new* Grammar. Had all men been Olivers, what a different set of *rules* would Lindley Murray and the Governesses now have gone upon.

womanish spirit,—I would not that you should lose them! I would not that you should lose any servant or friend who might help in this Work; that any such should be offended by a thing that signifies no more to me than I have told you it does. That is to say: I do not think the thing necessary; I do not. I would not that you should lose a friend for it. If I could help you to many ‘friends,’ and multiply myself into many that would be to serve you in regard to Settlement! And therefore I would not that any, especially any of these who indeed perhaps are men that do think themselves engaged to continue with you, and to serve you, should be anywise disobliged from you.

‘I have now no more to say.’ The truth is, I did indicate this as my conclusion to you at the first, when I told you what method I would speak to you in.\* I may say that I cannot, with conveniency to myself, nor good to this service which I wish so well to, speak out all my arguments as to the safety of your Proposal, as to its tendency to the effectual carrying on of this Work. [*There are many angry suspicious persons listening to me, and every word is liable to different misunderstandings in every different narrow head!*] I say, I do not think it fit to use all the thoughts I have in my mind as to that point of safety. But I shall pray to God Almighty that He would direct you to do what is according to His will. And this is that poor account I am able to give of myself in this thing.†

And so enough for Monday, which is now far spent: ‘till tomorrow at three o’clock‡ let us adjourn; and diligently consider in the interim.

His Highness is evidently very far yet from having made up his mind as to this thing; the undeveloped Yes still balancing itself against the undeveloped No, in a huge dark intricate manner, with him. Unable to ‘declare’ himself; there being in fact nothing to declare hitherto, nothing but what he does here declare,—namely darkness visible. An abstruse time his Highness has had of it, since the end of February, six or seven weeks now; all England sounding round him, waiting for his Answer. And he is yet a good way off the Answer. For it is a considerable

\* “This was my *second* head of method; all this about myself and my own feelings in regard to the Kingship,—after I had proved to you in my first head that it was not *necessary*, that it was only *expedient* or *not expedient*. I am now therefore got to the end of my second head, to my conclusion.

† Somers Tracts, vi., 365-371.

‡ Burton, ii., 2.

question this of the Kingship : important to the Nation and the Cause he presides over ; to himself not unimportant,—and yet to himself of very minor importance, my erudite friend ! A Soul of a Man in right earnest about its own awful Life and Work in this world ; much superior to ‘feathers in the hat,’ of one sort or the other, my erudite friend !—Of all which he gives here a candid and honest account ; and indeed his attitude towards this matter is throughout, what towards other matters it has been, very manful and natural.

However, on the morrow, which is Tuesday, at three o’clock, the Committee cannot see his Highness ; attending at Whitehall, as stipulated, they find his Highness indisposed in health ;—are to come again to-morrow, Wednesday, at the same hour. Wednesday they come again ; ‘wait for above an hour in the Council-Chamber ;’—Highness still indisposed, “has got a cold :” Come again to-morrow, Thursday ! ‘Which,’ says the writer of the thing called *Burton’s Diary*, who was there, ‘did strongly build up the faith of the Contrarians,—He will not dare to accept, think the Contrarians. The Honorable House in the meanwhile has little to do but denounce that Shoreditch Fifth-Monarchy Pamphlet, the *Standard set up*, which seems to be a most incendiary piece ;—and painfully adjourn and re-adjourn, till its Committee do get answer. A most slow business ;—and the hopes of the Contrarians are rising.

Thursday, 16th April, 1657, Committee attending for the third time, the Interview does take effect : Six of the Grandees, Glyn, Lenthall, Colonel Jones, Sir Richard Onslow, Fiennes, Broghil, Whitlocke, take up in their order the various objections of his Highness’s former Speech, of Monday last, and learnedly rebut the same,—in a learned and to us insupportably wearisome manner ; fit only to be entirely omitted. Whitlocke urges on his Highness That, in refusing this Kingship, he will do what never any that were actual Kings of England did, reject the advice of his Parliament.\* Another says, It is his duty ; let him by no means shrink from his duty !—Their discouragements, if any creature is curious on the subject, can be read at great length in the

\* Somers, p. 336.

distressing pages of *Somers*,\* and shall be matter of imagination here. His Highness said, These were weighty arguments; give him till to-morrow to think of them.† ‘To-morrow at three: *spero!*’ says the writer of the thing called *Burton’s Diary*, who is not one of the Contrarians.

---

### SPEECH XI.

ALAS, to-morrow at three his Highness proves again indisposed; which doth a little damp our hopes, I fancy! Let us appoint Monday morning: Monday ten o’clock, ‘at the old place,’ Chamber of the Council-of-State in Whitehall. And so, on Monday 20th April, 1657, at the set place and hour, the Committee of Ninety-nine is once more in attendance, and his Highness speaks, —answering our arguments of Thursday last, and indicating still much darkness.

‘MY LORDS,’

I have, as well as I could, considered the arguments used by you, the other day, to enforce your conclusion as to that Name and Title, which has been the subject of various Debates and Conferences between us. I shall not now spend your time nor my own much, in recapitulating those arguments, or giving answers to them. Indeed I think they were ‘mainly’ but the same we formerly had, only with some additional inforcements by new instances: and truly, at this rate of debate, I might spend your time, which I know is very precious; and unless I were ‘to end in being’ a satisfied person, the time would spin out, and be very unprofitably spent,—so it would. I will say a word or two to that only which I think was new.

‘You were pleased to say some things as to the power of Parliament, as to the force of a Parliamentary sanction in this matter.’‡ What comes from the Parliament in the exercise of their Legislative power, as this Proposal does,—I understand this to be an exercise of the *Legislative* power, and the Laws formerly were always passed in this way ‘of Proposal or conference,’ and the way of Bills is of a newer date,—I understand that, I say; but — — [*In short the sentence falls prostrate, and we must start again.*]—You said “that what was done by the Parliament

\* *Somers*, vi., 371–387.

† *Burton*, ii., 5.

‡ Glyn, Lenthall, Broghil, Whitlocke (*Somers*), pp. 371, 2, 386, 4

now, and simply made to hang upon this Legislative power, ‘as any Title but that of King will do,’ might seem partly as if it were a thing *ex dono*, not *de jure* ; a thing that had not the same weight, nor the same strength, as if it bore a reference to ‘the general Body of’ the Law that is already in being.” I confess there is some argument in that,—that is there ! But if the degree of strength will be as good without Parliamentary sanction, ‘then’—[*Sentence pauses, never gets started again.*] — — Though it too, ‘this Title of Kingship,’ comes as a gift from you ! I mean as a thing which you either provide for the people or else it will never come to them ; so in a sense it comes from *you*, it is what *they* cannot otherwise arrive at ; therefore in a sense it is *ex dono* ; for whoever helps a man to what he cannot otherwise attain, doth an act very near a gift ; and you helping *them* to this Title, it were a kind of gift to them, since otherwise they could not get it ‘though theirs’—[*This Sentence also finds that it will come to nothing, and so calls halt.*]—But if you do it simply by your Legislative power—[*Halt again.—In what bottomless imbroglis of Constitutional philosophy and crabbed Law-logic with the Fifth-Monarchy and splenetic Contrarians looking on, is his poor Highness plunging ! A ray of natural sagacity now rises on him with guidance.*] —The question, “What makes such a thing as this more firm ?” is not the manner of the settling of it, or the manner of your ‘or another’s’ doing of it ; there remains always the grand question after that ; the grand question lies, In the *acceptance* of it by those who are concerned to yield obedience to it and accept it ! [ *Certainly, your Highness ; that is worth all the Law-logic in the world !* ] And therefore if a thing [ *Like this Protectorate, according to your argument,—not altogether to mine* ] hath but, for its root, your Legislative sanction— — If I may put a “But” to it, ‘to that most valid sanction !’ I will not do so : for I say, It is as good a foundation as that other, ‘which you ascribe to the Kingship, howsoever “grounded in the body of Law.”’ And if that thing ‘the Protectorate’ be as well accepted, and the other be less well—? Why, then truly *it*, I shall think, is the better ;—and then all that I say is founded upon Law too !—

Your arguments founded upon the Law do all make for the Kingship. Because, say you, it doth agree with the Law ; the Law knows,—the People know it, and are likelier to receive satisfaction that way. Those were arguments that have [“*had*” is truer but less polite] been used already ; and truly I know nothing that I have to add to them. And therefore, I say, those arguments also may stand as we found them and left them already ;—except, truly, this ‘one point.’ It hath been said to me [ *Saluting my Lord Whitlocke slightly with the eye, whose heavy face endeavors to smile in response* ] that I am a person who meditate to do

what never any that were actually Kings of England did : “ Refuse the Advice of Parliament.” I confess, that runs deep enough, ‘ that runs’ to all ; that may be accounted a very great fault in me ; and may rise up in judgment against me another time,—if my case be not different from any man’s that ever was in the Chief Command and Government of these Nations before. But truly I think, all they that have been in this Office before, and owned in right of Law, were inheritors coming to it by birthright,—or if owned by the authority of Parliament, they yet had some previous pretence of title or claim to it. And so, under favor, I think I deserve less blame than any of them would have done, if I cannot so well comply with this Title, and ‘ with’ the desire of Parliament in regard to it, as these others might do. For they, when they were *in*, would have taken it for an injury *not* to be in. Truly such an argument, to *them*, might be very strong, Why they should not refuse what the Parliament offered ! But ‘ as for me,’ I have dealt plainly with you : and I have not complimented with you ‘ in saying’ I have not desired, I have no title to, the Government of these Nations. ‘ No title,’ but what was taken up in a case of necessity, and as a temporary means to meet the actual emergency ; without which we must needs—[*Have gone you know whither !*—I say, we had been all ‘ topsyturvyng now’ at the rate of the Printed Book ‘ you have just got hold of’ [*Shoreditch STANDARD SET UP and Painted Lion there*], and at the rate of those men that have been seized going into arms,—if that expedient had not been taken ! That was visible to me as the day, unless I undertook it. And so, it being put upon me, I being then General, as I was General by Act of Parliament,—it being ‘ put’ upon me to take the power into my hand after the Assembly of Men that was called together had been dissolved — —[“ *I took it, as you all know :*” but his *Highness blazing off here, as his wont is when the subject rises, the Sentence explodes*—] ! —

Really the thing would have issued itself in this Book :—for the Book, I am told, knows an Author [*Harrison, they say, is Author*] ; he was a Leading Person in that Assembly ! And now when I say (I speak in the plainness and simplicity of my heart, as before Almighty God), I did out of necessity undertake that ‘ Business,’ which I think no man but myself would have undertaken,—it hath pleased God that I have been instrumental in keeping the Peace of the Nation to this day. And have kept it under a Title [*Protector*] which, some say, signifies but a keeping of it to another’s use,—to a better use ; ‘ a Title’ which may improve it to a better use ! And this I may say : I have not desired the continuance of my power or place either under one Title or another,—that have I not ! I say it : If the wisdom of the Parliament could find where to place things so as they might save this Nation and the Interests of it,—

the Interest of the People of God in the first place ; of those Godly honest men,—for such character I reckon them by, who live in the fear of God, and desire to hold forth the excellency ‘ of Christ ’ and a Christian course in their life and conversation—[*Sentence may be said to burst asunder here for the present, but will gather itself together again perhaps !*] I reckon *that* proceeds from Faith, and ‘ from ’ looking to our duties towards Christians, and our humanity to men as men ; and to such Liberties and Interests as the People of this Nation are of :—and ‘ I ’ do look upon that as a standing truth of the Gospel ; and whoso lives up to that is a Godly Man in my apprehension ! [*Looks somewhat animated.*]— — And therefore I say, If the wisdom of this Parliament,—I speak not this vainly or as a fool, but as to God,—if the wisdom of this Parliament should have found a way to settle the Interests of this Nation, upon the foundations of justice and truth and liberty, to the people of God, and concerns of men as Englishmen [*Voice risen to a kind of recitative*],—I would have lain at their feet, or at anybody else’s feet, that things might have run in such a current ! [*Your Highness can’t get out ; no place for you now but here or in the grave !—His Highness fetches a deep breath.*]—I say I have no pretensions to things for myself ; to ask this or that, or to avoid this or that. I know the censures of the world may quickly pass upon me, ‘ and are already passing : ’ but I thank God I know where to lay the weight that is laid upon me,—I mean the weight of reproach and contempt and scorn that hath been cast upon me. [*Ends, I think, in a kind of snort,—and the look partly as of an injured dove, partly as of a couchant lion.*]

I have not offered you any Name in competition with Kingship. I know the evil spirits of men may easily obtrude upon a man, That he would have a Name which the Laws know not, and which is boundless, and is one under which he may exercise more arbitrariness : but I know there is nothing in that argument ; and if it were in your thoughts to offer any Name of that kind, I think, whatsoever it was, you would bound it and limit it sufficiently. I wish it were come to that, That no favor should be showed to me ; but that the good of these Nations should be consulted ;—as ‘ indeed ’ I am confident it will be by you in whatsoever you do.—But I may say a word to another thing which doth a little pinch upon me : That it is my duty ‘ to accept this Title.’ I think it can be no man’s duty but between God and himself, if he be conscious of his own infirmities, disabilities and weakness ; ‘ conscious ’ that he perhaps is not able to encounter with it,—although he may have a little faith too, for a little exercise. I say I do not know what way it can be imputed to me for a fault, or laid upon me as a duty. Except I meant to gripe at the Government of the Nations without a legal consent,—as I say I

have done in time past upon principles of Necessity, 'but have no call now to do again.' And I promise I shall think whatever is done towards Settlement, without authority of Parliament, will neither be very honest, nor to me very comprehensible at this stage of the business. I think we have fought for the Liberties of the Nation and for other Interests!—  
[Checks himself.]

You will pardon me that I speak these things in such a 'desultory' way as this. I may be borne withal, because I have not truly well stood the exercise that hath been upon me these three or four days,—I have not, I say. [*Besides your Highness is suffering from the dregs of a cold, and I doubt still somewhat feverish!*]—I have told you my thoughts, and have laid them before you. You have been pleased to give me your grounds, and I have given you mine. And truly I do purposely refuse to mention those arguments that were used when ye were last here; but rather tell you what since (as I say) lies upon my heart,—speaking to you 'out of the abundance of difficulty and trouble that lies upon me. [*His Highness, sick of body, feverish, unequal to such a jungle of a subject and its adjuncts, is really weltering and staggering like a wearied man in the thickets and puddles.*]. And therefore you having urged me, I mean offered reasons to me, and urged them in such way as did occur to you; and I having told you, the last time we met, that the satisfaction from them did not reach to me so as wholly to convince me of my duty,—I have thought rather to answer to-day by telling you my grief, and the trouble I am under. [*Poor Sovereign Man!*]

And truly my intentions and purposes, they are honest to the Nation, —and shall be, by the Grace of God. And I have it *not* in view, upon collateral pretences, 'either by asking this Kingship or by refusing it'—to act towards things that may be destructive to the liberties of this Nation! [*"I am worn and weary; let me be as clay in the hands of the potter!"*]—Any man may give me leave to die; every one may give me leave to be as a dead man,—when God takes away the spirit and life and activity that are necessary for the carrying on of such a work! [*Poor Highness, still somewhat feverish, suffering from the dregs of a cold!*]—

And therefore I do leave the former Debates as they were, and as we had them; and will let you know that I have looked a little upon the Paper [*Petition and Advice*], the Instrument, I would say, in the other parts of it, 'unconnected with this of the Kingship.' And considering that there are very many particulars in this Instrument [*Holding it in his hand*], some of a general reference and others specific, and all of weight (let this business of the Title be decided as it may) to the concernment of the Nations,—I think I may desire that those 'particulars' may be really



such as will serve their object,—let the “Title” we *fix* upon be one or the other. They might be such as the People have no cause—[*Sentence checking itself*].—But I am confident your care and faithfulness need neither a spur nor an admonition to that!—I say, reading in your Order, the Order of the Parliament to this Committee, I find mention there of “divers particulars,” concerning which, if I do make any scruple of them, I am to have the freedom with this Committee to cast\* my doubts.

The truth of it is, I have a Paper here in my hands† that doth contain divers things with relation to the Instrument; which, I hope, have a Public aspect in them; therefore I cannot presume but they will be very welcome to you. Therefore I shall desire that you will read them. [*Hands Whitlocke the Paper.*] I should desire, if it please you, the liberty,—which I submit to your judgment whether you think I have or no,—that I might tender these few things; and some others which I have in preparation. And truly I shall reduce them to as much brevity as I can:—they are too large here, ‘these in the Paper are diffuse.‡ And if it please you, To-morrow in the afternoon at three o’clock I may meet you again. And I hope we shall come to know one another’s minds; and shall agree to that that may be for the glory of God and for the good of these Nations. §

So much for Monday, the 20th; noontide and the hour of dinner being now nigh. Herewith *exeunt* till to-morrow at three.

We returned ‘much unsatisfied with the Lord Protector’s Speech,’ says the Writer of *Burton*; it is ‘as dark and promiscuous as before;’ nobody can know whether he will have the Kingship or not. Sometimes the ‘Contrarians’ are up in hope, and sometimes again we,||—and the bets, if betting were permitted under Gospel Ordinances, would fluctuate not a little.

Courage, my Lord Protector! Blake even now, though as yet you know it not, is giving the Spaniards a terrible scorching for you, in the Port of Santa Cruz!—Worth noting: In those very minutes while the Lord Protector is speaking as above, there goes on far off, on the Atlantic brine, under shadow of the Peak

\* Canvass, shake out.

† A Paper of Objections by his Highness; repeatedly alluded to in the Journals; ‘unhappily altogether lost now,’ say the Parliamentary History, and the Editor of *Burton*,—not very unhappily, say my readers and I.

‡ He gave them the complete Paper *on the morrow* (*Burton*, ii., 7).

§ Somers, vi., 387–389.

|| See *Burton*, ii., 7 *et seq.*

of Teneriffe, one of the fieriest actions ever fought by land or water ; this action of the Sea-king Blake, at the Port of Santa Cruz. The case was this. Blake cruising on the coast of Spain, watching as usual for Plate Fleets, heard for certain that there was a Fleet actually coming, actually come as far as the Canary Isles, and now lying in the Bay of Santa Cruz in Teneriffe there. Blake makes instant sail thither ; arrives there still in time, this Monday morning early ; finds the Fleet fast moored in Santa Cruz Bay ; rich silver-ships, strong war-ships, sixteen as we count them ; stronger almost than himself,—and moored here under defences unassailable apparently by any mortal. Santa Cruz Bay is shaped as a horse-shoe : at the entrance are Castles, in the inner circuit are other Castles, Eight of them in all, bristling with great guns ; war-ships moored at the entrance, war-frigates moored all round the beach, and men and gunners at command : one great magazine of sleeping thunder and destruction ; to appearance, if you wish for sure suicide to run into, this must be it. Blake, taking measure of the business, runs into it, defying its loud thunder ; much out-thunders it,—mere whirlwinds of fire and iron hail, the old Peak never heard the like ;—silences the Castles, sinks or burns every sail in the Harbor ; annihilates the Spanish Fleet ; and then, the wind veering round in his favor, sails out again, leaving Santa Cruz Bay much astonished at him.\* It is the last action of the brave Blake ; who, worn out with toil and sickness and a cruise of three years, makes homewards shortly after ; dies within sight of Plymouth.†

On the whole, the Spanish Antichrist finds his Highness a rough enemy. In these same April days, Six-thousand men are getting mustered here, ‘furnished with new red coats’ and other equipments, to join French Turenne in the Low Countries, and fight the Spaniard by land too. For our French Treaty has become a French League Offensive and Defensive,‡ to last for one year ; and Reynolds is to be Land-General, and Montague to help him as Sea-General : of whom by and by there may be tidings. But meanwhile this matter of the Kingship must be

\* Heath’s Chronicle, pp. 720, 1.

† 7 Aug. 1657, in his Fifty-ninth year (Biog. Brit *in voce*).

‡ Signed 23 March, 1656–7 [Godwin, iv, 540].

settled. All men wish it settled ; and the present Editor as much as any ! They have to meet to-morrow again, Tuesday 21st, at three o'clock : they for their uncertain airy talking, while so much hard fighting and solid work has to be managed withal.

---

## SPEECH XII.

HIS Highness this Tuesday, we find, has deserted the question of the Kingship ; occupies himself with the other points of the New Instrument, what he calls the 'essentials' of it ; leaving that comparatively empty unessential one to hang undecided, for the present. The Writer of *Burton's Diary*, Nathaniel Bacon or another, is much disappointed. The question of the Kingship not advanced a whit by this long Discourse, one of the most tedious we have yet listened to from his Highness. 'Nothing but a dark speech,' says he,\* 'more promiscuous than before !' A sensible Speech too, in some respects, Mr. Bacon. His Highness once more elucidates as he best can his past conduct, and the course of Providence in bringing us all hither to the very respectable pass we now stand in ;—explains next what are the *essential* elements of keeping us safe here, and carrying us farther, as checking of Public Immorality, attention wiser and wiser to the Preaching Clergy, and for one indispensable thing, additional Provision of Cash ;—and terminates by intimating with soft diffuseness, That when he has heard their answer as to these essential things (not that he makes them "conditions," that were terribly ill-judged !), he will then be prepared, in regard to unessential things, to King's Cloaks, Titles, and such-like frippery and feathers in the cap, which are not without use say the Lawyers, but which irritate weak brethren,—to give such answer as may reasonably be expected from him, as God may set him free to do. Let us listen, us and Whitlocke who also has to report, the best we can.

\* Burton, ii., 7.

MY LORD,

I think you may well remember what the issue was of the last Conference I had with you ‘yesterday,’ and what the stick\* then was. I confess I took liberty ‘at that time,’ from the Order of Parliament; whereby they gave me power to speak with you about those things that were in the body of that Instrument and Desire which you have been pleased to speak with me ‘upon:’ that I might confer with you about those particulars, and might receive satisfaction from you as to them. Whether there will a good issue be to all these affairs or no, is only in the hands of God. That is a great secret;—and secrets belong to God. To us belong things revealed;—and such things are the subject-matter of this Instrument of yours: and ‘the course is,’ so far as they may have relation to me, That you and I shall consider what may be for the public good ‘therein,’ that so they may receive such an impression† as can humanly be given them.

I would be well understood in that I say, The former Debates and Conferences have been upon the Title; and that rests as it did. But seeing, as I said before, your Order of Commitment, ‘your Order of Committee,’ doth as well reach to the particulars contained in the Instrument ‘generally’ as to that of the Title,—I did offer to you that I should desire to speak with you about *them* also. That so we may come to an understanding one with another, not What the things in their parts are, but What is in the whole conduceable to that end we ought all to aim at,—which is a general Settlement upon good foundations.

Truly, as I have often said to the Parliament itself when they did me the honor to meet me in the Banqueting-House, so I may now say to you who are a Committee, a very considerable representation of the Parliament: I am hugely taken with the word *Settlement*; with the thing, and with the notion of it. ‘And indeed’ I think he is not worthy to live in England who is not! No; I will do my part, so far as I am able, to expel that man out of the Nation who desireth not that in the general we come to a Settlement. Because indeed it is the great misery and unhappiness of a Nation to be without such: it is like a house (and so much worse than a “house”) divided against itself; it “cannot stand” without Settlement!—And therefore I hope, so far, we are all at a good point; and the spirit of the Nation, I hope, in the generality of it, is so far at a good point: we are all contending for a Settlement. That is sure. But the question is, *De modo*, and Of those things ‘and conditions’ that will make it a good Settlement if possible. It’s no fault to aim at perfection in Settlement! And truly I have said

\* stop.

† impulse and decision.

and I say it again : That I think this ‘ present proposed Form of Settlement ’ doth tend to the making of the Nation enjoy the things we have ‘ all along ’ declared for ; and I would come upon that issue with all men, or with any man. The things we have declared for, which have been the ground of our quarrelling and fighting all along,—the securing of these is what will accomplish the general work. Settlement is the general work. That which will give to the Nation to enjoy their civil and religious liberties : that which will conserve the liberties of every man, and not rob any man of what is justly his ! I think these two things make up Settlement. I am sure they acquit us before God and man : having endeavored, as we have done, through some streamings of blood, to attain that end.

I may tell you my ‘ own ’ experience in this business, and offend no good man who loves the Public before what is personal. Truly I shall, a little, shortly recapitulate to you what my observations and endeavors and interest have been to this end. And I hope no man that hath been interested in transactions all along\* will blame me. And he shall have no cause to blame me ; because I will take myself into the number of the Culpable Persons (if there be any such),—though perhaps apt enough, from the self-love I have, to be willing to be reckoned innocent where I am so ! And yet as willing withal to take my reproach, if anybody will lay it upon me, where I am culpable ! And truly I have, through the Providence of God, endeavored to discharge a poor duty : having had, as I conceive, a clear call to the stations I have acted in through all these affairs ;—and I believe very many are sufficiently satisfied in that. I shall not go about saying anything to clear it to you ; [*No, your Highness, let it stand on its own feet.*].—but must exercise myself in a little short Chronology. To come to that ‘ issue ’ [*Not the “ Chronology,” but what the Chronology will help to teach us !*], I say, is really all our business at present ; and the business of this Nation : To come upon clear grounds ; To consider the Providence of God, how He hath led us hitherunto.

After it pleased God to put an end to the War of this Nation ; a final end ; which was done at Worcester, in the determination and decision that was there by the hand of God,—for other War we have had none that deserves the name of War, since that time, which is now six years gone September ‘ last ; ’—I came up to the Parliament that then was. And truly I found the Parliament, as I thought, very ‘ well ’ disposed to put a good issue to all those Transactions which had been in the Na-

\* Not polite to add, “ as I have been.”

tion ; and I rejoiced at it. And though I had not been well skilled in Parliamentary affairs, having been near ten years in the Field ; yet, in my poor measure, my desires did tend to the same issue ; believing verily that all the blood which had been shed, and all the distemper which God had suffered to be among us, which in some sense God had raised among us,—‘believing I say,’ that surely Fighting was not the *end*, but the *means*, which had an end, and was in order to somewhat ! Truly the end, then, was, I thought, Settlement ; that is, that men might come to some consistencies. And to that end I did endeavor to add my mite,—which was no more than the interest any one member there might have,—after I was returned again to that capacity. And I did,—I shall tell you no fable, but things ‘of’ which divers persons here can tell whether they be true or no [*Threatening to blaze up again !*—I did endeavor it. I would make the best interpretation of all that : but yet it is a truth, and nothing of a discovery on my part, but a fact which everybody knows to be true, That the Parliament, having done those memorable things—[*Sentence explodes ; and even launches off into panegyric of the Long Parliament,—preparatory to EXECUTION*—They had done things of honor, and things of necessity ; things which, if at this day you have any judgment that there lieth a possibility upon you to do any good, and to bring this Nation to any foot of Settlement, I may say you are all along, in a good manner, beholden to that Parliament ‘for.’ But yet truly as men who contend for the Public Interest are not like to have the applause of all men, nor justification from all hands, so it was with them. And truly, when they had made preparations which might have led to the issuing in some good for the Settlement of these Nations, in point of liberty, in point of freedom from tyranny and oppression and from hazard of our religion,—To throw it all away upon men who designed by innovations to introduce Popery, and by complying with some notions introduce Arbitrariness upon a Civil account—[“*Royalist Malignants, in 1647, 1648, and Crypto-Royalists ; with their ‘notions’ that of all things indispensable, a Stuart King was indispensable ! That would never have done ! The Long Parliament did need a Pride’s Purge ; could not*”—But the Sentence here, in its hasty impatience, as is usual, bursts]—Why they had more enemies than friends, ‘that Long Parliament had ;’ they had so all along ! And this made them careful [*In 1648, trying to bargain with Charles, they were “full of care ;” and even afterwards they could not decide all at once on granting a new Free Parliament and General Election ; no !*—upon principles of Nature, which do sometimes suggest the best. And upon the most undeniable grounds, they did think that it was not fit for them presently to go and throw themselves, and all this Cause, into hands that perhaps had no heart nor principle ‘in

common' with them to accomplish the end *they* had aimed at. [*In short, hey, very properly, decided on sitting still for a while.*]

I grant, perhaps through infirmity they did desire to have continued themselves; to have perpetrated themselves upon that act.\* An Act which was justly enough obtained, and necessarily enough obtained, when they did get it from the King. But though truly it was good in the first obtaining of it; yet it was, by men who had ventured their lives in this Cause, judged not fit to be perpetuated, but rather a thing that was to have an end when it had finished its course! Which was certainly the true way of doing,—in subserviency to the bringing-in of what might be a good and honest settlement to the Nation. I must say to you that I found them very willing to perpetuate themselves! And truly this is not a thing of reflection upon *all*, for perhaps some were not so;—I can say it of some. The sober men whom I had converse with, were not for continuing; but the major part, I think, did overrule in that they would have continued. This is true that I say to you: I was entreated to comply with the plan, and advised to it; and it was to have been accomplished by this medium, 'They were' to have sent into the country to have got their number reinforced, and the Parliament filled up by new elections. And it had this excuse, That it would not be against the Liberty of the People, nor against a *succession* of men coming into rule and government; because as men died out of the House, so they should be supplied again. [*Like Sir John Cockle's silk hose; which always, after infinite darnings, could remain the same hose, though not a thread of the original silk was now left in them: a perennial pair of stockings. Such was the plan of the Rump.*] And this was the best answer they could give to all objections, 'this,' "That the proper way to govern is to have *successive* men in such great bodies as Parliaments; to have men learning to know how to obey as well as how to govern."† And truly the expedient they then offered was what I tell you.

The truth of it is, this did not satisfy a company of poor men [*Certain insignificant individuals,—mentioned elsewhere by the same name!*] who thought they had ventured their lives, and had some interest to inquire after these things! And the rather, because really they had been invited out, 'first of all, into this War,' upon principles of honesty, conscience and religion; "for Spiritual Liberties;" as many as would come.

\* Act, 10 May, 1641, That we are not to be dissolved without our own consent. Necessary in all ways; the City would not lend money otherwise, — not even money could be had otherwise (*Antea*, vol. i., 117).

† The 'Rota Club' (see Wood, iv., 1119, 1120, § Harrington) had not started in 1653, but this doctrine, it would seem, was already afloat;—not much patronized by his Highness at any time.

‘Yes;’ when the Cause was a little doubtful, there had issued forth a Declaration ‘of that purport,’ which was very inviting; and men did come in ‘and enlist’ upon that invitation;—and did thereby think themselves not to be mercenary men, but men who had wives and children in the Nation, and ‘who’ therefore might a little look after satisfaction in what would be the Issue of the Business! [*They told us always, We were Soldiers, sworn as our first duty to obey; but we answered (and it was intrinsically a fact), We were the most peculiar Soldiers that had ever handled steel in England; whereby our first, and also our second and third, duties had become modified a good deal!*]

And when this thing was thus pressed, and perhaps overpressed ‘by us,’ That a period might be put, and some ascertainment made, and a time fixed,—why then truly the extreme ran another way. ‘*Parliament would not go at all*, that had been the one extreme; *Parliament shall go straightway*, that was now the other.’ This is very true that I tell you; although it shames me. ‘Extremes give rise to their opposite extremes; and are honorable to nobody!’ I do not say it shames all that were of the House, for I know all were not of that mind; but truly when this was urged, they on their side did fall into another extreme. . And what was that? Why truly then it was: Seeing this Parliament could not be perpetual, yet a Parliament might always be sitting. And to that end there was a Bill framed, That Parliaments might always be sitting; that as soon as one Parliament went out of place, another might leap in.\* When we saw this, truly we thought it did but make a change in pretence; and did not remedy the thing!—However, it was pursued with such heat ‘in the House,’ I dare say there was more progress in it in a month than had ever been with the like business in four; ‘so eager were they’ to hasten it to an issue, to get such a Parliament brought in;—to bring the state of the Nation into this, *A continual sitting of Parliament*.

We did think, who were plain men, and I do think it still, That that had been, according to the old foolish Proverb, “out of the fryingpan into

\* This arrangement, of a Parliament constantly sitting, his Highness and the company of poor men did by no means consider a good ‘Issue of the Business.’ It leads almost infallibly to ‘arbitrariness,’ argues his Highness (*Antea*, Speech III., p. 113), leads to, &c., &c.—in fact, as in those days of ours is everywhere becoming too apparent, leads to ‘Nothing,’ to self-cancelment (like that of the Kilkenny cats) and peaceable *Zero*. Which in very few epochs of the world’s history is the desirable thing! His Highness’s logic-arguments, here and in his other Speech, are none of the best; but instincts and inarticulate insights much deeper than logic taught him well that ‘a Parliament always sitting’ was not the Balm of Gilead ~~we had~~ all been fighting for.



the fire !” For, looking at the Government you would then have had, it was ‘still’ a “Commonwealth’s” Government. [*Not entirely the Ideal of a Government, your Highness thinks?*]. Why, we should have had fine work then ! We should have had a Council of State, and a Parliament of Four-hundred men, executing arbitrary government [*As the Long Parliament did*] without intermission, except some change of a part of them ; one Parliament stepping into the seat of another, just left warm for them ; the same day that the one left, the other was to leap in !—Truly I did think, and I do think, however much some are enamored with that kind of Government—[*Style getting hasty, hot ; the Sentence breaks*]]—Why it was no more but this, That Committees of Parliament should take ‘all’ upon them, and be instead of the Courts at Westminster ! Perhaps some will think there had been no hurt in that arbitrariness of Committees ? Where a man can neither come to prove nor to defend,—nor to know his judges ; because there are one set of men who judge him to-day, and another set of men to-morrow ! Thus was to have been the Law of England ; and thus was to have been the way of judging this Nation. And truly I thought that it was an ill way of “judging.” For I may say to you, with truth in regard to that, After it pleased God, your poor Army, those poor contemptible men, came up hither,—it did prove so. An outcry here in this place, ‘then an outcry there in that,’ to get some cause determined and judged. [*The way of Parliaments, your Highness, with their caballings and committeeings, and futile jargonings, and Babel outbabbled !*] And Committees erected to fetch men from the extremest parts of the Nation to London, to attend Committees ‘set’ to determine all things. And without any manner of satisfaction. Whether a man travel with never such right or never such wrong, he must come,—and he must go back again, as wise as he came. This truly was the case [*Fancy an old Ironside who had stood Dunbar and Worcester, and Marston and Naseby, dancing attendance here !*], and our condition. And truly I must needs say, Take all that was in the practices there—[*Belter not, your Highness !*]]—I am sorry to tell the story of it !—Though there was indeed some necessity for such a thing. A necessity for some Committees to look to Indemnity, ‘and such like :’ but no necessity for Committees instead of Courts of Justice ! However, so it was ; and this was the case of the People of England at that time ; the Parliament assuming to itself the authority of the *Three Estates* that were before. It had so assumed that authority : and if any man had come and said, “What rules do you judge by ?”—“Why, we have none ! We are supreme, ‘we’ in Legislature and in Judicature !”

Such was the state of the case. And I thought, and we thought, and I think so still, That this was a pitiful remedy, ‘this that they proposed.

[*This of a Perpetual Parliament, NEW-DARNED, like Sir John's Perpetual Pair of Stockings:—a bad article in itself, whether new or new-darned, if you make it the exclusive one!*] And it will always be so when and whosoever a Perpetual Legislative is exercised; where the Legislative and Executive Powers are always the same.—Truly I think the Legislature might almost as well be in the Four Courts of Westminster Hall! If they could make Laws and Judges too, you would have excellent Laws; and the Lawyers would be able to give excellent counsel! And so it was then. This was our condition, without scruple or doubt; and I shall say no more to it. But the offer was made by us with a true and honest spirit; the desire, the entreaty that we might have a Settlement. And there is our "Settlement;" that is what they propose for a Settlement!—

It was desired then, it was offered and desired, that the Parliament would be pleased, either of their own body or of any else, to choose a certain number of men [*The Puritan Notables; ah yes!*] to settle the Nation: "This," said we, "is unsettlement, that is confusion!" For give me leave, if anybody now have the face to say,—and I would die upon this—[*Sentence catching fire*—]if any man in England have the impudence [*Ah!*] or face to say, That the reluctance of the Parliament to dissolve themselves was their fear of hasty throwing of the Liberties of the People of God, and of the Nation, into the hands of a bare Representative of the People,—which was then the business *we* opposed: if any man have the face to say this *now*, who did *then* judge it, 'that last measure of theirs,' and I will say more, ought then to have judged it, to be a confounding of the whole Cause we had fought for,—which it was,—I would look upon that man's face! I would be glad to see such a man!\* I do not say there is any such here: but if any such should come to me,—see if I would not look upon him, and tell him he is an hypocrite! I dare say it, and I dare die for it, 'he is an hypocrite;'—knowing the spirit that hath been in some men to me. They come and tell me, They do

\* A dangerous spectator, your Highness, with that thundery countenance of yours!—His Highness's anger is exceedingly clear; but the cause of it, in this intricate sentence, much more in the distracted coagulum of jargon which the Original here offers, is by no means so clear. On intense inspection, he discovers himself to be (as above) reproaching certain parties who now affect to regret the Long Parliament, which while it existed they had been sufficiently loud in condemning. You say: "They were afraid to fling the whole Cause into the lottery of a general Parliament:?"—*They?* while *we* opposed that; and while that was the very thing they at last were recklessly doing! I should like to see the face of a man brazen enough for a story like this!

not like my being Protector. Why do you not?—"Why, because you will exercise arbitrary government."—Why, what is it you want me to do?—"Pray, turn those Gentlemen 'of the Long Parliament' all in again; then we will like you exceedingly well!"—[*Inarticulate interjection; snort or "Humph!"*]"—I was a child in swaddling clouts!\* I cannot go beyond the Instrument of Government. I cannot do anything but in coördination with the Council. They fear, 'these objectors,' "arbitrary government" by *me* in that way; but if arbitrary government were restored to be general 'by reinstatement of the Long Parliament,' then they are not afraid of it! Such things as these are, such hypocrisies as these are, should they enter into the heart of any man that hath truth or honesty in him?—

Truly that was our case:—and finding our case to be thus, we did press the Parliament, as I told you, That they would be pleased to select some Worthy Persons who had loved this Cause, and the liberties of England, and the interest of England: and we told them we would acquiesce and lie at *their* 'the Worthy Persons' feet; but that to be thrown into Parliaments which should sit perpetually, though but for three years 'each,' we had experience of that! 'An experience which may remain to this day, to give satisfaction to honest and sober men!—Why, truly this might have satisfied, this proposal of ours; but it did not. And therefore we did think that it was the greatest of dangers, 'thus' to be overwhelmed, and brought under a slavery by our own consent, and "Iniquity to become a law."† And there was our ground we acted upon at that time. And truly they had perfected their Bill for perpetuating of Parliaments to the last Clause [*Hear!*]; and were resolved to pass it as a Bill in Paper, 'not even engrossed on Parchment as the wont was,' rather than comply with any expedient. [*We then entered upon them; bade them with emphasis, Go about their business! That's no lie!*]"—If your own experience add anything to you in this, 'if

\* So tied up with restrictions in that first Instrument; had not the smallest power to do 'arbitrary government.'

† 'The Throne of iniquity, which frameth mischief by ~~the~~ Law' (Psalm xciv., 20). A fearful state of matters; shadowed forth by old Prophets as the fearfulest of all; but entirely got rid of in these modern days,—if Dryasdust and the general course of *new* Prophecy may be credited, to whom Law is Equity, and the mere want of 'Law,' with its three readings, and tanned pieces of sheepskin written over in bad English, is Iniquity.—O Dryasdust, thy works in this world are wonderful. Thy notions of this world, thy ideas, what thou namest ideas, perhaps defy all ages, even ages when Witchcraft was believed in,—or when human creatures worshipped Leeks, and considered that the Founder of this Universe was one Apis, a sacred Prize-Ox! I begin to be weary of thee.

you ever individually had to do with a Long-Parliament Committee, and know its ways '—in this point, "Whether or no, in cases civil and criminal, if a Parliament assume an absolute power, without any control, to determine the interests of men in property and liberty; whether or no *this* be desirable in a Nation?"—if you have any sense [*General openness of perception; not exactly our modern word; but a questionable expression, as his Highness immediately sees: "any sense."*—as I believe you have,—you have more than I, — —' then' I think you will take it for a mercy that *that* did not befall England at that time! And that is all I will say of it.

Truly I will now come and tell you a story of my own weakness and folly. [*The Little Parliament.*] And yet it was done in my simplicity, I dare avow it was: and though some of my companions—["*May dislike my mentioning the story?*"—*The sentence, in its haste, has no time to end.*]"—And truly this is a story that should not be recorded, that should not be told, except when good use may be made of it. I say, It was thought then that men of our own judgment, who had fought in the wars, and were all of a piece upon that account;—'it was thought,' "Why surely these men will hit it, and these men will do it to the purpose, whatever can be desired!" And truly we did think, and I did think so,—the more blame to me. And such a Company of Men were chosen [*The Little Parliament;—Convention of the Puritan Notables.*] and did proceed to action. And truly this was the naked truth, That the issue was not answerable to the simplicity and honesty of the design. [*Poor Puritan Notables!*]

What the issue of that Meeting would have been 'seemed questionable,' and was feared: upon which the sober men of that Meeting did withdraw; and came and returned my power as far as they could,—they did actually the greater part of them,—into my hands; professing and believing that the issue of that Meeting would have been The subversion of your Laws and of all the Liberties of this Nation, the destruction of the Ministers of this Nation; in a word, the confusion of all things. 'Confusion of all things:' To set up, instead of Order, the Judicial Law of Moses, in abrogation of all our administrations; to have had administered the Judicial Law of Moses *pro hic et nunc*, according to the wisdom of any man that would have interpreted the text this way or that!—And if you do not believe that these Persons, 'thereupon sent home,' were sent home by the major part 'of themselves,' who were judicious and sober and learned (the minority being the worse part upon this account), and with my consent *a parte post*,—you will believe nothing! [*Somewhat tart.*] For the persons that led in that Meeting were Mr. Feake and his Assemblage in Blackfriars. [*We know "Feake," and other*

*foul chimneys on fire, from of old!*—As for “Mr. Squib,” he sits now with Verner and the Fifth-Monarchy, safe locked in the Tower.] ‘Mr. Feake,’ Major-General Harrison, and the rest that associated with him at one Mr. Squib’s house. There were all the resolutions taken that were acted in that House ‘of Parliament’ day by day. And this was so *de facto*; I know it to be true. And that such must naturally be the product of it, I do but appeal to that Book I told you of the other day [*“Standard set up.”*], That all the Magistracy and Ministry is Antichristian, wherefore all these things ought to be abolished. Which we are certain must have been the issue of that Meeting. [*A failure, that poor Convention of the Puritan Notables!*]

So that you have been delivered, if I think aright, from two evils. The one, a secular evil, which would have swallowed up all religious and civil interest, and brought us under the horridlest arbitrariness that ever was exercised in the world: To have had Five or Six hundred “Friends,”\* with *their* friends, ‘the Feakes, &c.,’ entrusted with the judgment of all causes, and to judge of them without rule; thinking that “the Power which swallowed up all other Lawful Powers in the Nation,” hath all the power *they* ever had, both Legislative and Judiciary! In short, a thing which would have swallowed both the Civil and Religious Interest. And the other evil—[*His Highness has already inextricably caudled the two together and here merely gives them another stir.*].—merely under a Spiritual Interest, would have swallowed up all again in another extreme,—‘no stated Ministry being allowed.’ All our Civil and Religious Interest; and had made our Ministry, and all the things we were beholding to God for, ‘of no account!’ Truly we think we ought to value *this* Interest above all the interests in the world: but if this latter had not as surely been destroyed as the former, I understand nothing.—

And having told you these two things, ‘two Failures in getting Settlement’—truly it makes me in love with this Paper; and with all the things in it; and with the additions I have now to tender you thereto; and with *Settlement* above all things in the world!—Except ‘only’ that, where I left you last time; [*“The Kingship!” Committee of Ninety-nine look alert!*].—for that, I think, we have debated. [*Look dumpish again.*] I have heard your mind, and you have heard mine ‘as to that;’ I have told you my heart and judgment; and the Lord bring forth His own issue. [*His Highness produces the Engrossed Vellum.*]

I think we are now to consider, not what we are in regard to our Footing and that of the Government which called this Parliament.

\* The name of Quakers already budding in 1653,—now, in 1657, budded and blown.

[*No: our First foolish Parliament spent all their time on that; not you, my wiser Friends.*] Our Footing and Government is, till there be an end put to it,—that that hath existence! [*What other definition of it can be given, or need?*] And so I shall say nothing to it. If it accomplisheth the end of our Fighting, and all those blessed ends and aims that we should aim at; if it do,—I would we might keep it, and remain where we are. If it do not, I would we might have a better!—Which\* truly I do come out of myself to tell you, That as to the substance and body of your Instrument, I do look upon it as having things in it,—if I may speak freely and plainly; I may, and we all may!—I say, the things that are provided for in this ‘Act of’ Government [*Handling the Vellum*] do secure the Liberties of the People of God so as they never before had them! And he must be a pitiful man who thinks the People of God ever had the like Liberty either *de facto* or *de jure*;—*de jure* from God, I think they have had it from the beginning of the world to this day, and have it still,—but asserted by a *jus humanum*, I say, they never had it so as they have it now. I think you have provided for the Liberty of the People of God, and ‘for the Liberty’ of the Nation. And I say he sings sweetly that sings a song of reconciliation betwixt those two Interests! And it is a pitiful fancy, like wisdom and ignorance, to think they are inconsistent. Certainly they may consist! And, I speak my conscience of this ‘Act of’ Government, I think you have made them to consist.

And therefore, I must say, in that, and in other things, you have provided well,—that you have. And because I see the Rule of the Parliament, ‘your written Order here,’ gives you leave to speak with me about the particulars (I judge the Parliament doth think that any Member it has is not to be neglected in offering of anything that may be of additional good),—therefore, I having a little surveyed the Instrument, I have a Paper here to offer you upon that account. [*Handles a Paper of his own.*] And truly I must needs say and think that, in such a case as this, where so new a work and so strange a work as this is before you, it will not be thought ill [*Not at all, your Highness,—only get on!*] if I do with a little earnestness press you for some explanations in some things. ‘A few explanations’ that may help to complete the business, and leave me—(for it is only handled with *me* and for *my* behoof’ at this time, not with you and the Parliament whom you represent):—I say, I would be glad that you might leave me, and all opposers, without excuse; as well as glad that you should settle this Nation to the uttermost advantage for it;—in all the things I have to

\* Ungrammatical, but unalterable Means ‘On which hint.’

offer you. They are not very weighty ; they may tend to the completion of the business ; and therefore I shall take the freedom to read them to you.

[First, however, this Editor, with your Highness's leave, will read to the Moderns a certain excerpt or abstract from the Engrossed Vellum itself, which he has obtained sight of,\* that they also may understand what your Highness will animadvert upon. Let the Moderns pay what attention they can.

' Article *Fourth* of the Petition and Advice is taken up with describing who are to be Electors to Parliament and Eligibles,—or rather who not ; for it is understood that, except the classes of persons here specified, all who had such a privilege by the old Laws are still entitled to vote and to be voted for.

' The Classes excluded from electing or being elected are the following :

' 1. All who have been concerned in the rebellion of Ireland ; or who, with or without concern in said Rebellion, are or shall become Papists. All who have advised, abetted or assisted in any War against the Parliament since the First of January, 1641–2,—unless they have since given signal proofs of repentance, by bearing arms *for* the Parliament,—or in some other " signal " manner, difficult to define. The defining of which has occasioned great debates in Parliament.† This excludes all the English and other Malignants. All who have ever been engaged in any Plot against the Person of his Highness ; or, apart from that, have been engaged in any Insurrection in England or Wales " since 16th December, 1653," beginning of the Protectorate.

' 2. In Scotland all who have been in arms against the Parliament of England or the Parliament of Scotland before the First of April, 1648. This excludes the Montrose Party and Royalists Proper of Scotland,—except such as have given " signal," &c. But then follows this clause in favor of the Hamilton Engagers, and the Dunbar and Worcester people, which attracts his Highness's animadversion in the present Discourse : " Nor any " (shall elect or be elected) " who *since* the First of April, 1648

\* Whitlocke, p. 648 *et seq.* ; Parliamentary History, xxi., 129 *et seq.*

† Burton's Diary.

have been in arms, or otherwise aided, abetted," &c. (which includes all the Preston, and all the Dunbar and Worcester people ; with, however, a most *unimportant exception*)—"except such as since the First day of March, 1651-2, have *lived peaceably*,"—as they might very well do, having been all smashed to powder, six months before, at Worcester Fight, and their "Chief Malignant," whom they had set up as King, being now sent on his travels, somewhat in the style of a King of the Gipsies !<sup>†</sup> His Highness cannot but animadvert on this with some tartness.

With these exceptions, and one ' proviso for Ireland ' to be speedily noticed, all Freeholders of Counties, according to the old definition, shall vote ; and all Burgesses and Citizens of Towns, —nay, I think, there is in this latter department a tendency towards the *Potwalloper* System ; but modified of course by the established custom of each several locality in that respect.

And now let us hear his Highness in regard to Paragraph Second, Article Fourth :]

In the Fourth Article and Second Paragraph, you have something that respects the calling of Members to Parliament 'for Scotland.' You would not have those excluded that were under Duke Hamilton, and made that Invasion.\* Because it hath been said to you, perhaps, that if you should exclude all 'such,' you would have no Members from that Nation ? I hope there be persons of that Nation who will be ready to give a better testimony of their country than admit that argument ! And I hope it is no argument : but if it be one, then truly, to meet with the least certainty as to qualifications, you should indeed exclude men of your own country upon better 'defined' crimes ; you should hold them off upon stricter characters 'than those given !' It is thought, the qualification there which saith, of their "good testimony," That they are to be men who have given good testimony by their quiet living—Why, truly, for divers years, they have not been willing to do other ; they have not had an easy possibility to do otherwise, than to live quietly ! [*Not since the taming they got at Worcester, your Highness !*] Though perhaps 'at bottom' many of them have been the same men :—and yet 'certainly too' I know many of them are good men, worthy men.—And therefore whether it be not fit, in that place, to explain somewhat farther, and put some other character† upon what may really be regarded as "a

\* Which met its due at Preston.

† description.



good testimony" of their *being* otherwise minded, of their *being* now of another judgment? I confess I have not anything here to supply this defect with: but certainly if the description so stand as it now is in your Article,—those men, though they be never so indisposed, enemies and remain so, yet if they have "lived peaceably," where they could neither will nor choose 'to live otherwise,' they are to be admitted. I only tell you so, being without any amendment for it: and when done, I shall leave it all with yourselves. This is for the Second Paragraph.

[For the Second Paragraph his Highness is "without any amendment" of his own; offers us nothing to "supply the defect:" indeed it is difficult to supply well, as that Nation stands and has stood. Besides they send but Fifty Members in all, poor creatures; it is no such vital matter! Paragraph Second remains *unaltered*.—And now let the Moderns attend for an instant to Paragraph Third:

'Article *Fourth*, Paragraph *Third*: A proviso as to Ireland "that no English or Scotch Protestant in Ireland who before the First of March, 1649–50" (just about the time his now Highness, then Lord General, was quitting Ireland, having entirely demolished all chance of opposition there) "have borne arms *for* the Parliament or your Highness, or otherwise given signal testimony" &c., "shall be excluded." This also to his Highness seems worthy of animadversion.]

In the Third Paragraph of the same Article, whereas it is said, "That all persons in Ireland be made capable to elect or to be elected who, before the First of March, 1649, have borne arms for the Parliament, or otherwise given testimony of their good affections to the Parliament and continued faithful *to the Parliament*:"—and yet perhaps many of them are since revolted 'against us!'—Whether it be not necessary that this be more clearly expressed? For it seems to capacitate all those who revolted from the Parliament;\* if they have borne arms for the State before the First of March, 1649, it seems to restore them. But if *since* then they have revolted, as I doubt many of our English-Irish have done, why then the question is, Whether those men who lately† have been angry and have flown to arms; Whether you will think their having borne arms formerly on the Parliament's side shall be an exemption to

\* The Ormonde Royalists almost all;—Malignant enough many of them

† in late years.

them? This is but tendered to you, for some worthy person here to give an answer unto?

[Very rational and irrefragable. It is accordingly altered : ‘Signal testimony of their good affection to the *Commonwealth or your Highness, and continued, &c.*—And now let us look at Paragraph Fifth : concerning the last item of which his Highness has a word to say :

‘Article *Fourth*, Paragraph *Fifth*. All who are atheistical, blasphemous, “married to Popish wives,” who train or shall train any child to be Popish, or consent that a son or daughter of theirs shall marry a Papist ;—who are scoffers of religion, or can be proved to have scoffed any one for being religious ; who deny the Scriptures to be God’s Word ; who deny Sacraments, Ministry or Magistracy to be ordinances of God (Harrison’s set) ; who are Sabbath-breakers, swearers, haunters of taverns or ale-houses ;—in short demonstrably unchristian men. All who are Public Preachers too.’ Concerning this latter clause his Highness has a remark to make.

‘Following in the rear of which, in the same Third Paragraph, is an Article which still more merits consideration. For securing the “Freedom of Parliament” as well as its Purity, there are to be Forty-one Commissioners appointed “by Act of Parliament with your Highness’s consent,” who are to examine and certify whether the Persons returned by these rules are, after all, qualified to sit.’—So that it is not to be the Council of State henceforth, and by “Nathaniel Tayler Clerk of the Commonwealth in Chancery” with his *Certificate* in the Lobby, that Honorable Gentlemen are to be turned back at the door of the House, and sent to redact *Protests*, as in the case of this present Parliament ! Forty-one Commissioners are now to do it. His Highness on this also will have a word to say.]

In the Fifth Paragraph of the same Article, you have incapacitated Public Preachers from sitting in Parliament. And truly I think your intention is ‘of’ such ‘only’ as have Pastoral Function ; such as are actually real Ministers. For I must say to you, in behalf of our Army, —in the next place to their fighting *they* have been very good “Preachers :” and I should be sorry they should be excluded from serving the Com-

monwealth because they have been accustomed to "preach" to their troops, companies and regiments:—which I think has been one of the blessings upon them to the carrying on of the great Work. I think you do not mean so 'that they should be excluded:' but I tender it to you that, if you think fit, there may be a consideration had of it. There may be some of us, it may be, who have been a little guilty of that, who would be loath to be excluded from sitting in Parliament 'on account of it!' [*"I myself have been known, on occasion, to exhort my troops with Bible texts and considerations; to 'preach,' if you like to call it so! What has my whole Life been but a 'Sermon' of some emphasis; preached with tongue and sword, with head and heart and right hand, and soul and body and breeches-pocket,—not without results, one would venture to hope!"—This Clause, the Committee, expressly or tacitly, will modify as desired.*]

In the same Paragraph, there is care taken for the nominating of Commissioners to *try* the Members who are chosen to sit in Parliament. And truly those Commissioners are uncertain Persons; and it is hard to say what may happen. I hope they will be always good men;—but if they should be bad, then perhaps they will keep out good men! Besides we think,—truly, if you will give us leave to help as to the "freedom of Parliament," this 'of the Commissioners' will be something that may go rather harshly down than otherwise! Very many reasons might be given: but I do only tender it to you. I think, If there were *no* Commissioners, it might be never a whit the worse:—if you make qualifications 'for Membership,' and any man presume to sit without those qualifications, you may deal with him. A man without qualifications, sitting there, is as if he were not chosen; and if he sit without being *chosen*, without having qualification,—I am sure the old custom was to send him to the Tower [*That will settle him!*], to imprison such a one! If any sit there that have not right to sit,—if any stranger come in upon a pretended title of *election*, perhaps it is a different case,—but if any sit there upon a pretence of *qualification* in him, you may send *him* to prison without more ado. Whether you think fit to do so or no, is parliamentary business:—I do but hint it to you. I believe, If any man had sat in former Parliaments without, 'for instance,' taking the oaths, &c., that were prescribed, it would have been fault enough in him. I believe something of that kind 'instead of your Forty-one Commissioners, might be equivalent to any other way, if not better.

[The Honorable House does not want any more concern with Nathaniel Tayler and his *Certificates*. This Paragraph remains unaltered. Forty-one Commissioners, Fifteen a quorum; future

Parliaments to name a future set when they like: the Examinations as to Members are to be by oath of informer in writing, with copies left, &c., and rigorous enough formalities.—Let us now glance at Article Fifth:

‘Article *Fifth* relates to the “Other House;” a new House of Lords we are getting up. Not more than Seventy of them, not fewer than Forty: they are to be nominated by your Highness and approved by this House: all classes excluded by the preceding Article from our body are of course excluded from theirs.’ His Highness has a remark to make on this also.]

In that Article, which I think is the Fifth Article [Yes], which concerns the Nomination of the Other House,—in the beginning of that Article it stands, That the House is to be nominated as you there design it,\* and the approbation is to be from This House,—I would say from the Parliament. It stands so. But then now, if any shall be subsequently named, after the Other House *is sat*, upon any accidental removal or death,—you do not say ‘How.’ Though it seems to refer to the same ‘rule’ as the first ‘original’ selection doth; yet it doth not so clearly intimate this, That the nomination shall be, where it was, with the Chief Officer,† and the approbation of the “Other House.” If I do express clearly what you—Pardon me: but I think that is the aim of it; and it is not clearly expressed there;—as I think you will be able to judge whether it be or no.

[Article Fifth ruled as his Highness wishes. And now take Article Seventh:

‘Article *Seventh* promises, but does not say how, that there shall be a yearly revenue of 1,300,000*l.*; one million for Navy and Army, 300,000*l.* for the support of the Government. No part of it by a Land-tax. Other temporary supplies to be granted by the Commons in Parliament,—and neither this Revenue nor any other charge whatever to be laid upon the subject except according to the Parliament’s direction and sanction.’ Such yearly Revenue the Parliament promises in this Petition and Advice, but does not specify in what way it shall be raised: which omission also his Highness fails not to comment on.]

In the Seventh Article, which concerns the Revenue, that is, the

\* ‘as you there design it:’ polite for ‘by me.’

† Cannot say ‘me.’

Revenue which you have appointed for the Government; wherein you have distributed Three-hundred thousand pounds of it to the Maintenance of the Civil Authority, and One-million to the maintenance of your Forces by Sea and Land:—you have indeed in your Instrument said so, ‘that there shall be such a Revenue,’ and we cannot doubt of it: but yet you have not made it certain; nor yet those “temporary supplies” which are intended for the peace and safety of the Nations. It is desired, That you will take this into your thoughts, and make the general and temporary allowances of Revenue *certain*, loth as to the sum and to the time those “supplies” are to be continued. [*Let us know what ground we stand on.*] And truly I hope I do not curry favor with you: but another thing is desired, and I may very reasonably desire it, That these monies, whatever they are;—that they may not, if God shall bring me to any interest in this business,\* as lieth at His disposal;—that these monies, ‘I say,’ may *not* be issued out by the authority of the Chief Magistrate, but by the advice of his Council. You have made in your Instrument a coördination of Council and Chief Magistrate in general terms: ‘but I could wish’ that this might be a specified thing, That the monies were not to be distributed ‘except by authority of both.’ It will be a safety to whosoever is your Supreme Magistrate, as well as a security to the Public, That the monies be issued out by advice of the Council, and that the Treasurers who receive these monies be accountable every Parliament, within a certain time limited by yourselves;—that’ every new Parliament, the Treasurer be accountable to the Parliament for the disposing of the Treasury.

[‘Article *Ninth*: Judges, Principal Officers of State, Commanders in Chief by Sea or Land, all chief officers civil and military, “are to be approved of by both Houses of Parliament.”’]

There is mention made of the Judges in your Ninth Article. It is mentioned that the Officers of State and the Judges are to be chosen with the approbation of Parliament. But now if there be no Parliament sitting, should there be never so great a loss of Judges, it cannot be supplied. And whether you do not intend that, in the intervals of Parliament, it should be by the choice—[*Omit “of the Chief Magistrate,” or politely mumble it into indistinctness*],—with the consent of the Council; to be *afterwards* approved by Parliament?

\* If I live, and continue to govern.

[Certainly, your Highness ; reason so requires it. Be it tacitly so ruled.—And now for Article Twelfth :

‘ Article *Twelfth* (Let us still call it Article *Twelfth*, though in the ultimate Redaction it has come to be marked *Thirteenth*) :—Classes of persons incapable of holding any office. Same, I think, as those excluded from elections,—only there is no penalty annexed. His Highness makes some remarks upon this, under the Title of “ Article Twelfth ; ”—a new article introduced for securing Purchasers of Church Lands, which is now Article Twelfth,\* has probably pushed this into the Thirteenth place. ’]

The Twelfth Article relates to several qualifications that persons must be qualified with, who are put into places of Public Office and Trust. [*Treats all of disqualifications, your Highness ; which, however, comes to the same thing.*] Now if men shall step into Public Places and Trust who are not so qualified, ‘ I do not see but hereby still ’ they may execute them. “ Office of Trust ” is a very large word ; it goeth almost to a Constable, if not altogether ;—it goeth far. Now if any shall come in who are not so qualified, they certainly do commit a breach upon your rule :—and whether you will not think in this case that if any shall take upon him an Office of Trust, there shall not some *Penalty* be put upon him, where he is excepted by the general rule ? Whether you will not think it fit in that respect to deter men from accepting Offices and Places of Trust, contrary to that Article ?

[Nothing done in this. The “ Penalty,” vague in outline, but all the more terrible on that account, can be sued for by any complainant in Westminster Hall.

‘ Article *Thirteenth* suddenly provides that your Highness will be pleased to consent that “ Nothing in this Petition and Advice, or the assent thereto, shall be construed to extend to—the dissolving of this present Parliament ! ” ’—“ Oh, no ! ” answers his Highness in a kind of bantering way ; “ not in the least ! ”

The next ‘ Article ’ is fetched, in some respects, I may say, by head and shoulders into your Instrument ! Yet in some sense it hath an affinity ‘ with the rest, too ; ’ I may say, I think it is within your general scope† upon this account ;—‘ yes, ’ I am sure of it : There is mention made in the last parts of your Instrument [*Looking in the Paper ; Arti-*

\* Whitlocke, p. 659.

† ‘ order ’ *in orig.*

*ele Eighteen*] of your purpose to do many good things :—I am confident, *not* like the gentleman who made his last will, and set down a great number of names of men who were to receive benefit by him, and there *was* no sum at the latter end! [*“You cannot do these ‘many good things’ if I dissolve you! That will be a Will, with many beneficiary legatees, and no sum mentioned at the end!” His Highness wears a pleasant bantering look;—to which the countenances of the others, even Belstrode’s leaden countenance, respond by a kind of smile.*]

I am confident you are resolved to deal effectually in these things at the latter end; and I should wrong my own conscience if I thought otherwise. I hope you *will* think sincerely, as before God, “That the Laws be regulated!”\* I hope you will. We have been often talking of them :—and I remember well, at the Old Parliament [*Whillocke and Glyn look intelligence*], we were three months, and could not get over the word “Incumbrances” [*Hum—m—m!*]: and we thought there was little hope of “regulating the Law” where there was such difficulty as to that. But surely the Laws need to be regulated! And I must needs say, I think it were a sacrifice acceptable to God on many accounts. And I am persuaded it is one of the things that God looks for, and would have. [*Alas, your Highness!*—I confess, if any man should ask me, “Why, how would you have it done?” I confess I do not know How. But I think verily, at the least, the Delays in Suits, and the Excessiveness in Fees, and the Costliness of Suits, and those various things which I do not know what names they bear—I heard talk of “Demurrers” and such-like things, which I scarce know—[*Sentence is wrecked*]!—But I say certainly, The people are greatly suffering in this respect; they are so. And truly if this whole business of Settlement, whatever be the issue of it, if it come, which I am persuaded it doth, as a thing that would please God :—‘then,’ by a sacrifice ‘to God’ in it, or rather as an expression of our thankfulness to God, I am persuaded that *this* will be one thing that will be upon your hearts, to do something that is honorable and effectual in this. [*“Reforming of the Law!” Alas, your Highness!*—

‘Another thing’ that—truly I say that it is not in your Instrument—[*Nothing said of it there, which partly embarrasses his Highness; who is now getting into a small Digression!*—Somewhat that relates to the Reformation of Manners,—you will pardon me!—My Fellow Soldiers ‘the Major Generals,’ who were raised up upon that just occasion of the Insurrection, not only “to secure the Peace of the Nation,” but to see that persons who were least likely to help-on “peace” or to continue it,

\* One of their concluding promises (Article Eighteen)

but rather to break it—[“ *These Major-Generals, I say, did look after the restraining of such persons; suppressed their horse-racings, cock-fightings, sinful roysterings; took some charge of ‘REFORMATION OF MANNERS,’ they :—but his Highness is off elsewhither, excited by this tickle subject,’ and the Sentence has evaporated* ]—Dissolute loose persons that can go up and down from house to house,—and they are Gentlemen’s sons who have nothing to live on, and cannot be supplied with means of living to the profit of the Commonwealth: these I think had a good course taken with them. [*Ordered to fly-away their game-cocks, unmuzzle their bear-baitings; fall to some regular livelihood, some fixed habitat, if they could,—and, on the whole, to duck low, keep remarkably quiet, and give no rational man any trouble with them which could be avoided!*] And I think what was done to them was honorably and honestly and profitably done. And, for my part, I must needs say, It\* showed the dissoluteness which was then in the Nation;—as indeed it springs most from that Party of the Cavaliers! Should that Party ruin on, and no care be taken to reform the Nation; to prevent, perhaps, abuses which will not fall under *this* head alone—! [*Not under Reformation of MANNERS alone: what will the consequence be?*]

We send our children into France before they know God or Good Manners;† and they return with all the licentiousness of that Nation. Neither care taken to educate them before they go, nor to keep them in good order when they come home! Indeed this makes the Nation not only commit those abominable things, most inhuman things, but hardens men to justify these things;—as the Apostle saith, “Not only to do wickedly themselves, but to take pleasure in them that do so.” And truly, if something be not done in this kind, ‘in the way of reforming public morals,’ without sparing that condition of men, without sparing men’s sons, though they be Noblemen’s sons—! [*Sentence breaks down*]—Let them be who they may that are deoboist, it is for the glory of God that nothing of outward consideration should save them in their debauchery, from a just punishment and reformation! And truly I must needs say it, I would much bless God to see something done in that matter heartily, not only as to those persons mentioned, but to all the Nation; that some course might be taken for Reformation; that there might be some stop put to such a current of wickedness and evil as this is! And truly, to do it heartily, and nobly and worthily! The Nobility of this Nation, they especially, and the Gentry, would have cause to bless you.

\* The course taken with them; the quantity of coercion they needed, and of complaint made thereupon, are all loosely included in this “It.”

† Morals.



And likewise that some care might be taken that those good Laws already made for punishing of vice might be put in execution.

This I must needs say of our Major-Generals who did that service ; I think it was an excellent good thing ;—I profess I do ! [*Yes ; though there were great outcries about it.*] And I hope you will not think it unworthy of you ‘ to consider ’ that though we may have good Laws against the common Country disorders that are everywhere, yet Who is to execute them ‘ now, the Major-General being off ? ’ Really a Justice of the Peace,—he shall by the most be wondered at as an owl, if he go but one step out of the ordinary course of his fellow Justices in the reformation of these things ! [*Cannot do it ; not he.*] And therefore I hope I may represent this to you as a thing worthy your consideration, that something may be found out to repress such evils. I am persuaded you would glorify God by this as much as by any one thing you could do. And therefore I hope you will pardon me.

[His Highness looks to the Paper again, after this Digression. Article *Fifteenth* in his Highness’s copy of the Paper, as we understand, must have provided ‘ That no part of the Public Revenue be alienated except by consent of Parliament : ’ but his Highness having thus remonstrated against it, the Article is suppressed, expunged ; and we only gather by this passage that such a thing had ever been.]

I cannot tell, in this Article that I am now to speak unto, whether I speak to anything or nothing ! There is a desire that ‘ no part of ’ “ the Public Revenues be alienated except by consent of Parliament.” I doubt “ Public Revenue ” is like “ *Custodes Libertatis Angliæ* ; a notion only ; and not to be found that I know of ! [*It is all alienated ; Crown Lands, &c., are all gone, long ago. A beautiful dream of our youth, as the “ Keepers of the LIBERTY of England ” were,—a thing you could nowhere lay hands on, that I know of !*] But if there be any,—and if God bless us in our Settlement, there will be Public Revenue accruing,—the point is, Whether you will subject this to any alienation without consent of Parliament ?

[We withdraw the question altogether, your Highness : when once the chickens are hatched, we will speak of selling them !— Let us now read Article *Sixteenth* :

Article *Sixteenth*, in his Highness’s copy of the Paper, ‘ **Pro-**vides that no Act or Ordinance already extant, which is not con

trary to this Petition and Advice, shall be in the least made void hereby.'—His Highness, as we shall see, considers this as too indefinite, too indistinct;—a somewhat vague foundation for Church-Land estates (for example), which men purchased with money, but hold only in virtue of Writs and Ordinances issued by the Long Parliament.—A new Article is accordingly added, in our Perfect-copy; specifying, at due breadth, with some hundreds of Law-vocables, that all is and shall be safe, according to the common sense of mankind, in that particular.]

Truly this thing that I have now farther to offer you,—it is the last in this Paper; it is the thing mentioned in the Sixteenth Article: That you would have those Acts and Ordinances which have been made since the late troubles, and during the time of them, 'kept unabrogated!' that they should, if they be not contrary to this Advice,\*—that they should remain in force, in such manner as if this Advice had not been given. Why, what is doubted is, Whether or no this will be sufficient to keep things in a settled condition?† Because it is but an implication 'that you here make;' it is not determined. You do pass-by the thing, without such a foundation as will keep those people, who are now in possession of Estates upon this account, that their titles be not questioned or shaken,—if the matter be not explained. Truly I believe you intend very fully in regard to this 'of keeping men safe who have purchased on that footing.' If the words already 'used' do not suffice—That I submit to your own advisement.

But there is in this another very great consideration. There have been, since the present Government 'began,' several Acts and Ordinances, which have been made by the exercise of that Legislative Power that was exercised since we undertook this Government. [*Very cumbersome phraseology, your Highness;—for indeed the subject is somewhat cumbersome. Questionable, to some, whether one CAN make Acts and Ordinances by a mere Council and Protector!*] And I think your Instrument speaks a little more faintly 'as' to these, and dubiously, than to the other! And truly, I will not make an apology for anything: but merely two persons, two sorts of them, 'very extensive sorts,' will be merely concerned upon this account: They who exercised that authority, and they who were objects of its exercise! This wholly dissettles them; wholly, if you be not clear in your expressions. It will dissettle us very

\* *Petition* and Advice; but we politely suppress the former part of the name.

† It was long debated; see *Burton*.

much to think that the Parliament doth not approve well of what hath been done 'by us' upon a true ground of necessity, in so far as the same hath saved this Nation from running into total arbitrariness. 'Nay, if not,' why subject the Nation to a sort of men who perhaps would do so.\* We think we have in that thing deserved well of the State [*Do not "dissettle" his Highness! He has, "in that thing" of assuming the Government and passing what Ordinances, &c., were indispensable "deserved well."*—*Committee of Ninety-nine agree to what is reasonable.*

If any man will ask me, "But ah, Sir, what have you done *since*?"—Why, ah,—as I will confess my fault where I am guilty, so I think, taking things as they 'then' were, I think we have done the Commonwealth service! We have therein made great settlements,—that have we. We have settled almost all the whole affairs in Ireland; the rights and interests of the Soldiers there, and of the Planters and Adventurers. An truly we have settled very much of the business of the Ministry;—["*Triers*" diligent here, "*Expurgators*" diligent everywhere; much good work completed.] and I wish that be not an aggravation of our fault;† I wish it be not! But I must needs say, If I have anything to rejoice in before the Lord in this world, as having done any good or service, 'it is this.' I can say it from my heart; and I know I say the truth, let any man say what he will to the contrary,—he will give me leave to enjoy my own opinion in it, and my own conscience and heart; and 'to' dare bear my testimony to it, There hath not been such a service to England since the Christian Religion was perfect in England! I dare be bold to say it; however there may have, here and there, been passion and mistakes. And the Ministers themselves, take the generality of them—["*are unexceptionable, nay exemplary as Triers and as Expurgators:*" but his Highness, blazing up at touch of this tender topic, wants to utter three or four things at once, and his "*elements of rhetoric*" fly into the ELEMENTAL state! We perceive he has got much blame for his *Two Church Commissions*; and feels that he has deserved far the reverse.]—They will tell 'you,' it is beside their instructions, 'if they have fallen into "passion and mistakes," if they have meddled with civil matters, in their operations as Triers!' And we did adopt the thing upon that account; we did not trust upon doing what we did *virtute Instituti*, as if 'these Triers were' *jure divino*, but as a civil good. But—[Checks himself]—so we end in this: We 'knew not and' know not better how to keep the Ministry

\* Why subject the Nation to *us*, who perhaps would drive it into arbitrariness, as your non-approval of us seems to insinuate?

† 'be not to secure the grave men' (Scott's *Somers*, p. 399) is unadulterated nonsense: for *grave men* read *gravemen*, and we have dubiously sense as above: "an aggravation of our fault with such objectors."

good, and to augment it in goodness, than by putting such men to be Triers. Men of known integrity and piety ; orthodox men and faithful. We knew not how better to answer our duty to God and the Nation and the People of God, in that respect, than by doing what we did.

And, I dare say, if the grounds upon which we went will not justify us, the issue and event of it doth abundantly justify us ; God having had exceeding glory by it,—in the generality of it, I am confident, forty-fold ! For as heretofore the men that were admitted into the Ministry in times of Episcopacy—alas what pitiful Certificates served to make a man a Minister ! [*Forty-fold better now.*] If any man could understand Latin and Greek, he was sure to be admitted ;—as if he spake Welsh ; which in those days went for Hebrew with a good many ! [*Satirical. “ They studied Pan, Bacchus, and the Longs and Shorts, rather than their Hebrew Bible, and the Truths of the Living Jehovah ! ”*] Certainly the poorest thing in the world would serve a turn ; and a man was admitted upon such an account [*As this of mere Latin and Greek, with a suspicion of Welsh-Hebrew*] ;—ay, and upon a less.—I am sure the admission granted to such places *since* has been under this character as the rule : That they must not admit a man unless they were able to discern something of the Grace of God in him. [*Really it is the grand primary essential, your Highness. Without which, Pan, Bacchus, Welsh-Hebrew, nay Hebrew itself, must go for nothing,—nay for less, if we consider well. In some points of view, it is horrible !*] ‘ Grace of God ; ’ which was to be so inquired for, as not foolishly nor senselessly, but so far as men could judge according to the rules of Charity. Such and such a man, of whose good life and conversation they could have a very good testimony from four or five of the neighboring ministers who knew him,—he could not yet be admitted unless he could give a very good testimony of the Grace of God in him. And to this I say, I must speak my conscience in it,\*—though a great many are angry at it, nay if all are angry at it—for how shall you please everybody ?

Then say some, None must be admitted except, perhaps, he will be baptized ‘ again.’ That is their opinion. [*Anabaptists.*] They will not admit a man into a Congregation to be Minister, except he commence by being so much *less*. The Presbyterians ‘ again,’ they will not admit him unless he be “ ordained.” Generally *they* will not go to the Independents :—truly I think, if I be not partial, I think if there be a freedom of judgment, it is there. [*With the Independents : that is your Highness’s opinion.*] Here are Three sorts of Godly Men whom you are to take care for ; whom you have provided for in your Settlement. And how could you put the selection upon the Presbyterians without by possibility

\* “ I do approve it,” is modestly left out.

excluding all those Anabaptists, all those Independents! And so now you have put it into this way, That though a man be of any of those three judgments, if he have the root of the matter in him, he may be admitted. [*Very good, your Highness!*] This hath been our care and work; both by some Ordinances of ours, laying the foundations of it, and by many hundreds of Ministers being 'admitted' in upon it. And if this be a "time of Settlement," then I hope it is not a time of shaking;—and therefore I hope you will be pleased to settle this business too: and that you will neither "shake" the Persons [*Us*] who have been soorly instrumental in calling you to this opportunity of settling this Nation, and of doing good to it; nor shake those honest men's interests who have been thus settled. And so I have done with the offers to you, --'with these my suggestions to you.'—

[His Highness looks now on the Paper again; looks at Article Seventh there, 'That the Revenue shall be 1,300,000*l.*;' and also at a Note by himself of the Current Expenses;—much wondering at the contrast of the two; not having Arithmetic enough to reconcile them!]

But here is somewhat that is indeed exceedingly past my understanding; for I have as little skill in Arithmetic as I have in Law! These are great sums; it is well if I can count them to you. [*Looking on his Note.*] The present charge of the Forces both by Sea and Land will be 2,426,989*l.* The whole present Revenue in England, Scotland and Ireland, is about 1,900,000*l.*; I think this was reckoned the most, as the Revenue now stands. Why, now, towards this you settle, by your Instrument, 1,300,000*l.* for the Government; and out of that "to maintain the Force by Sea and Land," and without Land-tax," I think: and this is short of the Revenue which now can be raised by the 'present Act of' Government 600,000*l.*! [*A grave discrepancy!*] Because, you see, the present Government has 1,900,000*l.*; and the whole sum which can be raised comes 'short' of the present charge by 542,689*l.*,—[*So his Highness says; but, by the above data, must be mistaken or misreported: 526,989*l.* is what Arithmetic gives.*] And although an end should be put to the Spanish War, yet there will be a necessity, for preserving the peace of the three Nations, to keep up the present established Army in England, Scotland and Ireland; also a considerable Fleet for some good time, until it shall please God to quiet and compose men's minds, and bring the Nation to some better consistency. So that, considering the Pay of the Army, which comes to upwards of 1,100,000*l.* *per annum*, and the "Support of the Government" 300,000*l.*, it will be necessary for

some convenient time,—seeing you find things as you do, and it is not good to think a wound healed before it be,—that there be raised, over and above the 1,300,000*l.*, the sum of 600,000*l. per annum*; which makes up the sum of 1,900,000*l.* And likewise that the Parliament declare, How far they will carry on the Spanish War and for what time; and what further sum they will raise for carrying on the same, and for what time. [*Explicit, and undeniable!*] And if these things be not ascertained,—as one saith “Money is the Cause,” and certainly whatever the Cause is, if Money be wanting, the business will fall to the ground,—all our labor will be lost. And therefore I hope you will have a care of our undertakings!—[*Most practical paragraph.*]

And having received expressions from you which we may believe, we need not offer these things to you; ‘we need not doubt’ but these things will be cared for. Those things have ‘already in Parliament’ been made overture of to you; and are before you:—and so has likewise the consideration of the Debts, which truly I think are apparent.

And so I have done with what I had to offer you,—I think I have truly, for my part. [*“Nothing of the Kingship, your Highness?” Committee of Ninety-nine looks expectant*].—And when I shall understand where it lies on me to do farther; and when I shall understand your pleasure in these things a little farther;—we have answered the Order of Parliament in considering and debating of those things that were the subject-matter of debate and consideration;—and when you will be pleased to let me hear farther of your thoughts in these things, then I suppose I shall be in a condition to discharge myself [*Throws no additional light on the Kingship at all!*] as God shall put in my mind. And I speak not this to evade; but I speak in the fear and reverence of God. And I shall plainly and clearly, I say,—when you shall have been pleased among yourselves to take consideration of these things, that I may hear what your thoughts are of them,—I do not say that as a condition to anything—but I shall then be free and honest and plain to discharge myself of what, in the whole and upon the whole, may reasonably be expected from me, and ‘what God shall set me free to answer you in.’\*

*Exeunt* the Ninety-nine, much disappointed: the Moderns too look very weary. Courage, my friends, I now see land!—

This Speech forms by far the ugliest job of *buckwashing* (as Voltaire calls it) that his Highness has yet given us. As printed in the last edition of *Somers*, it is perhaps the most unadulterated piece of coagulated nonsense that was ever put into types by hu-

\* Somers Tracts, vi, 389–400.

man kind. In order to educe some sense out of it as above, singularly few alterations, except in the punctuation, have been required; no change that we could detect has been made in the style of dialect, which is physiognomic and ought to be preserved; in the meaning, as before, all change was rigorously forbidden. In only one or two places, duly indicated, did his Highness's sense, on earnest repeated reading, continue dubious. And now the horrid buck-basket is reduced in some measure to clean linen or huckabuck: thanks be to Heaven!—

For the next ten days there is nothing heard from his Highness, much as must have been *thought* by him in that space. The Parliament is occupied incessantly considering how it may as far as possible fulfil the suggestions offered in this Speech of his Highness; assiduously perfecting and new polishing the Petition and Advice according to the same. Getting bills ready for 'Reformation of Manners,'—with an eye on the 'idle fellows about Piccadilly,' who go bowling and gambling, with much tippling too, about 'Piccadilly House' and its green spaces.\* Scheming out how the Revenue can be raised:—'Land-tax' alas, in spite of former protest on that subject; 'tax on new buildings' (Lincoln's Inn Fields for one place), which gives the public some trouble afterwards. Doing somewhat also in regard to 'Triers for the Ministry:' to 'Penalties' for taking Office when disqualified by Law; and very much debating and scrupling as to what Acts and Ordinances (of his Highness and Council) are to be confirmed.

Finally, however, on Friday, 1st of May, the Petition and Advice is again all ready; and the Committee of Ninety-nine wait upon his Highness with it;† who answers briefly, 'speaking very low,' That the things are weighty and will require meditation; that he cannot just at present say On what day he will meet them to give his final answer, but will so soon as possible appoint a day.

So that the Kingship remains yet a great mystery! 'By the

\* Dryasdust knows a little piece of Archæology: How 'piccadillies' quasi Spanish *peccadillos*, or *little sins*, a kind of notched linen tippet used to be sold in a certain Shop there: whence, &c., &c.

† Burton, ii., 101.

generality' it is understood that he will accept it. But to the generality, and to us, the interior consultations and slow-formed resolutions of his Highness remain and must remain entirely obscure. We can well believe with Ludlow, sulkily breathing the air in Essex, who is incorrect as to various details, That in general a portion of the Army were found averse to the Title; a more considerable portion than the Title was worth. Whereupon, 'for the present,' as Bulstrode indicates, his Highness did decide to'—in fact speak as follows.

---

### SPEECH XIII.

BANQUETING-HOUSE, Whitehall, Friday forenoon, 8th May, 1657, the Parliament in a body once more attends his Highness; receives at length a final Answer as to this immense matter of the Kingship. Which the reader shall now hear, and so have done with it.

The Whitlocke Committee of Ninety-nine had, by appointment, waited on his Highness yesterday, Thursday, May 7th; gave him 'a Paper,'—some farther last touches added to their ultimate painfully revised edition of the Petition and Advice, wherein all his Highness's suggestions are now, as much as possible, fulfilled; and were in hopes to get some intimation of his Highness's final answer then. Highness, "Sorry to have kept them so long," requested they would come back next morning. Next morning, Friday morning: "We have been there; his Highness will see you all in the Banqueting-House even now."\* Let us shoulder our Mace, then, and go.—'Petition of certain Officers,' that Petition which Ludlow,† in a vague erroneous manner represents to have been the turning-point of the business, is just 'at the door:' we receive it, leave it on the table, and go. And now hear his Highness.

MR. SPEAKER,

I come hither to answer That that was in your last Paper to your Committee you sent to me 'yesterday;' which was in

\* Commons Journals, vii., 531.

† ii., 588, &c., the vague passage always cited on this occasion.



relation to the Desires that were offered me by the House in That they called their Petition.

I confess, that Business hath put the House, the Parliament, to a great deal of trouble, and spent much time.\* I am very sorry for that. It hath cost me some 'trouble,' and some thoughts: and because I have been the unhappy occasion of the expense of so much time, I shall spend little of it now.

I have, the best I can, revolved the whole Business in my thoughts and I have said so much already in testimony to the whole, I think I shall not need to repeat what I have said. I think it is an 'Act of' Government which, in the aims of it, seeks the Settling of the Nation on a good foot, in relation to Civil Rights and Liberties, which are the Rights of the Nation. And I hope I shall never be found one of them that go about to rob the Nation of those Rights;—but 'always' to serve it what I can to the attaining of them. It has also been exceedingly well provided there for the safety and security of honest men in that great natural and religious liberty, which is Liberty of Conscience.—These are the great Fundamentals; and I must bear my testimony to them; as I have done, and shall do still, so long as God lets me live in this world: That the intentions and the things are very honorable and honest, and the product worthy of a Parliament.

I have only had the unhappiness, both in my Conferences with your Committees, and in the best thoughts I could take to myself, not to be convinced of the necessity of that thing which hath been so often insisted on by you,—to wit, the Title of King;—as in itself so necessary as it seems to be apprehended by you. And yet I do, with all honor and respect, testify that, *cæteris paribus*, no private judgment is to be in the balance with the judgment of Parliament. But in things that respect particular persons,—every man who is to give an account to God of his actions, he must in some measure be able to prove his own work, and to have an approbation in his own conscience of that which he is to do or to forbear. And whilst you are granting others Liberties, surely you will not deny *me* this; it being not only a Liberty but a Duty, and such a Duty as I cannot without sinning forbear,—to examine my own heart and thoughts and judgment, in every work which I am to set my hand to, or to appear in or for.

I must confess therefore, though I do acknowledge all the other 'points,' I must be a little confident in this, That what with the circumstances which accompany human actions,—whether they be circumstances of time or persons [*Strailaced Republican Soldiers that have just*

\* 23 Feb.—8 May: ten weeks and more.

*been presenting you their Petition*], whether circumstances that relate to the whole, or private and particular circumstances such as compass any person who is to render an account of his own actions,—I have truly thought, and I do still think, that, at the best, if I should do anything on this account to answer your expectation, at the best I should do it doubtingly. And certainly whatsoever is so is not of faith. And whatsoever is not so, whatsoever is not of faith, is sin to him that doth it,—whether it be with relation to the substance of the action about which that consideration is conversant, or whether to circumstances about it [*Thinskinners Republicans or the like “circumstances”*], which make all indifferent actions good or evil. I say “Circumstances” [*Yes!*]; and truly I mean “good or evil” to him that doth it. [*Not to you Honorable Gentlemen who have merely advised it in general.*]

I, lying under this consideration, think it my duty—Only I could have wished I had done it sooner, for the sake of the House, who have laid such infinite obligations on me [*With a kind glance over these honorable faces; all silent as if dead, many of them with their mouths open*]; I wish I had done it sooner for your sake, and for saving time and trouble; and for the Committee’s sake, to whom I must acknowledge I have been unreasonably troublesome! But truly this is my answer, That (although I think the Act of Government doth consist of very excellent parts, in all but that one thing, of the Title as to me) I should not be an honest man, if I did not tell you that I cannot accept of the Government, nor undertake the trouble and charge of it—as to which I have a little more experimented than everybody what troubles and difficulties do befall men under such trusts, and in such undertakings—[*Sentence irrecoverable*].—I say I am persuaded to return this answer to you, That I cannot undertake this Government with the Title of King. And that is mine answer to this great and weighty Business.\*

And so *exéunt* Widdrington and Parliament: “Buzz, buzz! Distinct at last;”—and the huge buzzing of the public mind falls silent, that of the Kingship being now ended;—and this Editor and his readers are delivered from a very considerable weariness of the flesh.

‘The Protector,’ says Bulstrode, ‘was satisfied in his private judgment that it was fit for him to accept this Title of King, and

\* Commons Journals, vii., 533; as reported by Speaker Widdrington, on Tuesday the 12th. Reported too in *Somers* (pp. 400-1), but in the form of coagulated nonsense there. The Commons Journals give it, as here, with no variation worth noticing, in the shape of sense.

matters were prepared in order thereunto. But afterwards, by solicitation of the Commonwealth's-men,' by solicitation, representation and even denunciation from 'the Commonwealth's-men' and 'many Officers of the Army,' he decided to attend some better season and opportunity in the business, and refused at this time.\* With which summary account let us rest satisfied. The secret details of the matter are dark, and are not momentous. The Lawyer-party, as we saw, were all in favor of the measure. Of the Soldier-party, Ex-Major-Generals Whalley, Goffe, Berry, are in a dim way understood to have been for it; Desborow and Fleetwood strong against it; to whom Lambert, much intriguing in the interim, had at last openly joined himself.† Which line of conduct, so soon as it became manifest, procured him from his Highness a handsome dismissal. Dismissal from all employment; but with a retiring pension of 2000*l.*: which mode of treatment passed into a kind of proverb, that season; and men of wooden wit were wont to say to one another, "I will *Lambertise* you."‡ The 'great Lord Lambert,' hitherto a very important man, now 'cultivated flowers at Wimbledon;' attempted higher things, on his own footing, in a year or two, with the worst conceivable success; and in fact had at this point, to all reasonable intents, finished his public work in the world.

The rest of the Petition and Advice, so long discussed and conferenced upon, is of course accepted;§ a much improved Frame of Government; with a Second House of Parliament; with a Chief Magistrate who is to 'nominate his successor;' and be King in all points except the name. News of Blake's victory at Santa Cruz reach us in these same days,|| whereupon is Public Thanksgiving, and voting of a Jewel to General Blake: and so, in a general tide of triumphant accordance, and outward and inward prosperity, this Second Protectorate Parliament advances to the end of its First Session.

\* Whitlocke, p. 646.

† Godwin, iv., 352, 367.

‡ Heath's Chronicle.

§ Commons Journals, vii., 358 (25 May, 1657); Whitlocke, p. 648.

|| 28 May (Commons Journals, vii., 54; Burton, ii., 142).

## SPEECH XIV., LETTERS CLII.—CLVII.

THE Session of Parliament is prosperously reaching its close ; and during the recess there will be business enough to do. Selection of our new House of Lords ; carrying-on of the French League Offensive against Spain ; and other weighty interests. Of which the following small documents, one short official Speech, and six short, mostly official Letters are all that remain to us.

---

### SPEECH XIV.

PARLIAMENT has passed some Bills ; among the rest, some needful Money-Bills, Assessment of 340,000*l.* a-month on England, 6,000*l.* on Scotland, 9,000*l.* on Ireland ;\* to all which his Highness, with some word of thanks for the money, will now signify his assent. Unexceptionable word of thanks, accidentally preserved to us,† which, with the circumstances attendant thereon, we have to make conscience of reporting.

Tuesday morning, 9th June, 1657, Message comes to the Honorable House, That his Highness, in the Painted Chamber, requires their presence. They gather up their Bills ; certain Money-Bills ‘for an assessment towards the Spanish War ;’ and ‘divers other Bills, some of public, some of more private concernment,’ among which latter we notice one for settling Lands in the County of Dublin on Widow Bastwick and her four children, Dr. Bastwick’s widow, poor Susannah, who has long been a sollicitress in this matter : these Bills the Clerk of the Commons

\* Parliamentary History, xxi., 151 ; Commons Journals, vii., 554-7.

† Commons Journals, vii., 551-2

gathers up, the Sergeant shoulders his Mace ; and so, Clerk and Sergeant leading off, and Speaker Widdrington and all his Honorable Members following, the whole House in this due order, with its Bills and apparatus, proceeds to the Painted Chamber. There, on his platform, in chair of state sits his Highness, attended by his Council and others. Speaker Widdrington at a table on the common level of the floor ' finds a chair set for him, and a form for his clerk.' Speaker Widdrington, hardly venturing to sit, makes a ' short and pithy Speech' on the general proceedings of Parliament ; presents his Bills, with probably some short and pithy words, such as suggest themselves, prefatory to each : " A few slight Bills ; they are but as the grapes that precede the full vintage, may it please your Highness." His Highness in due form signifies assent ; and then says :

MR. SPEAKER,

I perceive that, among these many Acts of Parliament, there hath been a very great care had by the Parliament to provide for the just and necessary support of the Commonwealth by those Bills for the levying of money, now brought to me, which I have given my consent unto. Understanding it hath been the practice of those who have been Chief Governors to acknowledge with thanks to the Commons their care and regard of the Public, I do very heartily and thankfully acknowledge their kindness herein.\*

The Parliament has still some needful polishing-up of its Petition and Advice, other perfecting of details to accomplish : after which it is understood there will be a new and much more solemn Inauguration of his Highness ; and then the First Session will, as in a general peal of joy-bells, harmoniously close.

---

## LETTER CLII.

OFFICIAL Letter of Thanks to Blake, for his Victory at Santa Cruz on the 20th April last. The ' small Jewel' sent herewith

\* Commons Journals, vii., 552 ; Reported by Widdrington in the afternoon

is one of 500*l.* value, gratefully voted him by the Parliament ; among whom, as over England generally, there is great rejoicing on account of him. Where Blake received this Letter and Jewel we know not ; but guess it may have been in the Bay of Cadiz. Along with it, 'Instructions' went out to him to leave a Squadron of Fourteen Ships there, and come home with the rest of the Fleet. He died, as we said above, within sight of Plymouth, on the 7th of August following.

*'To General Blake, at Sea.'*

Whitehall, 10th June, 1657.

SIR,

I have received yours of — 'April last ;'\* and thereby the account of the good success it hath pleased God to give you at the Canaries, in your attempt upon the King of Spain's Ships in the Bay of Santa Cruz.

The mercy therein, to us and this Commonwealth, is very signal ; both in the loss the Enemy hath received, and also in the preservation of our 'own' ships and men ;† — which indeed was very wonderful ; and according to the goodness and loving-kindness of the Lord, wherewith His People hath been followed in all these late revolutions ; and doth call on our part, That we should fear before Him, and still hope in His mercy.

We cannot but take notice also how eminently it hath pleased God to make use of you in this service ; assisting you with wisdom in the conduct, and courage in the execution 'thereof ;' and have sent you a small Jewel, as a testimony of our own and the Parliament's good acceptance of your carriage in this Action. We are also informed that the Officers of the Fleet, and the Seamen, carried themselves with much honesty and courage ; and we are considering of a way to show our acceptance thereof. In the meantime, we desire you to return our hearty thanks and acknowledgments to them.

Thus, beseeching the Lord to continue His presence with you, I remain,

Your very affectionate friend,

'OLIVER P.'‡

\* Blank in MSS.

† '50 slain outright, 150 wounded : of ours' (Burton, ii., 142).

‡ Thurloe, vi., 342. 'Instructions to General Blake,' of the same date,

Land-General Reynolds has gone to the French Netherlands, with Six-thousand men, to join Turenne in fighting the Spaniards there ; and Sea-General Montague is about hoisting his flag to coöperate with them from the other element. By sea and land are many things passing ;—and here in London is the loudest thing of all : not yet to be entirely omitted by us, though now it has fallen very silent in comparison. Inauguration of the Lord Protector ; second and more solemn Installation of him, now that he is fully recognized by Parliament itself. He cannot yet, as it proves, be crowned King ; but he shall be installed in his Protectorship with all solemnity befitting such an occasion.

*Friday, 26th June, 1657.* The Parliament and all the world are busy with this grand affair ; the labors of the season being now complete, the last finish being now given to our new Instrument of Government, to our elaborate Petition and Advice, we will add this topstone to the work, and so, amid the shoutings of mankind, disperse for the recess. Friday at two o'clock, 'in a place prepared,' duly prepared with all manner of 'platforms,' 'cloths of state,' and 'seats raised one above the other,' 'at the upper end of Westminster Hall.' Palaceyard, and London generally, is all a-tiptoe, out of doors. Within doors, Speaker Widdrington and the Master of the Ceremonies have done their best ; the Judges, the Aldermen, the Parliament, the Council, the foreign Ambassadors and domestic Dignitaries without end ; chairs of state, cloths of state, trumpet-peals, and acclamations of the people—Let the reader conceive it ; or read in old Pamphlets the 'exact relation' of it with all the speeches and phenomena, worthier than such things usually are of being read.\*

'His Highness standing under the Cloth of State,' says Bulstrode, whose fine feelings are evidently touched by it, 'the Speaker in the name of the Parliament presented to him : First, a *Robe* of purple-velvet ; which the Speaker, assisted by Whitlocke and others, put upon his Highness. Then he,' the Speaker, 'delivered to him the *Bible* richly gilt and bossed,' an affecting symbolic Gift : 'After that, the Speaker girt the *Sword* about his

\* An exact Relation of the manner of the solemn Investiture, &c. (Reprinted in *Parliamentary History*, xxi. 152-160).

Highness ; and delivered into his hand the *Sceptre* of massy gold. And then, this done, he made a Speech to him on these several things presented ;' eloquent mellifluous Speech, setting forth the high and true significance of these several Symbols, Speech still worth reading ; to which his Highness answered in silence by dignified gesture only. 'Then Mr. Speaker gave him the Oath ;' and so ended, really in a solemn manner. 'And Mr. Manton, by prayer, recommended his Highness, the Parliament, the Council, the Forces by land and sea, and the whole Government and People of the Three Nations, to the blessing and protection of God.'— —And then 'the people gave several great shouts ;' and 'the trumpets sounded ; and the Protector sat in his chair of state, holding the Sceptre in his hand : ' a remarkable sight to see. 'On his right sat the Ambassador of France,' on his left some other Ambassador ; and all round, standing or sitting, were Dignitaries of the highest quality ; 'and near the Earl of Warwick, stood the Lord Viscount Lisle, stood General Montague and Whitlocke, each of them having a drawn sword in his hand,'—a sublime sight to some of us !\*

And so this Solemnity transacts itself ;—which at the moment was solemn enough ; and is not yet, at this or any hollowes moment of Human History, intrinsically altogether other. A really dignified and veritable piece of Symbolism ; perhaps the last we hitherto, in these quack-ridden histrionic ages, have been privileged to see on such an occasion.—The Parliament is prorogued till the 20th of January next ; the new House of Lords, and much else, shall be got ready in the interim.

---

### LETTER CLIII.

SEA-GENERAL MONTAGUE, whom we saw standing with drawn sword beside the chair of state, is now about proceeding to co-operate with Land-General Reynolds, on the despatch of real business.

\* Whitlocke, p. 661.



*For General Montague, on board the Naseby, in the Downs.*

Whitehall, 11th August, 1657.

SIR,

You having desired by several Letters to know our mind concerning your weighing anchor and sailing with the Fleet out of the Downs, we have thought fit to let you know, That we do very well approve thereof, and that you do cruise up and down in the Channel, in such places as you shall judge most convenient, taking care of the safety, interest, and honor of the Commonwealth.

I remain,

Your very loving friend,

‘OLIVER P.’\*

Under the wax of the Commonwealth Seal, Montague has written, *His Highness's letter, Aug<sup>st</sup>. 11, 1657, to comand mee to sayle.*

#### LETTER CLIV.

*For my loving friend John Dunch, Esquire.*

‘Hampton Court,’ 27th August, 1657

SIR,

I desire to speak with you; and hearing a report from Hursley that you were going to your Father's in Berkshire, I send this express to you, desiring you to come to me at Hampton Court.

With my respects to your Father,†—I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.‡

This is the John Dunch of Pusey; married, as we saw, to Mayor's younger Daughter, the Sister-in-law of Richard Cromwell: the Collector for us of those Seventeen Pusey Letters; of which we have here read the last. He is of the present Parliament, was of the former; seems to be enjoying his recess, travelling about in the Autumn Sun of those old days,—and vanishes

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 168). ‘Original Letter, in the possession of Thomas Lister Parker, Esq.’

† Father-in-Law, Mayor.

‡ Harris, p. 515

from History at this point, in the private apartments of Hampton Court.

---

### LETTER CLV.

GENERAL MONTAGUE, after a fortnight's cruising, has touched at the Downs again, '28th August, wind at S.S.W.,' being in want of some instruction on a matter that has risen.\* 'A Flushingier,' namely, 'has come into St. Maloes; said to have twenty-five ton of silver in her;' a Flushingier there, and 'six other Dutch Ships' hovering in the distance; which are thought to be carrying silver and stores for the Spaniards. Montague has sent Frigates to search them, to seize the very bullion if it be Spanish; but wishes fresh authority, in case of accident.

*'For General Montague, on board the Naseby, in the Downs.'*

Hampton Court, 30th August, 1657.

SIR,

The Secretary hath communicated to us your Letter of the 28th instant: by which you acquaint him with the directions you have given for the searching of a Flushingier and other Dutch Ships, which, as you are informed, have bullion and other goods aboard them, belonging to the Spaniard, the declared Enemy of this State.

There is no question to be made but what you have directed therein is agreeable both to the Laws of Nations and 'to' the particular Treaties which are between this Commonwealth and the United Provinces. And therefore we desire you to continue the same direction, and to require the Captains to be careful in doing their duty therein.

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

---

### LETTER CLVI.

By the new and closer Treaty signed with France in March last,‡ for assaulting the Spanish Power in the Netherlands, it was stipu-

\* His Letter to Secretary Thurloe (*Thurloe*, vi., 489).

† Thurloe, vi., 489.

‡ 23 March, 1656-7; Authorities in Godwin (iv., 540-3)

lated that the French King should contribute Twenty-thousand men, and the Lord Protector Six-thousand, with a sufficient Fleet ; which combined forces were straightway to set about reducing the three Coast Towns, Gravelines, Mardike and Dunkirk ; the former when reduced to belong to France, the two latter to England ; if the former should chance to be the first reduced, it was then to be given up to England, and held as cautionary till the other two were got. Mardike and Dunkirk, these were what Oliver expected to gain by this adventure. One or both of which strong Haven-towns would naturally be very useful to him, connected with the Continent as he was,—continually menaced with Royalist Invasion from that quarter ; and struggling, as the aim of his whole Foreign Policy was, to unite Protestant Europe with England in one great effectual league.\* Such was the French Treaty of the 23d of March last.

Oliver's part of the bargain was promptly and faithfully fulfilled. Six-thousand well-appointed men, under Commissary-General Reynolds, were landed, 'in new red coats,' 'near Boulogne on the 13th and 14th days of May' last ; and a Fleet under Montague, as we observe, sufficient to command those seas, and prevent all relief by ships in any Siege, is actually cruising there. Young Louis Fourteenth came down to the Coast to see the English Troops reviewed ; expressed his joy and admiration over them ;—and hath set them, the Cardinal and he have set them, to assault the Spanish Power in the Netherlands by a plan of their own ! To reduce not 'Gravelines, Mardike and Dunkirk,' on the Coast, as the Treaty has it, but Montmédi, Cambray and I know not what, in the Interior ;—the Cardinal doubling and shuffling, and by all means putting off the attack of any place whatever on the Coast ! With which arrangement Oliver Protector's dissatisfaction has at length reached a crisis ; and he now writes, twice on the same day, to his Ambassador, To signify peremptorily that the same must terminate.

Of 'Sir William Lockhart, our Ambassador in France' in these

\* *Foreign Affairs in the Protector's Time* (in *Somers Tracts*, vi., 329-39), by some ancient anonymous man of sense, is worth reading.

years, there were much more to be said than we have room for here. A man of distinguished qualities, of manifold adventures and employments; whose Biography, if he could find any Biographer with real industry instead of sham industry, and above all things with human *eyes* instead of pedant *spectacles*, might still be worth writing, in brief compass.\* He is Scotch; of the 'Lockharts of Lee' in Lanarkshire; has been in many wars and businesses abroad and at home;—was in *Hamilton's Engagement*, for one thing; and accompanied Dugald Dalgetty or Sir James Turner in those disastrous days and nights at Preston,† though only as a common Colonel then, and not noticed by anybody. In the next Scotch War, he received affronts from the Covenanted King; remained angrily at home, did not go to Worcester or elsewhere. The Covenanted King having vanished, and Lockhart's connexions being Presbyterian-Royalists, there was little outlook for him now in Scotland, or Britain; and he had resolved on trying France again. He came accordingly to London, seeking leave from the Authorities; had an interview with Oliver now newly made Protector,—who read the worth of him, saw the uses of him, advised him to continue where he was.

He did continue; married 'Miss Robina Sewster,' a Huntingdonshire lady, the Protector's Niece; has been our Ambassador in France near two years now;‡—does diplomatic, warlike, and whatever work comes before him, in an effectual and manful manner. It is thought by judges that in Lockhart the Lord Protector had the best Ambassador of that age. Nay, in spite of all considerations, his merits procured him afterwards a similar employment in Charles Second's time. We must here cease speaking of him; recommend him to some diligent succinct Biographer of insight, should such a one, by unexpected favor of the Destinies, turn up.

\* Noble (ii., 233-73) has reproduced, probably with new errors, certain mss. 'Family Memoirs' of this Lockhart, which are everywhere very vague, and in passages (that of Dunkirk for example) quite *mythological*. Lockhart's own Letters are his best Memorial;—for the present, drowned, with so much *ess*, in the deep slumber-lakes of *Thurloe*; with or without chance of recovery.

† *Antea*, vol. i., pp. 270-274.

‡ Since 30 Dec., 1655 ('Family Memoirs' in *Noble*, ii., 244).

‘To Sir William Lockhart our Ambassador in France.’\*

Whitehall, 31st August, 1657.

SIR,

I have seen your last letter to Mr. Secretary, as also divers others: and although I have no doubt either of your diligence or ability to serve us in so great a Business, yet I am deeply sensible that the French are very much short with us in ingenuoussnes† and performance. And that which increaseth our sense ‘of this’ is, The resolution we ‘for our part’ had, rather to overdo than to be behindhand in anything of our Treaty. And although we never were so foolish ‘as’ to apprehend that the French and their interests were the same with ours in all things, yet as to the Spaniard, who hath been known in all ages to be the most implacable enemy that France hath,—we never could doubt, before we made our Treaty, that, going upon such grounds, we should have been failed ‘towards’ as we are!

To talk of “giving us Garrisons” which are *inland*, as Caution for future action; to talk of “what will be done next Campaign,”—are but parcels of words for children. If they will give us Garrisons, let them give us Calais, Dieppe and Boulogne;—which I think they will do *as* soon as be honest in their words in giving us any one Spanish Garrison upon the coast into our hands! I positively think, which I say to you, they are afraid we should have any footing on that side ‘of the Water,’ though Spanish.

I pray you tell the Cardinal from me, That I think, if France desires to maintain its ground, much more to *get* ground upon the Spaniard, the performance of his Treaty with us will better do it than anything appears yet to me of any Design he hath!—Though we cannot so well pretend to soldiery as those that are with him; yet we think that, we being able by sea to strengthen and secure his Siege, and ‘to’ reinforce it as we please by sea, and the Enemy ‘being’ in capacity to do nothing to relieve it,—the best time to besiege that Place will be *now*. Especially if we consider that the French horse will be able so to ruin Flanders as that no succor can be brought to relieve the Place; and that the French Army and our own will have constant relief, as far as England and France can give it, without any manner of impediment,—especially considering the Dutch are now engaged so much to Southward‡ as they are.

\* Now with the Court at Peronne (Thurloe, vi., 482, 487); soon after at Paris (*Ib.*, 496).

† ‘ingenuity,’ as usual, *in orig.*

‡ Spain-ward: so much inclined to help the Spaniard, if Montague

I desire you to let him know That Englishmen have had so good experience of Winter expeditions, they are confident, if the Spaniard shall keep the field, As he cannot impede this work, so neither will he be able to attack anything towards France with a possibility of retreat.\* And what do all *delays* signify but 'even this:' The giving the Spaniard opportunity so much the more to reinforce himself; and the keeping our men another Summer to serve the French, without any color of a reciprocal, or any advantage to ourselves!—

And therefore if this will not be listened unto, I desire that things may be considered of To give us satisfaction for the great expense we have been at with our Naval Forces and otherwise; which out of an honorable and honest aim on our part hath been incurred, thereby to answer the Engagements we had made. And 'in fine' That consideration may be had how our Men may be put into a position to be returned to us;—whom we hope we shall employ to a better purpose than to have them continue where they are.

I desire we may know what France saith, and will do, upon this point. We shall be ready still, as the Lord shall assist us, to perform what can be reasonably expected on our part. And you may also let the Cardinal know farther, That our intentions, as they have been, will be to do all the good offices we can to promote the Interest common to us.†

Apprehending it is of moment that this Business should come to you with speed and surety, we have sent it by an Express.

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

## LETTER CLVII.

SAME date, same parties: an afterthought, by the same Express.

*'To Sir William Lockhart, our Ambassador in France.'*

Whitehall, 31st August, 1657.

SIR,

We desire, having written to you as we have, that the design be *Dunkirk*, rather than Gravelines; and much *more* that it be;—but one of them rather than fail.

would let them; a thing worth Mazarin's consideration too, though it *comes* in irregularly here!

\* You may cut off his retreat, if he venture that way.

† 'thereof' *in orig.*

† Thurloe, vi., 490.

We shall not be wanting, To send over, at the French charge, Two of our old regiments, and Two-thousand foot more, if need be,—if Dunkirk be the design.\* Believing that if the Army be well entrenched, and if La Ferté's Foot be added to it, we shall be able to give liberty to the greatest part of the French Cavalry to have an eye to the Spaniard, —leaving but convenient numbers to stand by the Foot.

And because this action will probably divert the Spaniard from assisting Charles Stuart in any attempt upon us, you may be assured that, if reality may with any reason be expected from the French, we shall do all reason on our part. But if indeed the French be so false to us as that they would not have us *have* any footing on that side the Water,—then I desire, as in our other Letter to you, That all things may be done in order to the giving us satisfaction 'for our expense incurred,' and to the drawing-off of our Men.

And truly, Sir, I desire you to take boldness and freedom to yourself in your dealing with the French on these accounts.

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

This Letter naturally had its effect : indeed there goes a witty sneer in France, "The Cardinal is more afraid of Oliver than of the Devil ;"—he ought indeed to fear the Devil much more, but Oliver is 'the palpabler Entity of the two !' Mardike was besieged straightway ; girt by sea and land, and the great guns opened on the 21st day of September next ; Mardike was taken before September ended ; and due delivery to our General was had of Mardike. The place was in a weak state ; but by sea and land all hands were now busy fortifying and securing it. An attempt to retake Mardike, by scalado or surprisal from the Dunkirk side, was made, next month, by Don John with a great Spanish Force, among which his Ex-Royal Highness the Duke of York, with Four English-Irish emigrant Regiments he has now got raised for him on Spanish pay, was duly conspicuous ; but it did not succeed ; it amounted only to a night of unspeakable tumult ; to much expenditure of shot on all sides, and of life on his Royal Highness's and Don John's side,—Montague pouring death-fire on them from his ships too, and 'four great flaming

\* Gravelines is to belong to *them* ; Dunkirk to *us* : Dunkirk will be much preferable.

† Thurloe, vi., 489.

links at the corners of Mardike Tower' warning Montague not to aim *thitherward*;—and 'the dead were carried-off in carts before sunrise.'\*

Let us add here, that Dunkirk, after gallant service shown by the Six-thousand, and brilliant fighting and victory on the sand-hills, was also got, next summer;† Lockhart himself now commanding there, poor Reynolds having perished at sea. Dunkirk too remained an English Garrison, much prized by England; till, in very altered times, his now Restored Majesty saw good to sell it, and the loyallest men had to make their comparisons.—On the whole we may say, this Expedition to the Netherlands was a successful one; the Six-thousand, 'immortal Six-thousand' as some call them,‡ gained what they were sent for, and much glory over and above.

This is the last Letter left to us of Oliver Cromwell's; this of the 31st August, 1657:—Oliver's great heroic Dayswork, and the small unheroic pious one of Oliver's Editor, is drawing to a close! But in the same hours while Oliver writes this Letter,—let us still spare a corner for recording it,—John Lilburn, Free-born John, or alas! only the empty *Case* of John, is getting buried; still in a noisy manner! Noisy John, set free from many prisons, had been living about Eltham lately, in a state of Quakerism, or Quasi-Quakerism. Here is the clipping from the old Newspaper:

'August 31st, 1657. Mr. John Lilburn, commonly known by the name of Lieutenant-Colonel Lilburn, dying on Saturday at Eltham, was this morning removed thence to London; and his corpse conveyed to the House called the *Mouth*, old, still extant *Bull-and-Mouth* Inn, 'at Aldersgate,—which is the usual meeting-place of the people called Quakers, to whom, it seems, he had lately joined in opinion. At this place, in the afternoon, there assembled a medley of people; among whom the Quakers were most eminent for number: and within the house a controversy

\* 22 October (Heath's Chronicle, p. 727; Carte's Ormond, ii., 175).

† 13 June, 1658, the fight; 15 June, the surrender; 24th, the delivery to Lockhart (Thurloe, vii., 155, 173, &c.). Clarendon, iii., 853-58.

‡ Sir William Temple, Memoirs, Part iii., 154 (cited by Godwin, iv., 547)



was, Whether the ceremony of a hearse-cloth' (pall) 'should be cast over his coffin? But the major part, being Quakers, would not assent; so the coffin was, about five o'clock in the evening, brought forth into the street. At its coming out, there stood a man on purpose to cast a velvet hearse-cloth over the coffin; and he endeavored to do it: but the crowd of Quakers would not permit him; and having gotten the body upon their shoulders, they carried it away without farther ceremony; and the whole company conducted it into Moorfields, and thence to the new Churchyard adjoining to Bedlam, where it lieth interred.\*

One noisy element, then, is out of this world:—another is fast going. Frantic-Anabaptist Sexby, over here once more on In surrectionary business, scheming out a new Invasion of the Charles-Stuart Spaniards and English-Irish Regiments, and just lifting anchor for Flanders again, was seized 'in the Ship *Hope*, in a mean habit, disguised like a countryman, and his face much altered by an overgrown beard;—before the Ship *Hope* could get under way, about a month ago.† Bushy-bearded Sexby, after due examination by his Highness, has been lodged in the Tower; where his mind falls into a very unsettled state. In October next he volunteers a confession; goes mad; and in the January following dies,‡ and to his own relief and ours disappears,—poor Sexby.

Sexby, like the Stormy Peterel, indicates that new Royalist-Anabaptist Tumult is a-brewing. 'They are as the waves of the Sea, they cannot rest; they must stir up mire and dirt,'—it is the lot appointed them! In fact, the grand Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion is again on the anvil; and they will try it, this year, even without the Preface of Assassination. New troubles are hoped from this new Session of Parliament, which begins in January. The 'Excluded Members' are to be readmitted then; there is to be a 'Second House:' who knows what possibilities of trouble! A new Parliament is always the signal for new Royalist attempts; even as the Moon to the waves of the sea: but we hope his Highness will be prepared for them!—

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 168).

† 24 July (Newspapers, in Cromwelliana, p. 167). ‡ Ibid., pp. 169-70

*Wednesday, 11th November, 1657.* ‘This day,’ say the old Newspapers, ‘the most Illustrious Lady, the Lady Frances Cromwell, youngest Daughter of his Highness the Lord Protector, was married to the most noble gentleman Mr. Robert Rich, Son of the Lord Rich, Grandchild of the Earl of Warwick and of the Countess-Dowager of Devonshire; in the presence of their Highnesses and of his Grandfather, and Father, and the said Countess, with many other persons of high honor and quality.’ At Whitehall, this blessed Wednesday; all difficulties now overcome;—which we are glad to hear of, ‘though our friends truly were very few!’—And on the Thursday of next week follows, at Hampton Court, the Lady Mary’s own wedding.\* Wedding ‘to the most noble lord, the Lord Fauconberg,’ lately returned from his Travels in foreign parts: a Bellasis of the Yorkshire kindred so named,—which was once very high in Royalism, but is now making other connexions. For the rest, a brilliant, ingenuous and hopeful young man, ‘in my opinion a person of extraordinary parts;’† of whom his Highness has made due investigation, and finds that it may answer.

And now for the new Session of Parliament which assembles in January next: the Second Session of Parliament, and indeed the last of this and of them all!

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 169).

† Lockhart’s report of him to Thurloe, after an interview at Paris, as ordered on Fauconberg’s return homeward, 21 March, 1657 (Thurloe, vi., 134; 125).

## SPEECHES XV., XVI., XVII.

THE First Session of this Parliament closed, last June, under such auspicious circumstances as we saw ; leaving the People and the Lord Protector in the comfortable understanding that there was now a Settlement arrived at, a Government possible by Law ; that irregular exercises of Authority, Major-Generals and such like, would not be needed henceforth for saving of the Commonwealth. Our Public Affairs, in the Netherlands and elsewhere, have prospered in the interim ; nothing has misgone. Why should not this Second Session be as successful as the First was ?—Alas, success, especially on such a basis as the humors and parliamentary talkings and self-developments of Four-hundred men, is very uncertain ! And indeed this Second Session meets now under conditions somewhat altered.

For one thing, there is to be a new House of Lords : we know not how that may answer ! For another thing, it is not now permissible to stop our Haselrigs, Scotts and Ashley Coopers at the threshold of Parliament, and say, Ye shall not enter : if they choose to take the Oath prescribed by this new Instrument, they have the power to enter, and only the Parliament itself can reject them. These, in this Second Session, are new elements ; on which, as we have seen, the generation of Plotters are already speculating ; on which naturally his Highness too has his anxieties. His Highness, we find, as heretofore, struggles to *do* his best and wisest, not yielding much to anxieties : but the result is, this Session has proved entirely unsuccessful ; perhaps the unsuccessfullest of all Sessions or Parliaments on record hitherto !—

The new House of Lords was certainly a rather questionable adventure. You do not improvise a Peerage :—no, his Highness is well aware of that ! Nevertheless ‘ somewhat to stand between me and the House of Commons ’ has seemed a thing desirable, a thing to be decided on : and this new House of Lords, this will be

a 'somewhat,'—the best that can be had in present circumstances. Very weak and small as yet, like a tree new-planted; but very certain to grow stronger, if it have real life in it, if there be in the nature of things a real necessity for it. Plant it, try it, this new Puritan Oliverian Peerage-of-Fact, such as it has been given us. The old Peerage-of-Descent, with its thousand years of strength,—what of the old Peerage has Puritan sincerity, and manhood and marrow in its bones, will, in the course of years, rally round an Oliver and his new Peerage-of-Fact,—as it is already by many symptoms showing a tendency to do. If the Heavens ordain that Oliver continue and succeed as hitherto, undoubtedly his new Peerage may succeed along with him, and gather to it whatever of the Old is worth gathering. In the meanwhile it has been enacted by the Parliament and him; his part is now, To put it in effect the best he can.

The List of Oliver's Lords can be read in many Books;\* but issuing as that matter did, it need not detain us here. Puritan Men of Eminence such as the Time had yielded: Skippon, Desborow, Whalley, Pride, Hewson, these are what we may call the *Napoleon-Marshals* of the business: Whitlocke, Haselrig, Lenthall, Maynard, old Francis Rouse, Scotch Warriston, Lockhart; Notabilities of Parliament, of Religious Politics, or Law. Montague, Howard, are there; the Earls of Manchester, Warwick, Mulgrave,—some six Peers; of whom only one, the Lord Eure from Yorkshire, would, for the present, take his seat. The rest of the Six as yet stood aloof; even Warwick, as near as he was to the Lord Protector, could not think† of sitting with such a Napoleon-Marshal as Major-General Hewson, who, men say, started as a Shoemaker in early life. Yes; in that low figure did Hewson start; and has had to fight every inch of his way up hitherto, doing manifold victorious battle with the Devil and the World as he went along,—proving himself a bit of right good stuff, thinks the Lord Protector! You, Warwicks and others, according to what sense of manhood you may have, you can look

\* Complete, in *Parliamentary History*, xxi., 167-9: incomplete, with angry contemporary glosses to each Name, which are sometimes curious,—in *Harleian Miscellany*, vi., 460-71.

† Ludlow, ii., 506

into this Hewson, and see if you find any manhood or worth in him ;—I have found some ! The Protector's List, compiled under great difficulties,\* seems, so far as we can now read it, very unexceptionable ; practical, substantial, with an eye for the New and for the Old ; doing between these two, with good insight, the best it can. There were some Sixty-three summoned in all ; of whom some Forty and upwards sat, mostly taken from the House of Commons :—the worst effect of which was that his Highness thereby lost some forty favorable votes in that other House ; which, as matters went, proved highly detrimental there.

However, Wednesday, 20th January, 1657-8, has arrived. The Excluded Members are to have remission,—so many of them as can take the Oath according to this New Instrument. His Highness hopes if they volunteer to swear this Oath, they will endeavor to keep it ; and seems to have no misgivings about them. He to govern and administer, and they to debate and legislate, in conformity with this Petition and Advice, not otherwise : this is, in word and in essence, the thing they and he have mutually with all solemnity bargained to do. It may be rationally hoped that in all misunderstandings, should such arise, some good basis of agreement will and must unfold itself between parties so related to each other. The common dangers, as his Highness knows and will in due time make known, are again imminent ; Royalist Plottings once more rife, Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion once more preparing itself.

But now the Parliament reassembling on this Wednesday the 20th, there begins, in the ' Outer Court,' since called the Lobby, an immense ' administering of the Oath,' the whole Parliament taking it ; Six Commissioners appearing ' early in the morn'g,' with due apparatus and solemnity, minutely described in the Journals and Old Books ;† and then laboring till all are sworn. That is the first great step. Which done, the Commons House constitutes itself ; appoints ' Mr. Smythe' Clerk, instead of Scobell, who has gone to the Lords, and with whom there is con-

\* Thurloe, vi., 648.

† Commons Journals, vii., 578 ; Whitlocke, p. 666 ; Burton, ii., 322.

tinual controversy thenceforth about 'surrendering of Records' and the like. In a little while (hour not named) comes Black Rod; reports that his Highness is in the Lords House, waiting for this House. Whereupon, Shoulder Mace,—yes, let us take the Mace,—and march. His Highness, somewhat indisposed in health, leaving the main burden of the exposition to Nathaniel Fiennes of the Great Seal who is to follow him, speaks to this effect; as the authentic Commons Journals yield it for us.

### SPEECH XV.

MY LORDS, AND GENTLEMEN 'OF' THE HOUSE OF COMMONS,

I meet you here in this capacity by the Advice and Petition of this present Parliament. After so much expense of blood and treasure, 'we are now' to search and try what blessings God hath in store for these Nations. I cannot but with gladness of heart remember and acknowledge the labor and industry that is past, 'your past labor,' which hath been spent upon a business worthy of the best men and the best Christians [*May it prove fruitful !*].

It is very well known unto you all what difficulties we have passed through, and what 'issue' we are now arrived at. We hope we may say we have arrived if not 'altogether' at what we aimed at, yet at that which is much beyond our expectations. The nature of this Cause, and the Quarrel, what that was at the first, you all very well know; I am persuaded most of you have been actors in it: It was the maintaining of the Liberty of these Nations; our Civil Liberties as Men, our Spiritual Liberties as Christians [*Have we arrived at that?*]. I shall not much look back; but rather say one word concerning the state and condition we are all now in.

You know very well, the first Declaration,\* after the beginning of this War, that spake to the life, was a sense held forth by the Parliament, That for some succession of time designs had been laid to innovate upon the Civil Rights of the Nations, 'and' to innovate in matters of Religion. And those very persons who, a man would have thought, should have had the least hand in meddling with Civil things, did justify them all. [*Zealous sycophant Priests, Sibthorp, Manwaring, Montagu, of the Laud fraternity: forced-loans, monopolies, ship-monies, all Civil Tyranny*]

\* Declaration, 2 August, 1642, went through the Lords House that day; it is in *Parliamentary History*, vi., 350. A thing of audacity reckoned almost impious at the time (see D'Ewes's *ms. Journal*, 23 July); corresponds in purport to what is said of it here.

*was right according to them!*]. All the ‘Civil’ transactions that were,—‘they justified them’ in their pulpits, presses, and otherwise! Which was verily thought, ‘had they succeeded in it,’ would have been a very good shelter to them, to innovate upon us in matters of religion also. And so to innovate as to eat out the core and power and heart and life of all Religion! By bringing on us a company of poisonous Popish Ceremonies [*Somewhat animated, your Highness!*], and imposing them upon those that were accounted “the Puritans” of the Nation, and professors of religion among us,—driving them to seek their bread in an howling wilderness! As was instanced to our friends who were forced to fly for Holland, New England, almost anywhither, to find Liberty for their Consciences.

Now if this thing hath been the state and sum of our Quarrel, and of those Ten Years of War wherein we were exercised; and if the good hand of God, for we are to attribute it to no other, hath brought this business thus home unto us as it is now settled in the Petition and Advice,—I think we have all cause to bless God, and the Nations have all cause to bless Him [*If we were of thankful just heart,—yea!*].

I well remember I did a little touch upon the Eighty-fifth Psalm when I spake unto you in the beginning of this Parliament.\* Which expresseth well what *we* may say, as truly as it was said of old by the Penman of that Psalm! The first verse is an acknowledgment to God that He “had been favorable unto His land,” and “brought back the captivity of His people;” and ‘then’ how that He had “pardoned all their iniquities and covered all their sin, and taken away all His wrath;”—and indeed of these unspeakable mercies, blessings, and deliverances out of captivity, pardoning of national sins and national iniquities. Pardon-ing, as God pardoneth the man whom He justifieth! He breaks through, and overlooks iniquity; and pardoneth because He will pardon. And sometimes God pardoneth Nations also!—And if the enjoyment of our present Peace and other mercies may be witnesses for God ‘to us,’—we feel and we see them every day.

The greatest demonstration of His favor and love appears to us in this: That He hath given us *Peace*;—and the blessings of Peace, to wit, the enjoyment of our Liberties civil and spiritual! [*Were not our prayers, and struggles, and deadly wrestlings, all even for this;—and we in some measure have it!*] And I remember well, the Church ‘in that same Eighty-fifth Psalm’ falls into prayer and into praises, great expectations of future mercies, and much thankfulness for the enjoyment of present mercies; and breaks into this expression: “Surely salvation is nigh unto them that fear Him; that glory may dwell in our land.” In

\* *Antea*, Speech VI., p. 265.

the beginning it is called His land ; “Thou hast been favorable to Thy land.” Truly I hope this is His land ! In some sense it may be given out it is God’s land. And he that hath the weakest knowledge, and the worst memory, can easily tell that we are “a Redeemed People,”—‘from the time’ when God was first pleased to look favorably upon us, ‘to redeem us’ out of the hands of Popery, in that never to be forgotten Reformation, that most significant and greatest ‘mercy’ the Nation hath felt or tasted ! I would but touch upon that,—but a touch : How God hath redeemed us, as we stand this day ! Not from trouble and sorrow and anger only, but into a blessed and happy estate and condition, comprehensive of all Interests, of every member, of every individual ;—‘an imparting to us’ of those mercies ‘there spoken of,’ as you very well see !

And then in what sense it is “our Land ;”—through this grace and favor of God, That He has vouchsafed unto us and bestowed upon us, with the Gospel, Peace, and rest out of Ten Years War ; and given us what we would desire ! Nay, who could have forethought, when we were plunged into the midst of our troubles, That ever the people of God should have had liberty to worship God without fear of enemies ? [*Strange : this “liberty” is to Oliver Cromwell a blessing almost too great for belief ; to us it has become as common as the liberty to breathe atmospheric air,—a liberty not once worth thinking of. It is the way with all attainments and conquests in this world. Do I think of Cadmus, or the old unknown Orientals, while I write with LETTERS ? The world is built upon the mere dust of Heroes ; once earnest-wrestling, death-defying, prodigal of their blood ; who now sleep well, forgotten by all their heirs.— “Without fear of enemies,” he says.*] Which is the very acknowledgment of the Promise of Christ that “He would deliver His from the fear of enemies, that they might worship Him in holiness and in righteousness all the days of their life.”

This is the portion that God hath given us ; and I trust we shall for ever heartily acknowledge it !—The Church goes on there, ‘in that Psalm,’ and makes her boast yet farther : “His salvation is nigh them that fear Him, that glory may dwell in our land.” His glory ; not carnal, nor anything related thereto : this glory of a Free possession of the Gospel ; this is that which we may glory in ! [*Beautiful, thou noble soul !—And very strange to see such things in the Journals of the English House of Commons. O Heavens, into what oblivion of the Highest have stupid, canting, cotton-spinning, partridge-shooting mortals fallen, since that January, 1658 !*] And it is said farther, “Mercy and Truth are met together ; Righteousness and Peace have kissed each other.” And ‘note,’ it shall be such righteousness as comes down from Heaven



"Truth shall grow out of the Earth, and Righteousness shall come down from Heaven." Here is the Truth of all 'truths;' here is the righteousness of God, under the notion of righteousness confirming *our* abilities,—answerable to the truth which He hath in the Gospel revealed to us! [*According to Calvin and Paul.*] And the Psalm closeth with this: "Righteousness shall go before Him, and shall set us in the way of His steps;"—that righteousness, that mercy, that love and that kindness which we have seen, and been make partakers of from the Lord, *it* shall be our Guide, to teach us to know the right and the good way; which is, To tread in the steps of mercy, righteousness and goodness that our God hath walked before us in.—

We 'too' have a Peace this day! I believe in my very heart, you all think the things that I speak to you this day. I am sure you have cause.

And yet we are not without the murmurings of many people, who turn all this grace and goodness into wormwood; who indeed are disappointed by the works of God. And those men are of several ranks and conditions; great ones, lesser ones,—of all sorts. Men, that are of the Episcopal spirit, with all the branches, the root and the branches;—who gave themselves a fatal blow in this Place,\* when they would needs make a "Protestation that no laws were good which were made by this House and the House of Commons in *their* absence;" and so without injury to others cut themselves off! 'Men of an Episcopal spirit:' indeed men that know not God; that know not how to account upon the works of God, how to measure them out; but will trouble Nations for an Interest which is but *mixed*, at the best,—made up of iron and clay, like the feet of Nebuchadnezzar's Image: whether they were more Civil or Spiritual was hard to say. But their continuance was like to be known beforehand [*Yes, your Highness!*]; iron and clay make no good mixtures, they are not durable at all!—

You have now a godly Ministry; you have a knowing Ministry; such a one as, without vanity be it spoken, the world has not. Men knowing the things of God, and able to search into the things of God,—by that only which can fathom those things in some measure. The spirit of a beast knows not the things of a man; nor doth the spirit of man know the things of God! "The things of God are known *by the Spirit*."†—Truly I will remember but one thing of those, 'the misguided persons now cast out from us:' Their greatest persecution hath been of the People

\* In this same House of Lords, on the 18th of December, 1641. Busy Williams the Lincoln Decoy-duck, with his Eleven too-hasty Bishops, *leading* the way in that suicide. (*Antea*, vol. i., p. 119.)

† 1 Corinthians, ii., 11.

of God ;—men really of the spirit of God, as I think very experience hath now sufficiently demonstrated !

But what's the reason, think you, that men slip in this age wherein we live ? As I told you before, They understand not the works of God. They consider not the operation of His Laws. They consider not that God resisted and broke in pieces the Powers that were, that men might fear Him ;—might have liberty to do and enjoy all that that we have been speaking of ! Which certainly God has manifested to have been the end ; and so hath He brought the things to pass ! *Therefore* it is that men yet slip, and engage themselves against God. And for that very cause, saith David (Psalm Twenty-eighth), “He shall break them down, and not bind them up !”

If, therefore, you would know upon what foundation you stand, own your foundation ‘to be’ from God. He hath set you where you are ; He hath set you in the enjoyment of your Civil and Spiritual Liberties.

I deal clearly with you,\* I have been under some infirmity ; [*His Highness still looks unwell.*] therefore dare not speak farther to you :—except to let you know thus much, That I have with truth and simplicity declared the state of our Cause, and our attainments in it by the industry and labor of this Parliament since they last met upon this foundation—You shall find I mean, Foundation of a Cause and Quarrel thus attained to, wherein we are thus estated.† I should be very glad to lay my bones with yours [*What a tone !* ]—and would have done it, with all heartiness and cheerfulness, in the meanest capacity I ever yet was in, to serve the Parliament.

If God give you, as I trust He will—[“*His blessing*” or “*strength* :” *but the Sentence is gone.* ]—He hath given it you, for what have I been speaking of but what you have done ? He hath given you strength to do what you have done ! And if God should bless you in this work, and make this Meeting happy on this account, you shall all be called the Blessed of the Lord. [*Poor Oliver !* ]—The generations to come will bless us. You shall be the “repairers of breaches, and the restorers of paths to dwell in !”‡ And if there be any higher work which mortals can attain unto in the world, beyond this, I acknowledge *my* ignorance of it.

As I told you, I have some infirmities upon me. I have not liberty to

\* Means “Give me leave to say.”

† This Parliament's ‘foundation,’ the ground *this* Parliament took its stand upon, was a recognition that our Cause had been so and so, that our ‘attainment’ and ‘estate’ in it were so and so ; hence their *Petition and Advice*, and other very salutary labors.

‡ Isaiah, lviii., 12.

peak more unto you ; but I have desired an Honorable Person here by me [*Glancing towards Nathaniel Fiennes, him with the Purse and Seal.*] to discourse, a little more particularly, what may be more proper for this occasion and this meeting.\*

Nathaniel Fiennes follows in a long, highflown, ingenious Discourse,† characterized by Dryasdust, in his Parliamentary History and other Works, as false, canting, and little less than insane ; for which the Anti-Dryasdust reader has by this time learned to forgive the fatal Doctor of Darkness. Fiennes's Speech is easily recognizable, across its Calvinistic dialect, as full of sense and strength : broad manful thought and clear insight, couched in a gorgeous figurative style, which a friendly judge might almost call poetic. It is the first time we thoroughly forgive the Honorable Nathaniel for surrendering Bristol to Prince Rupert long ago ; and rejoice that Prynne and Independency Walker did not get him shot, by Court-Martial, on that occasion.

Nathaniel compares the present state of England to the rising of Cosmos out of Chaos as recorded in *Genesis* : Two 'firmaments' are made, two separate Houses of Parliament ; much is made, but much yet remains to be made. He is full of figurative ingenuity ; full of resolution, of tolerance, of discretion, and various other good qualities not very rife in the world. "What shall be done to our Sister that hath no breasts ?" he asks, in the language of Solomon's Song. What shall we do with those good men, friends to our Cause, who yet reject us, and sit at home on their estates ? We will soothe them, we will submit to them, we will in all ways invite them to us. Our little Sister,—“if she be a wall, we will build a palace of silver upon her ; if she be a door, we will enclose her with boards of cedar :”—our little Sister shall not be estranged from us, if it please God !—

There is, in truth, need enough of unanimity at present. One of these days, there came a man riding jogtrot through Stratford-at-the-Bow, with 'a green glazed cover over his hat,' a 'night.

\* Commons Journals, vii., 579 : that is the original,—reported by Widdington next day. *Burton* (ii., 322), *Parliamentary History* (xxi., 170) are copies.

† Reported, Commons Journals, vii., 582-7, Monday, 25 Jan., 1657-8.

cap under it,' and 'his valise behind him;' a rustic-looking man: recognizable to *us*, amid the vanished populations who take no notice of him as he jogs along there,—for the Duke of Ormond, Charles Stuart's head man! He sat up, at Colchester, the night before, 'playing shuffleboard with some farmers, and drinking hot ale.' He is fresh from Flanders, and the Ex-King; has arrived here to organize the Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion, and see what Royalist Insurrection, or other domestic mischief there may be hopes of. Lodges now, 'with dyed hair' in a much disguised manner, 'at the house of a Papist Chirurgeon in Drury Lane;' communicating with the ringleaders here.\*

The Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion is again on foot, and no fable. He has Four English-Irish Regiments; the low-minded Dutch, we understand, have hired him Two-and-twenty ships, which hope to escape our frigates some dark night; and Don John has promised a Spanish Army of Six-thousand or Tenthousand, if the domestic Royalists will bestir themselves. Like the waves of the sea, that cannot rest; that have to go on, throwing up mire and dirt! Frantic Anabaptists, too, are awakening; the general English Hydra is rallying itself again, as if to try it one other last time.

Foreign Affairs also look altogether questionable to a Protestant man. Swede and Dane in open war; inextricable quarrels bewildering the King of Sweden, King of Denmark, Elector of Brandenburg, all manner of Foreign Protestants, whom Oliver never yet could reconcile; and the Dutch playing false; and the Spaniards, the Austrians, the Pope and Papists, too well united! Need enough that this Parliament be unanimous.

The hopes of Oliver and Fiennes and all practicable Puritans may have naturally stood high at this meeting:—but if so, it was not many hours till they began fatally to sink. There exists also an *impracticable* set of Puritan men,—the old Excluded Members, introduced now, or now first admitted into this Parliament,—whom no beautifullest 'two firmaments' seen overspanning Chaos, no Spanish Invasion threatening to bring Chaos back, no nopefullest and no fearfullest phenomenon of Nature or Constitu

\* Carte's Ormond, ii., 176-8.

tional Art, will ever divorce from their one Republican Idea. Intolerability of the Single Person : this, and this only, will Nature in her dumb changes, and Art in her spoken interpretations thereof, reveal to these men. It is their one Idea ; which, in fact, they will carry with them to—the gallows at Charing Cross, when no Oliver any more is there to restrain it and them ! Poor windy angry Haselrig, poor little peppery Thomas Scott—And yet these were not the poorest. Scott was only hanged : but what shall we say of a Luke Robinson, also very loud in this Parliament, who had to turn his coat that he might escape hanging ? The history of this Parliament is not edifying to Constitutional men.

---

## SPEECH XVI.

WE said, the Two Houses, at least the First House, very ill fulfilled his Highness's expectations. Hardly had they got into their respective localities after his Highness's Opening Speech, when the New House, sending the Old a simple message about requesting his Highness to have a day of Fasting, there arose a Debate as to what answer should be given ; as to What ' name,' first of all, this said New House was to have,—otherwise what answer could you give ? Debate carried on with great vigor ; resumed, re-resumed day after day ;—and never yet terminated ; not destined to be terminated in this world ! How eloquent were peppery Thomas Scott and others, lest we should call them a House of *Lords*,—not, alas, lest he the peppery Constitutional Debater, and others such, should lose their own heads, and entrust their Cause with all its Gospels to a new very curious Defender of the Faith ! It is somewhat sad to see.

On the morning of Monday, January 25, the Writer of the Diary called *Burton's*,—Nathaniel Bacon if that were he,—finds, on entering the House, Sir Arthur Haselrig on his feet there, saying, " Give me my Oath !" Sir Arthur, as we transiently saw, was summoned to the Peers House ; but he has decided to sit *here*. It is an ominous symptom. After ' Mr. Peters ' has con-

cluded his morning exercise,\* the intemperate Sir Arthur again demands, "Give me my Oath!"—"I dare not," answers Francis Bacon, the official person; Brother of the Diarist. But at length they do give it him; and he sits: Sir Arthur is henceforth here. And, on the whole, ought we not to call this pretended Peers House the 'Other House' merely? Sir Arthur, peppery Scott, Luke Robinson and Company, are clearly of that mind.

However, the Speaker has a Letter from his Highness, summoning us all to the Banqueting-House at Whitehall, this afternoon at three; both Houses shall meet him there. There accordingly does his Highness, do both Houses and all the Official world make appearance. Gloomy Rushworth, Bacon, and one 'Smythe,' with Notebooks in their hands, are there. His Highness, in the following large manful manner, looking before and after, looking abroad and at home,—with true nobleness if we consider all things,—speaks:

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN OF THE TWO HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT,

(For so I must own you) in whom together with myself is vested the Legislative Power of these Nations!—The impression of the weight of those affairs and interests for which we are met together is such that I could not with a good conscience satisfy myself, if I did not remonstrate to you somewhat of my apprehensions of the State of the Affairs of these Nations; together with the proposal of such remedy as may occur, to the dangers now imminent upon us.

I conceive the Well-being, yea the Being of these Nations is now at stake. If God bless this Meeting,—our tranquillity and peace may be lengthened out to us; if *otherwise*,—I shall offer it to your judgments and considerations, by the time I have done, whether there be, as to *men*,† 'so much as' a possibility of discharging that Trust which is incumbent upon us for the safety and preservation of these Nations! When I have told you what occurs to my thoughts, I shall leave it to such an operation on your hearts as it shall please God Almighty to work upon you. [*His Highness, I think, looks earnest enough to-day. Oppressed with many things, and not in good health either. In those deep mournful eyes, which are always full of noble silent sorrow, of affection and pity and valor, what a depth to-day of thoughts that cannot be spoken! Sorrow enough, depth enough,—and this deepest attainable depth, to rest upon what "it shall please God Almighty" to do!*]

\* Burton, ii., 347.

† humanly speaking

I look upon this to be the great duty of my Place ; as being set on a watch-tower to see what may be for the good of these Nations, and what may be for the preventing of evil ; that so, by the advice of so wise and great a Council as this, which hath in it the life and spirit of these Nations, such " good " may be attained, and such " evil," whatever it is, may be obviated. [*Truly!*] We shall hardly set our shoulders to this work, unless it shall please God to work some conviction upon our hearts that *there is need* of our most serious and best counsels at such a time as this is !—I have not prepared any such matter and rule of speech to deliver myself unto you, as perhaps might have been fitter for me to have done, and more serviceable for you in understanding me ;—but shall only speak plainly and honestly to you out of such conceptions as it hath pleased God to set upon me.

We have not been now four years and upwards in this Government, to be totally ignorant of what things may be of the greatest concernment to us. [*No mortal thinks so, your Highness.*] Your dangers,—for that is the head of my speech,—are either with respect to Affairs Abroad and their difficulties, or to Affairs at Home and their difficulties. You are come now, as I may say, into the end [*Which may but prove the new beginning!*] of as great difficulties and straits as, I think, ever Nation was engaged in. I had in my thoughts to have made this the method of my Speech : To have let you see the things which hazard your Being, and ' those which hazard ' your Well-being. But when I came seriously to consider better of it, I thought as your affairs stand, all things would resolve themselves into very Being ! You are not a Nation, you will not be a Nation, if God strengthen you not to meet these evils that are upon us !

First, from Abroad : What are the Affairs, I beseech you, abroad ? I thought the Profession of the Protestant Religion was a thing of " Well-being ;" and truly, in a good sense, so it is, and it is no more : though it be a very high thing, it is but a thing of " Well-being." [*A Nation can still be, even without Protestantism.*] But take it with all the complications of it, with all the concomitants of it, with respect had to the Nations abroad,—I do believe, he that looks well about him, and considereth the estate of the Protestant Affairs all Christendom over ; he must needs say and acknowledge that the grand Design now on foot, in comparison with which all other Designs are but low things, is, Whether the Christian world shall be all Popery ? Or, whether God hath a love to, and we ought to have ' a love to, and ' a brotherly fellow-feeling of, the interests of all the Protestant Christians in the world ? [*Yes, your Highness, the raging sea shut out by your labor and valor, and*

*death-peril,—with what indifference do we now, safe at two centuries distance, look back upon it, hardly audible so far off,—ungrateful as we are !]* He that strikes at but one species of a general\* to make it nothing, strikes at all.

Is it not so now, that the Protestant Cause and Interest abroad is struck at; and is, in opinion and apprehension, quite under foot, trodden down? Judge with me a little, I beseech you, Whether it be so or no. And then, I will pray you, consider how far *we* are concerned in that danger, as to 'our very' Being!

We have known very well, the Protestant Cause is accounted the honest and religious Interest of this Nation. It was not trodden under foot all at once, but by degrees,—that this Interest might be consumed as with a canker insensibly, as Jonah's gourd was, till it was quite withered. It is at another rate now! For certainly this, in the general, 'is the fact:' The Papacy, and those that are upholders of it, they have openly and avowedly trodden God's people under foot, on this very motion and account, that they were Protestants. The money you parted with in that noble Charity which was exercised in this Nation, and the just sense you had of those poor Piedmonts, was satisfaction enough for yourselves of this,† That if all the Protestants in Europe had had but that head, that head had been cut off, and so an end of the whole. But is this 'of Piedmont' all? No. Look how the House of Austria, on both sides of Christendom, 'both in Austria Proper and Spain,' are armed and prepared to destroy the whole Protestant Interest.

Is not,—to begin there,—the King of Hungary, who expecteth with his partisans to make himself Emperor of Germany, and in the judgment of all men 'with' not only a possibility but a certainty of the acquisition of it,—is not he, since he hath mastered the Duke of Brandenburg, one of the Electors, 'as good as sure of the Emperorship'?‡ No doubt but he will have three of the Episcopal Electors 'on his side,' and the Duke of Bavaria. [*There are but Eight Electors in all; Hanover not yet made.*] Whom will he then have to contest with him abroad, for taking the Empire of Germany out of his hands? Is not he the son of

\* Means 'one limb of a body:' metaphysical metaphor

† proof enough that you believed.

‡ Emperor Ferdinand III., under whom the Peace of Westphalia was made, had died this year; his second son, Leopold, on the death of the first son, had been made King of Hungary in 1655; he was, shortly after this, elected Emperor, Leopold I., and reigned till 1705. 'Brandenburg' was Frederick William; a distinguished Prince; father of the First King of Prussia, Frederick the Great's great-grandfather; properly Founder of the Prussian Monarchy.



a Father whose principles, interest and personal conscience guided him to exile all the Protestants out of his own patrimonial country,—out of Bohemia, got with the sword; out of Moravia and Silesia? [*Ferdinand the Second, his Grandfather; yea, your Highness;—and brought the great Gustavus upon him in consequence. Not a good kindred, that!*] ‘And’ it is the daily complaint which comes over to us,—new reiterations of which we have but received within these two or three days, being conveyed by some godly Ministers of the City, That the Protestants are tossed out of Poland into the Empire; and out thence whither they can fly to get their bread; and are ready to perish for want of food.

And what think you of the other side of Europe, Italy to wit,—if I may call it the other side of Europe, as I think I may,—‘Italy,’ Spain, and all those adjacent parts, with the Grisons, the Piedmonts before mentioned, the Switzers? They all,—what are they but a prey of the Spanish power and interest? And look to that that calls itself [*Neuter gender*] the Head of all this! A Pope fitted,—I hope indeed “born” not “in” but out of “due time,” to accomplish this bloody work; that so he may fill up his cup to the brim, and make himself ripe for judgment! [*Somewhat grim of look, your Highness!*] He doth as he hath always done. He influences all the Powers, all the Princes of Europe to this very thing [*Rooting out of the Protestants.—The sea which is now scarcely audible to us, two safe centuries off, how it roars and devouringly rages while the Valiant One is heroically bent to bank it in!—He prospers, he does it, flings his life into the gap,—that we for all coming centuries may be safe and ungrateful!*];—and no man like this present man.\* So that, I beseech you, what is there in all the parts of Europe but a consent, a coöperating, at this very time and season, ‘of all Popish Powers’ to suppress everything that stands in their way? [*A grave epoch indeed.*]

But it may be said, “This is a great way off, in the extremest parts of the world;† what is that to us?”—If it be nothing to you, let it be nothing to you! I have told you it is somewhat to you. It concerns all your religions, and all the good interests of England.

I have, I thank God, considered, and I would beg of you to consider a little with me: What that resistance is that is likely to be made to this mighty current, which seems to be coming from all parts upon all Protestants? Who is there that holdeth up his head to oppose this danger? A poor Prince [*Charles X. King of Sweden: at present attacked by the*

\* Alexander VII.; ‘an able Pope,’ Dryasdust informs me.

† ‘parts of it’ *in orig.*

*King of Denmark; the Dutch also aiming at him*];—indeed poor; but a man in his person as gallant, and truly I think I may say as good, as any these last ages have brought forth; a man that hath adventured his all against the Popish Interest in Poland, and made his acquisition still good ‘there’ for the Protestant Religion. He is now reduced into a corner: and what addeth to the grief of all,—more grievous than all that hath been spoken of before (I wish it may not be too truly said!)—is, That men of our Religion forget this, and seek his ruin. [*Dutch and Danes: but do not some of us too forget? “I wish it may not be too truly said!”*]

I beseech you consider a little; consider the consequences of all that! For what doth it all signify? Is it only a noise? Or hath it not withal an articulate sound in it? Men that are not true to the Religion we profess,—‘profess,’ I am persuaded, with greater truth, uprightness and sincerity than it is ‘professed’ by any collected body, so nearly gathered together as these Nations are, in all the world,—God will find them out! [*The low-minded Dutch; pettifogging for “Souda Dues” for “Possession of the Sound,” and mere shopkeeper lucre!*] I beseech you consider how things do coöperate. ‘Consider,’ If this may seem but a design against your Wellbeing? It is a design against your very Being; this artifice, and this complex design, against the Protestant Interest,—wherein so many Protestants are not so right as were to be wished! If they can shut us out of the Baltic Sea, and make themselves masters of that, where is your Trade? Where are your materials to preserve your Shipping? Where will you be able to challenge any right by sea, or justify yourselves against a foreign invasion in your own soil? Think upon it; this is in design! I believe, if you will go and ask the poor mariner in his red cap and coat [*“Coat,” I hope, is not “red:”—but we are in haste.*], as he passeth from ship to ship, you will hardly find in any ship but they will tell you this is designed against you. So obvious is it, by this and other things, that you are the object. And in my conscience, I know not for what else ‘you are so’ but because of the purity of the profession amongst you; who have not yet made it your trade to prefer your profit before your godliness [*Whatever certain Dutch and Danes may do!*], but reckon godliness the greater gain!

But should it happen that, as contrivances stand, you should not be able to vindicate yourselves against all whomsoever,—I name no one state upon this head [*Do not name the Dutch, with their pettifoggings for the Sound; no!*], but I think all acknowledge States are engaged in the combination,—judge you where you were! You have accounted yourselves happy in being environed with a great Ditch from all the

world beside. Truly you will not be able to keep your Ditch, nor your Shipping,—unless you turn your Ships and Shipping into Troops of Horse and Companies of Foot; and fight to defend yourselves on *terra firma*!—

And these things stated, *liberavi animam meam*; and if there be “no danger” in ‘all’ this, I am satisfied. I have told you; you will judge if no danger! If you shall think, We may discourse of all things at pleasure—[*Debate for days and weeks, Whether it shall be “House of Lords” or “Other House;” put the question, Whether this question shall be put; and say Ay, say No; and thrash the air with idle iargon!*],—and that it is a time of sleep and ease and rest, without any due sense of these things,—I have this comfort to God-ward: I have told you of it. [*Yes, your Highness!—O intemperate vain Sir Arthur, peppery Thomas Scott, and ye other constitutional Patriots, is there no SENSE of truth in you, then; no discernment of what really is what? Instead of belief and insight, have you nothing but whirlpools of old paper clippings, and a grey waste of Parliamentary constitutional logic? Such HEADS, too common in the world, will run a chance in these times to get themselves—stuck up on Temple Bar!*]

Really were it not that France (give me leave to say it) is a balance against that Party at this time—!—Should there be a Peace made (which hath been, and is still labored and aimed at, “a General Peace”), then will England be the “general” object of all the fury and wrath of all the Enemies of God and our Religion in the world! I have nobody to accuse;—but do look on the other side of the water! You have neighbors there; some that you are in amity with; some that have professed malice enough against you. I think you are fully satisfied in that. I had rather you would trust your enemy than some friends,—that is, rather believe your enemy, and trust *him* that he means your ruin, than have confidence in some who may perhaps be in some alliance with you! [*We have watched the Dutch, and their dealings in the Baltic lately!*]  
—I perhaps could enforce all this with some particulars, nay, I ‘certainly’ could. For I know your enemies be the same who have been accounted your enemies ever since Queen Elizabeth came to the crown. An avowed designed enemy ‘all along;’ wanting nothing of counsel, wisdom and prudence, to root you out from the face of the Earth: and when public attempts [*Spanish Armadas and such like*] would not do, how have they, by the Jesuits and other their Emissaries, laid foundations to perplex and trouble our Government by taking away the lives of them whom they judged to be of any use for preserving our peace! [*Guy Faux and Jesuit Garnet were a pair of pretty men; to go no further. Ravaiillac in the Rue de la Ferronnerie, and Stadtholder William’s Je-*

*suit; and the Night of St. Bartholomew: here and elsewhere they have not wanted "counsel," of a sort!*] And at this time I ask you, Whether you do not think they are designing as busily as ever any people were, to prosecute the same counsels and things to the uttermost?

The business *then* was: The Dutch needed Queen Elizabeth of famous memory for their protection. They had it, 'had protection from her.' I hope they will never ill requite it! For if they should forget either the kindness that was then shown them (which was their real safety), or the desires this Nation hath had to be at peace with them,—truly I believe whoever exercises any ingratitude in this sort will hardly prosper in it [*He cannot, your Highness: unless God and His TRUTH be a mere Hearsay of the market, he never can!*]. But this may awaken you, howsoever. I hope you will be awakened, upon all these considerations! It is certain, they [*These Dutch*] have professed a principle which, thanks be to God, we never knew. They will sell arms to their enemies, and lend their ships to their enemies. They will do so. And truly that principle is not a matter in dispute at this time, 'we are not here to argue with them about it:' only let everything weigh with your spirits as it ought;—let it do so. And we must tell you, we do know that this, 'of their having such a principle,' is *true*. I dare assure you of it; and I think if but your Exchange here 'in London were resorted to, it would let you know, as clearly as you can desire to know, That they have hired—sloops, I think they call them, or some other name,—they have hired sloops, 'let sloops on hire,' to transport upon you Four-thousand Foot and One-thousand Horse, upon the pretended interest of that young man that was the late King's Son [*What a designation for "Charles by the grace of God!" The "was" may possibly have been "is" when spoken; but we cannot afford to change it*]. And this is, I think, a thing far from being reckonable as a suggestion to any ill end or purpose:—a thing to no other end than that it may awaken you to a consideration of your danger, and to uniting for a just and natural defence.

Indeed I never did, I hope I never shall use any artifice with you to pray you to help us with money for defending ourselves: but if money be needful, I will tell you, "Pray help us with money, that the Interest of the Nation may be defended abroad and at home." I will use no arguments; and thereby will disappoint the artifice of bad men abroad who say, It is for money. Whosoever shall think to put things out of frame upon such a suggestion—[*His fate may be guessed; but the Sentence is off*!—] For you will find I will be very plain with you before I have done; and that with all love and affection and faithfulness to you and these Nations.

If this be the condition of your affairs abroad, I pray a little consider what is the estate of your affairs at home. And if both these considerations, 'of home affairs and foreign,' have but this effect, to *get* a consideration among you, a due and just consideration,—let God move your hearts for the answering\* of anything that shall be due unto the Nation, as He shall please! And I hope I shall not be solicitous [*The "artifice" and "money" of the former paragraph still sounding somewhat in his Highness's ears*]; I shall look up to Him who hath been my God and my Guide hitherto.

I say, I beseech you look to your own affairs at home, how they stand! I am persuaded you are all, I apprehend you are all, honest and worthy good men; and that there is not a man of you but would desire to be found a good patriot. I know you would! We are apt to boast sometimes that we are Englishmen: and truly it is no shame for us that we are Englishmen;—but it is a motive to us to do like Englishmen, and seek the real good of this Nation, and the interest of it. [*Truly!*]—But, I beseech you, what is our case at home?—I profess I do not well know where to begin on this head, or where to end,—I do not. But I must needs say, Let a man begin where he will, he shall hardly be out of that drift I am speaking to you 'upon.' We are as full of calamities, and of divisions amongst us in respect of the spirits of men, 'as we could well be,'—though, through a wonderful, admirable, and never to be sufficiently admired providence of God, 'still' in peace! And the fighting we have had, and the success we have had—yea, we that are here, we are an astonishment to the world! And take us in that temper we are in, or rather in that distemper, it is the greatest miracle that ever befell the sons of men, 'that we are got again to peace'

['Beautiful great Soul,' exclaims a modern Commentator here, 'Beautiful great Soul; to whom the Temporal is all irradiated with the Eternal, and God is everywhere divinely visible in the affairs of men, and man himself has as it were become divine! O ye eternal Heavens, have those days and those souls passed away without return?—Patience: intrinsically they can never pass away: intrinsically they remain with us; and will yet, in nobler unexpected form, reappear among us,—if it please Heaven! There *have been* Divine Souls in England; England too, poor moiling toiling heavyladen thickeyed England, has been illuminated, though it were but once, by the Heavenly Ones;—and *once*, in a sense, is always!']

\*performing on such demand.

—that we are got again to peace. And whoever shall seek to break it, God Almighty root that man out of this Nation! And He will do it, let the pretences be what they may! [*Privilege of Parliament, or whatever else, my peppery friends!*]

‘Peace-breakers, do they consider what it is they are driving towards? They should do it!’ He that considereth not the “woman with child,”—the sucking children of this Nation that know not the right hand from the left, of whom, for aught I know, it may be said this City is as full as Nineveh was said to be;—he that considereth not these, and the fruit that is like to come of the bodies of those now living added to these; he that considereth not these, must have the heart of a Cain; who was marked, and made to be an enemy to all men, and all men enemies to him! For the wrath and justice of God will prosecute such a man to his grave, if not to Hell! [*Where is Sam Cooper, or some ‘prince of limners,’ to take us that look of his Highness? I would give my ten best Historical Paintings for it, gilt frames and twaddle-criticisms into the bargain!*]

—I say, look on this Nation; look on it! Consider what are the varieties of Interests in this Nation,—if they be worthy the name of Interests. If God did not hinder, it would all but make up one confusion. We should find there would be but one Cain in England, if God did not restrain! We should have another more bloody Civil War than ever we had in England. For, I beseech you, what is the general spirit of this Nation? Is it not that each sect of people,—if I may call them sects, whether sects upon a Religious account or upon a Civil account—[*Sentence gone; meaning left clear enough*]

—Is not this Nation miserable in that respect? What is that which possesseth every sect? What is it? That every sect may be uppermost! That every sort of men may get the power into their hands, and “they would use it well;”—that every sect may get the power into their hands! [*A reflection to make one wonder.—Let them thank God they have got a man able to bit and bridle them a little; the unfortunate, peppery, loud-babbling individuals,—with so much good in them too, while ‘bitted!’*]

It were a happy thing if the Nation would be content with rule. ‘Content with rule,’ if it were but in Civil things, and with those that would rule worst;—because misrule is better than no rule; and an ill Government, a bad Government, is better than none!—Neither is this all: but we have an appetite to variety; to be not only making wounds, ‘but widening those already made.’ As if you should see one making wounds in a man’s side, and eager only to be groping and groveling with his fingers in those wounds! This is what ‘such’ men would be at; this is the spirit of those who would trample on men’s liberties in

Spiritual respects. They will be making wounds, and rending and tearing, and making them wider than they were. Is not this the case? doth there want anything—I speak not of sects in an ill sense; but the Nation is hugely made up of them,—and what is the want that prevents these things from being done to the uttermost, but that men have more anger than strength? They have not power to attain their ends. ‘There wants nothing else.’ And, I beseech you, judge what such a company of men, of these sects, are doing, while they are contesting one with another! They are contesting in the midst of a generation of men (a malignant Episcopal Party, I mean); contesting in the midst of these *all united*. What must be the issue of such a thing as this? ‘So stands it;’ it is *so*.—And do but judge what proofs have been made of the spirits of these men. [*Republican spirits: we took a “Standard” lately, a Painted one, and a Printed, with wondrous apparatus behind it!*] Summoning men to take up arms; and exhorting men, each sort of them, to fight for their notions; each sort thinking that they are to try it out by the sword; and every sort thinking that *they* are truly under the banner of Christ, if they but come in, and bind themselves in such a project!\*

Now do but judge what a hard condition this poor Nation is in. *This* is the state and condition we are in. Judge, I say, what a hard condition this poor Nation is in, and the Cause of God ‘is in,’—amidst such a party of men as the Cavaliers are, and their participants! Not only with respect to what these—[“*Cavaliers and their Participants*,” both equally at first, but it becomes the latter chiefly, and at length exclusively, before the Sentence ends]—are like to do of themselves; but some of these, yea some of these, they care not who carry the goal [*Frantic-Anabaptist Sexby, dead the other day, he was not very careful!*]—some of these have invited the Spaniard himself to carry on the Cavalier Cause.

And this is *true*. ‘This’ and many other things that are not fit to be suggested unto you; because ‘so’ we should betray the interest of our intelligence. [*Spy-Royalist Sir Richard Willis and the like ambiguous persons, if we show them in daylight, they vanish for ever,—as Manning, when they shot him in Newburg, did.*] I say, this is your condition! What is your defence? What hindereth the irruption of all this upon you to your utter destruction? Truly, ‘that’ you have an Army in these parts,—in Scotland, in England and Ireland. Take *them* away to-morrow, would not all these Interests run into one another?—I know you are rational prudent men. Have you any Frame or Model of things that would satisfy the minds of men, if *this* be not the Frame, ‘this’ which you are now called together upon, and engaged in,—I mean, the **Two**

\* ‘and oblige upon this account’ *in orig.*

Houses of Parliament and myself? What hinders this Nation from being an Aceldama, 'a field of blood,' if this doth not? It is without doubt, 'this': Give the glory to God; for without this, it would prove\* as great a plague as all that hath been spoken of. It is this, without doubt, that keeps this Nation in peace and quietness.—And what is the case of your Army 'withal?' A poor unpaid Army; the soldiers going barefoot at this time, in this city, this weather! [*Twenty-fifth of January.*] And yet a peaceable people, 'these soldiers;' seeking to serve you with their lives; judging their pains and hazards and all well bestowed, in obeying their officers and serving you, to keep the Peace of these Nations! Yea he must be a man with a heart as hard as the weather who hath not a due sense of this! [*A severe frost, though the Almanacs do not mention it.*]— —

So that, I say, it is most plain and evident, this is your outward and present defence. [*This Frame of Government; the Army is a part of that.*] And yet, at this day do but you judge! The Cavalier Party, and the several humors of unreasonable men 'of other sorts,' in those several ways, having 'continually' made battery at this defence since you got to enjoy peace—[*Sentence catches fire*]— — What have they made their business but this, To spread libellous Books; [*Their "Standard," "Killing no Murder," and other little fiddling things belonging to that sort of Periodical Literature.*] yea and pretend the "Liberty of the subject"—[*Sentence gone again*]—? —which really wiser men than they may pretend! For let me say this to you at once: I never look to see the People of England come into a just Liberty, if another 'Civil' War overtake us. I think, 'I' at least, that the thing likely to bring us into our "Liberty" is a consistency and agreement at this Meeting! Therefore all I can say to you is this: It will be your wisdom, I do think truly, and your justice, to keep that concernment close to you; to uphold this Settlement 'now fallen upon.' Which I have no cause but to think you are agreed to; and that you like it. For I assure you I am very greatly mistaken else, 'for my own part;' having taken this which is now the Settlement among us as my chief inducement to bear the burden I bear, and to serve the Commonwealth, in the place I am in!

And therefore if you judge that all this be not argument enough to persuade you to be sensible of your danger — ? — 'A danger' which 'all manner of considerations,' besides good-nature and ingenuity 'themselves,' would move a stone to be sensible of!—Give us leave to consider a little, What will become of us, if our spirits should go *otherwise*,

\* 'it would prove' is an *impersonal* verb; such as 'it will rain,' and the like



‘and break this Settlement?’ If our spirits be dissatisfied, what will become of things? Here is an Army five or six months behind in pay: yea an Army in Scotland near as much ‘behind;’ an Army in Ireland much more. And if these things be considered,—I cannot doubt but they will be considered;—I say, judge what the state of Ireland is if free-quarter come upon the Irish People! [*Free-quarter must come, if there be no pay provided, and that soon!*] You have a company of Scots in the North of Ireland, ‘Forty or Fifty thousand of them settled there;’ who, I hope, are honest men. In the Province of Galway almost all the Irish, transplanted to the West.\* You have the Interest of England newly begun to be planted. The people there, ‘in these English settlements,’ are full of necessities and complaints. They bear to the uttermost. And should the soldiers run upon free-quarter there,—upon your English Planters, as they must,—the English Planters must quit the country through mere beggary: and that which hath been the success of so much blood and treasure, to get that Country into your hands, what can become of it, but that the English must needs run away for pure beggary, and the Irish must possess the country ‘again’ for a receptacle to the Spanish Interest?—

And hath Scotland been long settled? [*Middleton’s Highland Insurrection with its Mosstroopery and misery is not dead three years yet.*] Have not they a like sense of poverty! I speak plainly. In good earnest, I do think the Scots Nation have been under as great a suffering, in point of livelihood and subsistence outwardly, as any People I have yet named to you. I do think truly they are a very ruined Nation. [*Torn to pieces with now near Twenty Years of continual War, and foreign and intestine worrying with themselves and with all the world.*]—And yet in a way (I have spoken with some Gentlemen come from thence) hopeful enough;—it hath pleased God to give that plentiful encouragement to the meaner sort in Scotland. I must say, if it please God to encourage the meaner sort—[*The consequences may be foreseen, but are not stated here.*]—The meaner sort ‘in Scotland’ live as well, and are likely to come into as thriving a condition under your Government, as when they were under their own great Lords, who made them work for their living no better than the Peasants of France. I am loath to speak anything which may reflect upon that Nation: but the middle sort of people do grow up there into such a substance as makes their lives comfortable, if not better than they were before. [*Scotland is prospering; has fair-play and ready-money;—prospering though sulky.*]

\* “All the Irish:” all the Malignant Irish, the ringleaders of the Popish Rebellion: Galway is here called ‘Galloway.’

† Feb., 1654-5 (Whitlocke, p. 599).

If now, after all this, we shall not be sensible of all those designs that are in the midst of us : of the *united* Cavaliers ; of the designs which are animated every day from Flanders and Spain ; while we have to look upon ourselves as a *divided* people—[*Sentence off.*] A man cannot certainly tell where to find consistency anywhere in England ! Certainly there is no consistency in anything, that may be worthy of the name of a body of consistency, but in this Company who are met here ! How can any man lay his hand on his heart, and ‘ permit himself to’ talk of things,—[*Roots of Constitutional Government*, “ *Other House*,” “ *House of Lords* ” and *such like*] neither to be made out by the light of Scripture nor of Reason ; and draw one another off from considering of *these* things, —‘ which are very palpable things !’—I dare leave them with you, and commit them to your bosom. They have a weight,—a greater weight than any I have yet suggested to you, from abroad or at home ! If such be our case abroad and at home, That our Being and Wellbeing,—our Wellbeing is not worth the naming comparatively,—I say, if such be our case, of our Being at home and abroad, That through want to bear up our Honor at Sea, and through want to maintain what is our Defence at Home, ‘ we stand exposed to such dangers ;’ and if through our mistake we shall be led off from the consideration of these things ; and talk of circumstantial things, and quarrel about circumstances ; and shall not with heart and soul intend and carry-on these things — ! — I confess I can look for nothing ‘ other,’ I can say no other than what a foolish Book\* expresseth, of one that having consulted everything, could hold to nothing ; neither Fifth-Monarchy, Presbytery, nor Independency, nothing ; but at length concludes, He is for nothing but an “ orderly confusion !” And for men that have wonderfully lost their consciences and their wits,—I speak of men going about who cannot tell *what* they would have, yet are willing to kindle coals to disturb others — ! [An “ *orderly confusion*,” and *general fire-consummation* : *what else is possible* ?]

And now having said this, I have discharged my duty to God and to you, in making this demonstration,—and I profess, not as a rhetorician ! My business was to prove the verity of the Designs from Abroad ; and the still unsatisfied spirits of the Cavaliers at Home,—who from the beginning of our Peace to this day have not been wanting to do what they could to kindle a fire at home in the midst of us. And I say, if this be so, the truth,—I pray God affect your hearts with a due sense of it !

\* Now rotting probably, or rotten among the other Pamphletary rubbish, in the crypts of Public Dryasdust Collections,—all but this one phrase of it, here kept alive.

[*Yea!*] And give you one heart and mind to carry on this work for which we are met together! If these things be so,—should you meet to-morrow, and accord in all things tending to your preservation and your rights and liberties, really it will be feared there is too much time elapsed ‘already’ for your delivering yourselves from those dangers that hang upon you!—

We have had now Six Years of Peace, and have had an interruption of Ten Years War. We have seen and heard and felt the evils of War; and now God hath given us a new taste of the benefits of Peace. Have you not had such a Peace in England, Ireland and Scotland, that there is not a man to lift up his finger to put you into distemper? Is not this a mighty blessing from the Lord of Heaven? [*Hah!*] Shall we now be prodigal of time? Should any man, shall *we*, listen to delusions, to break and interrupt this Peace? There is not any man that hath been true to this Cause, as I believe you have been all, who can look for anything but the greatest rending and persecution that ever was in this world! [*Peppery Scott’s hot head will go up on Temple Bar, and Haselrig will do well to die soon.\**—I wonder how it can enter into the heart of man to undervalue these things; to slight Peace and the Gospel, the greatest mercy of God. We have Peace and the Gospel! [*What a tone!*] Let us have one heart and soul; one mind to maintain the honest and just rights of this Nation;—not to *pretend* to them, to the destruction of our Peace, to the destruction of the Nation! [*As yet there is one Hero-heart among you, ye blustering contentious rabble; one Soul blazing as a light-beacon in the midst of Chaos, forbidding Chaos yet to be supreme. In a little while that too will be extinct; and then!*] Really, pretend what we will, if you run into *another* flood of blood and War, the sinews of this Nation being wasted by the last, it must sink and perish utterly. I beseech you, and charge you in the name and presence of God, and as before Him, be sensible of these things, and lay them to heart! You have a Day of Fasting coming on. I beseech God touch your hearts and open your ears to this truth; and that you may be as deaf adders to stop your ears to all Dissension! And may look upon them ‘who would sow dissension,’ whoever they may be, as Paul saith to the Church of Corinth, as I remember: “*Mark such as cause divisions and offences,*” and would disturb you from that foundation of Peace you are upon, under any pretence whatsoever!—

I shall conclude with this. I was free the last time of our meeting,

\* He died in the *Annus Mirabilis* of 1660 itself, say the *Baronetages*. Worn to death, it is like, by the frightful vicissitudes and distracting excitement of those sad months

to tell you I would discourse upon a Psalm; and I did it.\* I am not ashamed of it at any time [*Why should you, your Highness? A word that does speak to us from the eternal heart of things, "word of God" as you well call it, is highly worth discoursing upon!*]—especially when I meet with men of such consideration as you. There you have one verse which I forgot. "I will hear what God the Lord will speak: for He will speak peace unto His people, and to His saints; but let them not turn again to folly." Dissension, division, destruction, in a poor Nation under a Civil War,—having all the effects of a Civil War upon it! Indeed if we return again to "folly," let every man consider, If it be *not* like turning to destruction? If God shall unite your hearts and bless you, and give you the blessing of union and love one to another, and tread down everything that riseth up in your hearts and tendeth to deceive your own souls with pretences of this thing or that, as we have been saying—[*The Sentence began as a positive, "if God shall;" but gradually turning on its axis, it has now got quite round into the negative side*]—and not prefer the keeping of Peace that we may see the fruit of righteousness in them that love peace and embrace peace,—it will be said of this poor Nation, *Actum est de Anglia*, 'It is all over with England!'

But I trust God will never leave it to such a spirit. And while I live, and am able, I shall be ready—

[Courage, my brave one! Thou hast but some Seven Months more of it, and then the ugly coil is all over; and thy part in it manfully done; manfully and fruitfully, to all Eternity! Peppery Scott's hot head can mount to Temple Bar, whither it is bound; and England, with immense expenditure of liquor and tarbarrels, can call in its Nell Gwyn Defender of the Faith,—and make out a very notable Two Hundred Years under *his* guidance; and, finding itself now nearly *got* to the Devil, may perhaps pause, and recoil, and remember: who knows? Nay who cares? may Oliver say. *He* is honorably quit of it, he for one; and the Supreme Powers will guide it farther according to their pleasure.]

—I shall be ready to stand and fall with you, in this seemingly promising Union† which God hath wrought among you, which I hope neither the pride nor envy of man shall be able to make void. I have taken my

\* The Eighty-Fifth; *antea*, pp. 387, *et seq.*

† The new Frame of Government

Oath [*In Westminster Hall, Twenty-sixth of June last*] to govern “according to the Laws” that are now made; and I trust I shall fully answer it. And know, I sought not this place. [*Who would have “sought” it, that could have as nobly avoided it? Very scurvy creatures only. The “place” is no great things, I think;—with either Heaven or else Hell so close upon the rear of it, a man might do without the “place!” Know all men, Oliver Cromwell did not seek this place, but was sought to it, and led and driven to it, by the Necessities, the Divine Providences, the Eternal Laws.*] I speak it before God, Angels, and Men: I DID NOT. You sought me for it, you brought me to it; and I took my Oath to be faithful to the Interests of these Nations, to be faithful to the Government. All those things were implied, in my eye, in the Oath “to be faithful to this Government” upon which we have now met. And I trust, by the grace of God, as I have taken my Oath to serve this Commonwealth on such an account, I shall,—I must!—see it done, according to the Articles of Government. That every just Interest may be preserved; that a Godly Ministry may be upheld, and not affronted by seducing and seduced spirits; that all men may be preserved in their just rights, whether civil or spiritual. Upon this account did I take oath, and swear to this Government!—[*And mean to continue administering it withal*].—And so having declared my heart and mind to you in this, I have nothing more to say, but to pray, God Almighty bless you.\*

His Highness, a few days after, on occasion of some Reply to a Message of his ‘concerning the state of the Public Monies,’—was formally requested by the Commons to furnish them with a Copy of this Speech: † he answered that he did not remember four lines of it in a piece, and that he could not furnish a Copy. Some Copy would nevertheless have been got up, had the Parliament continued sitting. Rushworth, Smythe, and ‘I’ (the Writer of *Burton’s Diary*), we, so soon as the Speech was done, went to York House; Fairfax’s Town-House, where Historical John, brooding over endless Paper-masses, and doing occasional Secretary work, still lodges: here at York House we sat together till late, ‘comparing Notes of his Highness’s Speech;’ could not finish the business that night, our Notes being a little cramp. It

\* Burton, ii., 351–71.

† Thursday, 23 Jan., 1657–8 (*Parliamentary History*, xxi., 196; *Burton*, i., 279).

was grown quite dark before his Highness had done ; so that we could hardly see our pencils go, at the time.\*

The Copy given here is from the *Pell Papers*, and in part from an earlier Original ; first printed by Burton's Editor ; and now reproduced, with slight alterations of the pointing, &c., such as were necessary here and there to bring out the sense, but not such as could change anything that had the least title to remain unchanged.

---

### SPEECH XVII.

HIS Highness's last noble appeal, the words as of a strong great Captain addressed in the hour of imminent shipwreck, produced no adequate effect. The dreary Debate, supported chiefly by intemperate Haselrig, peppery Scott, and future-renegade Robinson, went on, trailing its slow length day after day ; daily widening itself too into new dreariness, new questionability : a kind of pain to read even at this distance, and with view of the intemperate hot heads actually *stuck* on Temple Bar ! For the man in 'green oilskin hat with nightcap under it,' the Duke of Ormond namely, who lodges at the Papist Chirurgeon's in Drury Lane, is very busy all this while. And Fifth-Monarchy and other Petitions are getting concocted in the City, to a great length indeed ;—and there are stirrings in the Army itself ;—and, in brief, the English Hydra, cherished by the Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion, will shortly hiss sky-high again, if this continue.

As yet, however, there stands one strong Man between us and that issue. The strong Man gone, that issue, we may guess, will be inevitable ; but he is not yet gone. For ten days more the dreary Debate has lasted. Various good Bills and Notices of Bills have been introduced : attempts on the part of well-affected Members to do some useful legislation here ;† attempts which could not be accomplished. What could be accomplished

\* Burton, ii., 351.

\* Parliamentary History, xxi., 203 4.

was to open the fountains of constitutional logic, and debate this question day after day. One or two intemperate persons, not excluded at the threshold, are of great moment in a Popular Assembly. The mind of which, if it have any mind, is one of the vaguest entities ; capable, in a very singular degree, of being made to ferment, to freeze, to take fire, to develop itself in this shape or in that ! The history of our Second Session, and indeed of these Oliverian Parliaments generally, is not exhilarating to the constitutional mind !—

But now on the tenth day of the Debate, with its noise growing ever noisier, on the 4th of February, 1657–8, ‘about eleven in the morning,’—while peppery Scott is just about to attempt yelping out some new second speech, and there are cries of “Spoken ! spoken !” which Sir Arthur struggles to argue down,—arrives the Black Rod.—“The Black Rod stays !” cry some, while Sir Arthur is arguing.—“What care I for the Black Rod ?” snarls he : “The Gentleman” (peppery Scott) “ought to be heard.”—Black Rod, however, is heard first ; signifies that “His Highness is in the Lords House, and desires to speak with you.” Under way therefore ! “Shall we take our Mace ?” By all means, if you consider it likely to be useful for you !\*

They take their Mace ; range themselves in due mass, in the “Other House,” Lords House, or whatever they call it ; and his Highness, with a countenance of unusual earnestness, sorrow resolution and severity, says :

MY LORDS, AND GENTLEMEN OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS,

I had very comfortable expectations that God would make the meeting of this Parliament a blessing ; and, the Lord be my witness, I desired the carrying on the Affairs of the Nation to these ends ! The blessing which I mean, and which we ever climbed at, was mercy, truth, righteousness and peace,—which I desired might be improved.

That which brought me into the capacity I now stand in was the Petition and Advice given me by you ; who, in reference to the ancient Constitution [“*Which had Two Houses and a King,*”—though we do not in words mention that !], did draw me to accept the place of Protector. [“*I was a kind of Protector already, I always understood ; but let*

\* Burton, ii., 462 *et seq.*

*that pass. Certainly you invited me to become the Protector I now am, with Two Houses and other appendages, and there lies the gist of the matter at present."* There is not a man living can say I sought it; no, not a man nor woman treading upon English ground. But contemplating the sad condition of these Nations, relieved from an intestine War into a six or seven years Peace, I did think the Nation happy therein! [*"I did think even my first Protectorate was a successful kind of thing!"*] But to be petitioned thereunto, and advised by you to undertake such a Government, a burden too heavy for any creature; and this to be done by the House that then had the Legislative capacity;—certainly I did look that the same men who made the Frame should make it good unto me! I can say in the presence of God, in comparison with whom we are but like poor creeping ants upon the earth,—I would have been glad to have lived under my woodside, to have kept a flock of sheep—[*Yes, your Highness; it had been infinitely quieter, healthier, freer. But it is gone for ever: no woodsides now, and peaceful nibbling sheep, and great still thoughts, and glimpses of God 'in the cool of the evening walking among the trees;' nothing but toil and trouble, double, double, till one's discharge arrive, and the Eternal Portals open! Nay even there by your woodside, you had not been happy; not you,—with thoughts going down to the Death-kingdoms, and Heaven so near you on this hand, and Hell so near you on that. Nay who would grudge a little temporary Trouble, when he can do a large spell of eternal work? Work that is true, and will last through all Eternity! Complain not, your Highness!—His Highness does not complain. "To have kept a flock of sheep," he says*—rather than undertaken such a Government as this. But undertaking it by the Advice and Petition of you, I did look that you who had offered it unto me should make it good.

I did tell you, at a Conference\* concerning it, that I would not undertake it, unless there might be some other Persons to interpose between me and the House of Commons, who then had the power, and prevent tumultuary and popular spirits: and it was granted I should name another House. I named it of men who shall meet you wheresoever you go, and shake hands with you; and tell you it is not Titles, nor Lords, nor Parties that they value, but a Christian and an English Interest! Men of your own rank and quality, who will not only be a balance unto you, but a new force added to you,† while you love England and Religion.

Having proceeded upon these terms;—and finding such a spirit as

\* One of the Kingship Conferences of which there is no Report.

† 'but to themselves,' however helplessly, must mean this: and a good reporter would have substituted this.



is too much predominant, everything being too high or too low; where virtue, honesty, piety and justice are omitted:—I thought I had been doing that which was my duty, and thought it would have satisfied you! But if everything must be too high or too low, you are not to be satisfied. [*There is an innocency and childlike goodness in these poor sentences, which speaks to us in spite of rhetoric.*]

Again, I would not have accepted of the Government, unless I knew there would be a just accord between the Governor and Governed; unless they would take an Oath to make good what the Parliament's Petition and Advice advised me unto! Upon that I took an Oath [*On the Twenty-sixth of June last*], and they [*On the Twentieth of January last, at their long Table in the Anteroom*] took another Oath upon their part answerable to mine:—and did not every one know upon what condition he swore? God knows, *I* took it upon the conditions expressed in the 'Act of' Government! And I did think we had been upon a foundation, and upon a bottom; and thereupon I thought myself bound to take it, and to be "advised by the Two Houses of Parliament." And we standing unsettled till we arrived at that, the consequences would necessarily have been confusion, if that had not been settled. Yet there were not constituted "Hereditary Lords," nor "Hereditary Kings;" 'no,' the Power consisteth in the Two Houses and myself.—I do not say, that was the meaning of your Oath to *you*. That were to go against my own principles, to enter upon another man's conscience. God will judge between you and me! If there had been in you any intention of Settlement, you would have settled upon this basis, and have offered your judgment and opinion 'as to minor improvements.'

God is my witness; I speak it; it is evident to all the world and people living, That a new business hath been seeking in the Army against this actual Settlement made by your consent. I do not speak to these Gentlemen [*'Pointing to his right hand,' says the Report*], or Lords, or whatsoever you will call them; I speak not this to them, but to *you*.—You advised me to come into this place, to be in a capacity\* by your Advice. Yet instead of owning a thing, some must have I know not what:—and you have not only disjointed yourselves but the whole Nation, which is in likelihood of running into more confusion in these fifteen or sixteen days that you have sat, than it hath been from the rising of the last session to this day. Through the intention of devising a Commonwealth again! That some people might be the men that might rule all! [*Intemperate Haselrig, peppery Scott, and such like: very inadequate they to "rule;" inadequate to keep their own heads on*

\* 'of authority' is delicately understood, but not expressed

*their shoulders, if they were not RULED, they !]* And they are endeavoring to engage the Army to carry that thing.—And hath that man been “true to this Nation,” whosoever he be, especially that hath taken an Oath, thus to prevaricate ? These designs have been made among the Army, to break and divide us. I speak this in the presence of some of the Army ; That these things have not been according to God, nor according to truth, pretend what you will. [*No, your Highness ; they have not.*] These things tend to nothing else but the playing of the King of Scots’s game (if I may so call him) ; and I think myself bound before God to do what I can to prevent it. [*“ I, for my share : ” Yea !*]

That which I told you in the Banqueting-House ‘ ten days ago ’ was true, That there are preparations of force to invade us. God is my witness, it hath been confirmed to me since, not a day ago, That the King of Scots hath an Army at the water’s side, ready to be shipped for England. I have it from those who have been eyewitnesses of it. And while it is doing, there are endeavors from some who are not far from this place, to stir up the people of this Town into a tumulting—[*City Petitions are mounting very high,—as perhaps Sir Arthur and others know !*—what if I said, Into a rebellion ! And I hope I shall make it appear to be no better, if God assist me. [*Noble scorn and indignation is gradually getting the better of every other feeling in his Highness and us.*]

It hath been not only your endeavor to pervert the Army while you have been sitting, and to draw them to state the question about a “ Commonwealth ; ” but some of you have been listing of persons, by commission of Charles Stuart, to join with any Insurrection that may be made. [*What a cold qualm in some conscious heart that listens to this ! Let him tremble, every joint of him ;—or not visibly tremble ; but cover home to his place, and repent ; and remember in whose hand his beggarly existence in this world lies !*] And what is like to come upon this, the Enemy being ready to invade us, but even present blood and confusion ? —[*The next and final Sentence is partly on fire*—And if this be so, I do assign ‘ it ’ to this cause : Your not assenting to what you did invite me to by your Petition and Advice, as that which might prove the Settlement of the Nation. And if this be the end of your sitting, and this be your carriage—[*Sentence now all beautifully blazing*], I think it high time that an end be put to your sitting. And I DO DISSOLVE THIS PARLIAMENT ! And let God be judge between you and me !\*

Figure the looks of Haselrig, Scott and Company ! ‘ The Mace was clapt under a cloak ; the Speaker withdrew, and exi

\* Burton, ii, 465-70.

*Parliamentum*,<sup>\*</sup> the Talking-Apparatus vanishes.\* “God be judge between you and me!”—“Amen!” answered they,† thought they, indignantly; and sank into eternal silence.

It was high time; for in truth the Hydra, on every side, is stirring its thousand heads. “Believe me,” says Samuel Hartlib, Milton’s friend, writing to an Official acquaintance next week, “believe me, it was of such necessity, that if their Session had continued but two or three days longer, all had been in blood both in City and Country, upon Charles Stuart’s account.”‡

His Highness, before this Sunday’s sun sets, has begun to lodge the Anarchic Ringleaders, Royalist, Fifth-Monarchist, in the Tower; his Highness is bent once more with all his faculty, the Talking-Apparatus being gone, to front this Hydra, and trample it down once again. On Saturday he summons his Officers, his Acting-Apparatus, to Whitehall round him; explains to them ‘in a speech two hours long’ what kind of Hydra it is; asks, Shall it conquer us, involve us in blood and confusion? “They answer from their hearts, No, it shall not! “We will stand and fall with your Highness, we will live and die with you!”§—It is the last duel this Oliver has with any Hydra fomented into life by a Talking-Apparatus; and he again conquers it, invincibly compresses it, as he has heretofore done.

One day, in the early days of March next, his Highness said to Lord Broghil: An old friend of yours is in Town, the Duke of Ormond, now lodged in Drury Lane, at the Papist Surgeon’s there: you had better tell him to be gone!||—Whereat his Lordship stared; found it a fact, however; and his Grace of Ormond did go with exemplary speed, and got again to Bruges and the Sacred Majesty, with report That Cromwell had many enemies, but that the rise of the Royalists was moonshine. And on the

\* Burton, ii., 464.

† Tradition in various modern books (Parliamentary History, xxi., 203; Note to Burton, ii., 470); not supported, that I can find, by any contemporary witness.

‡ Hartlib in London (11 Feb., 1657-8, to Moreland at Geneva; printed in Parliamentary History, xxi., 205).

§ Hartlib’s Letter, *ubi supra*.

|| Godwin, iv., 508; Budget’s Lives of the Boylrs, p. 49; &c.

12th of the month his Highness had the Mayor and Common Council with him in a body at Whitehall; and 'in a Speech at large' explained to them that his Grace of Ormond was gone only 'on Tuesday last;' that there were Spanish Invasions, Royalist Insurrections and Frantic-Anabaptist Insurrections rapidly ripening;—that it would well beseem the City of London to have its Militia in good order. To which the Mayor and Common Council, 'being very sensible thereof,'\* made zealous response by speech and by act. In a word, the Talking-Apparatus being gone, and an Oliver Protector now 'at the head of the Acting-Apparatus, no Insurrection, in the eyes of reasonable persons, had any chance. The leading Royalists shrank close into their privacies again,—considerable numbers of them had to shrink into durance in the Tower. Among which latter class, his Highness, justly incensed, and 'considering,' as Thurloe says, 'that it was not fit there should be a Plot of this kind every winter,' had determined that a High Court of Justice should take cognisance of some. High Court of Justice is accordingly nominated † as the Act of Parliament prescribes: among the parties marked for trial by it are Sir Henry Slingsby, long since prisoner for Penruddock's business, and the Rev. Dr. Hewit, a man of much forwardness in Royalism. Sir Henry, prisoner in Hull and acquainted with the Chief Officers there, has been treating with them for betrayal of the place to his Majesty; has even, to that end, given one of them a Majesty's Commission; for whose Spanish Invasion such a Haven and Fortress would have been extremely convenient. Reverend Dr. Hewit, preaching sufferance, according to the old ritual, 'in St. Gregory's Church, near Paul's,' to a select disaffected audience, has farther seen good to distinguish himself very much by secular zeal in this business of the Royal Insurrection and Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasion;—which has now come to nothing, and left poor Dr. Hewit in a most questionable position. Of these two, and of others, a High Court of Justice shall take cognisance.

The Insurrection having no chance in the eyes of reasonable

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 171).

† 27 April, 1658. Act of Parliament, with List of the Names, is in *Scobell*, ii., 372-5: see also *Commons Journals*, vii., 427 (Sept., 1656).

Royalists, and they in consequence refusing to lead it, the large body of unreasonable Royalists, now in London City or gathering thither, decide, with Indignation, That they will try it on their own score, and lead it themselves. Hands to work, then, ye unreasonable Royalists ; pipe, All hands ! Saturday, the 15th of May, that is the night appointed : To rise that Saturday Night ; beat drums for 'Royalist Apprentices,' 'fire houses at the Tower,' slay this man, slay that, and bring matters to a good issue. Alas, on the very edge of the appointed hour, as usual, we are all seized ; the ringleaders of us are all seized, 'At the Mermaid in Cheapside,' for Thurloe and his Highness have long known what we were upon ! Barkstead Governor of the Tower 'marches into the City with five drakes,' at the rattle of which every Royalist Apprentice, and party implicated, shakes in his shoes :—and this also has gone to vapor, leaving only for result certain new individuals of the Civic class to give account of it to the High Court of Justice.

*Tuesday, 25th May, 1658*, the High Court of Justice sat ; a formidable Sanhedrim of above a Hundred-and-thirty heads ; consisting of 'all the Judges,' chief Law Officials, and others named in the Writ according to Act of Parliament ;—sat 'in Westminster Hall, at nine in the morning, for the Trial of Sir Henry Slingsby Knight, John Hewit Doctor of Divinity,' and three others whom we may forget.\* Sat day after day till all were judged. Poor Sir Henry, on the first day, was condemned ; he pleaded what he could, poor gentleman, a very constant Royalist all along : but the Hull business was too palpable ; he was condemned to die. Reverend Dr. Hewit, whose proceedings also had become very palpable, refused to plead at all ; refused even 'to take off his hat,' says Carrion Heath, 'till the Officer was coming to do it for him ;' 'had a Paper of Demurrers prepared by the learned Mr. Prynne,' who is now again doing business this way ;—'conducted himself not very wisely,' says Bulstrode. He likewise received sentence of death. The others, by narrow missing escaped ; by good luck, or the Protector's mercy, suffered nothing.

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 172).

As to Slingsby and Hewit, the Protector was inexorable. Hewit has already taken a very high line: let him persevere in it! Slingsby was the Lord Fauconberg's Uncle, married to his Aunt Bellasis; but that could not stead him,—perhaps that was but a new monition to be strict with him. The Commonwealth of England, and its Peace, are not Nothing! These Royalist Plots every winter, deliveries of garrisons to Charles Stuart, and reckless 'usherings of us into blood,' shall end! Hewit and Slingsby suffered on Tower Hill, on Monday, 8th June; amid the manifold rumor and emotion of men. Of the City Insurrectionists six were condemned; three of whom were executed, three pardoned. And so the High Court of Justice dissolved itself; and at this and not at more expense of blood, the huge Insurrectionary movement ended, and lay silent within its caves again.

Whether in any future year it would have tried another rising against such a Lord Protector, one does not know,—one guesses rather in the negative. The Royalist Cause, after so many failures, after such a sort of enterprises 'on the word of a Christian King,' had naturally sunk very low. Some twelvemonth hence, with a Commonwealth not now under Cromwell, but only under the impulse of Cromwell, a Christian King hastening down to the Treaty of the Pyrenees, where France and Spain were making Peace, found one of the coldest receptions. Cardinal Mazarin 'sent his coaches and guards a day's journey to meet Lockhart the Commonwealth Ambassador;' but refused to meet the Christian King at all; would not even meet Ormond, except as if by accident 'on the public road,' to say that there was no hope. The Spanish Minister, Don Luis de Haro, was civilier in manner; but as to Spanish Charles-Stuart Invasions or the like, he also decisively shook his head.\* The Royalist Cause was as good as desperate in England; a melancholy Reminiscence, fast fading away into the realm of shadows. Not till Puritanism sank of its own accord, could Royalism rise again. But Puritanism, the King of it once away, fell loose very naturally in every fibre,—fell into *Kinglessness*, what we call Anarchy; crumbled down, ever faster, for Sixteen Months, in mad suicide, and universal

\* Kennet, iii., 214; Clarendon, iii 914.

clashing and collision ; proved by trial after trial, that there lay not in it either Government or so much as Self-government any more ; that a Government of England by *it* was henceforth an impossibility. Amid the general wreck of things, all Government threatening now to be impossible, the Reminiscence of Royalty rose again, "Let us take refuge in the Past, the Future is not possible !"—and Major-General Monk crossed the Tweed at Coldstream, with results which are well known.

Results which we will not quarrel with, very mournful as they have been ! If it please Heaven, these Two Hundred Years of universal Cant in Speech, with so much of Cotton-spinning, Coal-boring, Commercing, and other valuable Sincerity of Work going on the while, shall not be quite lost to us ! Our Cant will vanish, our whole baleful cunningly-compacted Universe of Cant, as does a heavy Nightmare Dream. We shall awaken ; and find ourselves in a world greatly *widened*.—Why Puritanism could not continue ? My friend, Puritanism was *not* the Complete Theory of this immense Universe ; no, only a part thereof ! To me it seems, in my hours of hope, as if the Destinies meant something grander with England than even Oliver Protector did ! We will not quarrel with the Destinies ; we will work as we can towards fulfilment of them.

But in these same June days of the year 1658, while Hewit and Slingsby lay down their heads on Tower Hill, and the English Hydra finds that its Master is still here, there arrive the news of Dunkirk alluded to above : Dunkirk gloriously taken, Spaniards gloriously beaten : victories and successes abroad, which are a new illumination to the Lord Protector in the eyes of England. Splendid Nephews of the Cardinal, Manzini, Ducs de Crequi, come across the Channel to congratulate 'the most invincible of Sovereigns ;' young Louis Fourteenth himself would have come, had not the attack of small-pox prevented.\* With whom the elegant Lord Fauconberg and others busy themselves : their pageantry and gilt coaches, much gazed at by the idler multitudes, need not detain us here.

\* Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, pp. 172-3 ; 15-21 June, 1658).

The Lord Protector, his Parliament having been dismissed with such brevity, is somewhat embarrassed in his finances. But otherwise his affairs stand well; visibly in an improved condition. Once more he has saved Puritan England; once more approved himself invincible abroad and at home. He looks with confidence towards summoning a new Parliament, of juster disposition towards Puritan England and him.\* With a Parliament, or if extremity of need arrive, without a Parliament and in spite of Parliaments, the Puritan Gospel Cause, sanctioned by a Higher than Parliaments, shall not sink while life remains in this Man. Not till Oliver Cromwell's head lie low, shall English Puritanism bend its head to any created thing. Erect, with its foot on the neck of Hydra Babylon, with its open Bible and drawn Sword, shall Puritanism stand, and with pious all-defiance victoriously front the world. That was Oliver Cromwell's appointed function in this piece of sublunary Space, in this section of swift-flowing Time; that noble, perilous, painful function: and he has manfully done it,—and is now near ending it, and getting honorably relieved from it.

\* Thurloe, i. ii., 84, 99, 128, &c (April, May, 1659)



## DEATH OF THE PROTECTOR.

THERE remain no more *Letters and Speeches of Oliver Cromwell* for us; the above is the last of them of either kind. He takes his leave of the world, in these final words addressed to his Second Parliament, on the 4th of February, 1657-8: "God be judge between you and me!"—So was it appointed by the Destinies and the Oblivions; these were his last public words.

Other Speeches, in that crisis of Oliver's affairs, we have already heard of; 'Speech of two hours' to his Officers in White-hall; Speech to the Lord Mayor and Common Council, in the same place on the same subject: but they have not been reported, or the report of them has not come down to us. There were domestic Letters also, as we still find, written in those same tumultuous weeks; Letters to the Earl of Warwick, on occasion of the death of his Grandson, the Protector's Son-in-Law. For poor young Mr. Rich, whom we saw wedded in November last, is dead.\* He died on the twelfth day after that Dissolution of the Parliament: while Oliver and the Commonwealth are wrestling against boundless Anarchies, Oliver's own Household has its visitations and dark days. Poor little Frances Cromwell, in the fourth month of her marriage, still only about seventeen, she finds herself suddenly a widow; and Hampton Court has become a house of mourning. Young Rich was much lamented. Oliver consoled with the Grandfather 'in seasonable and sympathizing Letters;' for which the brave old Earl rallies himself to make some gratestful Reply:†—"Cannot enough confess my obligation, much less discharge it, for your seasonable and sympathizing Letters; which, besides the value they derive from so worthy a hand, express such faithful affections, and administer such Christian advices

\* 16 Feb., 1657-8 (Newspapers in Cromwelliana, p. 170).

† Earl of Warwick to the Lord Protector, date 11 March, 1657-8; printed in *Godwin*, iv., 528.

as renders them beyond measure dear to me.” Blessings, and noble eulogies, the outpouring of a brave old heart, conclude this Letter of Warwick’s. He himself died shortly after ;\* a new grief to the Protector.—The Protector was delivering the Commonwealth from Hydras and fighting a world-wide battle, while he wrote those Letters on the death of young Rich. If by chance they still lie hidden in the archives of some kinsman of the Warwicks, they may yet be disimprisoned and made audible. Most probably they too are lost. And so we have now nothing more ; —and Oliver has nothing more. His Speakings, and also his Actings, all his manifold Strugglings, more or less victorious, to utter the great God’s-Messsage that was in him,—have here what we call ended. This Summer of 1658, likewise victorious after struggle, is his last in our World of Time. Thenceforth he enters the Eternities ; and rests upon his arms *there*.

Oliver’s look was yet strong ; and young for his years,† which were Fifty-nine last April. The ‘ Three-score and ten years,’ the Psalmist’s limit, which probably was often in Oliver’s thoughts and those of others there, might have been anticipated for him : Ten Years more of Life ;—which, we may compute, would have given another History to all the Centuries of England. But it was not to be so, it was to be otherwise. Oliver’s health, as we might observe, was but uncertain in late times ; often ‘ indisposed’ the spring before last. His course of life had not been favorable to health ! “ A burden too heavy for man ! ” as he himself, with a sigh, would sometimes say. Incessant toil ; inconceivable labor, of head and heart and hand ; toil, peril, and sorrow manifold, continued for near Twenty years now, had done their part : these robust life-energies, it afterwards appeared,‡ had been gradually eaten out. Like a Tower strong to the eye, but with its foundation undermined ; which has not long to stand ; the fall of which, on any shock, may be sudden.—

The Manzinis and Ducs de Crequi, with their splendors, and congratulations about Dunkirk, interesting to the street-populations and general public, had not yet withdrawn, when at Hampton

\* 19 April, 1658 (Thurloe, vii., 85).

† Heath.

‡ Dr. Bates, on examination *post mortem*.

Court there had begun a private scene, of much deeper and quite opposite interest there. The Lady Claypole, Oliver's favorite Daughter, a favorite of all the world, had fallen sick we know not when; lay sick now,—to death, as it proved. Her disease was of internal female nature; the painfullest and most harassing to mind and sense, it is understood, that falls to the lot of a human creature. Hampton Court we can fancy once more, in those July days, a house of sorrow; pale Death knocking there, as at the door of the meanest hut. 'She had great sufferings, great exercises of spirit.' Yes:—and in the depths of the old Centuries, we see a pale anxious Mother, anxious Husband, anxious weeping Sisters, a poor young Frances weeping anew in her weeds. 'For the last fourteen days' his Highness has been by her bedside at Hampton Court, unable to attend to any public business whatever.\* Be still, my Child; trust thou yet in God: in the waves of the Dark River there too is He a God of help!—On the 6th day of August she lay dead; at rest for ever. My young, my beautiful, my brave! She is taken from me; I am left bereaved of her. The Lord giveth, and the Lord taketh away; blessed be the Name of the Lord!—

'His Highness,' says Maidston,† 'being at Hampton Court, sickened a little before the Lady Elizabeth died. Her decease was on Friday, 6th August, 1658; she having lain long under great extremity of bodily pain, which, with frequent and violent convulsion-fits, brought her to her end. But as to his Highness, it was observed that his sense of her outward misery, in the pains she endured, took deep impression upon him; who indeed was ever a most indulgent and tender Father;—his affections' too

\* Thurloe, vii., 295 (27 July, 1658).

† A Collection of several Passages concerning his late Highness Oliver Cromwell, in the Time of his Sickness; wherein is related many of his Expressions upon his Deathbed, together with his Prayer within two or three Days before his Death. Written by one that was then Groom of his Bedchamber. (King's Pamphlets, sm. 4to., no. 792, art. 22: London, 9 June, 1659.) We have called him 'Maidston,' on Noble's bad authority; and to avoid confusion shall continue to do so; but must warn the reader that Maidston was 'Steward of the Household,' not 'Groom of the Bedchamber,' and that the authorship of this Pamphlet remains uncertain for the present.

‘being regulated and bounded by such Christian wisdom and prudence, as did eminently shine in filling up not only that relation of a Father, but also all other relations; wherein he was a most rare and singular example. And no doubt but the sympathy of his spirit with his sorely afflicted and dying Daughter’ did break him down at this time; ‘considering also,’—innumerable other considerations of sufferings and toils, ‘which made me often wonder he was able to hold up so long; except’ indeed ‘that he was borne up by a Supernatural Power at a more than ordinary rate. As a mercy to the truly Christian World, and to us of these Nations, had we been worthy of him!’—

The same authority, who unhappily is not chronological, adds elsewhere this little picture, which we must take with us: ‘At Hampton Court, a few days after the death of the Lady Elizabeth, which touched him nearly,—being then himself under bodily distempers, forerunners of that Sickness which was to death, and in his bedchamber,—he called for his Bible, and desired an honorable and godly person there, with others, present, To read unto him that passage in *Philippians*, Fourth: “*Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound. Everywhere, and by all things, I am instructed; both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. I can do all things, through Christ which strengtheneth me.*”’\* Which read,—said he, to use his own words as near as I can remember them: “This Scripture did once save my life; when my eldest Son” poor Oliver† “died; which went as a dagger to my heart, indeed it did.” And then repeating the words of the text himself, and reading the tenth and eleventh verses, of Paul’s contentation, and submission to the will of God in all conditions,—said he: “It’s true, Paul, *you* have learned this, and attained to this measure of grace; but what shall *I* do? Ah poor creature, it is a hard lesson for me to take out! I find it so!” But reading on to the thirteenth verse, where Paul saith, “*I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me,*”—

\* *Philippians*, iv., 11, 12, 13

† A blank in the Pamphlet here: see *Antea*, vol. i., 125, 150.

then faith began to work, and his heart to find support and comfort, and he said thus to himself, "He that was Paul's Christ is my Christ too!" And so drew waters out of the well of Salvation.'

In the same dark days, occurred George Fox's third and last interview with Oliver. Their first interview we have seen. The second, which had fallen out some two years ago, did not prosper quite so well. George, riding into Town 'one evening,' with some 'Edward Pyot' or other broadbrimmed man, espied the Protector 'at Hyde Park Corner among his Guards,' and made up to his carriage-window, in spite of opposition; and was altogether cordially welcomed there. But on the following day, at Whitehall, the Protector 'spake lightly;' he sat down loosely 'on a table,' and 'spake light things to me,'—in fact, rather quizzed me; finding my enormous sacred Self-confidence none of the least of my attainments!\* Such had been our sacred interview; here now is the third and last.—George dates nothing; and his facts everywhere lie round him like the leather-parings of his old shop: but we judge it may have been about the time when the Manzinis and Ducs de Crequi were parading in their gilt coaches, That George and two Friends 'going out of Town,' on a summer day, 'two of Hacker's men' had met them,—taken them, brought them 'to the Mews.' 'Prisoners there a while;'—but the Lord's power was over Hacker's men; they had to let us go. Whereupon:

'The same day, taking boat I went down' (*up*) 'to Kingston, and from thence to Hampton Court, to speak with the Protector about the Sufferings of Friends. I met him riding into Hampton-Court Park; and before I came to him, as he rode at the head of his Lifeguard, I saw and felt a waft' (*whiff*) 'of death go forth against him'—Or in favor of him, George? His life, if thou knew it, has not been a merry thing for this man, now or heretofore! I fancy he has been looking, this long while, to give it up, whenever the Commander-in-chief required. To quit his laborious sentry-post; honorably lay-up his arms, and be gone to his rest:—all Eternity to rest in, O George! Was thy own life merry, for example, in the ho low of the tree; clad

\* Fox's Journal, i., 381, 2.

permanently in leather ? And does kingly purple, and governing refractory worlds instead of stitching coarse shoes, make it merrier ? The waft of death is not against *him*, I think,—perhaps against thee, and me, and others, O George, when the Nell-Gwyn Defender and Two Centuries of all-victorious Cant have come in upon us ! My unfortunate George — — ‘ a waft of death go forth against him ; and when I came to him, he looked like a dead man. After I had laid the Sufferings of Friends before him, and had warned him according as I was moved to speak to him, he bade me come to his house. So I returned to Kingston ; and, the next day, went up to Hampton Court to speak farther with him. But when I came, Harvey, who was one that waited on him, told me the Doctors were not willing that I should speak with him. So I passed away, and never saw him more.’\*

Friday the 20th of August, 1658, this was probably the day on which George Fox saw Oliver riding into Hampton Park with his Guards, for the last time. That Friday, as we find, his Highness seemed much better : but on the morrow a sad change had taken place ; feverish symptoms, for which the Doctors rigorously prescribed quiet. Saturday to Tuesday the symptoms continued ever worsening : a kind of tertian ague, ‘ bastard tertian’ as the old Doctors name it ; for which it was ordered that his Highness should return to Whitehall, as to a more favorable air in that complaint. On Tuesday accordingly he quitted Hampton Court ; —never to see it more.

‘ His time was come,’ says Maidston ; ‘ and neither prayers nor tears could prevail with God to lengthen out his life and continue him longer to us. Prayers abundantly and incessantly poured out on his behalf, both publicly and privately, as was observed, in a more than ordinary way. Besides many a secret sigh,—secret and unheard by men, yet like the cry of Moses, more loud, and strongly laying hold on God, than many spoken supplications. All which,—the hearts of God’s People being thus mightily stirred up,—did seem to beget confidence in some, and hopes in all ; yea some thoughts in himself, that God would restore him.’

\* Fox’s Journal, pp. 485, 6.

‘Prayers public and private :’ they are worth imagining to ourselves. Meetings of Preachers, Chaplains, and Godly Persons ; ‘Owen, Goodwin, Sterry, with a company of others, in an adjoining room ;’ in Whitehall, and elsewhere over religious London and England, fervent outpourings of many a loyal heart. For there were hearts to whom the nobleness of this man was known ; and his worth to the Puritan Cause was evident. Prayers,—strange enough to us ; in a dialect fallen obsolete, forgotten now. Authentic wrestlings of ancient Human Souls,—who were alive then, with their affections, awe-struck pieties ; with their Human Wishes, risen to be *transcendant*, hoping to prevail with the Inexorable. All swallowed now in the depths of dark Time ; which is full of such, since the beginning !—Truly it is a great scene of World-History, this in old Whitehall ; Oliver Cromwell drawing nigh to his end. The exit of Oliver Cromwell and of English Puritanism ; a great Light, one of our few authentic Solar Luminaries, going down now amid the clouds of Death. Like the setting of a great victorious Summer Sun ; its course now finished. ‘*So stirbt ein Held,*’ says Schiller, ‘So dies a Hero ! Sight worthy to be worshipped !’—He died, this Hero Oliver, in Resignation to God ; as the Brave have all done. ‘We could not be more desirous he should abide,’ says the pious Maidston, ‘than he was content and willing to be gone.’ The struggle lasted, amid hope and fear, for ten days. Some small miscellaneous traits, and confused gleanings of last-words ; and then our poor History ends.

Oliver, we find, spoke much of ‘the Covenants ;’ which indeed are the grand axis of all, in that Puritan Universe of his. Two Covenants ; one of Works, with fearful Judgment for our shortcomings therein, one of Grace and unspeakable mercy ;—gracious Engagements, ‘Covenants,’ which the Eternal God has vouchsafed to make with His feeble creature Man. Two ; and by Christ’s Death they have become One ; there for Oliver is the divine solution of this our Mystery of Life.\* “They were Two,”

\* Much intricate intense reasoning to this effect, on this subject, in Owen’s Works, among others.

he was heard ejaculating : "Two, but put into One before the Foundation of the World !" And again : "It is holy and true, it is holy and true, it is holy and true !—Who made it holy and true ? The Mediator of the Covenant !" And again : "The Covenant is but One. Faith in the Covenant is my only support. And if I believe not, He abides faithful !" When his Children and Wife stood weeping round him, he said : "Love not this world. I say unto you, it is not good that you should love this world !" No. "Children, live like Christians : I leave you the Covenant to feed upon !" Yea, my brave one ; even so ! The Covenant, and eternal Soul of Covenants, remains sure to all the faithful : deeper than the Foundations of this World ; earlier than they, and more lasting than they !—

Look also at the following ; dark hues and bright ; immortal light-beams struggling amid the black vapors of Death. Look ; and conceive a great sacred scene, the sacredest this world sees ;—and think of it, do not speak of it, in these mean days which have no sacred word. "Is there none that says, Who will deliver me from the peril ?" moaned he once. Many hearts are praying, O wearied one ! "Man can do nothing," rejoins he ; "God can do what He will." Another time, again thinking of the Covenant, "Is there none that will come and praise God," whose mercies endure for ever !—

Here also are ejaculations caught up at intervals, undated, in those final days : "Lord, Thou knowest, if I do desire to live, it is to show forth Thy praise and declare Thy works !"—Once he was heard saying, "It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God !"\* 'This was spoken three times,' said Maidston ; 'his repetitions usually being very weighty, and with great vehemency of spirit. Thrice over he said this ; looking into the Eternal Kingdoms. But again : "All the Promises of God are in *Him* : yes, and in *Him* Amen ; to the glory of God by us,—by *us* in Jesus Christ." "The Lord hath filled me with as much assurance of His pardon, and His love, as my soul can hold." "I think I am the poorest wretch that lives : but I love God ; or rather, am beloved of God." "I am a conqueror, and more than a conqueror, through Christ that strengtheneth me !"†

\* Hebrews, x., 31.

† From Maidston ; scattered over his Pamphlet



So pass, in the sickroom, in the sickbed, these last heavy uncertain days. 'The Godly Persons had great assurances of a return to their Prayers : ' transcendant Human Wishes find in their own echo a kind of answer ! They gave his Highness also some assurance that his life would be lengthened. Hope was strong in many to the very end.

On Monday, August 30th, there roared and howled all day a mighty storm of wind. Ludlow, coming up to Town from Essex, could not start in the morning for wind ; tried it in the afternoon ; still could not get along, in his coach, for head-wind ; had to stop at Epping.\* On the morrow, Fleetwood came to him in the Protector's name, to ask, What he wanted here ?—Nothing of public concernment, only to see my Mother-in-law ! answered the solid man. For indeed he did not know that Oliver was dying ; that the glorious hour of Disenthralment, and immortal ' Liberty ' to plunge over precipices with one's self and one's Cause, was so nigh !—It came ; and he took the precipices, like a strongboned resolute blind ginhorse rejoicing in the breakage of its halter, in a very gallant constitutional manner. Adieu, my solid friend ; if I go to Vevay, I will read thy Monument there, perhaps not without emotion, after all !— —

It was on this stormy Monday, while rocking winds, heard in the sickroom and everywhere, were piping aloud, that Thurloe and an Official person entered to inquire, Who, in case of the worst, was to be his Highness's Successor ? The Successor is named in a sealed Paper already drawn up, above a year ago, at Hampton Court ; lying in such and such a place there. The Paper was sent for, searched for ; it could never be found. Richard's is the name understood to have been written in that Paper : not a good name ; but in fact one does not know. In ten years' time, had ten years more been granted, Richard might have become a fitter man ; might have been cancelled, if palpably unfit. On the Thursday-night following, 'and not till then,' his Highness is understood to have formally named "Richard!"—or perhaps it might only be some heavy-laden "Yes, yes!" spoken, out of the thick death-slumbers in answer to Thurloe's *question* "Richard?"

\* Ludlow, ii., 610, 12.

The thing is a little uncertain.\* It was, once more, a matter of much moment;—giving color probably to all the subsequent Centuries of England, this answer!—

On or near the night of the same stormy Monday, ‘two or three days before he died,’ we are to place that Prayer his Highness was heard uttering; which, as taken down by his attendants, exists in many old Notebooks. In the tumult of the winds, the dying Oliver was heard praying:

Lord, though I am a miserable and wretched creature, I am in Covenant with Thee through grace. And I may, I will, come to Thee, for Thy People. Thou hast made me, though very unworthy, a mean instrument to do them some good, and Thee service: and many of them have set too high a value upon me, though others wish and would be glad of my death; Lord, however Thou do dispose of me, continue and go on to do good for them. Give them consistency of judgment, one heart, and mutual love; and go on to deliver them, and with the work of reformation; and make the name of Christ glorious in the world. Teach those who look too much on Thy instruments, to depend more upon Thyself. Pardon such as desire to trample upon the dust of a poor worm, for they are Thy People too. And pardon the folly of this short Prayer: Even for Jesus Christ’s sake. And give us a good night, if it be Thy pleasure. Amen.

‘Some variation there is,’ says Maidston, ‘of this Prayer, as to the account divers give of it; and something is here omitted. But so much is certain, that these were his requests. Wherein his heart was so carried out for God and His people,—yea, indeed for some who had added no little sorrow to him,’ the Anabaptist Republicans, and others,—‘that at this time he seems to forget his own Family and nearest relations.’ Which indeed is to be remarked.

Thursday night the Writer of our old Pamphlet was himself in attendance on his Highness; and has preserved a trait or two; with which let us hasten to conclude. To-morrow is September Third, always kept as a Thanksgiving day, since the Victories of Dunbar and Worcester. Maidston heard the wearied one,

\* Authorities in Godwin, iv., 572–3. But see also *Thurloe*, vii., 375. Fauconberg’s second Letter there.

‘that very night before the Lord took him to his everlasting rest,’ thus with oppressed voice speaking :

‘“Truly God is good ; indeed He is ; He will not”——Then his speech failed him, but as I apprehend, it was, “He will not leave me.” This saying, “God is good,” he frequently used all along ; and would speak it with much cheerfulness, and fervor of spirit, in the midst of his pains.—Again he said : “I would be willing to live to be farther serviceable to God and His people : but my work is done. Yet God will be with His people.”’

‘He was very restless most part of the night, speaking often to himself. And there being something to drink offered him, he was desired To take the same, and endeavor to sleep.—Unto which he answered ; “It is not my design to drink or sleep ; but my design is, to make what haste I can to be gone.”’—

‘Afterwards towards morning he used divers holy expressions, implying much inward consolation and peace ; among the rest he spake some exceeding self-debasing words, *annihilating* and judging himself. And truly it was observed, that a public spirit to God’s Cause did breathe in him,—as in his lifetime, so now to his very last.’

When the morrow’s sun rose, Oliver was speechless ; between three and four in the afternoon, he lay dead. Friday, 3d September, 1658. “The consternation and astonishment of all people,” writes Fauconberg,\* “are inexpressible ; their hearts seem as if sunk within them. My poor Wife,—I know not what on Earth to do with her. When seemingly quieted, she bursts out again into a passion that tears her very heart in “pieces.”—Husht, poor weeping Mary ! Here is a Life-battle right nobly done. Seest thou not,

‘The storm is changed into a calm,  
At His command and will ;  
So that the waves which raged before  
Now quiet are and still !

\* To Henry Cromwell, 7 September, 1658 (*Thurloe*, vii., 375.)

Then are *they* glad,—because at rest  
And quiet now they be:  
So to the haven He them brings  
Which they desired to see.

‘Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord ;’ blessed are the valiant that have lived in the Lord. ‘Amen, saith the Spirit,’—Amen. ‘They do rest from their labors, and their works follow them.’

‘Their works follow them.’ As, I think, this Oliver Cromwell’s works have done and are still doing ! We have had our ‘Revolutions of Eighty-eight,’ officially called ‘glorious ;’ and other Revolutions not yet called glorious ; and somewhat has been gained for poor Mankind. Men’s ears are not now slit-off by rash Officiality ; Officiality will, for long henceforth, be more cautious about men’s ears. The tyrannous Starchambers, branding-irons, chimerical Kings and Surplices at Allhallow-tide, they are gone, or with immense velocity going. Oliver’s works do follow him !—The works of a man, bury them under what guano-mountains and obscene owl-droppings you will, do not perish, cannot perish. What of Heroism, what of Eternal Light was in a Man and his Life, is with very great exactness added to the Eternities ; remains for ever a new divine portion of the Sum of Things ; and no owl’s voice, this way or that, in the least avails in the matter.—But we have to end here.

Oliver is gone ; and with him England’s Puritanism, laboriously built together by this man, and made a thing far-shining miraculous to its own Century, and memorable to all the Centuries, soon goes. Puritanism, without its King, is *kingless*, anarchic ; falls into dislocation, self-collision ; staggers, plunges into ever deeper anarchy ; King, Defender of the Puritan Faith there can now none be found ;—and nothing is left but to recall the old disowned Defender with the remnants of his Four Surplices, and two Centuries of *Hypocrisy*, and put-up with all that, the best we may. The Genius of England no longer soars Sunward, world-defiant, like an Eagle through the storms, ‘mewing her mighty youth,’ as John Milton saw her do : the Genius of England, much liker a greedy Ostrich intent on provender and a

whole skin mainly, stands with its *other* extremity Sunward ; with its Ostrich-head stuck into the readiest bush, of old Church-tippets, King-cloaks, or what other 'sheltering Fallacy' there may be, and *so* awaits the issue. The issue has been slow ; but it is now seen to have been inevitable. No Ostrich, intent on gross terrene provender, and sticking its head into Fallacies, but will be awakened one day,—in a terrible *à-posteriori* manner, if not otherwise !—Awake before it come to that ; gods and mer. bid us awake ! The Voices of our Fathers, with thousandfold stern monition to one and all, bid us awake.

SUPPLEMENT TO THE FIRST EDITION

OF

OLIVER CROMWELL'S

LETTERS AND SPEECHES.



# S U P P L E M E N T.

---

## INTRODUCTION.

By way of Introduction to this *Supplement*, read the following

“ *Preface to the Second Edition.*

“ The first edition of this work having, contrary to expectation, spread itself abroad with some degree of impetus, has, as in that case was partly natural, brought me into correspondence with various possessors and collectors of Cromwell letters, has brought obliging contributions, and indications true and fallacious, from far sources and from near; and, on the whole, has disinterred from their wide-spread slumber a variety of letters not before known to me, or not before remembered by me. With which new letters it became a rather complex question what was now to be done.

“ They were not, in general, of much, or almost of any, intrinsic importance; might here and there have saved some ugly labor and research, had they been known in time; but did not now, as it turned out, tend to modify, in any essential particular, what had already been set down, and sent forth to the world as a kind of continuous connected book. It is true, all clearly authentic letters of Cromwell, never so unimportant, do claim to be preserved; and in this book, by the title of it, are naturally to be looked for. But, on the other hand, how introduce them now? To unhoop your cask again, and try to insert new staves, when the old staves, better or worse, do already hang together, is what no cooper will recommend! Not to say that your set of Cromwell letters can never, in this second or in any other edition, be considered as *complete*: an uncounted handful of needles to be



pricked from an unmeasured continent of hay, how can you ever assure yourself that you have them all ?

“ After deliberation, the law of the case seemed to be somewhat as follows : *First*, that whatever letters would easily fit themselves into the book as it stood—easily, or even with labor, if that were all—should be duly admitted. *Secondly*, that for such letters as tended to bring into better relief any feature of the man or his work ; much more, had they tended to correct or alter in any respect any feature I had assigned to him or to it, that for these an effort should be made, if needful ; even a considerable effort ; effort, in fact, to be limited only by this consideration, Not to damage by it to a still greater degree the already extant, and so by one's effort accomplish only loss. *Thirdly*, that for such Cromwell letters as did not fall under either of these descriptions, but were nevertheless clearly of his composition, there should be an *Appendix* provided. In which, without pretension to commentary, and not needing to be read along with the text, but only apart from it if at all, they might at least stand correctly printed : they, and certain other pieces of more doubtful claim ; for most part letters too, but of half, or, in some cases, of wholly official character ; if by chance they were elucidative, brief, and not easily attainable elsewhere. Into which *Appendix* also, as into a loose back-room or lumber-room, not bound to be organic or habitable, bound only to be maintained in a reasonably swept condition, any still *new* letters of Cromwell might without ceremony be disposed.

“ Upon these principles this second edition has been produced. New letters, intercalated into the text, and letters lying in loose rank in the appendix, all that I had, or could hear of or get any trace of hitherto, are here given. For purchasers of the first edition, the new matter has been detached, printed as a *Supplement*, which the bookseller undertakes to sell at prime cost. And now, having twice escaped alive from these detestable dust-abyssees, let me beg to be allowed to consider this my small act of homage to the memory of a hero as finished—this second edition of *Oliver's Letters and Speeches* as the final one. New letters, should such still turn up, I will not, except they contradict some statement,

or fiber of a statement, in the text, undertake to introduce there, but deposit them without ceremony in the loose lumber-room, in a more or less swept condition.

“T. CARLYLE.

“London, 11th May, 1846.”

---

The foregoing preface will sufficiently explain what this Supplement pretends to be. The new letters, documents, and elucidations concerning Cromwell are all here ; but nothing could be given here except in the detached form, each piece standing on its own basis, and to be counted only as a *supplemental* one, without support from the others, except what the reader's own intelligence and diligence might furnish.

Such new letters as have been interwoven into the new *text*, these, with their commentary, stand here first in order ; may perhaps pretend, even in their disunited form, to a little more importance than the others. The *Appendix* is given wholly as it stands in the new edition. For each new piece I have indicated the old page to which it hooks, or might hook, itself ; and where that seemed of any benefit, the page and sentence. And so to the reader's “intelligence and diligence,” which alone are sovereign in all cases, we will leave this somewhat confused **case** of the *Supplement to Oliver's Letters and Speeches*.



# SUPPLEMENT

TO

## CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.

---

No. 1

Vol. i., p. 131: '*And Lord Capel has seen good to vanish again.*']

Lord Capel has vanished; and the 12,000 zealous Volunteers of the Association are dismissed to their countries, with monition to be ready when called for again. Moreover, to avoid like perils in future, it is now resolved to make a Garrison of Cambridge; to add new works to the Castle, and fortify the Town itself. This is now going on in the early spring days of 1643; and Colonel Cromwell and all hands are busy! Here is a small Document incidentally preserved to us, which becomes significant if well read.

Fen Drayton is a small Village on the Eastern edge of Cambridgeshire, between St. Ives and Cambridge,—well known to Oliver. In the small Church of Fen Drayton, after divine service on Sunday the 12th of March, 1642-3, the following Warrant, 'delivered to the Church-wardings' (by one Mr. Norris, a Constable, who spells very ill), and by them to the Curate, is read to a rustic congregation,—who sit, somewhat agape, I apprehend, and uncertain what to do about it.

COM. CANT. ('CAMBRIDGESHIRE TO WIT').

*To all and every the Inhabitants of Fen Drayton in the Hundred of Papworth.*

WHEREAS we have been enforced, by apparent grounds of approaching danger, to begin to fortify the Town of Cambridge, for preventing the Enemy's inroad, and the better to maintain the peace of this County.

Having in part seen your good affections to the Cause, and now stand

ing in need of your further assistance to the perfecting of the said Fortifications, which will cost at least Two thousand pounds, We are encouraged as well as necessitated to desire a Freewill Offering of a Liberal Contribution from you, for the better enabling of us to attain our desired ends,—viz. the Preservation of our County ;—knowing that every honest and well-affected man, considering the vast expenses we have already been at, and our willingness to do according to our ability, will be ready to contribute his best assistance to a work of so high concernment and so good an end.

We do therefore desire that what shall be by you freely given and collected may with all convenient speed be sent to the Commissioners at Cambridge, to be employed to the use aforesaid. And so you shall further engage us to be

Yours ready to serve,

OLIVER CROMWELL,  
THOMAS MARTYN,\*  
(‘ and Six others.’)

Cambridge, this 8th of March, 1642.

The Thomas Martyn, Sir Thomas, and the Six others whom we suppress, are all of the Cambridge Committees of those times;† zealous Puritan men, not known to us otherwise. Norris did not raise much at Fen Drayton ; only 1*l.* 19*s.* 2*d.*, ‘ subscribed by Fifteen persons,’ according to his Endorsement ;—the general public at Fen Drayton, and probably in other such<sup>\*</sup> places, hesitates a little to draw its purse as yet ! One way or other, however, the work of fortifying Cambridge was got done.‡ A regular Force lies henceforth in Cambridge : Captains Fleetwood, Desborow, Whalley, new soldiers who will become veterans and known to us, are on service here. Of course the Academic stillness is much fluttered by the war-drum, and many a confused brabble springs up between Gown and Garrison ; college tippets, and on occasion still more venerable objects, getting torn by the business ! The truth is, though Cambridge is not so Malignant as Oxford, the Surplices at Allhallowtide have still much sway there ; and various Heads of Houses are by no means what one could wish

\* Cooper’s Annals of Cambridge (Cambridge, 1845), iii., 340.

† Husbands’ Second Collection (London, 1646), p. 329 ; Commons Journals, iii., 153, &c.

‡ Reported complete, 15th July, 1643 (Cooper’s Annals, iii., 350).

of whom accordingly Oliver has had, and still occasionally has, to send,—by instalments as the cases ripen,—a select batch up to Parliament: Reverend Dr. This and then also Reverend Dr. That; who are lodged in the Tower, in Ely House, in Lambeth or elsewhere, in a tragic manner, and pass very troublous years.\*

Cambridge continues henceforth the Bulwark and Metropolis of the Association; where the Committees sit, where the centre of all business is. ‘Colonel Cook,’ I think, is Captain of the Garrison; but the soul of the Garrison, and of the Association generally, is probably another Colonel. Now here, now swiftly there;—as the following traits still witness.

## No. II.

[Vol. i., p. 134: *precedes Letter VI. there.*]

THE main brunt of the War, during this year 1643, is in the extreme Southwest, between Sir Ralph Hopton and the Earl of Stamford; and in the North, chiefly in Yorkshire, between the Earl of Newcastle and Lord Fairfax. The Southwest, Cornwall or Devonshire transactions do not much concern us in this place; but with the Yorkshire we shall by and by have some concern. A considerable flame of War burns conspicuous in those two regions: the rest of England, all in a hot but very dim state, may be rather said to *smoke*, everywhere ready for burning, and incidentally catch fire here and there.

Essex, the Lord General, lies at Windsor, all spring, with the finest Parliamentary Army we have yet had; but unluckily can undertake almost nothing, till he see. For his Majesty in Oxford is also quiescent mostly; engaged in a negotiation with his Parliament; in a Treaty,—of which Colonel Hampden and other wise men, though my Lord of Essex cannot, already predict the

\* Querela Cantabrigiensis, &c., &c., in Cooper, *ubi supra*.

issue. And the Country is all writhing in dim conflict, suffering manifold distress. And from his Majesty's headquarters ever and anon there darts out, now hither now thither, across the dim smoke-element, a swift fierce Prince Rupert, plundering and blazing; and then suddenly darts in again;—too like a streak of sudden *fire*, for he plunders, and even *burns*, a good deal! Which state of things Colonel Hampden and others witness with much impatience; but cannot get the Lord General to undertake anything till he see.

An obscure entangled scene of things; all manner of War-movements and swift-shooting electric influences crossing one another with a complex action and reaction;—as happens in a scene of War; much more of Civil War, where a whole People and its affairs have become *electric*. Here are Three poor Letters, reunited at last from their long exile, resuscitated after long interment: not in a very luminous condition! Vestiges of Oliver in the Eastern Association; which, however faint, are welcome to us.

---

## LETTER I.

THE Essex people, at least the Town of Colchester and Langley their Captain, have, in some measure, sent their contingent to Cambridge; but money is short. Cromwell, home rapidly again from Norfolk, must take charge of it; has an order from the Lord General;—nay, it seems a Great Design is in view; and Cromwell too, like Richard Baxter and the rest of us, imagines one grand effort might perhaps end these bleeding miseries.

*'To the Mayor, &c., of Colchester, By Captain Dodsworth: These.'*

*'Cambridge,' 23d March, 1642.*

GENTLEMEN,

Upon the coming down of your Townsmen to Cambridge, Captain Langley not knowing how to dispose of them, desired me to nominate a fit Captain: which I did,—an honest, religious, valiant Gentleman, Captain Dodsworth, the Bearer hereof.

He hath diligently attended the service, and much improved his men in their exercise ; but hath been unhappy beyond others in not receiving any pay for himself, and what he had for his soldiers is out long ago. He hath, by his prudence, what with fair and winning carriage, what with money borrowed, kept them together. He is able to do so no longer : they will presently disband, if a course be not taken.

It's pity it should be so ! For I believe they are brought into as good order as most Companies in the Army. Besides, at this instant, there is great need to use them ; I having received a special command from my Lord General, To advance with what force we can, to put an end, if it may be, to this Work,—God so assisting, from whom all help cometh.

I beseech you, therefore, consider this Gentleman, and the soldiers ; and if it be possible, make up his Company a Hundred-and-twenty ; and send them away with what expedition is possible. It may, through God's blessing, prove very happy. One month's pay may prove all your trouble. I speak to wise men :—God direct you. I rest,

Yours to serve you,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

The present Great Design, though it came to nothing, is not without interest for us. Some three days before the date of this Letter, as certain Entries in the Commons Journals still testify,† there had risen hot alarm in Parliament ; my Lord General writing from Windsor ' at three in the morning : ' Prince Rupert out in one of his forays ; in terrible force before the Town of Aylesbury : ought not one to go and fight him ? Without question ! eagerly answer Colonel Hampden and others : Fight him, beat him ; beat more than him ! Why not rise heartily from Windsor with this fine Army ; calling the Eastern Association and all friends to aid us ; and storm in upon Oxford itself ? It may perhaps quicken the negotiations there !

This Design came to nothing, and soon sank into total obscurity again. But it seems Colonel Hampden did entertain such a Design, and even take some steps in it. And this Letter of Oliver's, coupled with the Entries in the Commons Journals, is perhaps the most authentic proof we yet have of that fact : an interesting fact which has rested hitherto on the vague testimony

\* Morant's History of Colchester (London, 1748), book i., p 55 : ' from the Original,' he says, but not where that was or is.

† Commons Journals, iii., 10, 12.



of Clarendon,\* who seems to think the Design might have succeeded. But it came to nothing; Colonel Hampden could not rouse the Lord General to do more than 'write at three in the morning,' and send 'special commands,' for the present.

## LETTER II.

AND now here is a new horde of 'Plunderers' threatening the Association with new infall from the North. The old Newspapers call them 'Camdeners;' followers of a certain Noel, Viscount Camden, from Rutlandshire; who has seized Stamford, is driving cattle at a great rate, and fast threatening to become important in those quarters. 'Sir John Burgoyne' is the Burgoyne of Potton in Bedfordshire, chief Committe-man in that County: Bedford is not in our Association; but will perhaps lend us help in this common peril.

*'To my honored Friend, Sir John Burgoyne, Bart.: These.'*

'Huntingdon,' 10th April, 1643.

SIR,

These Plunderers draw near. I think it will do well if you can afford us any assistance of Dragoons, to help in this great Exigence. We have here about Six or Seven Troops of Horse; such, I hope, as will fight. It's happy to resist such beginnings betimes.

If you can contribute anything to our aid, let us speedily participate thereof. In the mean time, and ever, command

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Concerning these Camdeners at Stamford and elsewhere, so soon as Colonel Cromwell has got himself equipped, we shall hear tidings again. Meanwhile, say the old Newspapers,‡ there is a 'regiment of stout Northfolk blades gone to Wisbeach, Croyland,

\* History of the Rebellion (Oxford, 1819), ii., 319; see also May's Long Parliament (Maseres's edition, London, 1812). p. 192.

† Communicated (from an old Copy) by H. C. Cooper, Esq., Cambridge.

‡ In Cooper's Annals, iii., 343.

and so into Holland' of Lincolnshire, 'to preserve those parts,'—if they may. Colonel Cromwell will follow; and give good account of that matter by and by.

Lincolnshire, in fact, ought to be all subdued to the Parliament; added to the Association. We could then co-operate with Fairfax across the Humber, and do good service! So reason the old Committees, as one dimly ascertains. The Parliament appointed a Lieutenant of Lincolnshire, Lord Willoughby of Parham, a year ago;\* but he is much infested with Camdeners, with enemies in all quarters, and has yet got no secure footing there. Cromwell's work, and that of the Association, for the next twelve-month, as we shall perceive, was that of clearing Lincolnshire from enemies, and accomplishing this problem.

---

### LETTER III.

MEANWHILE enter Robert Barnard, Esquire, again. Barnard, getting ever deeper into trouble, has run up to Town; has been persuading my Lord of Manchester and others, That he is not a disaffected man; that a contribution should not be inflicted on him by the County Committee.

*To my very loving Friend, Robert Barnard, Esquire: Present these.*

'Huntingdon,' 17th April, 1643

SIR,

I have received two Letters, one from my Lord of Manchester, the other from yourself; much to the same effect: I hope therefore one answer will serve them both.

Which is in short this: That we *know* you are disaffected to the Parliament;—and truly if the Lords, or any Friends, may take you off from a reasonable Contribution, for my part I should be glad to be commanded to any other employment. Sir, you may, if you will, "come freely into the country about your occasions." For my part, I have protected you in your absence; and shall do so to you.

\* Commons Journals (ii., 497), 25 March, 1642. New encouragement and sanction given him (Rushworth, v., 108), of date 9 Jan., 1642-3

This is all,—but that I am ready to serve you, and rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Let Barnard return, therefore ; take a lower level, where the ways are more sheltered in stormy weather ;—and so save himself, and ‘become Recorder after the Restoration.’ Subtlety may deceive him ; integrity never will !

---

#### LETTER IV.

THERE was in those weeks, as we learn from the old Newspapers, a combined plan, of which Cromwell was an element, for capturing Newark ; there were several such ; but this and all the rest proved abortive, one element or another of the combination always failing. That Cromwell was not the failing element we could already guess, and may now definitely read.

‘Lord Grey,’ be it remembered, is Lord Grey of Groby, once Military Chief of the Association,—though now I think employed mainly elsewhere, nearer home : a Leicestershire man ; as are ‘Hastings’ and ‘Hartop :’ well-known all of them in the troubles of that County. Hastings, strong for the King, holds ‘Ashby-de-la-Zouch, which is his Father’s House, well fortified ;’† and shews and has shewn himself a pushing man. ‘His Excellency,’ is my Lord General Essex. ‘Sir John Gell’ is Member and Commander for Derbyshire, has Derby Town for Garrison. The Derbyshire forces, the Nottinghamshire forces, the Association forces : if all the ‘forces’ could but be united ! But they never rightly can.

\* Gentleman’s Magazine (London, 1791), lxi., 44: no notice whence, no criticism or commentary there: Letter undoubtedly genuine.

† Clarendon, ii., 202.

*'To the Honorable the Committee at Lincoln: These.'*

*'Lincolnshire,' 3d May, 1643.*

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

I must needs be hardly thought on; because I am still the messenger of unhappy tidings and delays concerning you,—though I know my heart is to assist you with all expedition!

My Lord Grey hath now again failed me of the rendezvous at Stamford,—notwithstanding that both he and I received Letters from his Excellency, commanding us both to meet, and, together with Sir John Gell and the Nottingham forces, to join with you. My Lord Grey sent Sir Edward Hartop to me, To let me know he could not meet me at Stamford according to our agreement; fearing the exposing of Leicester to the forces of Mr. Hastings and some other Troops drawing that way.

Believe it, it were better, in my poor opinion, Leicester were not, than that there should not be found an immediate taking of the field by our forces to accomplish the common ends. Wherein I shall deal as freely with him, when I meet him, as you can desire. I perceive Ashby-de-la-Zouch sticks much with him. I have offered him now another place of meeting;\* to come to which I suppose he will not deny me; and that to be to-morrow. If you shall therefore think fit to send one over unto us to be with us at night,—you do not know how far we may prevail with him: To draw speedily to a head, with Sir John Gell and the other forces where we may all meet at a general rendezvous, to the end you know of. And then you shall receive full satisfaction concerning my integrity;†—and if no man shall help you, yet will not I be wanting to do my duty, God assisting me.

If we could unite those forces 'of theirs;' and with them speedily make Grantham the general rendezvous, both of yours and ours, I think it would do well. I shall bend my endeavors that way. Your concurrence by some able instrument to solicit this, might probably exceedingly hasten it; especially having so good a foundation to work upon as my Lord General's commands. Our Norfolk forces, which will not prove so many as you may imagine by six or seven hundred men, will lie conveniently at Spalding; and, I am confident, be ready to meet at Grantham at the general rendezvous.

I have no more to trouble you; but begging of God to take away the impediments that hinder our conjunction, and to prosper our designs, take leave.

Your faithful servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

\* Name, not so fit to be *written* for fear of accidents, is very much unknown now!

† Means, 'that the blame was not in me.'

‡ Tanner mss. (Oxford), lxii., 94: the address lost, the date of place never given; the former clearly restorable from Commons Journals, ii., 75

Some rendezvous at Grantham does take place, some uniting of forces, more or fewer; and strenuous endeavor thereupon. As the next Letter will testify.

No. III.

[Vol. i., p. 136: *precedes Letter VII. there.*]

LETTER V.

THE 'great Service,' spoken of in this Letter, we must still understand to be the deliverance of Lincolnshire in general; or if it were another, it did not take effect. No possibility yet of getting over into Yorkshire to co-operate with the Fairfaxes,—though they much need help, and there have been speculations of that and of other kinds.\* For the War-tide breaks in very irregular billows upon our shores; at one time we are pretty clear of Newark and its Northern Papists; and anon 'the Queen has got into Newark,' and we are like to be submerged by them. As a general rule, intricate perilous difficulties abound; and cash is scarce. The Fairfaxes, meanwhile, last week, have gained a Victory at Wakefield;† which is a merciful encouragement.

*'To the Mayor, &c., of Colchester: These.'*

*'Lincolnshire,' 28th May, 1643.*

GENTLEMEN,

I thought it my duty once more to write unto you For more strength to be speedily sent unto us, for this great Service.

I suppose you hear of the great Defeat given by my Lord Fairfax to the Newcastle Forces at Wakefield. It was a great mercy of God to us. And had it not been bestowed upon us at this very present, my Lord Fairfax had not known how to have subsisted. We assure you, should the Force we have miscarry,—expect nothing but a speedy march of the Enemy up unto you.

\* Old Newspapers (30 May—12 June, 1643), in *Cromwelliana*, p. 6.

† 21 May, 1643: Letter by Lord Fairfax (in Rushworth, v., 261). *Earl's Memorials*, by the younger Fairfax (in Somers Tracts, v., 380).

Why you should not strengthen us to make us subsist,—judge you the danger of the neglect; and how inconvenient this improvidence, or unthrif, may be to you! I shall never write but according to my judgment: I tell you again, It concerns you exceedingly to be persuaded by me. My Lord Newcastle is near Six thousand foot, and above Sixty troops of horse; my Lord Fairfax is about Three thousand foot, and Nine troops of horse; and we have about Twenty-four troops of horse and dragooners. The Enemy draws more to the Lord Fairfax: our motion and yours must be exceeding speedy, or else it will do you no good at all.

If you send, let your men come to Boston. I beseech you hasten the supply to us:—forget not money! I press not hard; though I do so need, that, I assure you, the foot and dragooners are ready to mutiny. Lay not too much upon the back of a poor gentleman, who desires, without much noise, to lay down his life, and bleed the last drop to serve the Cause and you. I ask not your money for myself: if that were my end and hope,—viz. the pay of my place,—I would not open my mouth at this time. I desire to deny myself; but others will not be satisfied. I beseech you hasten supplies. Forget not your prayers.

Gentlemen, I am

Yours,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

‘Lay not too much upon a poor gentleman,’—who is really doing what he can; shooting swiftly, now hither, now thither, wheresoever the tug of difficulty lies; struggling very sore, as seems the Son of Light and Son of Adam, not to be vanquished by the mud-element!

---

#### No. IV.

[Vol. i., p. 141: ‘*Gainsborough was directly taken.*’]

#### LETTER VI.

GAINSBOROUGH was directly taken, after this relief of it; Lord Willoughby could not resist the Newarkers with Newcastle at their head. Gainsborough is lost, Lincoln is lost; unless help

\* Morant’s History of Colchester, book i., p. 56.

come speedily, all is like to be lost. The following Letter, with its Enclosure from the Lord Lieutenant Willoughby of Parham, speaks for itself. Read the Enclosure first.

*"To my noble Friend, Colonel Cromwell, at Huntingdon: These.*

Boston, 5th August, 1643.

"NOBLE SIR,

"Since the business of Gainsborough, the hearts of our men have been so deaded that we have lost most of them by running away. So that we were forced to leave Lincoln upon a sudden:—and if I had not done it then, I should have been left alone in it. So that now I am at Boston; where we are very poor in strength;—so that without some speedy supply, I fear we shall not hold this long neither.

"My Lord General, I perceive, hath writ to you, To draw all the forces together. I should be glad to see it: for if that will not be, there can be no good to be expected. If you will endeavor to stop my Lord of Newcastle, you must presently draw them to him and fight him! For without we be masters of the field, we shall be pulled out by the ears, one after another.

"The Foot, if they will come on, may march very securely to Boston; which, to me, will be very considerable to your Association. For if the Enemy get that Town, which is now very weak for defence for want of men, I believe they will not be long out of Norfolk and Suffolk

"I can say no more: but desire you to hasten;—and rest,

"Your servant,

"FRANCIS WILLOUGHBY."\*

*'For my noble Friends, the Committee of the Association sitting at Cambridge: These.'*

Huntingdon, 6th August, 1643.

GENTLEMEN,

You see by this Enclosed how sadly your affairs stand. It's no longer Disputing, but Out instantly all you can! Raise all your Bands;† send them to Huntingdon;—get up what Volunteers you can; hasten your Horses.

Send these Letters to Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex without delay. I beseech you spare no, but be expeditious and industrious! Almost all our Foot have quitted Stamford: there is nothing to interrupt an Enemy,

\* Baker mss. (Cambridge), xxxiv., 429; is in Tanner mss. too, together with the following.

† Trainbands.

out our Horse, that is considerable. You must act lively ;—do it without distraction. Neglect no means !—I am

Your faithful servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Sir William Waller, whom some called William the Conqueror, has been beaten all to pieces on Lansdown Heath, about three weeks ago. The Fairfaxes too are beaten from the field ; glad to get into Hull,—which Hotham the Traitor was about delivering to her Majesty, when vigilant persons laid him fast.† And, in the end of May, Earl Stamford was defeated in the Southwest ; and now Bristol has been suddenly surrendered to Prince Rupert,—for which let Colonel Nathaniel Fiennes (says Mr. Prynne, still very zealous) be tried by Court-martial, and if possible, shot.

#### No. V.

[Vol. i., p. 144 : '*Indignant, somewhat elephantine man.*']

#### LETTER VII.

First, however, take this word from the Associated Counties, of the 'listing' there. Matters go not well : 'Nobody to *put on*,' nobody to *push* ; cash too is and remains defective :—here, however, is a glimpse of the *Ironsides*, first specific glimpse, which is something.

*To my honored Friend, Oliver St. John, Esq., at Lincoln's Inn : These present.*

'Boston,' 11th September, '1643.'

SIR,

Of all men I should not trouble you with money matters,—did no

\* Cooper's Annals of Cambridge, iii., 355 ; Tanner mss., lxii., 229.

† Of Hotham : 29 June, 1643 (Rushworth, v., 275-6) —of the Fairfaxes at Adderton Moor : 30 June (ib., 279) ;—of Waller : 13 July (ib., 285 ; Clarendon, ii., 376-9). Stratton Fight in Cornwall, defeat of Stamford by Hop ton, was 16 May ; Bristol is 22 July (Rushworth, v., 271, 284).



the heavy necessities my Troops are in, press upon me beyond measure. I am neglected exceedingly !

I am now ready for my march towards the Enemy ; who hath entrenched himself over against Hull, my Lord Newcastle having besieged the Town. Many of my Lord of Manchester's Troops are come to me : very bad and mutinous, not to be confided in ;—*they* paid to a week almost ; *mine* noways provided for to support them, except by the poor Sequestrations of the County of Huntingdon ! My Troops increase. I have a lovely company ; you would respect them, did you know them. No "Anabaptists ;" they are honest, sober Christians :—they expect to be used as men !

If I took pleasure to write to the House in bitterness, I have occasion. 'Of' the 3000*l.* allotted me, I cannot get the Norfolk part nor the Hertfordshire : it was given 'away' before I had it.—I have minded your service to forgetfulness of my own Soldiers' necessities. I desire not to seek myself : 'but' I have little money of my own to help my Soldiers. My estate is little. I tell you, the Business of Ireland and England hath had of me, in money, between Eleven and Twelve Hundred pounds ;—therefore my Private can do little to help the Public. You have had my money : I hope in God I desire to venture my skin. So do mine. Lay weight upon their patience ; but break it not ! Think of that which may be a real help. I believe 5000*l.*\* is due.

If you lay aside the thought of me and my Letter, I expect no help. Pray for

Your true friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

There is no care taken how to maintain that Force of Horse and Foot raised and a-raising for my Lord of Manchester. He hath not one able to put on 'that business.' The Force will fall if some help not. Weak counsels and weak actings undo all !—*[two words crossed out]*—all will be lost, if God help not ! Remember who tells you.†

\* Erased, as not the correct sum.

† Additional Ayscough mss., 5015, art. 25 : printed, with some errors, in *Annual Register*, xxxv., 358.

## No. VI.

[Vol. i., p. 147: ‘*Successfully besieged when the Spring comes.*’]

IN the month of January, 1643–4, Oliver, as Governor of Ely, is present for some time in that City; lodgēs, we suppose, with his own family there; doing military and other work of government:—makes a transient appearance in the Cathedral one day; memorable to the Reverend Mr. Hitch and us.

The case was this. Parliament, which, ever since the first meeting of it, had shewn a marked disaffection to Surplices at Allhallowtide and ‘monuments of Superstition and Idolatry,’ and passed Order after Order to put them down,—has in August last come to a decisive Act on the subject, and specifically explained that go they must and shall.\* Act of Parliament which, like the previous Orders of Parliament, could only have gradual partial execution, according to the humor of the locality; and gave rise to scenes. By the Parliament’s directions, the Priest, Churchwardens, and proper Officers were to do it, with all decency: failing the proper officers, *improper* officers, military men passing through the place, these and such like, backed by a Puritan populace, and a Puritan soldiery, had to do it;—not always in the softest manner. As many a *Querela*, Peter Heylin’s (lying Peter’s) *History*, and *Persecutio Undecima*, still testifies with angry tears. You cannot pull the shirt off a man, the skin off a man, in a way that will please him! Our Assembly of Divines, sitting earnestly deliberative ever since June last,† will direct us what Form of Worship we are to adopt,—some form, it is to be hoped, not grown dramaturgic to us, but still awfully symbolic of us. Meanwhile let all Churches, especially all Cathedrals, be stripped

\* 28 August, 1643 (Scobell, i., 53; Commons Journals, iii., 220): 2 November, 1642 (Commons Journals, and Husbands, ii., 119): 31 August, 1641; 23 January, 1641 (Commons Journals, *in diebus*).

† Bill read a third time, 6 January, 1642–3 (Commons Journals, ii., 916) Act itself with the Names, 13 June, 1643 (Scobell, i., 42–4).

of whatever the general soul so much as suspects to be stage property and prayer by machinery,—a thing we very justly hold in terror and horror, and dare not live beside!

Ely Cathedral, it appears, had still been overlooked,—Ely, much troubled with scandalous ministers, as well as with disaffected trainbands,—and Mr. Hitch, under the very eyes of Oliver, persists in his Choir-service there. Here accordingly is an official Note, copies of which still sleep in some repositories.

---

## LETTER VIII.

‘*To the Rev. Mr. Hitch, at Ely: These.*’

‘Ely,’ 10th January, 1643.

MR. HITCH,

Lest the Soldiers should in any tumultuary or disorderly way attempt the reformation of the Cathedral Church, I require you to forbear altogether your Choir-service, so unedifying and offensive :—and this as you shall answer it, if any disorder should arise thereupon.

I advise you to catechise, and read and expound the Scripture to the people.; not doubting but the Parliament, with the advice of the Assembly of Divines, will direct you farther. I desire your Sermons ‘too,’ where usually they have been,—but more frequent.

Your loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Mr. Hitch paid no attention; persisted in his Choir-service :—whereupon enter the Governor of Ely with soldiers, ‘with a rabble at his heels,’ say the old *Querelas*. With a rabble at his heels, with his hat on, he walks up to the Choir; says audibly: “I am a man under Authority; and am commanded to dismiss this Assembly,”—then draws back a little, that the Assembly may dismiss with decency. Mr. Hitch has paused for a moment; but seeing Oliver draw back, he starts again: “As it was in the

\* Gentleman’s Magazine (London, 1788), lviii., 225: copied ‘from an old Copy, by a Country Rector,’ who has had some difficulty in reading the name of Hitch, and knows nothing farther about him or it.

beginning—!"—"Leave off your fooling, and come down, Sir!"\* said Oliver, in a voice still audible to this Editor; which Mr. Hitch did now instantaneously give ear to. And so, 'with his whole congregation,' vanishes from the field of History

---

## LETTER IX.

ABOUT the end of next month, February, 1644, the Lieutenant General, we find, has been in Gloucester, successfully conveying Ammunition thither; and has taken various strong-houses by the road,—among others, Hilsden-House in Buckinghamshire, with important gentlemen, and many prisoners; which latter, 'Walloons, French, and other outlandish men,' appear in Cambridge streets in a very thirsty condition; and are, in spite of danger, refreshed according to ability, by the loyal Scholars, and especially by 'Mrs. Cumber's maid,' with a temporary glass of beer.† In this expedition there had gone with Cromwell a certain Major-General Crawford, whom he has left behind in the Hilsden neighborhood; to whom there is a Letter, here first producible to modern readers, and connected therewith a tale otherwise known.

Letter Fifteenth,‡ which exists as a Copy, on old dim paper, in the Kimbolton Archives, addressed on the back of the sheet, with all reverence, *To the Earl of Manchester*, and forms a very opaque puzzle in that condition,—turns out, after due study, to have been a Copy *by* that Crawford, of a Letter addressed to himself: Copy hastily written off, along with other hasty confused sheets still extant beside it, for the Earl of Manchester's use, on a certain Parliamentary occasion, which will by and by concern us too for a moment.

A 'Lieutenant Colonel,' Packer I dimly apprehend is the name of him, has on this Hilsden-and-Gloucester expedition given of-

\* Walker's *Sufferings of the Clergy* (London, 1714), Part ii., p. 23.

† Querela (in Cooper's *Annals*, iii., 370); Cromwelliana, p. 8 (5 March, 1643).

‡ 'Letter .X.' of this Supplement

fence to Major-General Crawford; who again, in a somewhat prompt way, has had Packer laid under arrest, under suspension at Cambridge; in which state Packer still painfully continues. And may, seemingly, continue: for here has my Lord of Manchester just come down with a Parliamentary Commission, 'to reform the University,' a thing of immense noise and moment, and 'is employed in regard of many occasions;' is, in fact, precisely in these hours,\* issuing his Summonses to the Heads of Houses; and cannot spare an instant for Packer and his pleadings. Crawford is still in Buckinghamshire; nevertheless the shortest way for Packer will be to go to Crawford, and take this admonitory Letter from his superior in command:

*'To Major-General Crawford: These.'*

Cambridge, 10th March, '1643.'

SIR,

The complaints you preferred to my Lord against your Lieutenant Colonel, both by Mr. Lee and your own Letters, have occasioned his stay here;—my Lord being 'so' employed, in regard of many occasions which are upon him, that he hath not been at leisure to hear him make his defence: which, in pure justice, ought to be granted him or any man before a judgment be passed upon him.

During his abode here and absence from you, he hath acquainted me what a grief it is to him to be absent from his charge, especially now the regiment is called forth to action: and therefore, asking of me my opinion, I advised him speedily to repair unto *you*. Surely you are not well advised thus to turn off one so faithful to the Cause, and so able to serve you as this man is. Give me leave to tell you, I cannot be of your judgment; 'cannot understand,' if a man notorious for wickedness, for oaths, for drinking, hath as great a share in your affection as one who fears an oath, who fears to sin,—that this doth commend your election of men to serve as fit instruments in this work!

Ay, but the man "is an Anabaptist." Are you sure of that? Admit he be, shall that render him incapable to serve the Public? "He is indiscreet." It may be so, in some things: we have all human infirmities. I tell you, if you had none but such "indiscreet men" about you, and would be pleased to use them kindly, you would find as good a fence to you as any you have yet chosen.

Sir, the State, in choosing men to serve it, takes no notice of their

\* 11 March (Cooper, iii., 371; details in Neal, ii., 79–89).

opinions ; if they be willing faithfully to serve it,—that satisfies. I advised you formerly to bear with men of different minds from yourself : if you had done it when I advised you to it, I think you would not have had so many stumbling-blocks in your way. It may be you judge otherwise ; but I tell you my mind.—I desire you would receive this man into your favor and good opinion. I believe, if he follow my counsel, he will do serve no other but respect from you. Take heed of being sharp, or too easily sharpened by others, against those to whom you can object little but that they square not with you in every opinion concerning matters of religion. If there be any other offence to be charged upon him,—that must in a judicial way receive determination. I know you will not think it fit my Lord should discharge an Officer of the Field but in a regulate way. I question whether you or I have any precedent for that.

I have not further to trouble you :—but rest,

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Adjoined to this Letter, as it now lies,—in its old repository at Kimbolton, copied and addressed in the enigmatic way above-mentioned,—there is, written in a Clerk's hand, but corrected in the hand which copied the Letter, a confused loud-spoken recriminatory Narrative, of some length, about the Second Battle of Newbury ; touching also, in a loud confused way, on the case of Packer and others :—evidently the raw-material of the Earl's *Speech in defence of himself*,† in the time of the *Self-denying Ordinance* ; of which the reader will hear by and by. Assiduous Crawford had provided the Earl with these helps to prove Cromwell an insubordinate person, and what was equally terrible, a favorer of Anabaptists. Of the *Letter*, Crawford, against whom also there lay accusations, retains the Original ; but furnishes this Copy ;—of which, unexpectedly, we too have now obtained a reading.

This sharp Letter may be fancied to procure the Lieutenant-Colonel's reinstatement ; who, we have some intimation, does march with his regiment again, in hopes to take the Western Towns of Lincolnshire. Indeed Lieutenant-Colonel Packer, if this were verily Packer as he seems to be, became a distinguished

\* Communicated, with much politeness, by the Duke of Manchester, from Family Papers at Kimbolton.

† Rushworth, v., 733-6.

Colonel afterwards, and gave Oliver himself some trouble with his Anabaptistries.\* In the Letter itself, still more in the confused Papers adjoined to it, of Major-General Crawford's writing,—there is evidence enough of smoldering fire-elements in my Lord's Eastern-Association Army! The Lieutenant-General Cromwell, one perceives, is justly suspected of a lenity for Sectaries, Independents, Anabaptists themselves, provided they be 'men that fear God,' as he phrases it. Lieutenant-Colonel Lilburn (Freeborn John), Lieutenant Colonel Fleetwood risen from Captaincy now: these and others, in the Crawford Documents, come painfully to view in this Lincolnshire campaign and afterwards; with discontents, with 'Petitions,' and one knows not what; all tending to Sectarian courses, all countenanced by the Lieutenant-General.† Most distasteful to Scotch Crawford, to my Lord of Manchester, not to say criminal and unforgivable to the respectable Presbyterian mind.

Reverend Mr. Baillie is now up in Town again with the Scotch Commissioners,—for there is again a Scotch Commission here, now that their army has joined us: Reverend Mr. Baillie, taking good note of things, has this pertinent passage some six months hence: 'The Earl of Manchester, a sweet meek man, did formerly permit Lieutenant-General Cromwell to guide all the Army at his pleasure; the man Cromwell is a very wise and active head'—yes, Mr. Robert!—'universally well-beloved as religious and stout; but a known Independent or favorer of Sects,'—the issues of which might have been frightful! 'But now our countryman Crawford has got a great hand with Manchester, stands high with all that are against Sects;' which is a blessed change indeed,‡—and may partly explain this Letter and some other things to us!

Of Major-General Crawford, who was once a loud-sounding well-known man, but whose chance for being remembered much longer will mainly ground itself on a Letter he copied with very different views, let us say here what little needs to be said. He is Scotch; of the Crawfords of Jordan-Hill, in Renfrewshire;

\* Ludlow, (London, 1721), ii., 599.

† MS. by Crawford at Kimbolton.

‡ Baillie, ii., 229 (16 September, 1644).

has seen service in the German Wars, and is deeply conscious of it;—paints himself to us as a headlong audacious fighter, of loose loud tongue, much of a pedant and braggart, somewhat given to sycophancy too. Whose history may sum itself up, practically, in this one fact, That he helped Cromwell and the Earl of Manchester to quarrel; and his character in this other, That he knew Lieutenant-General Cromwell to be a coward. This he, Crawford, knew; had seen it; was wont to assert it, and could prove it. Nay once, in subsequent angry months, talking to the Honorable Denzil Holles in Westminster Hall, he asserted it within earshot of Cromwell himself; ‘who was passing into the House, and I am very sure did hear it, as intended;’—who, however, heard it as if it had been no affair of his at all; and quietly walked on, as if *his* affairs lay elsewhere than there!\*

From which I too, the knowing Denzil, drew my inferences,—ignominious to the human character! Poor Crawford, after figuring much among the Scotch Committee-men and Presbyterian Grandees for a time, joined or rejoined the Scotch Army under Lesley; and fell at the Siege of Hereford in 1645, fighting gallantly I doubt not, and was quiet thenceforth.†

---

## No. VII.

[Vol. I., p. 152: ‘*Marauding apparatus in operation.*’]

THE next Two Letters represent the Army and Lieutenant-General got home to the Association again; and can be read with little commentary. ‘The committee for the Isle of Ely,’ we are to remark, consists of Honorable Members connected with that region, and has its sittings in London. Of ‘Major Ireton’ we shall hear farther. ‘Husband’ also is slightly met with else-

\* Holles’s Memoirs: in Masseres’s Select Tracts (London, 1815), i., 199.

† Wood’s Athenæ (Life, p. 8); Baillie, ii., 235, *et sapius* (correct ib., ii., p. 218 n., and Godwin, i., 380; Holles; Scotch Peerages, &c., &c.



where; and 'Captain Castle' grew, I think, to be Colonel Castle and perished at the Storm of Tredah, some years afterwards

## LETTER X.

*For my noble Friends, the Committee for the Isle of Ely: Present these.*

Lincoln, 1st September, 1644.

GENTLEMEN,

I understand that you have lately released some persons committed by Major Ireton and Captain Husband, and one committed by Captain Castle,—all 'committed' upon clear and necessary grounds as they are represented unto me. 'Grounds' rendering them as very enemies as any we have, and as much requiring to have them continued secured.

I have given order to Captain Husband to see them recommitted to the hands of my Marshal, Richard White. And I much desire you, for the future, Not to entrench upon me so much as to release 'either' them, or any committed in the like case by myself, or my Deputy and Commanders in the Garrison,—until myself or some Superior Authority\* be satisfied in the cause, and do give order in allowance of their enlargement. For I profess I will be no Governor, nor engage any other under me to undertake such a charge, upon such weak terms!

I am so sensible of the need we have to improve the present opportunity of our being masters in the field and having no Enemy near the Isle, and to spare whatever charge we can towards the making of those Fortifications, which may render it more defensible hereafter if we shall have *more* need,—I shall desire you, for that end, to ease the Isle and Treasury from the superfluous charge of 'having' Two several Committees for the several Parts of the Isle; and that one Committee, settled at March, may serve for the whole Isle.

Wherefore I wish that one of your number may, in your courses, intend† and appear at that Committee, to manage and uphold it the better for all parts of the Isle.

Resting upon your care herein, I remain

Your friend to serve you,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

\* Not inferior!

† 'Intend' means 'take pains;' March is a *Town* in the Ely region.

‡ Old Copy, now (January, 1846) on sale at Mr. Graves's, Pall-Mall printed in the *Athenæum* of 13 December, 1845. Old Copy, such as the Clerks of Honorable Members were wont to take of Letters read in the House, or officially elsewhere;—worth copying for certain parties, in a time without Newspapers like ours.

## LETTER XI.

SLEAFORD is in Lincolnshire, a march farther South. Lieutenant-General Cromwell with the Eastern-Association Horse, if the 'Foot' were once settled,—might not he dash down to help the Lieutenant-General Essex and his 'Army in the West?' Of whom, and of whose sad predicament amid the hills of Cornwall there, we shall see the issue anon. Brother Walton, a Parliament man, has written, we perceive, to Cromwell, suggesting such a thing; urging haste if possible. In Cromwell is no delay: but the Eastern-Association Army, horse or foot, is heavy to move,—beset, too, with the old internal discrepancies, Crawfordisms, scandals at Sectaries, and what not.

*For Colonel Valentine Walton: These, in London.*

Sleaford, 6th or 5th September, '1644.'

SIR,

We do with grief of heart resent the sad condition of our Army in the West, and of affairs there. That business has our hearts with it; and truly had we wings, we would fly thither! So soon as ever my Lord and the Foot set me loose, there shall be in me no want to hasten what I can to that service.

For indeed all other considerations are to be laid aside, and to give place to *it*, as being of far more importance. I hope the Kingdom shall see that, in the midst of our necessities, we shall serve them without disputes. We hope to forget our wants, which are exceeding great, and ill cared for; and desire to refer the many slanders heaped upon us by false tongues to God,—who will, in due time, make it appear to the world that we study the glory of God, and the honor and liberty of the Parliament. For which we unanimously fight; without seeking our own interests.

Indeed we never find our men so cheerful as when there is work to do. I trust you will always hear so of them. The Lord is our strength, and in Him is all our hope. Pray for us. Present my love to my friends: I beg their prayers. The Lord still bless you.

We have some among us much\* slow in action:—if we could all intend our own ends less, and our ease too, our business in this Army would go on wheels for expedition! 'But' because some of us are enemies to rapine, and other wickednesses, we are said to be "factious," to

\* 'Much' is old for *very*.

"seek to maintain our opinions in religion by force,"—which we detest and abhor. I profess I could never satisfy myself of the justness of this War, but from the Authority of the Parliament to maintain itself in its rights: and in this Cause, I hope to approve myself an honest man and single-hearted.

Pardon me that I am thus troublesome. I write but seldom: it gives me a little ease to pour my mind, in the midst of calumnies, into the bosom of a Friend.

Sir, no man more truly loves you than

Your brother and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

## No. VIII.

[Vol. i., p. 161: '*So angry were they.*']

-- — all this is known from Clarendon, or more authentically from Rushworth; and here now is Cromwell's own account of it:

## LETTER XII.

'COMMITTEE of Both Kingdoms,' first set up in February gone a year, when the Scotch Army came to help, has been the Executive in the War-department ever since; a great but now a rapidly declining authority. Sits at Derby House: Four Scotch; Twenty-one English, of whom Six a quorum. Johnston of War-riston is the notablist Scotchman; among the leading English are Philip Lord Wharton and the Younger Vane.†

'Watlington' is in the Southeast nook of Oxfordshire; a day's march from Windsor. 'Major-General Browne' commands at Abingdon; a City Wood-merchant once; a zealous soldier, of

\* Seward's *Anecdotes* (London, 1798), i., 362.

† List, and light as to its appointment, in *Commons Journals* (7 Feb., 1643-4), iii., 391; Baillie, ii., 141, *et sæpius*. Its Papers and Correspondence, a curious set of records, lie in very tolerable order in the State-Paper Office.

Presbyterian principles at present. The rendezvous at Watlington took place on Wednesday night ; the 25th of April is Friday.

*To the Right Honorable the Committee of Both Kingdoms, at Derby House  
These.*

Bletchington, 25th April, 1645.

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

According to your Lordships' appointment, I have attended your Service in these parts ; and have not had so fit an opportunity to give you an account as now.

So soon as I received your commands, I appointed a rendezvous at Watlington. The body being come up, I marched to Wheatley Bridge, having sent before to Major-General Browne for intelligence ; and it being market-day at Oxford, from whence I likewise hoped, by some of the market-people, to gain notice where the Enemy was.

Towards night I received certain notice by Major-General Browne, that the Carriages were not stirred, that Prince Maurice was not here ; and by some Oxford scholars, that there were Four Carriages and Waggon ready in one place, and in another Five ; all, as I conceived, fit for a march.\*

I received notice also that the Earl of Northampton's Regiment was quartered at Islip ; wherefore in the evening I marched that way, hoping to have surprised them ; but, by the mistake and failing of the forlorn-hope, they had an alarm there, and to all their quarters, and so escaped me ; by means whereof they had time to draw all together.

I kept my body all night at Islip : and, in the morning, a party of the Earl of Northampton's Regiment, the Lord Wilmot's, and the Queen's, came to make an infall upon me. Sir Thomas Fairfax's Regiment† was the first that took the field ; the rest drew out with all possible speed. That which is the General's Troop charged a whole Squadron of the Enemy, and presently broke it. Our other Troops coming seasonably on, the rest of the Enemy were presently put into confusion ; so that we had the chase of them three or four miles ; wherein we killed many, and took near Two-hundred prisoners, and about Four-hundred horse.

Many of them escaped towards Oxford and Woodstock, divers were drowned ; and others got into a strong House in Bletchington, belonging to Sir Thomas Cogan ; wherein Colonel Windebank kept a garrison with near Two-hundred men. Whom I presently summoned ; and after a long Treaty, he went out, about twelve at night, with these Terms here

\* ' March, ' out towards Worcester.

† ' Which was once mine, ' he might have added, but modestly does not ; only alluding to it from afar, in the next sentence.

enclosed ; leaving us between Two and Three-hundred muskets, besides horse-arms, and other ammunition, and about Threescore-and-eleven horses more.

This was the mercy of God ; and nothing is more due than a real acknowledgment. And though I have had greater mercies, yet none clearer : because, in the first ‘place,’ God brought them to our hands when we looked not for them ; and delivered them out of our hands, when we laid a reasonable design to surprise them, and which we carefully endeavored His mercy appears in this also, That I did much doubt the storming of the House, it being strong and well manned, and I having few dragoons, and this being not my business ;—and yet we got it.

I hope you will pardon me if I say, God is not enough owned. We look too much to men and visible helps : this hath much hindered our success. But I hope God will direct all to acknowledge Him alone in all ‘things.’

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Poor Windebank was shot by sudden Court-martial, so enraged were they at Oxford,—for Cromwell had not even foot-soldiers, still less a battering gun. It was his poor young Wife, they said, she and other ‘ladies on a visit there,’ that had confused poor Windebank : he set his back to the wall of Merton College, and received his death-volley with a soldier’s stoicism.† The Son of Secretary Windebank, who fled beyond seas long since.

## No. IX.

[Vol. i., p. 228 : ‘*Out of the Second Civil War.*’]

### LETTER XIII.

WILLIAMS, Archbishop of York, ‘hasty hot Welsh Williams,’—whom we once saw, seven years ago, as Bishop of Lincoln, getting jostled in Palace-yard, protesting thereupon, and straightway get-

\* Pamphlet, in Parliamentary History, xiii., 459 : read in the House, Monday, 28 April (Commons Journals, iv., 124). Letter to Fairfax on the same subject, Appendix, No. 5.

† Heath’s Chronicle, p. 122.

ting lodged in the Tower,\*—is to concern us again for one moment. A man once very radiant to men, as obscure as he has now grown : a most high-riding far-shining Solar Luminary in that epoch ; obscure to no man in England for thirty years last past ! A man of restless mercurial vivacity, of endless superficial dexterity and ingenuity, of next to no real wisdom ;—very fit to have swift promotions and sudden eclipses in a Stuart Court ; not worthy of much memory otherwise. Of his rapid rises, culminations, miraculous faculties and destinies, to us all useless, indifferent, and extinct, let there be silence here,—reference to Bishop Hacket and the Futile Ingenuities.†

Archbishop Williams,—for he got delivered from the Tower at that time, and recovered favor, and was ‘enthroned Archbishop at York’ while his Majesty was raising his War-standard there,—found, after a while, that there was little good to be got of his Archbishophood ; that his best weapon would be, not the crosier, but the linstock and cannon-rammer, at present : he went to his Welsh estate of Aberconway, and ‘procuring a Commission from his Majesty,’ fortified Conway Castle ‘at his own expense,’ and invited the neighboring gentry to lodge their plate and valuables there, as in a place of security. Good ;—for the space of a year or two. But now, some time ago in the death-throes of the late War, while North Wales was bestirring itself as in last-agony for his Majesty’s behoof,—there came a certain Colonel Sir John Owen, of whom we shall hear again : he, this Owen, came before Castle Conway with large tumultuary force ; demanded the same in his Majesty’s name, to be governed by him, Sir John Owen, as essential for his Majesty’s occasions at that time. High-sniffing, indignant refusal on the part of Williams : impetuous capture, and forcible possession, on the part of Owen. Hot Williams, blown all to flame hereby, applied to Col. Mitton, the Parliamentary Colonel of those parts ; said to him, “Expel me this intolerable Owen ; Owen out, I will hold this Castle for the Parliament and you,—his Majesty seems nearly done with fighting

\* Antea, p. 119 of First Edition.

† Hacket’s *Life of Archbishop Williams* (a considerable Folio, London, 1712) ; Philips’s *Life of Williams* (an Octavo Abridgment of that), &c.

now." A thing difficult to explain completely to the Royalist mind: Bishop Hacket has his own ados with it; and in stupid Saunderson\* and others, it is one loud howl, "Son of the morning, how art thou fallen!"

Explained or not, 'my Lord of York' does hold Conway Castle on those terms, at this date; is taking a certain charge of North Wales in his busy way; and has even been corresponding with Cromwell on the subject. They had known one another in old years: Buckden, the Bishop of Lincoln's House, is in the neighborhood of Huntingdon; where Cromwell, it is understood, used occasionally to wait upon him; pleading for oppressed Lecturers and the like,—the Bishop having, from political or other biases, a kind of lenity for Puritans.

Cromwell is very brief with him here; courteous as to an old neighbor rather in eclipse; but evidently wishing to have no unnecessary business with the Governor of Conway. We see he could on occasion jocosely claim 'kindred' with him, as himself a 'Williams:' and that perhaps is the chief interest of this small Document, which the reader will now abundantly understand.

*For the Right Honorable my Lord of York: These.*

Putney,' 1st September, 1647.

MY LORD,

Your Advices will be seriously considered by us. We shall endeavor, to our uttermost, so to settle the affairs of North Wales as, to the best of our understandings, does most conduce to the public good thereof and of the whole. And that without private respect, or to the satisfaction of any humor,—which has been too much practised on the occasion of our Troubles.

The Drover you mention will be secured, as far as we are able, in his affairs, if he come to ask it. Your Kinsman shall be very welcome: I shall study to serve him for Kindred's sake;—among whom let not be forgotten,

My Lord,

Your cousin and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

My Lord of York still lived some year or two in Conway Cas-

\* History of Charles I.

† Gentleman's Magazine (1789), lix., 877.

tle ; saw his enemy Sir John Owen in trouble enough ; but died before long,—chiefly of broken heart for the fate of his Majesty, thinks Bishop Hacket. A long farewell to him

---

### No. X.

[Vol. i., p. 250 : ‘*About Christmas last.*’]

### LETTER XIV.

‘THE Gentleman I mentioned to you,’ who is now travelling towards Dover with this hopeful Note in his pocket, must remain forever anonymous. Of Kenrick I have incidentally heard, at Worcester Fight or elsewhere ; but of ‘the Gentleman’ nowhere ever. A Shadow, sunk deep, with all his business, in the Land of Shadows ; yet still indisputably visible there : that is the miracle of him !

‘*To Colonel Kenrick, Lieutenant of Dover Castle : These.*’

‘London,’ 18th April, 1648.

SIR,

This is the Gentleman I mentioned to you. I am persuaded you may be confident of his fidelity to you in the things you will employ him in.

I conceive he is fit for any Civil employment ; having been bred towards the Law, and having besides very good parts. He hath been a Captain-Lieutenant : and therefore I hope you will put such a value on him, in ‘the’ Civil way, as one that hath borne such a place shall be thought by you worthy of. Whereby you will much oblige,

Your affectionate servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

‘P.S.’ I expect to hear from you about your defects in the Castle, that so you may be timely supplied.\*

‘Defects in the Castle,’ and in all Castles, were good to be amended speedily,—in such predicaments as we are now again on the eve of.

\* Gentleman’s Magazine (1791), lxi., 520 ; without comment or indication of any kind.



## No XI.

[Vol. i., p. 262: '*A tedious siege of it.*']

## LETTER XV.

HERE is his first Letter from before the place: a rugged rapid despatch, with some graphic touches in it, and rather more of hope than the issue realized. Guns of due quality are not to be had. In the beginning of June,\* 'Hugh Peters' went across to Milford Haven, and from the Lion, a Parliament Ship riding there, got 'two drakes, two demi-culverins, and two whole culverins,' and safely conveyed them to the Leaguer; with which new implements an instantaneous essay was made, and a 'storming' thereupon followed, but without success. Of 'the Prince,' Prince Charles and his revolted ships, of the 'victory in Kent' and what made it needful, we shall have to speak anon.

*'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the House of Commons: These.'*

Leaguer before Pembroke, 14th June, 1648

SIR,

All that you can expect from hence is a relation of the state of this Garrison of Pembroke. Which is briefly thus:

They begin to be in extreme want of provision, so as in all probability they cannot live a fortnight without being starved. But we hear that they mutinied about three days since; cried out, "Shall we be ruined for two or three men's pleasure? Better it were we should throw them over the walls." It's certainly reported to us that within four or six days they'll cut Poyer's throat, and come all away to us. Poyer told them, Saturday last, that if relief did not come by Monday night, they should no more believe him; nay, they should hang him.

We have not got our Guns and Ammunition from Wallingford as yet; but, however, we have scraped up a few, which stand us in very good stead. Last night, we got two little guns planted, which, in Twenty-four hours, will take away their Mills; and then, as Poyer himself confesses, they are all undone. We made an attempt to storm him, about ten days since; but our ladders were too short, and the breach so as men

\* Cromwelliana, p. 40.

could not get over. We lost a few men ; but I am confident the Enemy lost more. Captain Flower, of Colonel Dean's Regiment, was wounded and Major Grigg's Lieutenant and Ensign slain ; Captain Burges lie wounded, and very sick. I question not, but within a fortnight we shall have the Town ; 'and' Poyer hath engaged himself to the Officers of the Town, Not to keep the *Castle* longer than the Town can hold out. Neither indeed can he ; for we can take away his water in two days, by beating down a staircase, which goes into a cellar where he hath a well. They allow the men half a pound of beef, and as much bread a day ; but it is almost spent.

We much rejoice at what the Lord hath done for you in Kent. Upon our thanksgiving\* for that victory, which was both from Sea and Leaguer, Poyer told his men, that it was the Prince 'Charles and his revolted Ships,' coming with relief. The other night, they mutinied in the Town. Last night we fired divers houses ; which 'fire' runs up the Town still : it much frights them. Confident I am, we shall have it in Fourteen days, by starving. I am, Sir,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Precisely in about 'Fourteen days' a new attempt was made,‡ not without some promising results, but again ineffectual. 'The Guns are not come from Bristol, for want of wind ;' and against hunger and short scaling-ladders Poyer is stubborn.

## No. XII.

[Vol. i., p. 269 : '*Is loose from Pembroke.*']

-- as the following brief Letter will witness :

## LETTER XVI.

*To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the House of Commons : These.*

'Pembroke,' 11th July, 1648.

SIR,

The Town and Castle of Pembroke were surrendered to me this

\* By cannon-volleys.

† Rushworth, vii., 1159 : read in the House, 20 June, 1648 (Commons Journals, v., 608).

‡ Rushworth, vii., 1175.

day, being the Eleventh of July; upon the Propositions which I send you here enclosed.\* What Arms, Ammunition, Victual, Ordnance, or other Necessaries of War are in 'the' Town, I have not to certify you,—the Commissioners I sent in to receive the same not being yet returned, nor like suddenly to be; and I was unwilling to defer the giving you an account of this mercy for a day.

The Persons Excepted are such as have formerly served you in a very good Cause; but, being now apostatized, I did rather make election of them, than of those who had always been for the King;—judging their iniquity double; because they have sinned against so much light, and against so many evidences of Divine Providence going along with, and prospering, a just Cause, in the management of which they themselves had a share.

I rest,

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

### NO. XIII.

[Vol. i., p. 288: '*Into all places.*']

### LETTER XVII.

LET the following hasty Letter, of the same date with that more deliberate one to Lenthall, followed by another as hasty, terminate the Preston Business. Letters of hot Haste, of Hue-and-Cry; two remaining out of many such, written 'to all the Countries,' in that posture of affairs;—the fruit of which we shall soon see. Colonels 'Cholmely, White, Hatcher, Rhodes,' Country Colonels of more or less celebrity, need not detain us at present

*For the Honorable the Committee at York: These.*

Warrington, 20th August, 1648.

'GENTLEMEN,'

We have quite tired our horses in pursuit of the Enemy: we have killed, taken and disabled all their Foot; and left them only

\* Given in Rushworth, vii., 1190.

† Copy in Tanner mss., lxii., 159: printed, correctly, in *Grey* on the Third Volume of Neal's Puritan's (Appendix, p. 129) from another source

some Horse, with whom the Duke is fled into Delamere Forest, having neither Foot nor Dragoons. They have taken Five hundred of them,—I mean the Country Forces ‘have,’ as they send me word this day.

They\* are so tired, and in such confusion, that if my Horse could but trot after them, I could take them all. But we are so weary, we can scarce be able to do more than walk after them. I beseech you therefore, let Sir Henry Cholmely, Sir Edward Rhodes, Colonel Hatcher, and Colonel White, and all the other Countries about you, be sent to rise with you and follow them. For they are the miserablest party that ever was: I durst engage myself, with Five hundred fresh Horse, and Five hundred nimble Foot, to destroy them all. My Horse are miserably beaten out;—and I have Ten thousand of them Prisoners.

We have killed we know not what; but a very great number; having done execution upon them above thirty miles together,—besides what we killed in the Two great Fights, the one at Preston, the other at Warrington ‘or Winwick Pass.’ The Enemy was Twenty-four thousand horse and foot; whereof Eighteen thousand horse and Six thousand foot: and our number about Six thousand foot and Three thousand horse at the utmost.

This is a glorious Day:—God help England to answer His mercies!—I have no more; but beseech you in all your parts to gather into bodiēs, and pursue. I rest,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

‘P.S.’ The greatest part, by far, of the Nobility of Scotland are with Duke Hamilton.†

## LETTER XVIII.

‘*For the Honorable the Committee at York: These.*’

Wigan, 23d August, 1648.

GENTLEMEN,

I have intelligence even now come to my hands, That Duke Hamilton with a wearied Body of Horse is drawing towards Pontefract; where probably he may lodge himself, and rest his Horse;—as not daring to continue in those Countries whence we have driven him; the Country people rising in such numbers, and stopping his passage at every bridge.

Major-General Lambert, with a very considerable force, pursues him at the heels. I desire you that you would get together what force you

The Scots. † Copy in the possession of W. Beaumont, Esq., Warrington.

can, to put a stop to any further designs they may have ; and so be ready to join with Major-General Lambert, if there shall be need. I am marching Northward with the greatest part of the Army ; where I shall be glad to hear from you. I rest,

Your very affectionate friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

I could wish you would draw out whatever force you have ; either to be in his rear or to impede his march. For I am persuaded if he, or the greatest part of those that are with him be taken, it would make an end of the Business of Scotland.\*

This Letter, carelessly printed in the old Newspaper, is without address ; but we learn that it ' came to my hands this present afternoon,' ' at York,' 26th August, 1648 ;—whither also truer rumors, truer news, as to Hamilton and his affairs, are on the road.

---

#### NO. XIV.

[Vol. i., p. 290 : '*Such lights as they yield.*']

#### LETTER XIX.

OLIVER ST. JOHN, a private friend, and always officially an important man, always on the Committee of Both Kingdoms, Derby-House Committee, or whatever the governing Authority might be,—finds here a private Note for himself ; one part of which is very strange to us. Does the reader look with any intelligence into that poor old prophetic, symbolic Deathbed-scene at Preston ? Any intelligence of Prophecy and Symbol, in general ; of the symbolic Man-child *Mahershalal-hashbaz* at Jerusalem, or the handful of Cut Grass at Preston ;—of the opening Portals of Eternity, and what last departing gleams there are in the Soul of the pure and just ? *Mahershalal-hashbaz* ('Hasten-to-the-

\* Newspaper, *Packets of Letters from Scotland and the North*, No. 24 (London, printed by Robert Ibbitson in Smithfield, 29 August, 1648).

spoil,' so called), and the bundle of Cut Grass are grown somewhat strange to us! Read; and having sneered duly,—consider:

*For my worthy Friend, Oliver St. John, Esquire, Solicitor-General: These at Lincoln's Inn.*

Knaresbrough, 1st September, '1648.'

DEAR SIR,

I can say nothing; but surely the Lord our God is a great and glorious God. He only is worthy to be feared and trusted, and His appearances particularly to be waited for. He will not fail His People. Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord!

Remember my love to my dear brother H. Vape: I pray he make not too little, nor I too much, of outward dispensations:—God preserve us all, that we, in simplicity of our spirits, may patiently attend upon them. Let us all be not careful what men will make of these actings. They, will they, nill they, shall fulfil the good pleasure of God; and we—shall serve our generations. Our rest we expect elsewhere; that will be durable. Care we not for to-morrow, nor for anything. This Scripture has been of great stay to me: read *Isaiah* Eighth, 10, 11, 14;—read all the Chapter.\*

I am informed from good hands, that a poor godly man died in Preston, the day before the Fight; and being sick near the hour of his death, he desired the woman that cooked to him, To fetch him a handful of Grass. She did so; and when he received it, he asked Whether it would wither or not, now it was cut? The woman said, "Yea." He replied, "So should this Army of the Scots do, and come to nothing, so soon as ours did but appear," or words to this effect; and so immediately died.

My service to Mr. W. P., Sir J. E., and the rest of our good friends. I hope I do often remember you.

Yours,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

My service to Frank Russel and Sir Gilbert Pickering.†

\* Yes, the indignant symbolic 'Chapter,' about Mahershalal-hashbaz, and the vain desires of the wicked, is all worth reading; here are the Three Verses referred to, more especially: 'Take counsel together,' ye unjust, 'and it shall come to nought; speak the word, and it shall not stand. For God is with us. Sanctify the Lord of Hosts; and let Him be your fear, and let Him be your dread. And He shall be for a sanctuary:—but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the Houses of Israel; for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem! And many among them shall stumble and fall, and be broken, and be snared, and be taken.' This last verse, we find, is often in the thoughts of Oliver.

† Ayscough mss., 4107, f. 94; a Copy by Birch.

‘Sir J. E.,’ when he received this salutation, was palpable enough; but has now melted away to the Outline of a Shadow! I guess him to be Sir John Evelyn of Wilts; and, with greater confidence, ‘Mr. W. P.’ to be William Pierpont, Earl of Kingston’s Son, a man of superior faculty, of various destiny and business, ‘called in the Family traditions, *Wise William*,’ Ancestor of the Dukes of Kingston; and much a friend of Oliver, as we shall transiently see.

---

No. XV.

[Vol. i., p. 295: ‘*On the back of these occurrences.*’]

LETTER XX.

*For the Governor of Berwick: These.*

Alnwick, 15th September, 1648

SIR,

Being come thus near, I thought fit to demand the Town of Berwick to be delivered into my hands, to the use of the Parliament and Kingdom of England, to whom of right it belongeth.

I need not use any arguments to convince you of the justice hereof. The witness that God hath borne against your Army, in their Invasion of those who desired to sit in peace by you, doth at once manifest His dislike of the injury done to a Nation that meant you no harm, but hath been all along desirous to keep amity and brotherly affection and agreement with you.

If you deny me in this, we must make a second appeal to God, putting ourselves upon Him, in endeavoring to obtain our rights, and let Him be judge between us. And if our aim be anything beyond what we profess, He will requite it. If further trouble ensue upon your denial, we trust He will make our innocence to appear.

I expect your answer to this summons, this day, and rest,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

\* *Lords Journals* (in *Parliamentary History*, xvii., 485).

## No. XVI.

[Vol. i., p. 305: '*Met the 'Influential Persons' on the morrow.*']

— — As the following Letter, taking a comprehensive survey of the matter, will abundantly manifest :

## LETTER XXI.

*'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Speaker of the House of Commons.  
These.'*

Berwick, 2d October, 1648.

SIR,

I have formerly represented to the Committee at Derby House,\* how far I have prosecuted your business in relation to the Commands I did receive from them. To wit : That I have sent a party of horse with a Summons to Berwick ; and a Letter to the Committee of Estates, which I supposed did consist of the Earl of Lanark and his participants, and a Letter of kindness and affection to the Marquis of Argyle, and the Well-affected Party in arms at 'or about' Edinburgh, with credence to Colonel Bright and Mr. William Rowe, Scoutmaster of the Army, To let them know upon what grounds and with what intentions we came into their Kingdom : And how that, in the mean time, the Marquis of Argyle and the rest at Edinburgh had sent Sir Andrew Ker, Laird of Greenhead, and Major Strahan to me, with a Letter, and papers of Instructions, expressing their good affection to the Kingdom of England, and disclaiming the late Engagement ;—together with my Answer to the said Letters and papers. Duplicates of all which I sent to the Committee at Derby House, and therefore forbear to trouble you with the things themselves. I think now fit to give you an account, what further progress has been made in your business.

The two 'Scotch' Armies being drawn up, the one under Lanark and Monro at Stirling, and the other under the Earl of Leven and Lieutenant-General Lesley between that and Edinburgh ; the heads of these two Armies being upon treaties concerning their own affairs ; and I having given, as I hoped, sufficient satisfaction concerning the justice of your Cause, and the clearness of my intentions in entering that Kingdom,— 'I' did, upon Thursday, 21st September, and two days before, the Tweed

\* Long Letter, dated 20 September, recapitulating what is already known to us here. Appendix, No. 8.



being fordable, march over Tweed at Norham into Scotland, with four regiments of horse, and some dragoons, and six regiments of foot ; and there quartered ; my head-quarters being at the Lord Mordington's House.

Where hearing that the Marquis of Argyle, the Lord Elcho, and some others, were coming to me from the Committee of Estates assembled at Edinburgh,—I went, on Friday, 22d September, some part of the way to wait upon his Lordship. Who, when he was come to his quarters, delivered me a letter, of which the enclosed is a Copy,\* signed by the Lord Chancellor, by warrant of the Committee of Estates. And after some time spent in giving and receiving mutual satisfaction concerning each other's integrity and clearness,—wherein I must be bold to testify, for that noble Lord the Marquis, the Lord Elcho, and the other gentlemen with him, that I have found nothing in them 'other' than what becomes Christians, and men of honor,—the next day it was resolved, that the command of the Committee of Estates to the Governor of Berwick, for rendering the Town, should be sent to him, by the Lord Elcho and Colonel Scot. Which accordingly was done. But he, pretending that he had not received the command of that place from those hands that now demanded it of him, desired liberty to send to the Earl of Lanark ; engaging himself *then* to give his positive answer, and intimating it should be satisfactory.

While these things were in transacting, I ordered Major-General Lambert to march towards Edinburgh, with six regiments of horse and a regiment of dragoons. Who accordingly did so ; and quartered in East Lothian, within six miles of Edinburgh ; the foot lying in his rear at Coperspath and thereabouts.†

---

## No. XVII.

[Vol. i., p. 311 : '*Leave orders, and write Letters.*']

## LETTER XXII.

A PRIVATE Note in behalf of 'this Bearer, Colonel Robert Montgomery,' now hastening up to Town ; with whom we shall make some farther acquaintance, in another quarter, by and by. Doubtless the request was complied with.

\* Conceivable by us here.

† What follows in the First Edition (p. 305), '\* \* \* Upon Friday, 29th September, &c.,' is published as a fragment in the Newspapers. These preliminary private paragraphs are found in Tanner mss. (Cary's Memorials, ii., 18).

*the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Honorable House of Commons : These.*

Dalhousie, 8th October, 1648.

SIR,

Upon the desire of divers Noblemen and others of the Kingdom of Scotland, I am bold to become a suitor to you on the behalf of this Gentleman, the Bearer, Colonel Robert Montgomery ; son-in-law\* to the Earl of Eglinton. Whose faithfulness to you in the late troubles may render him worthy of a far greater favor than I shall, at this time, desire for him : for I can assure you, that there is not a Gentleman of that Kingdom that appeared more active against the late Invaders of England than himself.

Sir, it's desired that you would please to grant him an order for Two thousand of the common Prisoners that were of Duke Hamilton's Army. You will have very good security that they shall not for the future trouble you : he will ease you of the charge of keeping them, as speedily as any other way you can dispose of them ; besides their being in a friend's hands, so as there need be no fear of their ever being employed against you.

Sir, what favor you shall please to afford the Gentleman will very much oblige many of your friends of the Scottish Nation ; and particularly

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

## No. XVIII.

[Vol. i., p. 314 : '*A very questionable kind of homicide.*']

## LETTER XXIII.

As to Pontefract and Governor Morris, here are some pertinent suggestions, 'propositions,' the old Pamphlet calls them, sent 'in a Letter from Lieutenant-General Cromwell and his Officers ;' which are 'read in the House,' and straightway acted upon, to a certain extent :—had they been acted upon in full, that business might have ended sooner.

\* Mistake of the Lieutenant-General's for 'son ;'—'youngest son,' say the Peerage Books.

† Tanner mss. (in Cary, ii., 82).

*For the Right Honorable the Committee of Lords and Commons sitting at Derby House: These present*

Knottingley, near Pontefract, 15th November, 1648.

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

So soon as I came into these parts, I met with an earnest desire from the Committee of this County to take upon me the charge here, for the reducing of the Garrison of Pontefract. I received also commands from my Lord General, to the same effect. I have had sight of a Letter to the House of Commons; wherein things are so represented, as if the Siege were at such a pass that the prize were already gained. In consideration whereof, I thought fit to let you know what the true state of this Garrison is; as also the condition of the country, that so you may not think demands for such things as would be necessary, unreasonable.

My lords, the Castle hath been victualled with Two hundred and twenty or forty fat cattle, within these three weeks; and they have also gotten in, as I am credibly informed, salt enough for them and more. So that I apprehend they are victualled for a twelvemonth. The men within are resolved to endure to the utmost extremity; expecting no mercy, as indeed they deserve none. The place is very well known to be one of the strongest inland Garrisons in the Kingdom; well watered; situated upon a rock in every part of it, and therefore difficult to mine. The walls very thick and high, with strong towers; and if battered, very difficult of access, by reason of the depth and steepness of the graft. The County is exceedingly impoverished; not able to bear free-quarter; nor well able to furnish provisions, if we had moneys. The work is like to be long, if materials be not furnished answerable. I therefore think it my duty to represent unto you as followeth, viz.:

That moneys be provided for Three complete regiments of Foot, and Two of Horse;—‘and indeed’ that money be provided for all contingencies which are in view, too many to enumerate. That Five hundred Barrels of powder, ‘and’ Six good Battering-guns, with Three hundred shot to each Gun, be speedily sent down to Hull:—we desire none may be sent less than demi-cannons. We desire also some match and bullet. And if it may be, we should be glad that two or three of the biggest Mortar-pieces with shells may likewise be sent.

And although the desires of such proportions may seem costly, yet I hope you will judge it good thrift; especially if you consider that this place hath cost the Kingdom some hundred thousands of pounds already. And for aught I know, it may cost you one more, if it be trifled withal; besides the dishonor of it, and what other danger may be emergent, by its being in such hands. It’s true, here are some two or three great Guns in Hull, and hereabouts; but they are unserviceable: and your Garrisons in Yorkshire are very much unsupplied at this time.

I have not as yet drawn any of our Foot to this place ; only I make use of Colonel Fairfax's and Colonel Malevrier's Foot regiments ; and keep the rest of the guards with the Horse ;—purposing to bring on some of our Foot to-morrow. The rest,—these parts being not well able to bear them,—are a little dispersed in Lincoln and Nottingham Shires, for some refreshment ; which after so much duty they need, and a little expect.

And indeed I would not satisfy myself nor my duty to you and them, To put the poor men, at this season of the year, to lie in the field : before we be furnished with shoes, stockings, and clothes, for them to cover their nakedness,—which we hear are in preparation, and would\* be speeded :—and until we have deal-boards to make them courts-of-guard, and tools to cast up works to secure them.

These things I have humbly represented to you ; and waiting for your resolution and command, I rest,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Due *Orders* of the House in consequence, dated Saturday, 18th November, can be read in the same old Pamphlet ;‡—most prompt *Orders*, giving if not ‘ Five hundred Barrels of powder,’ yet ‘ Two hundred and fifty ;’ a middle term, or compliance half-way, which perhaps is as much as one could expect ! Pontefract did not surrender till the end of March next.§

## No. XIX.

[Vol. i., p. 320 : ‘ *That Person and futile Treaty are now under his keeping there.*’]

## LETTER XXIV.

First, however, read this Note, of like date, on a local matter : one of many Notes which a vigilant Lieutenant-General, be where he may, has to importune the Governing Powers with. Hull Garrison and Governor Overton, like most garrisons and persons, are short of pay. Grocers’ Hall, Haberdashers’ Hall, or some sec

\* Old for ‘ should.’ † Kirg’s Pamphlets, small 4to, No. 394, § 24.

‡ See also Commons Journals, vi., 81.

§ ‘ 22 March’ (Commons Journals, vi. 174).

tion of the Finance Department, ought absolutely to take thought of it.

*For my noble Friend, Thomas St. Nicholas, Esq.: 'These, at London.'*

Knottingley, 25th November, 1648.

SIR,

I suppose it's not unknown to you how much the Country is in arrear to the Garrison of Hull;—as likewise how probable it is that the Garrison will break, unless some speedy course be taken to get them money; the soldiers at the present being ready to mutiny, as not having money to buy them bread; and without money the stubborn Towns-people will not trust them for the worth of a penny.

Sir, I must beg of you that, as you tender the good of the Country, so far as the security of that Garrison is motioned, you would give your assistance to the helping of them to their money which the Country owes them. The Governor will apply himself to you, either in person or by letter. I pray you do for him herein as in a business of very high consequence. I am the more earnest with you, as having a very deep sense how dangerous the event may be, of their being neglected in the matter of their pay. I rest upon your favor herein;—and subscribe myself,

Sir,

Your very humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Hull Garrison does not 'break:' doubtless St. Nicholas, a chief Clerk, of weight in his department, did what he could. A Kentish man this St. Nicholas, if any one could be supposed to care what he was; came to be Recorder of Canterbury, and even refractory Member for Canterbury;† has his seat, for the present, in the Grocers'-Hall region, among the budgets or 'bottomless bags,' as Independency Walker calls them.

\* Kimber's (anonymous) *Life of Cromwell* (4th edition, London, 1741), p. 82: not given in the 1st edition; no notice whence.

† Whitlocke, September, 1656 (2d edition, p. 642); *Parliamentary History*, xxi., 8; and *Commons Journals*, vii., 650, 730.

## No. XX.

[Vol. i., p. 328 : '*And the whole world knows !*']

## LETTER XXV.

DUTCH Dorislaus, the learned Doctor, late Judge-Advocate, employed in many weighty things, and soon to be employed in the weightiest, wants now a very small accommodation which is in the gift of certain Cambridge people. A busy Lieutenant-General, while the world-whirlwind is piping loud, has to write for him this small Note withal :

*To the Right Worshipful the Master and Fellows of Trinity Hall in Cambridge : These.*

'London,' 18th December, 1648.

GENTLEMEN,

I am given to understand that by the late decease of Dr. Duck, his Chamber hath become vacant in the Doctors Commons 'here ;' —to which Dr. Dorislaus now desireth to be your tenant : who hath done service unto the Parliament from the beginning of these Wars, and hath been constantly employed by the Parliament in many weighty affairs ; and especially of late, beyond the seas, with the States General of the United Provinces.

If you please to prefer him before any other, paying rent and fine to your College, I shall take it as a courtesy at your hands ; whereby you will oblige,

Your assured friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Whether Dorislaus got Duck's Chamber, we shall not ask ; being, some three weeks hence, employed as Advocate in the King's Trial, and shortly after assassinated at the Hague for that work,† it proved to be of no importance to Dorislaus. The loud world-whirlwind pipes as before.

\* Trinity-Hall MSS. : in Cambridge Portfolio (London, 1840), ii., 390.

† Antea, p. 231 ; Wood, iii., 666-8.

## No. XXI.

[Vol. i., p. 366 : ‘*Gone to the Wars in Ireland.*’]

But before going, and while just on the eve of going, he has had the following, among a multiplicity of other business, to attend to.

## LETTER XXVI.

BARNABAS O'BRYEN, Sixth Earl of Thomond, Twentieth-and-odd *King* of Thomond, a very ancient Irish dignitary of the Limerick regions, whom it were still worth while to conciliate, has fallen into ‘straits,’ distresses ; applies to the Lord Lieutenant to help him a little. The Lord Lieutenant thinks his case good ; forwards it with recommendation to Harrington, of the Council of State, the proper official person in such matters. Note, this is by no means Harrington of the *Oceana*, this ‘Sir James ;’ this is Member (‘recruiter’) for Rutlandshire, and only a distant cousin of the *Oceana*’s.

What the Earl of Thomond’s case was, as we have not seen the ‘enclosed’ statement of it, shall remain somewhat vague to us. Thomond had not joined the Irish Massacre in 1641 : but neither would he join against it ; he apologized to the King’s Lieutenant on that occasion, said he had no money, no force ; retired with many apologetic bows into England to the King himself ; leaving his unmoneyed Castle of Bunratty to the King’s Lieutenant,—who straightway found some 2,000*l.* of good money lying hidden in it, and cheerfully appropriated the same. I incline to think, it may be for this Two thousand and odd pounds, to have it acknowledged as a debt and allowed on the Earl of Peterborough’s estate, that the poor Earl, ‘in the modesty of his desires,’ is now pleading. For he has been in active Royalist services since that passive one ; in Ormond Wars, cessations, sequestrations ; is a much mulcted, impoverished man. And as for the Earl of Peterborough his son-in-law, he was one of poor Earl Holland’s people in that fatal futile rising of St. Neot’s, last year ; and is now wandering in foreign parts, in a totally ruined condi-

tion. Readers who are curious may follow the indications in the note.\* Earl Thomond's modest desire was allowed. Bunratty Castle, where that 2,000*l.* was found 'buried in the walls,' is now quite deserted by the Thomonds; is now 'the largest Police-Bar-rack' in those Limerick regions.

*'For the Honorable Sir James Harrington, Knight, of the Council of State:  
These.'*

'London,' 9th July, 1649.

SIR,

You see by this Enclosed, how great damage the Earl of Thomond hath sustained by these Troubles, and what straits he and his family are reduced unto by reason thereof. You see the modesty of his desires to be such as may well merit consideration. I am confident, that which he seeks is not so much for advantage of himself, as out of a desire to preserve his son-in-law the Earl of Peterborough's fortune and family from ruin.

If the result of the favor of the House fall upon him, although but in this way, it's very probable it will oblige his Lordship to endeavor the peace and quiet of this Commonwealth. Which will be no disservice to the State;—perhaps of more advantage than the extremity of his Fine. Besides, you showing your readiness to do a good office herein will very much oblige,

Sir,

Your affectionate servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

No. XXII.

[Vol. i., p. 373: '*We will live and die with you.*']

LETTER XXVII.

SIR GEORGE AYSCOUGH, now vigilantly cruising on those coasts, 'Vice-Admiral of the Irish Seas,' who has done good service more than once,—he ought not to suffer in his private economics by absence on the Public Service.

\* Ludlow, i., 21; Whitlocke (2d edit.), p. 420, see also p. 201; Commons Journals, vi., 279, 445 (15 Aug., 1649, and 23 July, 1650); Collins's Peerage, ii., 216, &c., &c.

† Tanner mss. (in Cary, ii., 150).



*'For the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Parliament: These.'*

Dublin, 22d August, 1649.

SIR,

Before my coming for Ireland, I was bold to move the House on behalf of Sir George Ayscough; who then I thought had merited the favor of the Parliament, but since, much more, by his very faithful and industrious carriage in this place.

It seems, while he is attending your service, a Lease he holds of the Deanery of Windsor had like to be purchased over his head, he not coming to buy it himself by the time limited. He holds a very considerable part of his estate in Church-leases; one or more being in Improprate Tithes, which he and his ancestors have held for a good time: all which is like to determine, and go from him and his, by your Orders.

I found the Parliament well to resent the motion I made on his behalf at that time. I desire you please to revive the business, and to obtain the House's favor for him, which they intended and expressed. He will, I presume, herewith send his humble desires: for which I beg your furtherance; and rest, Sir,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Ayscough is a Lincolnshire man. Last year, in the time of the Revolted Ships, he stood true to the Parliament; and brought his own ship off to them, in spite of perils. Serves now under Blake; is fast rising as a Sea-officer. The Lord Lieutenant's request in behalf of him has already been complied with.†

## NO. XXIII.

[Vol. i., p. 380: *'These Irish Letters may, I hope, tell their own tale.'*]

## LETTER XXVIII.

*For the Chief Officer commanding in Dundalk: These.*

'Tredah,' 12th September, 1649.

SIR,

I offered mercy to the Garrison of Tredah,‡ in sending the Gov-

\* Tanner MSS. (in Cary, ii., 163).

† Commons Journals, 8 August, 1649 (vi., 276);—see *ib.*, 9 July, 1649 (on which day most probably, the day of Thomond's Letter too, Cromwell had been 'moving the House' for him). Whitlocke (2d edition), p. 317

‡ 'Treedagh,' he writes.

error a Summons before I attempted the taking of it. Which being refused, brought their evil upon them.

If you, being warned thereby, shall surrender your Garrison to the use of the Parliament of England, which by this I summon you to do, you may thereby prevent effusion of blood. If, upon refusing this Offer, that which you like not befalls you, you will know whom to blame. I rest,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

What, in the interim, had become of Dundalk and its Chief and other Officers, will shortly appear.

#### No. XXIV.

Vol. i., p. 386: '*Colonel Venables, of whom we shall hear again, with a regiment or two*' — —]

— — to reduce Carlingford, Newry,—to raise what Siege there may be at Derry, and assist in settling distracted Ulster: of whose progress here are news.

#### LETTER XXIX.

*For the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Parliament of England: These.*

Dublin, 27th September, 1649.

MR. SPEAKER,

I had not received any account from Colonel Venables,—whom I sent from Tredah to endeavor the reducing of Carlingford, and so to march Northward towards a conjunction with Sir Charles Coote,—until the last night.

After he came to Carlingford, having summoned the place, both the three Castles and the Fort commanding the Harbor were rendered to him. Wherein were about Forty Barrels of Powder, Seven Pieces of Cannon; about a Thousand Muskets, and Five hundred Pikes wanting twenty. In the entrance into the Harbor, Captain Fern, aboard your man-of-war, had some danger; being much shot at from the Sea Fort, a bullet shooting through his main-mast. The Captain's entrance into that Harbor was a considerable adventure, and a good service;—as also was that of Captain Brandy,† who, with Forty seamen, stormed a very strong

\* Autograph, in the possession of the Earl of Shannon, at Castle-Martyr, in the County of Cork.

† Antea, p. 381.

Tenalia at Tredah, and helped to take it; for which he deserves an own ing by you.

Venables marched from Carlingford, with a party of Horse and Dra goons, to the Newry; leaving the Foot to come up after him. He sum- moned the place, and it was yielded before his Foot came up to him. Some other informations I have received from him, which promise well towards your Northern Interest; which, if well prosecuted, will, I trust God, render you a good account of those parts.

I have sent those things to be presented to the Council of State for their consideration. I pray God, as these mercies flow in upon you, He will give you an heart to improve them to His glory alone; because He alone is the author of them, and of all the goodness, patience, and long- suffering extended towards you.

Your Army has marched; and I believe, this night lieth at Arklow, in the County of Wicklow, by the Sea-side, between thirty and forty miles from this place. I am this day, by God's blessing, going towards it.

I crave your pardon for this trouble; and rest

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

P.S. I desire the Supplies moved for may be hastened. I am verily persuaded, though the burden be great, yet it is for your service. If the Garrisons we take swallow up your men, how shall we be able to keep the field? Who knows but the Lord may pity England's sufferings, and make a short work of this? It is in His hand to do it, and therein only your servants rejoice. I humbly present the condition of Captain George Jenkins's Widow. He died presently after Tredah Storm. His Widow is in great want.

The following Officers and Soldiers were slain at the storming of Tre- dah:—Sir Arthur Ashton, Governor; Sir Edmund Varney, Lieutenant-Colonel to Ormond's Regiment; Colonel Fleming, Lieutenant-Colonel Finglass, Major Fitzgerald, with eight Captains, eight Lieutenants, and eight Cornets, all of Horse; Colonels Warren, Wall, and Byrne, of Foot, with their Lieutenants, Majors, &c.; the Lord Taaff's Brother, an Au- gustine Friar; forty-four Captains, and all their Lieutenants, Ensigns, &c.; 220 Reformadoes and Troopers; 2,500 Foot-soldiers, besides Staff- Officers, Surgeons, &c.\*

\* King's Pamphlets, small 4to, No. 441, art. 7, 'Letters from Ireland, printed by Authority' (p. 13). Parliamentary History (xix., 207-9) has copied this Letter from the old Pamphlet (as usual, giving no reference); and after the concluding 'Surgeons, &c.,' has taken the liberty of adding these words, '*and many inhabitants,*' of which there is no whisper in the old Pamphlets;—a very considerable liberty indeed!

Venables went on, rapidly accomplishing his service in the North; without much hurt; though not without imminent peril,—by a *camisado*, or surprisal in the night-time, which is afterwards alluded to in these Letters. The Lord Lieutenant, we observe, still dates from Dublin, but is to quit it ‘this day;’ his ‘Army has already marched.’ Southward now, on a new series of operations.

---

No. XXV.

ADDITIONAL ENCLOSURES IN LETTER LXXII. OF  
FIRST EDITION.

[Vol. i., p. 388: ‘*To whom I sent a Summons.*’]

— — a Copy whereof is this enclosed; between whom and me there passed Answers and Replies, Copies whereof these also are

“*To the Commander-in-Chief of the Town of Wexford.*

“Before Wexford, 3d October, 1649.

“SIR,

“Having brought the Army belonging to the Parliament of England before this place, to reduce it to its due obedience: to the end effusion of blood may be prevented, and the Town and country about it preserved from ruin, I thought fit to summon you to deliver the same to me, to the use of the State of England.

“By this offer, I hope it will clearly appear where the guilt will lie, if innocent persons should come to suffer with the nocent. I expect your speedy answer; and rest,

“Sir,

“Your servant,

“OLIVER CROMWELL.”

---

[Ib., p. 388: ‘*Your servant, Oliver Cromwell.*’]

“*For the Lord General Cromwell.*

“Wexford, 4th October, 1649.

“SIR,

“I have advised with the Mayor and Officers, as I promised, and thereupon am content that Four, whom I shall employ, may have a Conference and Treaty with Four of yours, to see if any agreement and

understanding may be begot between us. To this purpose I desire you to send mine a Safe-conduct, as I do hereby promise to send unto yours when you send me their names. And I pray that the meeting may be had to-morrow at eight of the clock in the forenoon, that they may have sufficient time to confer and debate together, and determine the matter; and that the meeting and place may be agreed upon, and the Safe-conduct mutually sent for the said meeting this afternoon. Expecting your answer hereto, I rest,—my Lord,—your servant,

“D. SINNOTT.

“Send me the names of your Agents, their qualities and degrees Those I fix upon are : Major James Byrne, Major Theobald Dillon, Alderman Nicholas Chevers, Mr. William Stafford.”

“*To the Commander-in-Chief of the Town of Wexford.*

“Before Wexford, 4th October, 1649.

“SIR,

“Having summoned you to deliver the Town of Wexford into my hands, I might well expect the delivery thereof, and not a formal Treaty; which is seldom granted but where the things stand upon a more equal foot.

“If therefore yourself or the Town have any desires to offer, upon which you will surrender the place to me, I shall be able to judge of the reasonableness of them when they are made known to me. To which end, if you shall think fit to send the Persons named in your last, entrusted by yourself and the Town, by whom I may understand your desires, I shall give you a speedy and fitting Answer. And I do hereby engage myself, that they shall return in safety to you.

“I expect your answer hereunto within an hour; and rest,

“Your servant,

“OLIVER CROMWELL.”

“*For the Lord General. Cromwell.*

“Wexford, 4th October, 1649.

“SIR,

“I have returned you a civil Answer, to the best of my judgment; and thereby, I find, you undervalue me and this place so much, that you think to have it surrendered without Capitulation or honorable Terms,—as appears by the hour's limitation in your last.

“Sir, had I never a man in this Town but the Townsmen, and Artillery here planted, I should conceive myself in a very befitting condition to make honorable conditions. And having a considerable party, ‘along’ with them, in the place, I am resolved to die honorably, or make such conditions as may secure my honor and life in the eyes of my own Party

"To which reasonable terms if you hearken not,—or give me 'not' time to send my Agents till eight of the clock in the forenoon to-morrow, with my Propositions, with a further Safe-conduct,—I leave you to your better judgment, and myself to the assistance of the Almighty; and so conclude.—Your servant,

"D. SINNOTT."

*"For the Lord General Cromwell.*

"Wexford, 5th October, 1649.

"SIR,

"My Propositions being now prepared, I am ready to send my Agents with them unto you. And for their safe return, I pray you to send a Safe-conduct by the Bearer unto me,—in hope an honorable agreement may thereupon arise between your Lordship and,—my Lord,—your Lordship's servant,

"D. SINNOTT."

---

[Ib., p. 389: '*To make use of it when they pleased.*']

*"For the Lord General Cromwell.*

"Wexford, 5th October, 1649

"MY LORD,

"Even as I was ready to send out my Agents unto you, the Lord General of the horse came hither with a relief. Unto whom I communicated the proceedings between your Lordship and me, and delivered him the Propositions I intended to despatch unto your Lordship;—who hath desired a small time to consider of them, and to speed them unto me. Which, my Lord, I could not deny, he having a commanding power over me.

"Pray, my Lord, believe that I do not do this to trifle out time; but for his present consent;—and if I find any long delay in his Lordship's returning them back unto me, I will proceed of myself, according to my first intention. To which I beseech your Lordship give credit; at the request,—my Lord,—of your Lordship's ready servant,

"D. SINNOTT."

*"To the Commander-in-Chief of the Town of Wexford.*

"Wexford, 6th October, 1649.

"SIR,

"You might have spared your trouble in the account you give me of your transaction with the Lord General of your horse, and of your resolution in case he answer not your expectation in point of time. These are your own concerns, and it behooves you to improve the relief you mention to your best advantage.

"All that I have to say is, To desire you to take notice, that I do hereby revoke my Safe-conduct from the persons mentioned therein. When you shall see cause to treat, you may send for another.—I rest,

"Sir,

"Your servant,

"OLIVER CROMWELL."

---

[Ib., p. 389: '*And offer terms of surrender.*']

"For the Lord General Cromwell.

"Wexford, 11th October, 1649.

"SIR,

"In performance of my last, I desire your Lordship to send me a Safe-conduct for Major Theobald Dillon, Major James Byrne, Alderman Nicholas Chevers, and Captain James Stafford, whom I will send to your Lordship instructed with my desires. And so I rest,—my Lord,—your servant,

"D. SINNOTT "

---

[Ib., p. 389: '*Together with my Answer.*']

"*The Propositions of Colonel David Sinnott, Governor of the Town and Castle of Wexford, for and on the behalf of the Officers and Soldiers and Inhabitants in the said Town and Castle, unto General Cromwell.*

"1. *In primis*, That all and every the Inhabitants of the said Town, from time to time and at all times hereafter, shall have free and uninterrupted liberty publicly to use, exercise, and profess the Roman Catholic Religion, without restriction, mulct, or penalty, any law or statute to the contrary notwithstanding.

"2. That the Regular and Secular Roman Catholic Clergy now possessed of the Churches, Church-livings, Monasteries, Religious houses, and Chapels in the said Town, and in the suburbs and franchises thereof, and their successors, shall have, hold and enjoy, to them and their successors forever, the said churches, church-livings, monasteries, religious houses and chapels, and shall teach and preach in them publicly, without any molestation, any law or statute to the contrary notwithstanding.

"3. That Nicholas, now Lord Bishop of Ferns, and his successors, shall use and exercise such jurisdiction over the Catholics of his Diocese as since his consecration hitherto he used.

"4. That all the Officers and Soldiers, of what quality or degree soever, in the said Town and Castle, and such of the Inhabitants as are so pleased, shall march with flying colors, and be conveyed safe, with their lives,

artillery, ordnance, ammunition, arms, goods of all sorts, horses, moneys, and what else belongs to them, to the Town of Ross, and there to be left safe with their own party ; allowing each musketeer, towards their march, a pound of powder, four yards of match and twelve brace of bullets ; and a strong Convoy to be sent with the said soldiers, within four-and-twenty hours after the yielding up of the said Town.

“5. That such of the Inhabitants of the said Town as will desire to leave the same at any time hereafter, shall have free liberty to carry away out of the said Town all their frigates, artillery, arms. powder, bullets, match, corn, malt, and other provision which they have for their defence and sustenance, and all their goods and chattels, of what quality or condition soever, without any manner of disturbance whatsoever, and have passes and safe-conducts and convoys for their lives and said goods to Ross, or where else they shall think fit.

“6. That the Mayor, Bailiffs, Free Burgesses, and Commons of the said Town, may have, hold, and enjoy the said Town and Suburbs, their commons, their franchises, their liberties and immunities, which hitherto they enjoyed ; and that the Mayor, Bailiffs, and Free Burgesses may have the government of the said Town, as hitherto they enjoyed the same from the Realm of England, and that they may have no other government, they adhering to the State of England, and observing their orders, and the orders of their Governors in this Realm for the time being.

“7. That all and every the Burgesses and Inhabitants, either native or strangers, of the said Town, who shall continue their abode therein, or come to live there within three months, and their heirs, shall have, hold, and enjoy all and singular their several castles, messuages, houses, lands, tenements, and hereditaments within the land of Ireland, and all their goods and chattels, of what nature, quality, or condition soever, to them and their heirs, to their own several uses forever, without molestation.

“8. That such Burgess or Burgesses, or other Inhabitant of the said Town, as shall at any time hereafter be desirous to leave the said Town, shall have free leave to dispose of their real and personal estates respectively to their best advantage ; and further have full liberty and a safe-conduct respectively to go into England or elsewhere, according to their several pleasures who shall desire to depart the same.

“9. That all and singular the Inhabitants of the said Town, either native or strangers, from time to time and at all times hereafter, shall have, reap, and enjoy the full liberty of free-born English subjects, without the least incapacity or restriction therein ; and that all the Freemen of the said Town, from time to time, shall be as free in all the seaports, cities, and towns in England as the Freemen of all and every the said cities and towns ; and all and every the Freemen of the said cities and towns to be as free in the said Town of Wexford as the Freemen thereof, for their greater encouragement to trade and commerce together on all hands



"10. That no memory remain of any hostility or distance which was hitherto between the said Town and Castle on the one part, and the Parliament or State of England on the other part; but that all act and acts, transgressions, offences, depredations, and other crimes, of what nature or quality soever, be they ever so transcendent, attempted or done, or supposed to be attempted or done, by the Inhabitants of the said Town or any other, heretofore or at present adhering to the said Town, either native or stranger, and every of them,—shall pass in oblivion; without chastisement, challenge, recompense, demand, or questioning for them or any of them, now or at any time hereafter.

"D. SINNOTT."

"*For the Commander-in-Chief, in the Town of Wexford.*

"'Before Wexford,' 11th October, 1649.

"SIR,

"I have had the patience to peruse your Propositions; to which I might have returned an Answer with some disdain. But, to be short,

"I shall give the Soldiers and Non-commissioned Officers quarter for life, and leave to go to their several habitations, with their wearing-clothes;—they engaging themselves to take up arms no more against the Parliament of England. And the Commissioned Officers quarter for their lives, but to render themselves Prisoners. And as for the Inhabitants, I shall engage myself That no violence shall be offered to their goods, and that I shall protect the Town from plunder.

"I expect your positive answer instantly; and if you will upon these terms surrender and quit, 'and' shall, in one hour, send forth to me Four Officers of the quality of Field-Officers, and Two Aldermen, for the performance thereof,—I shall thereupon forbear all acts of hostility.

"Your servant,

"OLIVER CROMWELL."\*

## NO. XXVI.

[Vol. i., p. 399: '*Your affectionate brother and servant, Oliver Cromwell.*']

## LETTER XXX.

THE opportune Victory at Rathmines produced the revival of an old Vote, produced also a new special Vote, in favor of Lieuten-

\* The rest of the Wexford Correspondence is in *Tanner* mss. (Cary, ii. 168-185) and elsewhere; this final 'Answer,' which completes it, being considered hopelessly lost, must be taken as a very interesting little Docu-

ant-General Jones; which new Voice ought not to fall asleep again, as the old one had done. Thomas Scott, of the Council of State, whom we have already seen; 'peppery Thomas,' is not yet to vanish from this History. Of Broghil, 'Munster Business,' and the rest, there will be farther notice in the next Letter, which is of the same date with this.

*'For the Honorable Thomas Scott, of the Council of State: These.'*

Ross, 14th November, 1649.

SIR,

I hope you will excuse this trouble. I understand the House did vote Lieutenant-General Jones Five hundred pounds *per annum* of lands of inheritance from Irish Lands, upon the news of the Defeat given to the enemy before Dublin, immediately before my coming over. I think it will be a very acceptable work, and very well taken at your hands, to move the House for an immediate settlement thereof: it will be very convenient at this time.

Another thing is this. The Lord Broghil is now in Munster; where he, I hope, will do very good offices: all his suit is for Two hundred pounds to bring his Wife over: such a sum would not be cast away. He hath a great interest in the men that come from Inchiquin.\* I have made him and Sir William Fenton, Colonel Blake, and Colonel Deane,—who I believe, 'at least' one of them, will be frequently in Cork Harbor; making that a victualling place for the Irish Fleet, instead of Milford Haven, —'I have made them' and Colonel Phayr, Commissioners for a temporary management of affairs there.

This Business of Munster will empty your Treasury: therefore you have need to hasten our money allotted us; lest you put us to stand with our fingers in our mouths!—I rest,

Sir,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

---

ment, now that it has turned up. Autograph (much interlined and very hastily written), now (March, 1846) in the possession of Edward Crawford, Esq., Solicitor, Wellington Quay, Dublin.

\* That desert to us from Inchiquin, the Ormond Chief in Munster.

† Tanner mss. (in Cary, ii., 188).

No. XXVII.

[Vol. i., p 412: '*False schemes, whereof advantage might be taken.*']

Meanwhile, in Munster, in Ireland generally, there is much to be done, on the great scale and on the small. Some days before the last Letter gets into the Speaker's hands, here is another, a private one, travelling towards Philip Lord Wharton, whom we transiently saluted last year at Knaresborough.

LETTER XXXI.

LORD WHARTON, when we last saw him, was of the Derby-House Committee, a busy man and manager; but he is not now of the Council of State; having withdrawn from all management, into a painful inquiring condition. One of our zealous Puritans and Patriots, but much troubled with cautious dubitations; involved in 'reasonings,' in painful labyrinths of constitutional and other logic, for the present. Of which sort there are now many. Who indignantly drew the sword, and long zealously fought and smote with it, nothing doubting; and are now somewhat astonished at the issue that has come of it! Somewhat uncertain whether these late high actings, executing judgment on your King, abolition on your House of Lords, and so forth, are owned by the Eternal Powers or not owned. Of Temporal Powers there is clearly none that will own them; and unless the other do — ? The Lord Lieutenant intimates, in his friendliest way, that surely it is indispensable to have 'satisfaction' on that score; also that it is perilous not to get it; and furthermore, that labyrinths of constitutional and other logic are by no means the course towards that.

*For the Right Honorable the Lord Wharton: These.*

Cork, 1st January, 1649.

MY DEAR FRIEND, MY LORD,

If I know my heart, I love you in truth: and therefore if, from the jealousy of unfeigned love, I play the fool a little, and say a word or two at guess, I know you will pardon it.

It were a vain thing, by Letter, to dispute over your doubts, or undertake to answer your objections. I have heard them all; and I have rest from the trouble of them, and 'of' what has risen in my own heart; for which I desire to be humbly thankful. I do not condemn your reasonings; I doubt them. It's easy to object to the glorious Actings of God, if we look too much upon Instruments! I have heard computations made of the Members in Parliament: "The good kept out, the worst left in,"\* &c. :—it has been so these nine years: yet what hath God wrought? The greatest works *last*; and still is at work! Therefore take heed of this scandal.

Be not offended at the manner 'of God's working;' perhaps no other way was left. What if God accepted *their* zeal, 'even' as He did that of Phinehas,† whom *reason* might have called before a jury! What if the Lord have witnessed His approbation and acceptance to this 'zeal' also, —not only by signal outward acts, but to the heart 'of good men' too? What if I fear, my Friend should withdraw his shoulder from the Lord's work,—Oh, it's grievous to do so!—through scandals, through false mistaken reasonings—?

"There's difficulty, there's trouble; here, in the other way, there's safety, ease, wisdom: in the one no clearness"—this is an objection indeed,—“in the other satisfaction.”—“Satisfaction:” it's well if we thought of that first, and 'as' severed from the other considerations,‡ which do often bias, if not bribe the mind. Whereby mists are often raised in the way we should walk in, and we call it darkness or “dissatisfaction.” Oh, our deceitful hearts! Oh, this flattering world! How great is it to be the Lord's servant in any drudgery§—(I thought not to have written near 'so far as' the other side: love will not let me alone; I have been often provoked 'to it by you')—in all hazards His worst is far above the world's best! He makes us able, in truth, to say so; we cannot of ourselves. How hard a thing is it to *reason* ourselves up to the Lord's service, though it be so honorable; how easy to put our selves out there, where the flesh has so many advantages!

\* Original has, 'most bad remaining:' 'these nine years' means, ever since the Parliament first met.

† 'And behold, one of the Children of Israel came, and brought unto his brethren a Midianitish woman; in the sight of Moses, and in the sight of all the Congregation of the Children of Israel, who were weeping before the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation,'—by reason of those very sins. 'And when Phinehas the son of Eleazer, the son of Aaron the Priest, saw it, he rose up from among the Congregation, and took a javelin in his hand; and he went after the man of Israel into the tent, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel and the woman, through the belly. So the plague was stayed from the Children of Israel.' (*Numbers*, xxv., 6-8.)

‡ Of 'safety,' profit, &c.

§ Turns the leaf, we perceive.

You were desired to go along with us: I wish it still.\* Yet we are not triumphing;—we may, for aught flesh knoweth, *suffer* after all this: the Lord prepare us for His good pleasure! You were with us in the Power of things: why not in the Form? I am persuaded your heart hankers after the hearts of your poor Friends; and will, until you can find others to close with: which, I trust, though we in ourselves be con- temptible, God will not let you do!

My service to the dear little Lady: I wish you make her **not** a greater temptation 'to you, in this matter,' than she is! Take heed of all relations. Mercies should not be temptations: yet we too oft make them so. The Lord direct your thoughts into the obedience of His will, and give you rest and peace in the Truth. Pray for

Your most true and affectionate

Servant in the Lord,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Of Wharton and his dubitations, which many share in, we shall again hear. Of Wharton, young Colonel Hammond, young Colonel Montague, Tom Westrow, Henry Lawrence, idle Dick, men known to us, and men unknown;—of them and their abstruse 'reasonings,' and communings with the Lord Lieutenant in St. James's Park, we shall have a hint by and by. Some of whom received full 'satisfaction,' and others never could.

Here follows a kind of Epistle General, in a quite other tone, intended to give 'satisfaction' to a quite other class, if they are capable of it.

---

## DECLARATION

OF THE LORD LIEUTENANT OF IRELAND, FOR THE UNDE-  
CEIVING OF DELUDED PEOPLE.

THE 'Supreme Council of Kilkenny,' still more the Occult 'Irish Hierarchy' which was a main element thereof, remains, and is like to remain, a very dark entity in History: little other, after all one's reading, than a featureless gaunt shadow; extinct, and

\* Shadow of condescension, implied in this, strikes his Excellency; which he hastens to retract.

† Gentleman's Magazine (London, 1814), lxxxiv., p. 418. Given there without editing; no notice whence: clearly genuine.

the emblem to us of huge noises that are also extinct. History can know that it *had* features once :—of fierce dark-visaged Irish Noblemen and Gentlemen ; dark-visaged Abbases O'Teague, and an Occult Papist Hierarchy ; earnestly planning, perorating, excommunicating, in a high Irish tone of voice : alas, with general result which Nature found *untrue*. Let there be noble pity for them in the hearts of the noble. Alas, there was withal some glow of real Irish Patriotism, some light of real human valor, in those old hearts : but it had parted company with Fact ; came forth enveloped in such huge embodiment of headlong ferocity, of violence, hatred, noise, and general unveracity and incoherency, as—as brought a Cromwell upon it at last ! These reflections might lead us far.

What we have to say here is, that in the present expiring condition of the Irish Rebellion, nearly trodden to destruction now, it has been judged very fitting, That there be an end of excommunication for the present, and a real attempt at union instead. For which object there has, with much industry, been brought about a 'Conventicle,' or general Meeting of the Occult Hierarchy, at a place called Clonmacnoise, in the month of December last. Clonmacnoise, 'Seven Churches of Clonmacnoise ;' some kind of Abbey then ; now a melancholy tract of ruins, 'on some bare gravelly hills,' among the dreary swamps of the Shannon ; nothing there but wrecks and death, for the bones of the Irish Kings lie there, and burial there was considered to have unspeakable advantages once :—a Ruin now, and dreary Golgotha among the bogs of the Shannon ; but an Abbey then, and fit for a Conventicle of the Occult Hierarchy, 'which met on the 4th of December, 1649,' for the purpose above said. There, of a certainty, in the cold days of December, 1649, did the Occult Hierarchy meet,—warmed, we hope, by good log-fires and abundant turf,—and 'for somewhat less than three weeks' hold consultation. The real issue of which has now, after Two hundred years, come to be very different from the then apparent one !

The then apparent issue was a 'Union ;' worthless 'superficial Union,' as Carte\* calls it ; skin-deep, which was broken again

\* Life of Ormond, ii., 105–110.

within the month, and is of no interest to us here. But it chanced also that, to usher in this worthless 'Union,' the Occult Hierarchy published in print a Manifesto, or general Injunction and Proclamation to the Irish People; which Manifesto, coming under the eye of the Lord Lieutenant, provoked an Answer from him. And this Answer, now resuscitated, and still fit to be read by certain earnest men, Irish and other: this we may define as the real issue for us, such as it is. One of the remarkablest State Papers ever issued by any Lord Lieutenant; which, if we could all completely *read* it, as an earnest Editor has had to try if he could do, till it became completely luminous again, and glowed with its old veracity and sacred zeal and fire again, might do us all some good, perhaps!

The Clonmacnoise Manifesto exists also, as a small brown Pamphlet of six leaves, 'printed at Kilkenny, and reprinted at London in January, 1649;\*' but is by no means worth inserting here. It is written in a very smooth, indeed vague and faint style, the deeply discrepant humors at Clonmacnoise not admitting of any other for their 'superficial Union;' and remains, in the perusal, mostly insignificant, and as if obliterated into dim grey,—till once, in the Lord Lieutenant's fiery illumination, some traits of it do come forth again. Here is our short abstract of it, more than sufficient for present purposes.

'The Kilkenny Pamphlet starts by a preamble headed "Declaration," as most such documents are called in those days; setting forth, with some brevity, That whereas various differences had existed in the Catholic Party, said differences do now and shall, blessed be Heaven, all reconcile themselves into a real "Union;" real Union now, by these presents, established, decreed, and bound to continue:—signed duly by all the Occult Hierarchy, twenty Bishops more or less, *Antonius Clonmacnosensis* among the rest. This is the *first* part of the Clonmacnoise Manifesto: this is to be read in every Church for certain Sundays; and do what good it can. Follows *next*, similarly signed, a short set of

\* King's Pamphlets, large 4to, No. 43, § 5; the London Reprint, or the day of purchasing it by the old Collector, is dated with the pen '31 January,' 1649-50.

“ Acts,” special Orders to Priests and People at large, What they are to do by way of furthering said Union, and bringing good success to the Cause. Among which Orders we recognise one For masses, universal prayers (not wholly by machinery, we hope) ; and, with still more satisfaction, another For decisively putting down, or at least in every way discountenancing, those bands called “ Idle Boys” (ancestors of Captain Rock, one perceives) ; who much infest the country at present.

‘ Our Manifesto then, *thirdly*, winds up with an earnest admonition, called also “ Declaration,” to the People of Ireland, high and low, Not to be deceived “ with any shew of clemency exercised upon them hitherto ;” inasmuch as it is the known intention of the English Parliament to exterminate the whole of them ; partly by slaughter, partly by banishment “ to the Tobacco Islands,” and the hot West India localities, whither many have already been sent. Known intention ; as can be deduced by the discerning mind from clear symptoms, chiefly from these two : *First*, that they, the English Parliament, have passed an “ Act of Subscription,” *already* disposing of Irishmen’s estates to English Money-lenders ; and then, *second*, That they have decided to extirpate the Catholic Religion,—which latter fact, not to speak of their old Scotch Covenant and so forth, may be seen with eyes, even from this Lord Lieutenant’s own expressions in his Letter to the Governor of Ross ;\* which are quoted. To extirpate the Catholic Religion : how can they effect this but by extirpating the professors thereof ? Let all Irishmen high and low, therefore, beware ; and stand upon their guard, and adhere to the superficial Union ; slaughter, or else banishment to the Tobacco Islands, being what they have to expect.’—It is by this *third* or concluding portion of the Clonmacnoise Manifesto that the Lord Lieutenant’s wrath has been chiefly kindled ; but indeed he blazes athwart the whole Document, athwart it and along it, as we shall see, like a destroying sword, and slashes in pieces it and its inferences, and noxious delusions and deludings, in a very characteristic style.

\* Antea, vol. i., p. 395.



What perhaps will most strike the careless modern reader, in the Clonmacnoise Manifesto with its 'inferences' of general extermination, is that 'shew of clemency;' and the total absence of those 'many Inhabitants' butchered at Drogheda lately: total absence of those; and also of the 'Two hundred Women in the Market-place of Wexford,' who in modern times have even grown 'Two hundred beautiful Women' (all young, and in their Sunday clothes for the occasion), and figure still, in the Irish Imagination, in a very horrid manner. They are known to Abbé Macgeohagan, these interesting Martyrs, more or less; to Pater Irenæus, to my Lord Clarendon, Jacobite Carte, and other parties divided by wide spaces and long centuries from them; but not to this Occult Hierarchy sitting deliberative close at hand, and doing their best in the massacre way, who are rather concerned to guard us against 'shews of clemency exercised hitherto!' This circumstance, and still more what Cromwell himself says on the subject of 'massacring,' will strike the modern reader; and the 'Two hundred women,' and some other things, I persuade myself, will profitably vanish from the Market-place henceforth!

That wretched Chimera will vanish; and also, I think, a certain terrible Fact, which the Irish Imagination pretends to treat sometimes as a chimera, will profitably reassert its place there. The Massacre of 1641 was not, we believe, premeditated by the Leaders of the Rebellion; but it is an awful truth, written in sun-clear evidence, that it did happen;—and the noble-minded among the men of Ireland are called to admit it, and to mourn for it, and learn from it! To the ear of History those 'ghosts' still shriek from the Bridge of Portnadown,\* if not now for just vengeance on their murderers, yet for pity on them, for horror at them; and no just man, whatever his new feelings may be, but will share more or less the Lord Lieutenant Cromwell's old feelings on that matter. It must not be denied, it requires to be admitted! As an act of blind hysterical fury, very blind and very mad and weak, it remains on the face of Irish History; and will

\* Affidavits, taken in 1641–44: in Sir John Temple's *History of the Irish Massacre and Rebellion* (Maseres's edition, London, 1812), pp. 85–123; May's *History of the Long Parliament*, and the contemporary Books *passim*.

have to remain till Ireland cease, much more generally than it has yet done, to mistake loud bluster for inspired wisdom, and spasmodics and hysteric frenzy for strength ;—till, let us say, Ireland *do an equal act* of magnanimous Forbearance, and of Valor in the silent kind ! Of which also we have by no means lost hope. No :—and if among the true hearts of Ireland there chanced to be found one who, across the opaque angry whirlwind in which all Cromwell matters are enveloped for him, could recognise, in this thunderclad figure of a Lord Lieutenant now about to speak to him, the veritable Heaven's Messenger clad in thunder ; and accept the stern true message *he* brings— ! — Who knows ? That too, we believe, is coming ; and with it many hopeful things. But to our Declaration, however that may be.

*A Declaration of the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, For the Undeceiving of De-luded and Seduced People : which may be satisfactory to all that do not willfully shut their eyes against the light. In answer to certain late Declarations and Acts, framed by the Irish Popish Prelates and Clergy, in a Conventicle at Clonmacnoise.*

HAVING lately perused a Book printed at Kilkenny in the year 1649, containing divers Declarations and Acts of the Popish Prelates and Clergy, framed in a late Convention at Clonmacnoise, the 4th day of December, in the year aforesaid,—I thought fit to give a brief Answer unto the same.

And first to the first ;—which is a Declaration, wherein (having premised the reconciliation of some differences among themselves, ‘and the hearty “Union” they have now attained to’) they come to state ‘the reasons of’ their War, ‘grounding it’ upon “the interest of their Church, of his Majesty and the Nation,” and their resolution to prosecute the same with unity. All which will deserve a particular survey.

The Meeting of the Archbishops, Bishops, and other Prelates at Clonmacnoise is by them said to be *proprio motu*. By which term they would have the world believe that the Secular Power hath nothing to do to appoint, or superintend, their Spiritual Conventions, as they call them ;—although in the said meetings they take upon them to intermeddle in all Secular Affairs ; as by the sequel appears. But first for their “Union” they so much boast of. If any wise man shall seriously consider what they pretend the grounds of their “differences” to have been, and the way and course they have taken to reconcile the same ; and their expressions thereabout, and the ends for which, and their resolutions how to carry on their great Design declared for ; he must needs think slightly

of their said "union."\* And also for this, That they resolve an other men's consent 'and reconciliation' into their own; without consulting them at all!

The subject of this reconciliation was, as they say, "the Clergy and Laity." The discontent and division itself was grounded on the late difference of opinion happening among the Prelates and Laity." I wonder not at differences in opinion, at discontents and divisions, where so anti-Christian and dividing a term as "Clergy and Laity" is given and received. A term unknown to any save the anti-Christian Church, and such as derive themselves from her: *ab initio non fuit sic*. The most pure and primitive Times, as they best know what true union was, so in all addresses to the several Churches they wrote unto, not one word of this. The members of the Churches are styled "Brethren, and Saints of the same household of Faith:" 'and' although they had orders and distinctions among them for administration of ordinances,—of a far different use and character from yours,—yet it nowhere occasioned them to say, *contemptim*, and by way of lessening in contradistinguishing, "Laity and Clergy." It was your pride that begat this expression. And it is for filthy lucre's sake that you keep it up: that by making the People believe that they are not so holy as yourselves, they might for their penny purchase some sanctity from you; and that you might bridle, saddle, and ride them at your pleasure; and do (as is most true of you) as the Scribes and Pharisees of old did by their "Laity,"—keep the knowledge of the Law from them, and then be able in their pride to say, "This people, that know not the Law, are cursed."

And no wonder,—to speak more nearly to your "differences" and "union,"—if it lie in the Prelates' power to make the Clergy and the Laity go together by the ears when they please, but that they may as easily make a simple and senseless reconciliation! Which will last until the next Nuncio comes from Rome with supermandatory advices; and then this Gordian knot must be cut, and the poor "Laity" forced to dance to a new tune.

I say not this as being troubled at your "union." By the grace of God, we fear not, we care not for it. Your covenant, 'if you understood it,' is with Death and Hell! Your union is like that of Simeon and Levi: "Associate yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces; take counsel together, and it shall come to nought!" For though it becomes us to be humble in respect of ourselves, yet we can say to you: God is not with you. You say, Your union is "against a common enemy:" and to this, if you will be talking of "union," I will give you some wormwood to bite on; by which it will appear God is not with you.

Who is it that created this "common enemy" (I suppose you mean En-

\* 'it' in *orig*

glishmen)? The English! Remember, ye hypocrites, Ireland was once united to England. 'That was the original "union."' Englishmen had good inheritances which many of them purchased with their money; they and their ancestors, from you and your ancestors. They had good Leases from Irishmen, for long times to come; great stocks thereupon; houses and plantations erected at their own cost and charge. They lived peaceably and honestly among you. You had generally equal benefit of the protection of England with them; and equal justice from the Laws,—saving what was necessary for the State, out of reasons of State, to put upon some few people, apt to rebel upon the instigation of such as you. You broke *this* "union!" You, unprovoked, put the English to the most unheard-of and most barbarous Massacre (without respect of sex or age) that ever the Sun beheld. And at a time when Ireland was in perfect Peace. And when, through the example of English Industry, through commerce and traffic, that which was in the Natives' hands was better to them than if all Ireland had been in their possession, and not an Englishman in it. And yet then, I say, was this unheard-of villainy perpetrated,—by your instigation, who boast of "peace-making" and "union against this common enemy." What think you: by this time, is not my assertion true? Is God, will God be, *with* you?

I am confident He will not! And though you would comprehend Old English, New English, Scotch, or whom else you will, in the bosom of your catholic charity, yet shall not this save you from breaking. I tell you and them, You will fare the *worse* for their sakes. Because I cannot but believe some of them go against, some stifle, their consciences. And it is not the fig-leaf of pretence "that they fight for their King," will serve their turn; when really they fight in protection of men of so much prodigious 'guiltiness of' blood; and with men who have declared the ground of their "union" and fighting, as you have stated it in this your Declaration, to be *Bellum Prælatum et Religiosum*, in the first and primary intention of it. Especially when they shall consider your principles: 'and' that except what fear makes you comply with,—viz., that alone without their concurrence you are not able to carry on your work of War,—you are ready, whenever you shall get the power into your hands, to kick them off too, as some late experiences have sufficiently manifested!—And thus we come to the Design, you being thus wholesomely "united," which is intended to be prosecuted by you.

Your words are these: "That all and every of us the above Archbishops, Bishops, and Prelates, are now, by the blessing of God, as one body united. And that we will, as becometh charity and our pastoral charge, stand all of us as one entire body, for the interests and immunities of the Church, and of every the Bishops and Prelates thereof; and for the honour dignity estate, right, and possessions of all and every of the said

Archbishops, Bishops, and other Prelates. And we will, as one entire and united body, forward by our counsels, actions, and devices, the advancement of his Majesty's Rights, and the good of this Nation, in general and in particular occasions, to our power. And that none of us, in any occasion whatsoever concerning the Catholic religion, or the good of this Kingdom of Ireland, will in any respect single himself; or be or seem opposite to the rest of us; but will hold firm and entire in one sense, as aforesaid," &c.

And now, if there were no other quarrel against you but this, which you make to be the principal and first ground of your Quarrel:—to wit, As so standing for the rights of your "Church," falsely so called, and for the rights of your "Archbishops, Bishops, and Prelates," as to engage People and Nations into blood therefor:—this alone would be your confusion. I ask you, Is it for the "Lay fee," as you call it, or for the Revenue belonging to your Church, that you will after this manner contend? Or is it your Jurisdiction, or the exercise of your Ecclesiastical Authority? Or is it for the Faith of your Church? Let me tell you, Not for all or any of these is it lawful for the Ministers of Christ, as you would be thought to be, thus to contend. And therefore we will consider them apart.

For the first, if it were "St. Peter's Patrimony," as you term it,—that would be somewhat that you lawfully came by! But I must tell you, Your predecessors cheated poor seduced men in their weakness on their death-beds; or otherwise *unlawfully* came by most of this you pretend to. 'Not St. Peter's Patrimony, therefore, whosoever it may be!' And Peter, though he was somewhat too forward to draw the sword in a better cause,—yet if that weapon, not being proper to the business in hand, was to be put up in *that* case,—he must not, nor would he, have drawn it in *this*. And that blessed Apostle Paul, who said, "the laborer was worthy of his hire," chose rather to make tents than be burdensome to the Churches. I would you had either of those Good Men's spirits; on condition your Revenues were doubled to what the best times ever made them to your predecessors!—The same answer may be given to that of your "Power and Jurisdiction;" and to that pre-eminence of Prelacy you so dearly love. Only consider what the Master of these same Apostles said to them: "So it shall not be among *you*. Whoever will be chief shall be servant of all!" For He himself came not to be ministered unto, but to minister. And by this he that runs may read of what tribe you are.

And 'now' surely if these, that are outward things, may not thus be contended for; how much less may the Doctrines of Faith, which are the works of Grace and the Spirit, be endeavored by so unsuitable means! He that bids us "contend for the Faith once delivered to the Saints," tells us that we should do it by "avoiding the spirit of Cain, Corah, and Balaam;" and by "building up *ourselves* in the most holy Faith," not pin-

ning it upon other men's sleeves. Praying "in the Holy Ghost;" not mumbling over Matins. Keeping "ourselves in the love of God;" not destroying men because they will not be of our Faith. "Waiting for the mercy of Jesus Christ;" not cruel, but merciful!—But, alas, why is this said? Why are these pearls cast before you? You are resolved not to be charmed from "using the instrument of a foolish shepherd!" You are a part of Anti-Christ, whose Kingdom the Scripture so expressly speaks should be "laid in blood;" yea "in the blood of the Saints." You have shed great store of that already:—and ere it be long, you must all of you have "blood to drink;" "even the dregs of the cup of the fury and the wrath of God, which will be poured out unto you!"\*

In the next place, you state the "interest of his Majesty," as you say, 'for a ground of this War.' And this you hope will draw some English and Scotch to your party. But what "Majesty" is it you mean? Is it France, or Spain, or Scotland? Speak plainly! You have, some of you lately, been harping,—or else we are misinformed,—upon his Majesty of *Spain* to be your Protector. Was it because his Majesty of Scotland was too little a Majesty for your purpose? We know you love great Majesties! Or is it because he is not fully come over to you in point of religion? If he be short in that, you will quickly find out, upon that score, another "Majesty." His Father, who complied with you too much, you rejected; and now would make the world believe you would make the Son's interest a great part of the state of your Quarrel.—How can we but think there is some reserve in this? And that the Son has agreed to do somewhat more for you than ever his Father did? Or else tell us, Whence this new zeal is? That the Father did too much for you, in all Protestant judgments,—instead of many instances let this be considered: what one of your own Doctors, Dr. Enos of Dublin 'says;' who, writing against the Agreement made between the Lord of Ormond and the Irish Catholics, finds fault with it, and says it was "nothing so good as that 'which' the Earl of Glamorgan had warrant from the King to make; but exceeding far short of what the Lord George Digby had warrant to agree 'to,' with the Pope himself at Rome, in favor of the Irish Catholics."†—I intend not this to you; but to such Protestants as may incline to you, and join with you upon *this* single account, which is the only appearing inducement to them: 'to them I intend it,' seeing there is so much probability of ill in this abstracted. 'In this by itself so much probability of ill.' And so much certainty of ill in fighting for the Romish Religion against the Protestant; and fighting 'along' with men under the guilt of so horrid a Massacre. From participating in which Guilt, while they take part with them, they will never be able to assoil themselves, either before God or good men.

\* Read in your Bibles, and consider that!

† Antea, vol. i., p. 193

In the last place, you are pleased,—having, after your usual manner, remembered yourselves *first*, and “his Majesty,” as you call him, next; like a man of your tribe, with his *Ego et Rex meus*,—you are pleased to take the People into consideration. Lest they should seem to be forgotten; or rather you would make me believe they are much in your thoughts. Indeed I think they are! Alas, poor “Laity!” That you and your King might ride them, and jade them, as your Church hath done, and as your King hath done by your means, almost in all ages!—But it would not be hard to prophesy, That the beasts being stung and kicking, this world will not last always. Arbitrary power ‘is a thing’ men begin to be weary of, in Kings and Churchmen; their juggle between them mutually to uphold Civil and Ecclesiastical Tyranny begins to be transparent. Some have cast off *both*; and hope by the grace of God to keep so. Others are at it! Many thoughts are laid up about it, which will have their issue and vent.\* This principle, That People are for Kings and Churches, and Saints are for the Pope or Churchmen, as you call them, begins to be exploded;—and therefore I wonder not to see the Fraternity so much enraged. I wish “the People” wiser than to be troubled at *you*; or solicitous for what you say or do.

But it seems notwithstanding all this you would fain have them believe it is their good you seek. And to cozen them, indeed and in truth, is the scope of your whole Declaration, and of your Acts and Decrees in your foresaid Printed Book. Therefore to discover and unveil those falsities, and to let them, ‘the People,’ know what they are to trust to from me, is the principal end of this my Declaration. That if I be not able to do good upon them, which I most desire,—and yet in that I shall not seek to gain them by flattery; but tell them the worst, in plainness, and that which I am sure will not be acceptable to *you*; and if I *cannot* gain them, ‘I say,’—I shall have comfort in this, That I have freed my own soul from the guilt of the evil that shall ensue. And on this subject I hope to leave nothing unanswered in all your said Declarations and Decrees at Clonmacnoise.

And because you carry on your matter somewhat confusedly, I shall therefore bring all that you have said into some order; that so we may the better discern what every thing signifies, and give answer thereunto.

You forewarn the People of their danger; which you make to consist: First, “in the extirpation of the Catholic Religion;” Secondly, “in the destruction of their Lives;” Thirdly, “in the ruin of their Fortunes.”—To avoid all which evils you forewarn them: *First*, That they be not deceived by the Commander-in-chief of the Parliament Forces: And in the *next* place,—having stated ‘the ground of’ your War, as aforesaid,—you

\* Paris City, A.D. 1789–95!

give them your positive advice and counsel To engage in blood : And ‘then,’ *lastly*, ‘you’ bestow upon them a small collation in Four Ecclesiastica Decrees or Orders,—which will signify as little, being performed by your spirit, as if you had said nothing. And the obligation ‘that lay on you’ to all this you make to be your Pastoral relation to them, “over your Flocks.”

To which last a word or two.\* I wonder how this relation was brought about ! If they *be* “Flocks,” and you ambitious of the relative term ? Yes, you are *Pastors* : but it is by an antiphrasis,—*a minime pascendo* ! You either teach the People not at all ; or else you do it, as some of you came to this Conventicle who were sent by others, *tanquam Procuratores*, —‘teach them,’ as your manner is, by sending a company of silly ignorant Priests, who can but say the Mass, and scarcely that intelligibly ; or with such stuff as these your senseless Declarations and Edicts !—But how dare you assume to call these men your “Flocks,” whom you have plunged into so horrid a Rebellion, by which you have made them and the Country almost a ruinous heap ? And whom you have fleeced, and polled, and peeled hitherto, and make it your business to do so still. You cannot feed them ! You poison them with your false, abominable, and anti-Christian doctrine and practices. You keep the Word of God from them ; and instead thereof give them your senseless Orders and Traditions. You teach them “implicit belief :”—he that goes among them may find many that do not understand anything in the matters of your Religion. I have had few better answers from any since I came into Ireland that are of your Flocks than this, “That indeed they did not trouble themselves about matters of Religion, but left that to the Church.” Thus are your “Flocks” fed ; and such credit have you of them. But they must take heed of “losing their Religion.” Alas, poor creatures, what have they to <sup>a</sup> lose ?”

Concerning this, ‘of losing their Religion,’ is your grand caveat, ‘however.’ And to back this, you tell them of “Resolutions and Covenants to extirpate the Catholic Religion out of all his Majesty’s Dominions.” And you instance in “Cromwell’s Letter of the 19th October, 1649, to the then Governor of Ross,”† repeating his words, which are as follows, viz. : “For that which you mention concerning liberty of conscience, I meddle not with any man’s conscience. But if by liberty of conscience you mean a liberty to exercise the Mass, I judge it best to use plain dealing, and to let you know, Where the Parliament of England have power, *that* will not be allowed of.” And this you call a “tyrannical Resolution ;” which you say hath been put in execution in Wexford, Ross, and Tredah.

\* The Lord Lieutenant is very impatient with ‘th’s last ;’ flies at it *first*.

† Antea, vol. i., p. 395.



Now let us consider. First, you say, The design is, to extirpate the Catholic Religion. Let us see your honesty herein. Your word “extirpate” is as ill collected from these grounds, and as senseless as the word “Catholic,” ordinarily used by you when you mention Catholic Roman Church. The word “extirpate” means ‘ruin of’ a thing already *rooted* and established: which word ‘is’ made good by the proof of “Covenant,” by that Letter expressing the non-toleration of the Mass (wherein, it seems, you place all the “Catholic Religion,” and *there* you shew some ingenuity\*), and ‘by’ your instance of what was practised in the three Towns afore-mentioned: do these prove, either considered apart or all together, the “extirpation” of the Catholic Religion?

By what Law was the Mass ‘ever *rooted*, or’ exercised in these places, or in any the Dominions of England or Ireland, or Kingdom of Scotland? You were *intruders* herein; you were open violators of the known Laws! And yet you call the “Covenant,” and that ‘refusal’ in the Letter, and these practices ‘at Wexford, Ross, and Tredah,’ “extirpation” of the Catholic Religion,—which had’ thus again ‘been’ set on foot by you, by the advantage of your Rebellion, and shaking off the just Authority of the State of England over you! Whereas, I dare be confident to say, You durst not own the saying of one Mass, ‘for’ above these eighty years in Ireland. And ‘only’ through the troubles you made, and through the miseries you brought on this Nation and the poor People thereof,—your numbers, which is very ominous, increasing with the ‘numbers of the’ *wolves*, through the desolations you made in the Country;—‘only by all this’ did you recover again the public exercise of your Mass! And for the maintenance of this, thus gained, you would make the poor People believe that it is ghostly counsel, and given in love to them as your “Flocks,” That they should run into Wars, and venture lives, and al. upon such a ground as this! But if God be pleased to unveil you of your sheeps-clothing, that they, ‘the People,’ may see how they have been deluded, and by whom, I shall exceedingly rejoice; and indeed for their sakes only have I given you these competent characters,—for *their* good, if God shall so bless it.

And now for them, ‘the People of Ireland,’ I do particularly declare what they may expect at my hands in this point. Wherein you will easily perceive that, as I neither have ‘flattered’ nor shall flatter you, so neither shall I go about to delude them with specious pretences, as you have ever done.

First, therefore: I shall not, where I have power, and the Lord is pleased to bless me, suffer the exercise of the Mass, where I can take notice of it. ‘No,’ nor ‘in any way’ suffer you that are Papists, where

\* Means ‘ingenuousness,’ as usual.

I can find you seducing the People, or by any overt act violating the Laws established ; but if you come into my hands, I shall cause to be inflicted the punishments appointed by the Laws,—to use your own term, *secundum gravitatem delicti*,\*—upon you ; and ‘ shall try’ to reduce things to their former state on this behalf.† As for the People, what thoughts they have in matters of Religion in their own breasts I cannot reach ; but shall think it my duty, if they walk honestly and peaceably, Not to cause them in the least to suffer for the same. And shall endeavor to walk patiently and in love towards them, to see if at any time it shall please God to give them another or a better mind. And all men under the power of England, within this Dominion, are hereby required and enjoined strictly and religiously to do the same.

To the *second* ‘danger threatened ;’ which is “the destruction of the Lives of the Inhabitants of this Nation :”—to make it good that this is designed, they‡ give not one reason. Which is either because they have none to give ; or else for that they believe the People will receive everything for truth they say,—which they have too well taught them, and God knows the People are too apt, to do. But I will a little help them. They speak indeed of “rooting out the Common People ;” and also, by way of consequent, that the extirpating the Catholic Religion is not to be effected without the “massacring, destroying, or banishing the Catholic Inhabitants.” Which how analogical an argument this is, I shall easily make appear by and by.

Alas, the generality of “the Inhabitants” are poor “Laity,” as you call them, and ignorant of the grounds of the “Catholic Religion.”§ Are they then so interwoven with your Church Interest as that the absence of *them* makes your “Catholic Religion” fall to the ground ? We know you think not so. You reckon yourselves, and yourselves only, the pillars and supporters thereof ; and the Common People ‘useful’ as far as they have the exercise of club-law, and, like the ass you ride on, obey your commands. But concerning these relations of your Religion, ‘and your right to practise it,’ enough has been spoken in another place ;—only you love to mix things for your advantage.

But ‘now’ to your logic. Here is your argument : The design is to extirpate the Catholic Religion ; but this is not to be done but by the massacring, banishing, or otherwise destroying the Catholic Inhabitants : *ergo*, it is designed to massacre, banish, and destroy the Catholic Inhabitants. To try this no-concluding argument,—‘nothing-concluding,’ but yet well enough agreeing with your learning,—I give you this dilemma ;

\* A phrase in their Pamphlet.

† No cozening here !

‡ Is now addressing the People ; has unconsciously turned away from the Priests, and put them into the third person.

§ Unimportant they, to the vigor or decline of it.

by which it will appear That, whether your Religion be true or false, this will not follow :

If your Religion be the true Religion, yet if a Nation may degenerate from the true Religion, and apostatise, as too many have 'evidently' *done*,—(through the seducements of your Roman Church, 'think *we*'),—then it will not follow that men must be "massacred, banished, or otherwise destroyed," necessarily ; no, not as to the change of the *true* Religion in a Nation or Country !\* Only, this argument doth wonderfully well agree with your principles and practice ; you have chiefly made use of fire and sword, in all the changes in Religion that you have made in the world. 'But I say,' if it be change of your Catholic Religion so-called, it will not follow : because there may be found out another means than "massacring, destruction, and banishment ;" to wit, the Word of God ; which is able to convert. A means which you as little know as practice ; which indeed you deprive the People of ! 'That means may be found ;' together with humanity, good life, equal and honest dealing with men of a different opinion ;—which we desire to exercise towards this poor People, if you, by your wicked counsel, make them not incapable to receive it, by putting them into blood !

And therefore, by this also, 'this that you talk of massacring,' your false and twisted dealing may be a little discovered. Well ; your words are, "massacre, destroy, and banish." Good now : *give us an instance of one man since my coming into Ireland, not in arms, massacred, destroyed, or banished ; concerning the massacre or the destruction of whom justice hath not been done, or endeavored to be done.*† As for the other of banishment, I must now speak unto the People, whom you would delude, and whom this most concerns ; that they may know in this also what to expect at my hands.

The question is of the destruction of life ; or of that which is but little inferior to it, to wit, of banishment. 'Now *First* : I shall not willingly take or suffer to be taken away the life of any man not in arms, but by the trial to which the People of this Nation are subject by Law, for offences against the same. And '*Secondly*,' as for the banishment, it hath not hitherto been inflicted on any but such who, being in arms, might justly, upon

\* A subtle 'dilemma,' and very Oliverian ; seems to *eat* itself like a Serpent-of-eternity, and be very *circular* reasoning ; yet grounds itself, if examined, upon sharp just insight, and has real logical validity. 'Call your Religion true, men *have* changed from it without being massacred : admit it to be false, will you say they need massacring ? Whatever Religion you may have, I think you have not much Logic to spare !'

† 'Concerning the two first of which,' in *orig.* The italics, in this passage, are mine ; and can be removed so soon as Macgeohagan, Carte, Clarendon, and Company have got to be well understood.

the terms they were taken 'under,' have been put to death :—as 'might' those who are instanced in your Declaration to be "sent to the Tobacco Islands." And therefore I do declare, That if the People be ready to run to arms by the instigation of their Clergy or otherwise, such as God by His providence shall give into my hands may expect that or worse measure from me ; but not otherwise.

*Thirdly*, as to that of "the ruin of their Fortune." You instance the Act of Subscription,\* "whereby the estates of the Inhabitants of this Nation are sold, so as there remaineth now no more but to put the Purchasers in possession ;" and that for this cause are the Forces drawn out of England. And that you might carry the Interest far, 'so as' to engage the Common sort of People with you, you further say to them, That "the moderate usage 'hitherto' exercised to them is to no other end but to our private advantage, and for the better support of our Army ;" 'we' intending at the close of our "conquest," as you term it, "to root out the Common People also, and to plant the land with Colonies to be brought hither out of England." This, consisting of divers parts, will ask distinct answers.

And first, to the Act of Subscription. It's true there is such an Act ; and it was a just one. For when, by your execrable Massacre and Rebellion, you had not only raised a bloody War to justify the same ; and thereby occasioned the exhausting the Treasure of England in the prosecution of so just a War against you,—was it not a wise and just act in the State to raise money by escheating the Lands of those who had a hand in the Rebellion ? Was it not fit to make their Estates to defray the charge, who had caused the trouble ? The best therefore that lies in this argument is this,—and that only reaching to them who have been in arms, for further it goes not : "You have forfeited your Estates, and it is likely they will be escheated to make satisfaction ; and therefore you had bet-

\* At the first breaking out of the Irish Rebellion into an Irish Massacre, the King's Exchequer being void, and the case like a case of conflagration, an Act was passed, engaging the Public Faith, That whoever would 'subscribe' money towards suppressing the said Rebellion in Ireland, and detestable and horrible Massacre of Protestants there, should, with liberal interest, be repaid from the forfeited Estates of the Rebels,—so soon as they were got. This is the 'Act of Subscription' spoken of here. His Majesty said : "How will that answer ? It is like selling the bear's skin before you have caught your bear." A bargain, nevertheless, which hundreds and thousands entered into, with free purse and overflowing heart ; 'above a Quarter of a Million' raised by it ; generous emotion, and tragic terror and pity, lending sanction to doubtful profit-and-loss. A very wise and just Act of Parliament, the Lord Lieutenant thinks ; which did also fulfil its engagements by and by.

ter fight it out than repent or give off now ;—or ‘else,’ see what mercy you may find from the State of England. And seeing holy Church is engaged in it, we will, by one means or another, hook-in the Commons, and make them sensible that they are as much concerned as you, though they were never in arms, or came quickly off!”—And for this cause doubtless are these two coupled together ; by which your honest dealing is manifest enough.

But what ? Was the English Army brought over for *this* purpose, as you allege ! Do you think that the State of England will be at Five or Six Millions charge merely to procure Purchasers to be invested in that for which they did disburse little above a Quarter of a Million ? Although there be a Justice in that also, which ought, and I trust will be seasonably performed towards them.—No, I can give you a better reason for the Army coming over than this. England hath had experience of the blessing of God in prosecuting just and righteous Causes, whatever the cost and hazard be !\* And if ever men were engaged in a righteous Cause in the world, this will scarce be a second to it. We are come to ask an account of the innocent blood that hath been shed ; and to endeavor to bring to an account,—by the blessing and presence of the Almighty, in whom alone is our hope and strength,—all who, by appearing in arms, seek to justify the same. We come to break the power of a company of lawless Rebels, who having cast off the Authority of England, live as enemies to Human Society ; whose principles, the world hath experience, are, To destroy and subjugate all men not complying with them. We come, by the assistance of God, to hold forth and maintain the lustre and glory of English Liberty† in a Nation where we have an undoubted right to do it ;—wherein the People of Ireland (if they listen not to such seducers as you are) may equally participate in all benefits ; to use ‘their’ liberty and fortune equally with Englishmen, if they keep out of arms.

And now, having said this to you, I have a word to *them* ; that in this point, which concerns them in their estates and fortunes, they may know what to trust to. Such as have been formerly in arms, may, submitting themselves, have their cases presented to the State of England ;—where

\* Hear this Lord Lieutenant !

† ‘Liberty,’ here, which much astonishes our Irish friends, is very far from meaning what in most modern dialects it now does. ‘Liberty’ with this Lord Lieutenant, means ‘rigorous settled Obedience to Laws that are just.’ Which it is very noble indeed to settle, ‘and hold forth and maintain’ against all men. Laws grounded on the eternal Fact of Things,—which is a much preferable ‘ground’ to the temporary Fiction of Things, as set forth at any Clonmacnoise, Kilkenny, or other Supreme Centre-of-Jargon, there or elsewhere, that has been or that can be !

no doubt the State will be ready to take into consideration the nature and quality of their actings, and deal mercifully with them. As for those now in arms, who shall come in, and submit, and give Engagements for their future quiet and honest carriage, and submission to the State of England, I doubt not but they will find like merciful consideration ;—except only the Leading Persons and principal Contrivers of this Rebellion, whom I am confident they will reserve to make examples of Justice, whatsoever hazards they incur thereby.—And as for such Private Soldiers as lay down their arms, and shall live peaceably and honestly at their several homes, they shall be permitted so to do.—And, ‘in general,’ for the first two sorts, ‘for such as have been or as now are in arms and shall submit,’ I shall humbly and effectually represent their cases to the Parliament, as far as becomes the duty and place I bear. But as for those who, notwithstanding all this, persist and continue in arms, they must expect what the Providence of God, in that which is falsely called the Chance of War, will cast upon them.

For such of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons of Ireland as have not been actors in this Rebellion, they shall and may expect the protection in their Goods, Liberties, and Lives which the Law gives them ; and in their husbandry, merchandising, manufactures, and other trading whatsoever, the same. They behaving themselves as becomes honest and peaceable men ; testifying their good affections, upon all occasions, to the service of the State of England, equal justice shall be done them with the English. They shall bear proportionably with them in taxes. And if the Soldiery be insolent upon them, upon complaint and proof, it shall be punished with utmost severity, and they protected equally with Englishmen.

And having said this, and purposing honestly to perform it,—if this People shall headily run on after the counsels of their Prelates and Clergy, and other Leaders, I hope to be free from the misery and desolation, blood and ruin that shall befall them ; and shall rejoice to exercise utmost severity against them.

‘OLIVER CROMWELL.’\*

‘Given at Youghal, — January, 1649.’

This Declaration, as appears here, does not date or even ex-

\* *Declaration, &c.*, as above given. *Licensed by the Secretary of the Army. Printed at Cork : and reprinted at London, by E. Griffin, and are to be sold in the Old Bailey ; March 21, 1649.* King’s Pamphlets, small 4to, No. 462, § 6. In Ayscough mss., No. 4769 (a Fragment of an anonymous Contemporary Narrative, which will by and by be more specially referred to), are some two pages of this *Declaration*, transcribed from the Cork Edition: the concluding words are not, ‘exercise utmost severity against them,’ but ‘act severity against them,’ which probably is the true reading.

pressly sign itself: but by search, chiefly in a certain Manuscript Fragment, which will by and by concern us farther,\* we find that it was drawn up at Youghal, after the 15th, and came forth printed at Cork before the 29th of January; on which latter day the Army took the field again. And so we leave his Declaration;—probably the remarkablest State-Paper ever published in Ireland since Strongbow, or even since St. Patrick first appeared there.

---

No. XXVIII.

[Vol. i., p. 417: ‘*Not without reluctance on Mrs. Cromwell’s part, as Ludlow intimates.*’]

LETTER XXXII.

DEEP sunk among the Paper Masses of the British Museum is an anonymous Fragment of a *Narrative of Oliver’s Campaign in Ireland*; Fragment copied, as would seem, several generations ago, from an earlier Original, the beginning and end of which were already lost,—torn off by careless hands, and consumed as waste paper. The Copyist, with due hopeful punctuality, has left blank leaves at the beginning and end: but to no purpose; they are and continue blank leaves. In this mutilated obscure state, it lies among the Manuscripts of the British Museum;—will perhaps be printed by some Dryasdust Society, in time. It is by no means a Narrative of much merit: entirely anonymous, as we say, without specific date or outward indication of any kind; but written as if by a contemporary or even a fellow-actor, in a flat, diffuse, but authentic and exact manner. In obscure cases, as we have already found, it is worth consulting here and there;—contains, in particular, the following and some other unimportant Cromwell Letters, not found elsewhere, which we make a duty of preserving.

\* Ayscough mss., No. 4769 (Fragment of a Narrative, referred to in the previous Note), p. 100, *et seqq.*

*For the Governor of Cahir Castle: These.*

Before Cahir, 24th February, 1649.

SIR.

Having brought the Army and my cannon near this place,—according to my usual manner in summoning places, I thought fit to offer you Terms, honorable for soldiers: That you may march away, with your baggage, arms, and colors; free from injury or violence. But if I be necessitated to bend my cannon upon you, you must expect the extremity usual in such cases.

To avoid blood, this is offered to you by,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

What became of Cahir Castle, of it and of others, will appear in the next Letter.

---

No. XXIX.

[Vol. i., p. 418: ‘*Take the field again this summer.*’]

LETTER XXXIII.

*To the Governor, and Mayor, and Aldermen, of the City of Kilkenny: These.*

‘Before Kilkenny,’ 22d March, 1649.

GENTLEMEN,

My coming hither is to endeavor, if God so please to bless me, the reduction of the City of Kilkenny to their obedience to the State of England;—from which, by an unheard-of Massacre of the innocent English, you have endeavored to rend yourselves. And as God hath begun to judge you with His sore plagues, so will He follow you until He hath destroyed you, if you repent not. Your Cause hath been judged already in England upon them who did abet your evils:† what may the Principals then expect?

By this free dealing, you see I entice you not to a compliance. You may have Terms ‘such as’ may save you in your lives, liberties, and estates, according to what may be fitting for me to grant and you to re-

\* Narrative Fragment (in Ayscough mss., No. 4769, cited above).

† Connor Lord Macguire (*State Trials*, iv., 654–754, Feb. 7, 1644–5), he and others have had public trial, doom and death, long since, for that; by the Law of England, well ascertained, known, and acted on, this long while, it is death to have been concerned in that.



ceive. If you choose for the worst, blame yourselves. In confidence of the gracious blessing and presence of God with His own cause, which by many testimonies this is,—I shall hope for a good issue upon my endeavors.

Expecting a return from you, I rest,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

The Governor of Kilkenny, ‘Sir Walter Butler,’ we shall find, saw good to surrender; chose not ‘the worst,’ but the bad-best in those intricate circumstances. The last struggles of this poor Governor, and of various others, are particularised in the next Letter.

### No. XXX.

[Vol. i., p. 424: ‘*Your most loving Brother, Oliver Cromwell.*’]

### LETTER XXXIV.

*For my beloved Son, Richard Cromwell, Esquire, at Hursley in Hampshire These.*

Carrick, 2d April, 1650.

DICK CROMWELL,

I take your Letters kindly: I like expressions when they come plainly from the heart, and are not strained nor affected.

I am persuaded it's the Lord's mercy to place you where you are: I wish you may own it and be thankful, fulfilling all relations to the glory of God. Seek the Lord and His face continually:—let this be the business of your life and strength; and let all things be subservient and in order to this! You cannot find nor behold the face of God but in Christ; therefore labor to know God in Christ; which the Scripture makes to be the sum of all, even Life Eternal. Because the true knowledge is not literal or speculative; ‘no,’ but inward; transforming the mind to it. It's uniting to, and *participating of*, the Divine Nature (*Second Peter*, i., 4): ‘That by these ye might be partakers of the Divine Nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.’ It's such a *knowledge* as Paul speaks of (*Philippians*, iii., 8–10): ‘Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ

\* Narrative Fragment (in Ayscough mss., No. 4769).

Jesus my Lord. For whom I have suffered the loss of all things; and do count them but dung That I may win Christ, and be found in Him,—not having mine own righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by Faith;—that I may know Him, and the power of His Resurrection, and the fellowship of His Sufferings; being made conformable unto His Death.\* How little of this knowledge is among us! My weak prayers shall be for you.

Take heed of an unactive vain spirit! Recreate yourself with Sir Walter Raleigh's History: it's a Body of History; and will add much more to your understanding than fragments of Story.—Intend to understand the Estate I have settled: it's your concernment to know it all, and how it stands. I have heretofore suffered much by too much trusting others. I know my Brother Mayor will be helpful to you in all this.

You will think, perhaps, I need not advise you To love your Wife! The Lord teach you how to do it;—or else it will be done ill-favoredly. Though Marriage be no instituted Sacrament, yet where the undefiled bed is, and love, this union aptly resembles 'that of' Christ and His Church. If *you* can truly love your Wife, what 'love' doth Christ bear to His Church and every poor soul therein,—who "gave Himself" for it and to it!—Commend me to your Wife; tell her I entirely love her, and rejoice in the goodness of the Lord to her. I wish her every way fruitful. I thank her for her loving Letter.

I have presented my love to my Sister and Cousin Ann, &c., in my Letter to my Brother Mayor. I would not have him alter his affairs because of my debt. My purse is as his: my present thoughts are but To lodge such a sum for my two little Girls;—it's in his hand as well as anywhere. I shall not be wanting to accommodate him to his mind; I would not have him solicitous.—Dick, the Lord bless you every way. I rest,

Your loving Father,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* These sentences,—well known to Oliver; familiar to him in their phraseology, and in their sense too; and never to be *finally* forgotten by the earnest-hearted of the Sons of Men,—are not quoted in the Original, but merely indicated.

† Old word for 'endeavor.'

‡ *Memoirs of the Protector Oliver Cromwell*, by Oliver Cromwell, Esquire, a Descendant of the Family (London, 1822), i., 369. An incorrect, dull, insignificant Book; contains this Letter, and one or two others, 'in possession of the Cromwell Family.' Another Descendant, Thomas Cromwell, Esquire's *Oliver Cromwell and his Times* (London, 1821), is of a vaporous, gesticulative, dull-*arial*, still more insignificant character; and contains nothing that is not common elsewhere.

## No. XXXI.

[Vol. i., p 438: '*Though in wider ways than thou supposest, be fulfilled!*'—]

## LETTER XXXV.

Hooke and his small business, in rapid public times, will not detain us. Humphry Hooke, Alderman of Bristol, was elected to the Long Parliament for that City in 1640; but being found to have had concern in 'Monopolies,' was, like a number of others, expelled, and sent home again under a cloud. The 'service' he did at Bristol Storm, though somewhat needing 'concealment,' ought to rehabilitate him a little in the charity, at least in the pity, of the Well-affected mind. At all events, the conditions made with him must be kept;—and we doubt not, were.

*'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the House of Commons: These.'*

London, 20th June, 1650.

MR. SPEAKER,

When we lay before Bristol in the Year 1645, we considered the season of the year, the strength of the place, and of what importance the reducement thereof would be to the good of the Commonwealth, and accordingly applied ourselves to all possible means for the accomplishment of the same; which received its answerable effect. At which time, for something considerable done in order to that end, by Humphry Hooke, Alderman of that place,—which, for many reasons, is desired to be concealed,—his Excellency the Lord General Fairfax and myself gave him an Engagement under our hands and seals, That he should be secured and protected, by the authority of the Parliament, in the enjoyment of his life, liberty, and estate, as freely as in former times, and as any other person under the obedience of the Parliament; notwithstanding any past acts of hostility, or other thing done by him, in opposition to the Parliament or assistance of the Enemy. Which Engagement, with a Certificate of divers godly persons of that City, concerning the performance of his part thereof, is ready to be produced.

I understand, that lately an Order is issued out to sequester him, whereby he is called to Composition. I thought it meet therefore to give

the honorable Parliament this account, that he may be preserved from anything of that nature. For the performance of which, in order to the good of the Commonwealth, we stand engaged in our faith and honor. I leave it to you ; and remain,

Sir,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

### No. XXXII.

[Vol. i., p. 467 : ‘ *Will now be intelligible to the reader.*’]

First, however, take the following

### PROCLAMATION.

FORASMUCH as I understand there are several Soldiers of the Enemy’s Army yet abiding in the Field, who by reason of their wounds could not march from thence :

These are therefore to give notice to the Inhabitants of this Nation That they may ‘ have,’ and hereby have, free liberty to repair to the Field aforesaid, and, with their carts or ‘ in’ any other peaceable way, to carry away the said Soldiers to such places as they shall think fit :—provided they meddle not with, or take away, any the Arms there. And all Officers and Soldiers are to take notice that the same is permitted.

Given under my hand, at Dunbar, 4th September, 1650.

OLIVER CROMWELL

To be proclaimed by beat of drum.†

### No. XXXIII.

[Vol. i., p. 475 : ‘ *Your most obedient servant, Oliver Cromwell.*’]

### LETTER XXXVI.

LETTER XCI., for Sir Arthur, did not go on Monday night ; and finds now an unexpected conveyance ! Brand, Historian of Newcastle, got sight of that Letter, and of this new one enclosing it,

\* Tanner MSS. (in Cary, ii., 222).

† Old Newspaper, *Several Proceedings in Parliament*, No. 50 (5–12 Sept. 1650) : in Burney Newspapers (British Museum), vol. xxxiv.

in the hands of an old Steward of the Haselrigs, some half century ago; and happily took copies. Letter XCI. was autograph, 'folded up hastily before the ink was quite dry;—sealed with red wax.' of this there is nothing autograph but the signature; and the sealing-wax is black.

*For the Honorable Sir Arthur Haselrig, at Newcastle or elsewhere: These.  
Haste, haste.*

Dunbar, 4th September, 1650.

SIR,

You will see by my Enclosed, of the 2d of this month, which was the evening before the Fight, the condition we were in at that time. Which I thought fit on purpose to send you, that you might see how great and how seasonable our deliverance and mercy is, by such aggravation.

Having said my thoughts thereupon to the Parliament, I shall only give you the narrative of this exceeding mercy;\* believing the Lord will enlarge your heart to a thankful consideration thereupon. The least of this mercy lies not in the advantageous consequences which I hope it may produce; of glory to God and good to His People, in the prosecution of that which remains; unto which this great work hath opened so fair a way. We have no cause to doubt but, if it shall please the Lord to prosper our endeavors, we may find opportunities both upon Edinburgh and Leith,—Stirling Bridge, and other such places as the Lord shall lead unto. Even far above our thoughts; as this late and other experiences gives good encouragement.

Wherefore, that we may not be wanting, I desire you, with such forces as you have, Immediately to march to me to Dunbar; leaving behind you such of your new Levies as will prevent lesser incursions:—for surely their rout and ruin is so total that they will not be provided for any thing that is very considerable.—Or rather, which I more incline unto, That you would send Thomlinson with the Forces you have ready, and this with all possible expedition; and that *you* will go on with the remainder of the Reserve,—which, upon better thoughts, I do not think can well be done without you.

Sir, let no time nor opportunity be lost. Surely it's probable the Kirk has done their do.† I believe their King will set up upon his own score now; wherein he will find many friends. Taking opportunity offered,—it's our great advantage, through God. I need say no more to you on this behalf; but rest,

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

\* Means the bare statement. In the next sentence, 'The least lies not,' is for *The not least lies*.

† 'doo' in orig.

My service to your Lady.—I think it will be very fit that you should bake Hard bread again, considering you increase our numbers. I pray you do so.—Sir, I desire you to procure about Three or Four score Masons, and ship them to us with all speed: for we expect that God will suddenly put some places into our hands, which we shall have occasion to fortify.\*

---

No. XXXIV.

[Vol. i., p. 476: '*But indeed they are both idle, and worthy of blame.*']

LETTER XXXVII.

A pious Word, shot off to Ireland, for Son Ireton and the 'dear Friends' fighting for the same Cause there. That they may rejoice with us, as we have done with them: none knows but they may have 'need' again 'of mutual experiences for refreshment.'

'To Lieutenant-General Ireton, Deputy-Lieutenant of Ireland: These.'

Dunbar, 4th September, 1650

SIR,

Though I hear not often from you, yet I know you forget me not I think so of me 'too;' for I often remember you at the Throne of Grace.—I heard of the Lord's good hand with you in reducing Waterford, Dunsannon, and Catherlogh:† His Name be praised.

We have been engaged upon a Service the fullest of trial ever poor creatures were upon. We made great professions of love; knowing we

\* Brand's History of Newcastle (London, 1789), ii., 489. In Brand's Book there follow Excerpts from two other Letters to Sir Arthur; of which, on inquiry, the present Baronet of Nosely Hall unluckily knows nothing farther. They run thus: '*Dunbar, 5 Sept., 1650.*— — — After much deliberation, we can find no way how to dispose of these Prisoners that will be consisting with these two ends,—to wit, the not losing them and the not starving them, neither of which would we willingly incur,—but by sending them into England.' (Brand, ii., 481).— '*Edinburgh, 9 Sept., 1650.*— — — I hope your Northern Guests are come to you by this time. I pray you let humanity be exercised towards them: I am persuaded it will be comely. Let the Officers be kept at Newcastle, some sent to Lynn, some to Chester.' (*Ib.*, p. 480.)

† 'Catherlogh' is Carlow: Narrative of these captures (10 August, 1650), in a Letter from Ireton to the Speaker (Parliamentary History, xix., 334-7)

were to deal with many who were Godly, and 'who' pretended to be stumbled at our Invasion:—indeed, our bowels were pierced again and again; the Lord helped us to sweet words, and in sincerity to mean them. We were rejected again and again; yet still we begged to be believed that we loved them as our own souls: they often returned evil for good. We prayed for security:\* they would not hear or answer a word to that. We made often appeals to God; they appealed also. We were near engagements three or four times, but they lay upon advantages. A heavy flux fell upon our Army; brought it very low,—from Fourteen to Eleven thousand: Three thousand five hundred horse, and Seven thousand five hundred foot. The Enemy Sixteen thousand foot, and Six thousand horse.

The Enemy prosecuted the advantage. We were necessitated; and upon September† the 3d, by six in the morning, we attempted their Army:—after a hot dispute for about an hour, we routed their whole Army; killed near Three thousand; and took, as the Marshal informs me, Ten thousand prisoners; their whole Train, being about thirty pieces, great and small; good store of powder, match, and bullet; near two hundred Colors. I am persuaded near Fifteen thousand Arms left upon the ground. And I believe, though many of ours be wounded, we lost not above Thirty men. Before the Fight, our condition was made very sad, the Enemy greatly insulted and menaced 'us;' but the Lord upheld us with comfort in Himself, beyond ordinary experience.

I knowing the acquainting you with this great handiwork of the Lord would stir up your minds to praise and rejoicing; and not knowing but your condition may require mutual experiences for refreshment; and knowing also that the news we had of your successes was matter of help to our faith in our distress, and matter of praise also,—I thought fit (though in the midst of much business) to give you this account of the unspeakable goodness of the Lord, who hath thus appeared, to the glory of His great Name, and the refreshment of His Saints.

The Lord bless you, and us, to return praises; to *live* them all our days. Salute all our dear Friends with you, as if I named them. I have no more;—but rest,

Your loving father and true friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

We observe there are no regards to Bridget Ireton, no news or notice of her, in this Letter. Bridget Ireton is at London, safe

\* Begged of them some security against Charles Stuart's design upon England. † '7ber' he writes.

† Russell's *Life of Cromwell* (Edinburgh, 1829; forming vols. 46, 47, of *Constable's Miscellany*), ii., 317–19. Does not say Whence; Letter undoubtedly genuine.

from these wild scenes ; far from her Husband, far from her Father ;—will never see her brave Husband more.

### LETTER XXXVIII.

DUBITATING Wharton must not let ‘success’ too much sway him, yet it were fit he took notice of these things: he, and idle Norton whom we know, and Montague of Hinchinbrook, and others. The Lord General, for his own share, has a better ground than ‘success ;’ has the direct insight of his own soul, such as suffices him,—such as all souls to which ‘the inspiration of the Almighty giveth understanding,’ are or may be capable of, one would think !

*For the Right Honorable the Lord Wharton : These.*

Dunbar, 4th September, 1650.

MY DEAR LORD,

Ay, poor I love you ! Love you the Lord : take heed of disputing !—I was untoward when I spake last with you in St. James’s Park. I spake cross in stating ‘my’ grounds : I spake to *my judgments* of you,—which were : That you,—shall I name others ?—Henry Lawrence, Robert Hammond, &c., had ensnared yourselves with disputes.

I believe you desired to be satisfied ; and had tried and doubted your ‘own’ sincerities. It was well. But uprightness, if it be not *purely* of God, may be, nay commonly is, deceived. The Lord persuade you, and all my dear Friends !

The results of your thoughts concerning late Transactions I know to be mistakes of yours, by a better argument than *success*. Let not your engaging too far upon your own judgments be your temptation or snare : much less ‘let’ success,—lest you should be thought to return upon less noble arguments.\* It is in my heart to write the same things to Norton, Montague, and others : I pray you read or communicate these foolish lines to them. I have known my folly do good, when affection has overcome† my reason. I pray you judge me sincere,—lest a prejudice should be put upon after advantages.

How gracious has the Lord been in this great Business ! Lord, hide not Thy mercies from our eyes !

My service to the dear Lady. I rest,

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

\* Decide as the essence of the matter *is* ; neither persist nor ‘return upon fallacious, superficial, or external considerations. † Outrun.

‡ Gentleman’s Magazine (London, 1814), lxxxiv., 419. Does not say whence or how



## No. XXXV.

[Vol. i., p. 488: '*And the unconquerable mind will then follow if it can.*']

## PROCLAMATION

WHEREAS it hath pleased God, by His gracious providence and goodness, to put the City of Edinburgh and the Town of Leith under my power: And although I have put forth several Proclamations, since my coming into this Country, to the like effect with this present: Yet for further satisfaction to all those whom it may concern, I do hereby again publish and declare,

That all the Inhabitants of the country, not now being or continuing in arms, shall have free leave and liberty to come to the Army, and to the City and Town aforesaid, with their cattle, corn, horse, or other commodities or goods whatsoever; and shall there have free and open markets for the same; and shall be protected in their persons and goods, in coming and returning as aforesaid, from any injury or violence of the Soldiery under my command; and shall also be protected in their respective houses. And the Citizens and Inhabitants of the said City and Town shall and hereby likewise have\* free leave to vend and sell their wares and commodities; and shall be protected from the plunder and violence of the Soldiers.

And I do hereby require all Officers and Soldiers of the Army under my command, To take due notice hereof, and to yield obedience hereto. As they will answer the contrary at their utmost peril.

Given under my hand at Edinburgh, the 14th of September, 1650.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

To be proclaimed in Leith and Edinburgh, by sound of trumpet and beat of drum.†

Listen and be reassured, ye ancient Populations, though your Clergy sit obstinate on their Castle-rock, and your Stuart King has vanished! While this comfortable *Oyez-oyez* goes sounding through the ancient streets, my Lord General is himself just getting on march again: as the next Letter will testify.

\* Grammar irremediable!

† King's Pamphlets, small 4to, No. 479, art. 16 ('The Lord-General Cromwell his march to Stirling: being a Diary of,' &c. 'Published by Authority').

## No. XXXVI.

[Vol. i., p. 497: '*His first visit to Glasgow was but of two days.*']

## LETTER XXXIX.

THE Western Colonels have given in their Remonstrance to the Committee of Estates; and sat in deliberation on their copy of Cromwell's expostulatory Letter to that Body, the Letter we have just read,—in which these two words, 'security' and 'satisfaction,' are somewhat abstruse to the Western Colonels. They decide that it will not be convenient to return any public Answer; but they have forwarded a private Letter of acknowledgment with 'Six Queries:' Letter lost to us; Six Queries still surviving. To which, directly after his return to Edinburgh, here is Cromwell's Answer. The Six Queries, being very brief, may be transcribed; the Letter of acknowledgment can be conceived without transcribing:

'Query 1. Why is "satisfaction" demanded? 2. What is the satisfaction demanded? 3. For what is the "security" demanded? 4. What is the security ye would have? 5. From whom is the security required? 6. To whom is the security to be given?'

\* Queries which, I think, do not much look like real despatch of business in the present intricate conjuncture!

This Letter, it appears, is, if not accompanied, directly followed by 'Mr. Alexander Jaffray,' Provost of Aberdeen, and a 'Reverend Mr. Carstairs' of Glasgow, two Prisoners of Oliver's ever since Dunbar Drove, who are to 'agent' the same.†

'To Colonel Strahan, with the Western Army: These.'

Edinburgh, 25th October, 1650.

SIR,

I have considered of the Letter and the Queries; and, having advised with some Christian friends about the same, think fit to return an Answer as followeth:

'That' we bear unto the Godly of Scotland the same Christian affec-

\* Balfour, iv., 135.

† Baillie, iii., 120.

tion we have all along professed in our Papers ; being ready, through the grace of God, upon all occasions, to give such proof and testimony thereof as the Divine Providence shall minister opportunity to us to do. That nothing would be more acceptable to us to see than the Lord removing offences, and inclining the hearts of His People in Scotland to meet us with the same affection. That we do verily apprehend, with much comfort, that there is some stirring of your bowels by the Lord ; giving some hope of His good pleasure tending hereunto : which we are most willing to comply with, and not to be wanting in anything on our part which may further the same.

And having seen the heads of two Remonstrances, the one of the Ministers of Glasgow, and the other of the Officers and Gentlemen of the West,\* we do from thence hope that the Lord hath cleared unto you some things which were formerly hidden, and which we hope may lead to a better understanding. Nevertheless, we cannot but take notice, that from some expressions in the same Papers, we have too much cause to note that there is still so great a difference between us as we are looked upon and accounted as Enemies.

And although we hope that the Six Queries, sent by you to us to be answered, were intended to clear doubts and remove the remaining obstructions ; which we shall be most ready to do : yet, considering the many misconstructions which may arise from the clearest pen (where men are not all of one mind), and the difficulties at this distance to resolve doubts and rectify mistakes, we conceive our Answer in Writing may not so effectually reach that end, as a Friendly and Christian Conference by equal persons 'might.'

And we doubt not we can, with ingenuity and clearness, give a satisfactory account of those general things held forth in the Letter sent by us to the Committee of Estates,† and in our former Declarations and Papers ; which we shall be ready to do by a Friendly Debate,—when and where our answer to these particulars may probably tend to the better and more clear understanding between the Godly Party of both Nations.

To speak plainly in a few words . If those who sincerely love and fear the Lord among you are sensible that matters have been and are carried by your State so as that therewith God is not well pleased, but the Interest of His People 'is' hazarded, in Scotland and England, to Malignants, to Papists, and to the Profane,—we can, through Grace, be willing to lay our bones in the dust for your sakes ; and can, as heretofore we have

\* Remonstrance of the Western Army is this latter ; the other, very conceivable as a kind of codicil to this, is not known to me except at second hand, from Baillie's eager, earnest, very headlong, and perplexed account of that Business (iv., 120, 122, *et seqq.*).

† Letter XCIX.

'said,' still continue to say, That, not to impose upon you in Religious or Civil Interests, not dominion nor any worldly advantage, 'not these,' but the obtaining of a just security to ourselves,\* were the motives, and satisfactions to our consciences, in this Undertaking. 'A just security;' which we believe by this time you may think we had cause to be sensible was more than endangered by the carriage of affairs with your King. And it is not success, and more visible clearness to our consciences arising out of the discoveries God hath made of the hypocrisies of men, that hath altered, 'or can alter,' our principles or demands. But we take from thence humble encouragement to follow the Lord's providence in serving His Cause and People; not doubting but He will give such an issue to this Business as will be to His glory and your comfort.

I rest,

Your affectionate friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

There followed no 'Friendly Debate' upon this Letter; nothing followed upon it except new noise in the Western Army, and a straitlaced case of conscience more perplexing than ever. Jaffray and Carstairs had to come back on parole again; Strahan at length withdrew from the concern: the Western Army went its own separate middle road,—to what issue we shall see.

---

### No. XXXVII.

[Vol. i., p. 497: '*The 5th of November, 1650. Oliver Cromwell.*']

### LETTER XL.

ONE nest of Mosstroopers, not far off, in the Dalkeith region, ought specially to be abated.

*To the Governor of Borthwick Castle: These.*

Edinburgh, 18th November, 1650.

SIR,

I thought fit to send this Trumpet to you, to let you know, That if you please to walk away with your company, and deliver the House to such as I shall send to receive it, you shall have liberty to carry off your arms and goods, and such other necessaries as you have.

You have harbored such parties in your House as have basely and in-

\* 'securing ourselves' *in orig.*

† Clarendon State Papers (Oxford, 1773), ii., 551-2).

humanly murdered our men : if you necessitate me to bend my cannon against you, you may expect what I doubt you will not be pleased with. I expect your present Answer ; and rest,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

The Governor of Borthwick Castle, Lord Borthwick of that ilk, did as he was bidden ; 'walked away,' with movable goods, with wife and child, and had 'fifteen days' allowed him to pack ; whereby the Dalkeith region and Carlisle Road is a little quieter henceforth.

### NO. XXXVIII.

[Vol. i., p. 525 : '*Enough now of Symonds and the Seals and Effigies.*']

### LETTER XLI.

ALONG with Symonds, various English strangers, we perceive, are arriving or arrived, on miscellaneous business with the Lord General in his Winter-quarters. Part of the Oxford Caput is here in Edinburgh, with 'a very high testimony of respect ;' whom, in those same hours, the Lord General dismisses honorably with their Answer.

We are to premise that Oxford University, which at the end of the First Civil War had been found in a most broken, Malignant, altogether waste and ruinous condition, was afterwards, not without difficulty, and immense patience on the part of the Parliament Commissioners, radically reformed. Philip Earl of Pembroke, he of the loud voice, who dined once with Bulstrode in the Guildhall ;† he, as Chancellor of the University, had at last to go down in person, in the Spring of 1648 ; put the intemperate Dr. Fell, incorrigible otherwise, under lock and key ; left the incorrigible Mrs. Dr. Fell, 'whom the soldiers had to carry out in her chair,' 'sitting in the quadrangle ;' appointed a new Vice-Chan

\* Russell's *Life of Cromwell*, ii., 95 (from *Statistical Account of Scotland*)

† Antea, vol. i., p. 364.

cellor, new Heads where needful,—and, on the whole, swept the University clean of much loud Nonsense, and left some Piety and Sense, the best he could meet with, at work there in its stead.\* At work, with earnest diligence and good success, as it has since continued actually to be,—for the contemporary clamors and *Querelas* about Vandalism, Destruction of Learning, and so forth, prove on examination to be mere agonized shrieks, and unmelodious hysterical wind, forgettable by all creatures. Not easily before or since could the Two Universities give such account of themselves to mankind, under all categories, human and divine, as during those Puritan years.

But now Philip of Pembroke, the loud-voiced Chancellor of Oxford, is dead; and the reformed University, after due consultation, has elected the Lord General in his stead; to which ‘high testimony’ here is his response. ‘Dr. Greenwood,’ who, I think, has some cast about his eyes, is otherwise a most recommendable man: ‘Bachelor, then Doctor of Divinity, sometimes Fellow of Brasenose College,’ says Royalist Anthony,† ‘and lately made Principal of the said College by the Committee and Parliamentary Visitors; a severe and good Governor, as well in his Vice-Chancellorship as Principality; continued till the King’s return, and then’—

*To the Reverend Dr. Greenwood, Vice-Chancellor of the University of Oxford  
and other the Members of the Convocation.*

Edinburgh, 4th February, 1650.

HONORED GENTLEMEN,

I have received, by the hands of those worthy Persons of your University sent by you into Scotland, a Testimony of very high respect and honor, in ‘your’ choosing me to be your Chancellor. Which deserves a fuller return, of deep resentment, value, and ac-

\* Act and Visitors’ names in Scobell, i., 116 (1 May, 1647); see Commons Journals, v., 83–142 (10 February—15 April, 1647): 8 March, 1647–8, Chancellor Pembroke is to go (Neal, ii., 307; Walker, i., 133); makes report and is thanked, 21 April, 1648 (Commons Journals, v., 538). Copious history of the proceedings, from the Puritan side, in Neal, ii., 290–314; and from the Royalist side, in Walker’s *Sufferings of the Clergy*, i., 124–142, which latter, amid its tempestuous froth, has many entertaining traits.

† Wood’s *Fasti*, ii., 157 (in *Athenæ*, iv.), of July, 1649.

knowledge, than I am any ways able to make. Only give me leave a little to expostulate, on your and my own behalf. I confess it was in your freedom to elect, and it would be very uningenious in me to reflect upon your action; only (though somewhat late) let me advise you of my unfitness to answer the ends of so great a Service and Obligation, with some things very obvious.

I suppose a principal aim in such elections hath not only respected abilities and interest to serve you, but freedom 'as' to opportunities of time and place. As the first may not be well supposed, so the want of the latter may well become me to represent to you. You know where Providence hath placed me for the present; and to what I am related if this call were off,\*—I being tied to attendance in another Land as much out of the way of serving you as this, for some certain time yet to come appointed by the Parliament. The known esteem and honor of this place is such, that I should wrong it and your favor very much, and your freedom in choosing me, if, either by pretended modesty or in any unbenign way, I should dispute the acceptance of it. Only I hope it will not be imputed to me as a neglect towards you, that I cannot serve you in the measure I desire.

I offer these exceptions with all candor and clearness to you, as 'leaving you' most free to mend your choice in case you think them reasonable; and shall not reckon myself the less obliged to do all good offices for the University. But if these prevail not, and that I must continue this honor,—until I can personally serve you, you shall not want my prayers That that seed and stock of Piety and Learning, so marvellously springing up among you, may be useful to that great and glorious Kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ; of the approach of which so plentiful an effusion of the Spirit upon those hopeful plants is one of the best presages. And in all other things I shall, by the Divine assistance, improve my poor abilities and interests in manifesting myself, to the University and yourselves,

Your most cordial friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 'for three years to come' (*Commons Journals*, vi., 239), 22 June, 1649.

† From the Archives of Oxford University; communicated by the Rev. Dr. Bliss.

## No. XXXIX.

[Vol. i., p. 526: '*But the hail-reservoirs proved friendly to them.*']

## LETTER XLII.

THE Oxford Convocation has received the foregoing Letter, 'cantiſg Letter ſent thereunto,' as crabbed Anthony designates it, 'dated Edinburgh, on the 4th of February,' and now at length made public in print; they have 'read it in Convocation,' continues Anthony, 'whereat the Members made the Houſe reſound with their cheerful acclamations;'"\*—and the Lord General is and continues their Chancellor; encouraging and helping forward them and their work, in many ways, amid his weighty affairs, in a really faithful manner. As begins to be credible without much proof of ours, and might ſtill be abundantly proved if needful.

Here, however, in the firſt bluſh of the buſineſs, comes Mr. Waterhouſe, with a ſmall recommendation from the Lord General; 'John Waterhouſe of Great Greenford in Middleſex, ſon of Francis Waterhouſe by Bridget his wife,' if anybody want to know him better;†—'a ſtudent heretofore for eighteen years in Trinity College, Cambridge,' a meritorious Man and Healer ſince; whom one may well decorate with a Degree, or decorate a Degree with, by the next opportunity.

*To my very worthy Friend, Dr. Greenwood, Vice-Chancellor of the University of Oxford.*

Edinburgh, 14th February, 1650.

SIR,

This Gentleman, Mr. Waterhouſe, went over into Ireland as Phyſician to the Army there; of whoſe diligence, fidelity, and abilities I had much experience. While I was there, he conſtantly attended the Army: and having, to my own knowledge, done very much good to the Officers and Soldiers, by his ſkill and induſtry;—and being upon urgent occaſion lately come into England, 'he' hath deſired me to recommend him for

\* Faſti, ii., 159.

† Ibid., ii., 163: 'created Doctor of Phyſic by virtue of the Letters of Oliver Cromwell, General' (12 March, 1650-1).



the obtaining of the degree of Doctor in that Science. Wherefore I earnestly desire you that, when he shall repair to you, you\* will give him your best assistance for the obtaining of the said Degree; he being shortly to return back to his charge in Ireland.

By doing whereof, as you will encourage one who is willing and ready to serve the Public, so you will also lay a very great obligation upon,

Sir,

Your affectionate servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

### LETTER XLIII.

HERE farther, from another quarter, is a new University matter—Project of a College at Durham; emerging incidentally like a green fruitful islet from amid the dim storms of War; agreeably arresting the eye for a moment.

Concerning which, read in the Commons Journals of May last: ‘A Letter from the Sheriff and Gentlemen of the County of *Duresme*, dated 24th April, 1650; with a Paper’ or Petition of the same date, ‘“delivered in by the Grand Jury at the Sessions of the Peace holden at Duresme the 24th of April, 1650, To be presented to the Honorable Parliament of this Nation,”—were this day read. *Ordered*, That it be referred to the Committee of Obstructions for Sale of Dean-and-Chapter Lands, to consider these Desires of the Gentlemen and others of that County, touching the converting some of the Buildings at Duresme called the “College,” which were the Houses of the late Dean and Chapter, into some College or School of Literature; to state the business, to’‡—in short, to get on with it if possible.

This was some ten months ago, but still there is no visible way made; and now in the mild Spring weather here has been, I suppose, some Deputation of the Northern Gentry riding through the wild mountains, with humane intent, to represent the matter to the Lord General at Edinburgh; from whom, if he pleased to help it forward, a word might be very furtherosome. The Lord

\* ‘that you’ in the hasty Original.

† From the Archives of Oxford University; communicated by the Rev Dr. Bliss.

‡ Commons Journals, vi., 410 (8 May, 1650).

General is prompt with his word ;—writes this Letter, as I find, in some interval of a painful fit of sickness he has been laboring under.

*To the Right Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England : These.*

Edinburgh, 11th March, 1650.

SIR,

Having received information from the Mayor and Citizens of Durham, and some Gentlemen of the Northern Counties, That upon their Petition to the Parliament, “that the Houses of the late Dean and Chapter in the City of Durham might be converted into a College or School of Literature,” the Parliament was pleased in May last to refer the same to the Committee for Removing Obstructions in the sale of Dean-and-Chapter Lands, “to consider thereon, and to report their opinion therein to the House :”<sup>\*</sup> Which said Committee, as I am also informed, have so far approved thereof as that they are of an opinion That the said Houses will be a fit place to erect a College or School for all the Sciences and Literature, and that it will be a pious and laudable work, and of great use to the Northern parts ; and have ordered Sir Arthur Haselrig to make report thereof to the House accordingly : And the said Citizens and Gentlemen having made some address to me to contribute my assistance to them therein :

To which, in so good and pious a work, I could not but willingly and heartily concur. And not knowing wherein I might better serve them, or answer their desires, than by recommending the same to the Parliament by, Sir, yourself their Speaker,—I do therefore make it my humble and earnest request that the House may be moved, as speedily as conveniently may be, To hear the Report of the said Committee concerning the said Business, from Sir Arthur Haselrig ; that so the House, taking the same into consideration, may do therein what shall seem meet for the good of those poor Countries.

Truly it seems to me a matter of great concernment and importance ; as that which, by the blessing of God, may much conduce to the promoting of learning and piety in those poor rude and ignorant parts ;—there being also many concurring advantages to this Place, as pleasantness and aptness of situation, healthful air, and plenty of provisions, which seem to favor and plead for their desires therein. And besides the good, so obvious to us, ‘which’ those Northern Counties may reap thereby, who knows but the setting on foot this work at this time may suit with God’s present Dispensations ; and may,—if due care and circumspection

<sup>\*</sup> Commons Journals, vi., 410 (8 May, 1650), *ubi supra*.

be used in the right constituting and carrying on the same,—tend to, and by the blessing of God produce, such happy and glorious fruits as are scarce thought on or foreseen !

Sir, not doubting of your readiness and zeal to promote so good and public a work, I crave pardon for this boldness ; and rest,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

Whereupon the Committee for Removing Obstructions does bestir itself ; manages, in three months hence (for we do nothing rashly), to report† by ‘ Sir Arthur Haselrig, touching Duresme College Buildings to be converted to a College or School for all the Sciences of Literature : That’—that—And, in brief, History itself has to report that the pious Project, thanks mainly to furtherance by the Lord General, whose power to further it increased by and by, did actually, some seven years hence, take effect ;‡—actually began giving Lessons of human Grammar, human Geography, Geometry, and other divine Knowledge, to the vacant human mind,—in those once sleepy Edifices, dark heretofore, or illuminated mainly by Dr. Cosins’s Papistical waxlights, or the like : and so continued, in spite of opposition, till the Blessed Restoration put a stop to it, and to some other things. In late years there is again some kind of Durham College giving Lessons,—I hope with good success.

---

## No. XL.

[Vol. i., p. 537 : ‘ *Observes strict silence as to this Visit.*’]

— — Here is the Lord General’s Answer ; indicating with much thankfulness that he will not now need to return.

\* Baker mss., xxviii., 495 : printed also in Hutchinson’s *History of Durham* ; and elsewhere. † Commons Journals (vi., 589), 18 June, 1651.

‡ Protector’s *Letters Patent* of 15 May, 1657, following up his *Ordinance in Council* of the previous Year : Hutchinson’s *History of the County Palatine of Durham* (Newcastle, 1785), i., 514–30. See Cooper’s *Annals of Cambridge*, iii., 473 (Cambridge Petition against it: 18 April, 1659). ‘Throve apace,’ says Hutchinson, ‘till,’ &c.

## LETTER XLIV.

*'To the Lord President of the Council of State : These.'*

Edinburgh, 3d June, 1651.

MY LORD,

I have received yours of the 27th of May ; with an Order from the Parliament for my Liberty to return into England for change of air, that thereby I might the better recover my health. All which came unto me while Dr. Wright and Dr. Bates, whom your Lordship sent down, were with me.

I shall not need to recite the extremity of my last sickness : it was so violent that indeed my nature was not able to bear the weight thereof. But the Lord was pleased to deliver me, beyond expectation ; and to give me cause to say once more, "He hath plucked me out of the grave!"\*—My Lord, the indulgence of the Parliament expressed by their Order is a very high and undeserved favor : of which although it be fit I keep a thankful remembrance, yet I judge it would be too much presumption in me to† return a particular acknowledgment. I beseech you give me the boldness to return my humble thankfulness to the Council for sending two such worthy Persons, so great a journey, to visit me. From whom I have received much encouragement, and good directions for recovery of health and strength,—which I find 'now,' by the goodness of God, growing to such a state as may yet, if it be His good will, render me useful according to my poor ability, in the station wherein He hath set me.

I wish more steadiness in your Affairs here than to depend, in the least degree, upon so frail a thing as I am. Indeed they do not,—nor own any instrument. This Cause is of God, and it must prosper. Oh, that all that have any hand therein, being *so* persuaded, would gird up the loins of their mind, and endeavor in all things to walk worthy of the Lord ! So prays,

My Lord,

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* Psalm xxx., 3: 'hast brought up my soul from the grave;' or, lxxxvi., 3: 'delivered my soul from;' but 'plucked' is not in any of the texts.

† 'not to' *in orig.* ;—*dele* 'not.'

‡ Kimber's (anonymous) Life of Oliver Cromwell (London, 1724), p. 201 ;—does not say whence derived.

## No. XLI.

[Vol. i., p. 540: '*Incursions into the Borders of England, \* \* \* Oh-ver Cromwell.*' *Substitute what follows for Letter CXIX. there.*]

## LETTER XLV.

OF this Letter Sir Harry Vane and the Council of State judge it improper to publish anything in the Newspapers, except a rough abstract, in words of their own, of the *first two paragraphs* and the *concluding one*. In which state it presents itself in the Old Pamphlets.\* The Letter copied in full lies among the *Tanner Manuscripts*;—gives us a glimpse into the private wants, and old furnitures, of the Cromwell Army. 'Pots' are cavalry helmets; 'backs-and-breasts' are still seen on cuirassier regiments; 'snaphances' (German *schnapphahn*, snapcock) are a new wonderful invention, giving fire by flint-and-steel;—promising, were they not so terribly expensive, to supersede the old slow match-lock in field-service! But, I believe, they wind up like a watch before the trigger acts;† and come very high!

*To the Right Honorable the Lord President of the Council of State: These*

Linlithgow, 26th July, 1651.

MY LORD,

I am able to give you no more account than what you have by my last; only we have now in Fife about Thirteen or Fourteen thousand horse and foot. The Enemy is at his old lock, and lieth in and near Stirling; where we cannot come to fight him, except he please, or we go upon too-too manifest hazards: he having very strongly laid himself, and having a very great advantage there. Whither we hear he hath lately gotten great provisions of meal, and reinforcement of his strength out of the North under Marquis Huntley. It is our business still to wait upon God, to shew us our way how to deal with this subtle Enemy; which I hope He will.

Our forces on this side the River‡ are not very many: wherefore I have sent for Colonel Rich's; and shall appoint them, with the forces

\* In Parliamentary History, xix., 498.

† Grose's Military Antiquities

‡ Means 'Frith' always.

under Colonel Saunders, to embody close upon the Borders,—and to be in readiness to join with those left on this side the Frith, or to be for the security of England, as occasion shall offer; there being little use of them where they lie, as we know.

Your Soldiers begin to fall sick, through the wet weatner which has lately been. It is desired, therefore, that the recruits of foot determined ‘on,’ may rather come sooner in time than usually; and may be sure to be full in numbers, according to your appointment, whereof great failing has lately been. For the way of raising them, it is wholly submitted to your pleasure; and we hearing you rather choose to send us Volunteers than Pressed men, shall be very glad you go that way.

Our Spades are spent to a very small number: we desire, therefore, that of the Five thousand tools we lately sent for, at the least Three thousand of them may be spades,—they wearing most away in our works, and being most useful. Our Horse arms, especially our pots, are come to a very small number: it is desired we may have a Thousand backs-and-breasts, and Fifteen hundred pots. We have left us in store but Four hundred pair of pistols; Two hundred saddles; Six hundred pikes; Two thousand and thirty muskets, whereof thirty snapances. These are our present stores: and not knowing what you have sent us by this Fleet that is coming, we desire we may be considered therein.—Our cheese and butter is our lowest store of Victual.

We were necessitated to pay the Soldiery moneys now at their going over into Fife; whereby the Treasury is much exhausted, although we desire to husband it what we can. This being the principal time of action, we desire your Lordship to take a principal care that money may be supplied us with all possible speed, and these other things herewith mentioned; your affairs so necessarily requiring the same.

The Castle of Inchgarvie, which lieth in the River, almost in the mid-way between the North and South Ferry, commonly called Queen’s Ferry,—was delivered to us on Thursday last. They marched away with their swords and baggage only; leaving us sixteen cannon, and all their other arms and ammunition. I remain,

My Lord,

Your lordship’s most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

\* Tanner mss., in Cary, ii., 288-90.

## No. XLII.

[Vol. i., p. 548: '*Glance at it here for the last time, and never repeat it more.*']

## LETTER XLVI.

CHARLES's Standard, it would seem then, was erected at Worcester on Friday, the 22d, the day of poor Christopher's death. On which same Friday, about sunrise, 'our Messenger' (the Parliament's) 'left the Lord General at Mr. Pierpoint's House,'—William Pierpoint, of the Kingston Family, much his friend,—the House called Thoresby 'near Mansfield;' just starting for Nottingham, to arrive there that night. From Nottingham, by Coventry, by Stratford and Evesham, to 'the southeast side of Worcester,' rallying Country forces as we go, will take till Thursday next. Here at Stratford on the Wednesday, eve of that, is a Letter accidentally preserved.

Dubitating Wharton, he also might help to rally forces; his name, from 'Upper Winchington in Bucks,' or wherever he may be, might do something. Give him, at any rate, a last chance.—'Tom Westrow,' here accidentally named; once a well-known man, familiar to the Lord General and to men of worth and quality; now, as near as may be, swallowed forever in the Night Empires;—is still visible, strangely enough, through one small chink, and recoverable into daylight as far as needful. A Kentish man, a Parliament Soldier once, named in military Kent Committees; indisputably sat in Parliament too,\* though the Official Lists say nothing of him. Above all, he was the Friend of poor George Wither, step-son of the Muses; to whom in his undeserved distresses he lent beneficent princely sums; and who, in poor splayfooted doggerel,—very poor, but very grateful, pious, true, and on the whole noble,—preserves some adequate memory of

\* Husbands; Commons Journals, v., 356; iv., 691, &c.

him for the curious\* By this chink Tom Westrow, and the ancient figure of his Life, is still recoverable if needed.

Westrow, we find by good evidence, did return to his place in Parliament;†—quitted it too, as Wither informs us, foreseeing the great Catastrophe; and retired to country quiet, up the River at Teddington. Westrow and the others returned: Wharton continued to dubitate;—and we shall here take leave of him. ‘Poor foolish Mall,’ young Mary Cromwell, one of ‘my two little Wenches,’ has been on a visit at Winchington, I think;—thanks to you and the dear Lady’ for her.

*For my honored Lord Wharton: These.*

Stratford-on-Avon, 27th August, 1651.

MY LORD,

I know I write to my Friend,—therefore give me leave to say one bold word.

In my very heart: Your Lordship, Dick Norton, Tom Westrow, Robert Hammond have, though not intentionally, helped one another to stumble at the Dispensations of God, and to reason yourselves out of His service!

Now ‘again’ you have opportunity to associate with His People in His work; and to manifest your willingness, and desire to serve the Lord against His and His people’s enemies. Would you be blessed out of Zion, and see the good of His people, and rejoice with His inheritance,—I advise you all in the bowels of love, Let it appear you offer yourselves willingly to His work! Wherein to be accepted, is more honor from the Lord than the world can give or hath. I am persuaded it needs you not,—save as your Lord and Master needed the Ass’s Colt, to shew His humility, meekness, and condescension: but you need it, to declare your submission to, and owning yourself the Lord’s and His people’s!‡

If you can break through old disputes,—I shall rejoice if you help others to do so also. Do not say, You are now satisfied because it is the *old* Quarrel;—as if it had not been so, all this while!

I have no leisure; but a great deal of entire affection to you and yours, and those named ‘here,’—which I thus plainly express. Thanks to you

\* *Westrow Revived: a Funeral Poem without Fiction, composed by George Wither, Esq.; that God may be glorified in His Saints, and that—&c., &c* (King’s Pamphlets, 12mo, No. 390: London, 1653–4, dated with the pen ‘3 January’): unadulterated doggerel; but really *says* something *just*; by no means your insupportablest ‘poetic’ reading, as times go!

† ‘Admitted to sit;’ means, readmitted after Pride’s Purge: Commons Journals (vii., 27, 29), 10 October, 1651.

‡ Grammar, in this last clause, lost in the haste: ‘Ass’s Colt’ is ‘Beast’ *in orig.*



and the dear Lady, for all loves,—and for poor foolish Mall. I am in good earnest ‘thankful;’ and so also

Your Lordship’s

Faithful friend and most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

### No. XLIII.

[Vol. ii., p. 23: ‘*Fat drowsy pedantry, will now also do!*’]

### LETTER XLVII.

HERE, ‘from the old Chest of Farley Castle,’ the mansion of the Hungerfords, is another Letter; and a dim glance into the domesticities again. *Anthony* Hungerford, as we saw, was the Royalist Hungerford: he is ‘of Blackbourton in Oxfordshire;’ once Member for Malmesbury; has been living these six<sup>r</sup> or seven years past, in a repentant wholesomely secluded state. ‘Cousin Dunch’ is young Mrs. Dunch of Pusey, once Ann Mayor of Hursley; she lives within visiting distance of Blackbourton, when at Pusey; does not forget old neighbors while in Town,—and occasionally hears gloomy observations from them. “Your Lord General is become a great man now!” From the Answer to which we gather at least one thing: That the ‘offer of a very great Proposition’ as to Son Richard’s marriage, which we once obscurely heard of,<sup>†</sup> was, to all appearance, made by this Anthony Hungerford,—perhaps in behalf of his kinsman Sir Edward, who, as he had no Son,<sup>‡</sup> might have a Daughter that would be a very great Proposition to a young man. Unluckily ‘there was not that assurance of Godliness’ that seemed to warrant it: however the nobleness of the Overture is never to be forgotten.

*For my honored Friend, Anthony Hungerford, Esquire: These.*

Cockpit, 10th December, 1652.

SIR,

I understand, by my Cousin Dunch, of so much trouble of yours and so much unhandsomeness (at least seeming so) on my part, as doth not a little afflict me, until I give you this account of my innocency.

\* Gentleman’s Magazine (London, 1814), lxxxiv., p. 419.

† Antea, vol. i., p. 240.

‡ Epitaph in *Collinson’s Somersetshire*.

She was pleased to tell my Wife of your often resorts to my house to visit me, and of your disappointments. Truly, Sir, had I but once known of your being there, and “had concealed myself,” it had been an action so below a gentleman or an honest man, so full of ingratitude for your civilities I have received from you, as would have rendered me unworthy of human society! Believe me, Sir, I am much ashamed that the least color of the appearance of such a thing should have happened; and ‘I could not take satisfaction but by this plain-dealing for my justification, which I ingenuously offer you. And although Providence did not dispose other matters to our mutual satisfaction, yet your nobleness in that Overture obligeth me, and I hope ever shall while I live, to study upon all occasions to approve myself your Family’s and your

Most affectionate and humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

My Wife and I desire our service be presented to your Lady and Family.\*

---

### LETTER XLVIII.

SEEMINGLY belonging to the same neighborhood is the following altogether domestic Letter to Fleetwood; which still survives in Autograph; but has no date whatever, and no indication that will enable us to fix its place with perfect exactness. Fleetwood’s Commission for Ireland is dated 10th July, 1652;† the precise date of his marriage with Bridget Ireton, of his departure for Ireland, or of any ulterior proceedings of his, is not recoverable in those months. Of Henry Cromwell, too, we know only that he sat in the *Little Parliament*; and, indisputably therefore, was home from Ireland before summer next. From the total silence as to Public Affairs, in this Letter, it may be inferred that nothing decisive had yet been done or resolved upon;—that through this strange old Autograph, as through a dim Horn-Gate (not of Dreams, but of Realities), we are looking into the interior of the Cromwell Lodging, and the Cromwell heart, in the Winter of 1652.

\* Oliver Cromwell’s Memoirs of the Protector (3d edition, London, 1822), ii., 488; Collinson’s History of Somersetshire, iii., 357. (Note).

† Thurloe, i., 212.

*For the Right Honorable Lieutenant-General Fleetwood, Commander-in-Chief of the Forces in Ireland: These.*

‘Cockpit, — —, 1652.’

DEAR CHARLES.

I thank you for your loving Letter. The same hopes and desires, upon your planting into my Family, were much the same in me that you express in yours towards me. However, the dispensation of the Lord is, to have it otherwise for the present; and therein I desire to acquiesce;—not being out of hope that it may lie in His good pleasure, in His time, to give us the mutual comfort of our relation: the want whereof He is able abundantly to supply by His own presence; which indeed makes up all defects, and is the comfort of all our comforts and enjoyments.

Salute your dear Wife from me. Bid her beware of a *bondage* spirit.\* Fear is the natural issue of such a spirit;—the antidote is, Love. The voice of Fear is: If I had done this; if I had avoided that, how well it had been with me!—I know this hath been her vain reasoning: ‘poor Biddy!’

Love argueth in this wise: What a Christ have I; what a Father in and through Him! What a Name hath my Father: *Merciful, gracious, long-suffering, abundant in goodness and truth; forgiving iniquity, transgression, and sin.* What a Nature hath my Father: *He is Love*;—free in it, unchangeable, infinite! What a Covenant between Him and Christ,—for all the Seed, for every one: wherein He undertakes all, and the poor Soul nothing. The new Covenant is *Grace*,—to or upon the Soul; to which it, ‘the Soul,’ is passive and receptive: *I’ll do away their sins; I’ll write my Law, &c.; I’ll put it in their hearts: they shall never depart from me, &c.*†

This commends the Love of God: it’s Christ dying for men *without* strength, for men while sinners, while enemies. And shall we seek for the root of our comforts within us,—What God hath done, what He is to us in Christ, ‘this’ is the root of our comfort: in this is stability; in us is weakness. Acts of obedience are not perfect, and therefore yield not perfect Grace. Faith, as an act, yields it not; but ‘only’ as it carries us into Him, who is our perfect rest and peace; in whom we are accounted of, and received by, the Father,—even as Christ Himself! This is our high calling. Rest we here, and here only.‡

\* A Secretary has written hitherto; the Lord General now begins, himself, with a new pen.

† Has been crowding, for the last line or two, very close upon the bottom of the page; finds now that it will not do; and takes to the margin.

‡ Even so, my noble one! The noble soul will, one day, again come to understand these old words of yours.

Commend me to Harry Cromwell : I pray for him, That he may thrive, and improve in the knowledge and love of Christ. Commend me to all the Officers. My prayers indeed are daily for them. Wish them to beware of bitterness of spirit ; and of all things uncomely for the Gospel. The Lord give you abundance of wisdom, and faith, and patience. Take heed also of your natural inclination to compliance.

Pray for me. I commit vou to the Lord ; and rest,

Your loving father,

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

The Boy and Betty are very well. Shew what kindness you well may to Colonel Clayton, to my nephew Gregory, to Claypole's Brother.†

And so the miraculous Horn-Gate, not of Dreams, but of Realities and old dim Domesticities, closes again, into totally opaque ; —and we return to matters public.

#### No. XLIV.

[Vol. ii., p. 59 : '*And then let us hasten to the catastrophe.*']

#### LETTER XLIX.

THE Little Parliament has now sat some seven weeks : the dim old world of England, then in huge travail-throes, and somewhat of the Lord General's sad and great reflections thereon, may be dimly read here.

*'For the Right Honorable Lieutenant-General Fleetwood, Commander-in-Chief of the Forces in Ireland: These.'*

Cockpit, 22d August, 1653.

DEAR CHARLES,

Although I do not so often as is desired by me acquaint you how it is with me, yet I doubt not of your prayers in my behalf, That, in all things, I may walk as becometh the Gospel.

\* Has exhausted the long broad margin ; inverts now, and writes atop.

† Ayscough MSS., No. 4165, f. 1. On the inner or blank leaf of this curious old Sheet are neatly pasted two square tiny bits of Paper ; on one of them, 'Fairfax' in autograph ; on the other these words : 'God bless the now Lord Protector ;' and crosswise, 'Marquis of Worcester writt it ;'—concerning which Marquis, once 'Lord Herbert,' see antea, vol. ii., p. 116

Truly I never more needed all helps from my Christian Friends than now! Fain would I have my service accepted of the Saints, if the Lord will;—but it is not so. Being of different judgments, and ‘those’ of each sort seeking most to propagate their own, that spirit of kindness that is\* to them all, is hardly accepted of any. I hope I can say it, My life has been a willing sacrifice,—and I hope,—for them *all*. Yet it much falls out as when the Two Hebrews were rebuked: you know upon whom they turned their displeasure!†

But the Lord is wise; and will, I trust, make manifest that I am no enemy. Oh, how easy is mercy to be abused:—Persuade friends with you to be very sober! If the Day of the Lord *be* so near as some say, how should our moderation appear! If every one, instead of contending, would justify his form ‘of judgment’ by love and meekness, Wisdom would be “justified of her children.” But, alas!—

I am, in my temptation, ready to say, “Oh, would I had wings like a dove, then would I,” &c. ‡ but this, I fear, is my “haste.” I bless the Lord I have somewhat keeps me alive: some sparks of the light of His countenance, and some sincerity above man’s judgment. Excuse me thus unbewelling myself to you: pray for me; and desire my Friends to do so also. My love to thy dear Wife,—whom indeed I entirely love, both naturally, and upon the best account;—and my blessing, if it be worth anything, upon thy little Babe.

Sir George Ayscough having occasions with you, desired my Letters to you on his behalf: if he come or send, I pray you shew him what favor you can. Indeed his services have been considerable for the State; and I doubt he hath not been answered with suitable respect. Therefore again I desire you and the Commissioners to take him into a very particular care, and help him so far as justice and reason will any ways afford.

Remember my hearty affections to all the Officers. The Lord bless you all. So prayeth

Your truly loving father,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

‘P.S.’ All here love you, and are in health, your Children and all.§

\* ‘in me’ modestly suppressed.

† ‘And he,’ the wrongdoer of the Two, ‘said unto Moses, “Who made thee a Prince and a Judge over us? Intendest thou to kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian!”’ (*Exodus*, ii., 14.)

‡ ‘then would I fly away and be at rest. Lo, then would I wander far off, and remain in the wilderness. I would hasten my escape from the windy storm and tempest!’ (*Psalms* lv., 6, 7, 8.)

§ Harleian mss., No. 7502, f. 13: ‘Copied from the Original in y<sup>e</sup> hands

## No. XLV.

[Vol. ii., p. 177: '*Having gradually all shifted into Henry Cromwell's hand in the interim.*']

## LETTER L.

HERE, fluttering loose on the dim confines of Limbo and the Night-realm, is a small Note of Oliver's, issuing one knows not whence, but recognisable as his, which we must snatch and save. A private and thrice private Note, for Secretary Thurloe; curiously disclosing to us, as one or two other traits elsewhere do, that, with all his natural courtesies, noble simplicities and affabilities, this Lord Protector knew on occasion the word of command too, and what the meaning of a Lord Protector, King, or Chief Magistrate in the Commonwealth of England was.

'Margery Beacham,' Wife of William Beacham, Mariner, lives, the somnolent Editors do not apprise us where,—probably in London or some of the Out Ports; certainly in considerable indigence at present. Her poor Husband, in the course of 'many services to the Commonwealth by sea and land,' has quite lost the use of his right arm; has a poor 'Pension of Forty shillings allowed him from Chatham;' has Margery, and one poor Boy Randolph, 'tractable to learn,' but who can get no schooling out of such an income. Wherefore, as seems but reasonable, Margery petitions his Highness that the said Randolph might be admitted 'a Scholar of Sutton's Hospital, commonly called the Charter-house,' in London.\*

His Highness, who knows the services of William Beacham, and even 'a secret service' of his not mentioned in the Petition or Certificates, straightway decides that the Boy Beacham is

of Mrs. Cook (Grand-daughter to Lieutenant General Fleetwood) of Newington, Mid<sup>sex</sup>: Nov<sup>r</sup> 5, 1759, By A. Gifford.' Printed, without reference, incorrectly, in *Annual Register* for 1761, p. 49; in *Gentleman's Magazine*, &c Appendix, No. 13.

\* Her Petition printed, without date, in Scatcherd, &c., *ubi infra*.

clearly a case for Sutton's Bounty, and that the Commissioners of the same shall give it him. But now it seems th<sup>t</sup> Chief Commissioner, whose name in this Note stands — — *Blank Blank*, is not so prompt in the thing; will consider it, will, &c. Consider it? His Highness docketts the Petition, 'We *refer* this to the Commissioners for Sutton's Hospital 28th July, 1655;' and instructs Thurloe to inform Blank Blank that he had much better not consider it, but do it! Which there is no doubt Blank Blank now saw at once to be the real method of the business.

'To Mr. Secretary Thurloe.'

'Whitehall,' 28th July, 1655.

You receive from me, this 28th instant, a Petition from Margery Beacham, desiring the admission of her Son into the Charter-house; whose Husband\* was employed one day in an important secret service, which he did effectually, to our great benefit and the Commonwealth's.

I have wrote under it a common Reference to the Commissioners; but I mean a great deal more: That it shall be done, without their debate or consideration of the matter. And so do you privately hint to — —. I have not the particular shining bauble for crowds to gaze at or kneel to, but—To be short, I know how to deny Petitions; and, whatever I think proper, for outward form, to "refer" to any Officer or Office, I expect that such my compliance with custom shall be looked upon as an indication of my will and pleasure to have the thing *done*.

Thy true friend,

OLIVER P.†

\* 'who' in hasty Original, as if Margery's self or Son were meant.

† Scatcherd's History of Morley (Leeds, 1830), p. 332. Printed there, and in Annual Register (for 1758, p. 268), and elsewhere; without commentary, or indication Whence or How,—with several impertinent interpolations which are excluded here. In the *Annual Register*, vague reference is made to a Book called *Collection of Letters, &c.*, 'compiled by Leonard Howard, D.D.,' who seems to be the first publisher of this Note; author, I suppose, of the impertinent interpolations, which vary in different copies, but being exactly indicated in all, are easily thrown out again as here. In Howard's Book (a disorganic Quarto, London, 1753; one volume published, a second promised, but nowhere discoverable), which is credibly described to me as 'one of the most confused farragos ever printed,' search for this Note has been made, twice, to no purpose; and with little hope of elucidation there, had the Note been found. By internal evidence a genuine Note; and legible as we have it.

No. XLVI.

[Vol. ii., p. 208: '*And do what is fair and square!*']

# LETTER LI.

A SMALL vestige, it is presumable, of this Protector's solicitude for the encouragement of Learning and Learned Men. Which is a feature of his character very conceivable to us, and well demonstrated otherwise by testimony of facts and persons. Such we shall presume the purport of this small Civic Message to be.

*For Our worthy Friends, the Committee of the City of London for Gresham College: These.*

Whitehall, 9th May, 1656.

GENTLEMEN,

We, understanding that you have appointed an election this afternoon of a Geometry Professor in Gresham College,—We desire you to suspend the same for some time, till We shall have an opportunity to speak with some of you in order to that business.

I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.\*

Historical Neal says zealously, 'If there was a man in England who excelled in any faculty or science, the Protector would find him out, and reward him according to his merit.' The renowned Dr. Cudworth in Cambridge, I have likewise expressly read, had commission to mark among the ingenuous youth of that University such as he deemed apt for Public Employment, and to make the Protector aware of them. Which high and indeed sacred function we find the Doctor, as occasion offers, intent to discharge.† The choice this Protector made of men,—'in nothing was his good understanding better discovered;' 'which gave a general satisfaction to the Public,' say the Histories.‡ As we can very well believe! He who is himself a true man, has a

\* Original, with Oliver's Signature, now (1846) in the Guildhall Library, London.

† Thurloe, iii., 614; v., 522, &c

‡ Burnet, in Neal, ii., 514; ib., ii., 461, 494.



chance to know the truth of men when he sees them ; he who is not, has none : and as for the poor Public and its satisfactions,—alas, is not the kind of ‘man’ you set upon it the liveliest symbol of its, and your, veracity and victory and blessedness, or unverity and misery and cursedness ; the general summation and practical outcome of all else whatsoever in the Public, and in you ?

---

No. XLVII.

[Vol. ii., p. 216 : ‘*Trying what the arithmetical account of heads will do for it, once more.*’]

LETTER LII.

THE Portugal has done justice ; reluctantly aware at last that jesuitries would not serve him.\* The Spaniards, again, cower close within their harbors ; patient of every insult ; no ship will venture out, and no Plate Fleet will come in : and as for ‘attempting Cadiz or Gibraltar,’ the Sea Generals, after mature survey, decide that without other force it cannot prudently be done. This is what Montague, with his clear eyes, has had to report to Secretary Thurloe on the latter enterprise : “I perceive much desire that Gibraltar should be taken. My thoughts as to that are, in short, these : That the likeliest way to get it is, By landing on the sand, and quickly cutting it off between sea and sea, or so securing our men there as that they may hinder the intercourse of the Town with the Main ; frigates lying near, too, to assist them :—and it is well known that Spain never victualleth any place for one month. This will want Four or Five thousand men, well formed and officered. This my own only thought which I submit, at present.”†

Whereupon the Lord Protector sends the following Orders ; one

\* Meadows to Blake and Montague, 13 May, 1656 : Thurloe, v., 14 ;—see *ib.*, 69, 116, and 118 (the Portugal’s Letter to Oliver, 24 June, 1656).

† Montague to Thurloe, in cipher, 20 April to 29 May, 1656 (*Thurloe*, v., 67–70), ‘received by Captain Lloyd, who arrived here 11th July,’—and has brought other Letters, joint Letters from the Generals, of somewhat later date, as we may observe.

other Sea Letter of his which we happen to have left. Mainly of Thurloe's composition, I perceive ; but worth preserving on various accounts.

*To Generals Blake and Montague, at Sea.*

Whitehall, 28th August, 1656.

GENTLEMEN,

We have received your Letters of the 19th of June brought to us by Captain Lloyd, who arrived here the 11th of July.

By those Letters, and by what Captain Lloyd related by word of mouth,—which is not contradicted by yours of the 1st and 3d of July, ‘since’ received by the Squadron of Ten Ships (which are all safely arrived in the Channel), nor by any other intelligence received by other hands,—we find That the Spaniard keeps ‘within’ his Ports, and doth not yet prepare any considerable Fleet to come to Sea ; and that, in the condition you and they were then in, they were not to be attempted in their Harbors. And as for any design upon Gibraltar, we see by General Montague's Letter to the Secretary, that nothing therein was feasible without a good Body of Landsmen.—So that, upon the whole, there remains nothing to be done, in those seas for the present, which should require the whole Fleet now with you to remain there. Besides that the Great Ships cannot, without great danger, be kept out, the winter time, upon that coast.

Upon these grounds we are of opinion, with you, That a good Squadron of Frigates will, in this season, be sufficient to answer any opportunity of service which may present itself. And therefore we have resolved That about the number of Twenty Ships, such as you shall judge proper and-fit for that purpose, be kept in those seas ; and the rest be sent home, with the first opportunity of wind and weather :—and desire that you will give order therein accordingly. And in respect it will be necessary that we advise with one of you at least, upon this whole affair ; and it being also very inconvenient that you should be *both* from the head of the Fleet which remains behind, the management thereof being of so great concernment to the Commonwealth,—we would have General Blake to stay with the Fleet, and General Montague to come with the Squadron which comes home.

For the service which these Ships ‘that stay’ should be applied to,—we need say nothing therein ; but refer you to the former Instructions. That which we believe the Enemy will most intend will be the carrying on his Trade to the West Indies ; which if he can effectually do, he will not much care for what else is done upon him. And our intelligence is. That at this time he is fitting out some Ships of war, and others, to send from Cadiz into those parts ;—the certainty whereof we suppose you may know. And therefore that which is most to be endeavored is, The spoil-

ing him in that Trade, by intercepting his Fleets either going to or coming from those parts,\*—and as much as may be To destroy his correspondencies thither. It will be of great use also to prevent the coming of any Materials for Shipping, or other contraband goods, into Cadiz or any of his Ports: which you can have an eye to; and, as much as may be, prejudice his correspondency with Flanders.

Besides these things, and what other damage you may have opportunity to do the Enemy, we, in our keeping the said Fleet in those Seas, had an eye to the Preservation of the Trade of this Commonwealth in the Straits and to Portugal:† which we suppose could not be driven on without a very good countenance and strength,—in respect the Enemy would otherwise be able with a few ships to obstruct this Trade wholly, and to take all that passed either to or from the one place or the other.‡ —But our intention is not To reckon up every particular wherein this Fleet may be useful, but only To let you know our general scope; and to leave the management and improvement thereof to the prudence and direction of him who is to abide upon the place. Whom we beseech the Lord to be present with; and to guide him to that which may be for the good of this Commonwealth, and according to His own will.

These have been our thoughts, and the considerations we have had upon this Affair. If anything else doth occur to you different from what is here expressed, either as to the number of Ships to remain in those seas, or the way and manner of weakening the Enemy and managing the War against him,—we desire to understand your sense and advice hereupon, with all possible speed; sooner, if it may be, than the return of the aforesaid Squadron. And in the mean time we are not willing to tie you up positively to the number of Twenty Ships to remain on that Coast; but give you a latitude to keep a lesser or greater number there, for answering the ends aforesaid, and ‘so’ as you shall find the occasion to require, which possibly may be very much varied since the last we had from you.—For what concerns the Provisions of victuals and other things which the Fleet will stand in need of, the Commissioners of the Admiralty have direction to write at large to you. Unto whose Letters we refer you;—and desire you and the whole Fleet to rest assured that nothing shall be omitted to be done, here, for your supply and encouragement upon all occasions.

Your loving friend,  
‘OLIVER P.’‡

\* ‘thence’ *in orig.*

† Here, I think, at the beginning of this Paragraph, the Protector himself has more decidedly struck in.

‡ Thurloe, v., 363. ‘Sent to Plymouth, To be sent to the Generals by Captain Hatsell.’

## No. XLVIII.

[Vol. ii., p. 281: '*Reply on this occasion, are happily all lost*']

Lost? Alas, no: ill-fated industry, digging farther in the Dust-mine, has *found* most of them; the 'Paper of Reasons,' and his Highness's Reply are found!\* Here are the 'Reasons' first: they are in the form of a Vote or Resolution, of date yesterday, 7th April, 1657:

'*Resolved*, That the Parliament having lately presented their Humble Petition and Advice to your Highness, whereunto they have not as yet received satisfaction; and the matters contained in that Petition and Advice being agreed upon by the Great Council and Representative of the Three Nations; which matters, in their judgment, are most conducing to the good of the People thereof both in Spiritual and Civil concerns: They have therefore thought fit

'To adhere to this Advice; and to put your Highness in mind of the great obligation which rests upon you in respect of this Advice; and again to desire you to give your Assent thereunto.'†

Which brief Paper of Reasons, Speaker Widdrington having read, and then delivered to his Highness, with some brief touches of mellifluous eloquence still happily lost,—his Highness, with a look I think of more than usual seriousness, thus answers the Assembled Parliament and him.

## SPEECH I.

MR. SPEAKER,

No man can put a greater value than I hope I do, and shall do, upon the desires and advices of the Parliament. I could in my own heart aggravate, both concerning the Persons advising and concerning the Advice;—readily acknowledging that it is the Advice of the Parliament of these Three Nations. And if a man could suppose it were *not* a Parliament to some; \**[Malignants there are who have such notions]*—yet doubtless it should be to me, and to us all that are engaged in this common Cause wherein we have been engaged. I say, surely it ought

\* Commons Journals, vii., 520–21 (6, 8 April); Burton, i., 421      † Ibid.

to be a Parliament to us! Because it arises as a result of those issues, and determinations of Settlement, that *we* have labored to arrive at! And therefore I do most readily acknowledge the weight of authority 'you have' in advising these things.

I can aggravate also to myself the general notion of the Things Advised to; as being things which tend to the settlement of the chiefest Interests\* that can fall into the heart of men to devise or endeavor after. And at such a time, 'too;' when truly, I may think, the Nation is big with expectation of something that may add to their 'security of' Being.—I therefore must needs put a very high esteem 'upon,' and have a very reverent opinion of anything that comes from you.

And so I have had of this Instrument:—and, I hope, so I have expressed. And what I have expressed, hath been,—if I flatter not myself,—from a very honest heart towards the Parliament and the Public. I say not these things to compliment you. For we are all past complimenting, and all considerations of that kind! [*Serious enough his Highness is, and we all are; the Nations and the Ages, and indeed the MAKER of the Nations and the Ages, looking on us here!*] We must all be very real now, if ever we will be so!

Now, howbeit your title and name you give to this Paper [*Looking on the Vellum*] makes me think you intended "Advice;" and I should transgress against all reason, should I make any other construction than that you did intend Advice: 'yet'—! —[*Still hesitates, then?*]—I would not lay a burden on my beast but I would consider his strength to bear it! And if you lay a burden upon a man that is conscious of his own infirmity and disabilities, and doth make some measure of counsels which may seem to come from Heaven, counsels from the Word of God (who leaves room for charity, and for men to consider their own strength),—I hope it will be no evil in me to measure your "Advice" with my own Infirmities. And truly these will have some influence upon conscience! Conscience in him that receives talents† to know how he may answer the trust of them. And such a conscience have I had 'in this matter;' and still have; and therefore when I thought I had an opportunity to make an Answer, I made that Answer [*The unemphatic Negative; truest "Answer" your Highness then had:—can it not grow an Affirmative?*]—and am a person that have been, before, and then, and since, lifting up my heart to God, To know *what* might be my duty at such a time as this, and upon such an occasion and trial as this was to me! [*Deep silence: Old Parliament casts down its eyes.*]

Truly, Mr. Speaker, it hath been heretofore, I think, a matter of philosophical discourse, That great places, great authority, are a great burden. I know it so. And I know a man that is convinced in his conscience,

\* 'things' again, *in orig.*

† Meaning 'charges,' 'offices'

Nothing less will enable *him* to the discharge of it than Assistance from Above. And it may very well require in such a one, so convinced and so persuaded, That he be right with the Lord in such an undertaking!—And therefore, to speak very clearly and plainly to you: I had, and I have, my hesitations as to that individual thing. [*Still Negative, your Highness?*] If I undertake anything *not* in Faith, I shall serve you in my own Unbelief;—and I shall then be the most unprofitable Servant that People or Nation ever had!

Give me leave, therefore, *to ask counsel*. I am ready to render a reason of my apprehensions; which haply may be overruled by better apprehensions. I think, so far I have deserved no blame; nor do I take it you will lay any upon me. Only you mind me of the duty that is incumbent upon me. And truly the same answer I have as to the point of duty one way, the same consideration have I as to duty another way.\*—I would not urge to you the point of “Liberty.” Surely you have provided for Liberty,—I have borne my witness to it,—Civil and Spiritual! The greatest provision that ever was made have you made, ‘for Liberty’ to all,—and I know that you do not intend to exclude *me*. The “Liberty” I ask is, To vent my own doubts, and my own fears, and my scruples. And though haply, in such cases as these are, the world hath judged that a man’s conscience ought to know no scruples; yet surely mine doth, and I dare not dissemble. And therefore —! —

They that are knowing in the ground of their own Action will be best able to measure advice to others. [*Will have us reason, in Free Conference, with him?*] There are many things in this ‘Instrument of’ Government besides that one of the Name and Title, that deserve much to be elucidated† as to my judgment. It is you that can capacitate me to receive satisfaction in them! Otherwise, I say truly,—I must say, I am not persuaded to the performance of ‘this’ as my trust and duty, nor ‘sufficiently’ informed. ‘Not persuaded or informed;’ and so not actuated ‘by a call of *duty*,’ as I know you intend I should be,—and as every man in the Nation should be. You have provided for ‘every one of’ them as a Free Man, as a man that is to act possibly,‡ rationally, and conscientiously!—And therefore I cannot tell what other return to make to you than this:

I am ready to give a reason, if you will, I say, capacitate me to do it; and ‘capacitate’ yourselves to receive it;—and to do what other things may inform me a little more particularly than this Vote which you have passed Yesterday, and which has now been read by you to me.

Truly I hope when ‘once’ I understand the ground of these things,—

\* Bound to regard your “Advice;” and yet in doing so, not to disregard

† Higher. † ‘deserve much information,’ *in orig.*

‡ Means ‘in a way possible for him:’ ‘*does possibly*’ is the phrase *in orig.*

the whole being 'meant' neither for your good nor mine, but for the good of the Nation,—there will be no doubt but we may, even in these particulars, find out what\* may answer our duty. Mine, and all our duties, to those whom we serve. And this is that that I do, with a great deal of affection, and honor, and respect, offer now to you.†

Thus has the Honorable House gone a second time in a body, and not yet prevailed.

### No. XLIX.

[Vol. ii., p. 399: '*Is now near ending it, and getting honorably relieved from it.*']

### LETTER LIII.

THE poor Protestants of Piedmont, it appears, are again in a state of grievance, in a state of peril. The Lord Protector, in the thickest press of domestic anarchies, finds time to think of these poor people and their case. Here is a Letter to Ambassador Lockhart, who is now at Dunkirk Siege, in the French King and Cardinal's neighborhood: a generous pious Letter; dictated to Thurloe, partly perhaps of Thurloe's composition, but altogether of Oliver's mind and sense;—fit enough, since it so chances, to conclude our Series here.

Among the Lockhart Letters in *Thurloe*, which are full of Dunkirk in these weeks, I can find no trace of this new Piedmont business: but in Milton's Latin State Letters, among the *Litteræ Oliverii Protectoris*, there are Three, to the French King, to the Swiss Cantons, to the Cardinal, which all treat of it. The first of which, were it only as a sample of the Milton-Oliver Diplomatics, we will here copy, and translate that all may read it. An emphatic State Letter; which Oliver meant, and John Milton thought and wrote into words; not unworthy to be read. It goes by the same Express as the Letter to Lockhart himself; and is very specially referred to there:

\* 'those things' *in orig.*

† Old Pamphlet (in Parliamentary History, xxiii., Appendix, p. 164-6).

*“Serenissimo potentissimoque Principi, Ludovico Galliarum Regi.*

*“SERENISSIME POTENTISSIMEQUE REX, AMICE AC FÆDERATE AUGUSTISSIME,*

*“Meminisse potest Majestas Vestra, quo tempore inter nos de renovando Fœdere agebatur (quod optimis auspiciis initum multa utriusque Populi commoda, multa Hostium communium exinde mala testantur), accidisse miseram illam Convallensium Occisionem; quorum causam undique desertam atque afflictam Vestræ misericordiæ atque tutelæ, summo cum ardore animi ac miseratione, commendavimus. Nec defuisse per se arbitramur Majestatem Vestram officio tam pio, immo verò tam humano, pro eâ quâ apud Ducem Sabaudia valere debuit vel auctoritate vel gratiâ: Nos certè aliique multi Principes ac Civitates, legationibus, literis, precibus interpositis, non defuimus.*

*“Post cruentissimam utriusque sexûs omnis ætatis Trucidationem, Pax tandem data est; vel potiùs inductæ Pacis nomine hostilitas quedam tectior. Conditiones Pacis vestro in oppido Pinarolii sunt latæ: duræ quidem illæ, sed quibus miseri atque inopes, dira omnia atque immania perpassi, facile acquiescerent, modò iis, duræ et iniquæ ut sint, staretur. Non statur; sed enim earum quoque singularum, falsâ interpretatione variisque diverticulis, fides eluditur ac violatur. Antiquis sedibus multi deficiuntur, Religio Patria multis interdicitur; Tributa nova exiguntur; Arx nova cervicibus imponitur, unde milites crebrò erumpentes obvios quosque vel diripiunt vel trucidant. Ad hæc nuper novæ copiæ clanculum contra eos parantur; quique inter eos Romanam Religionem colunt, migrare ad tempus jubentur: ut omnia nunc rursus videantur ad illorum internecionem miserorum spectare, quos illa prior laniena reliquos fecit.*

*“Quod ergò per dextram tuam, Rex Christianissime, quæ Fædus nobiscum et amicitiam percussit, obsecro atque obtestor, per illud Christianissimi tituli decus sanctissimum, fieri ne siveris: nec tantam sæviendi licentiam, non dico Principi cuiquam (neque enim in ullum Principem, multò minus in ætatem illius Principis teneram, aut in muliebrem Matris animum, tanta sævitia cadere potest), sed sacerrimis illis Sicariis, ne permiseris. Qui cum Christi Servatoris nostri servos atque imitatores sese profiteantur, qui venit in hunc mundum ut peccatores servaret, Ejus mitissimi Nomine atque Institutis ad innocentium crudelissimas cædes abutuntur. Eripe qui potes, quique in tanto fastigio dignus es posse, tot supplices tuos homicidarum ex manibus, qui crure nuper ebrii sanguinem rursus sitiunt, suæque invidiam crudelitatis in Principes derivare consultissimum sibi ducunt. Tu verò nec Titulos tuos aut Regni fines istâ invidiâ, nec Evangelium Christi pacatissimam istâ crudelitate fœdari, te regnante, patiaris. Memineris hos ipsos Avi tui Henrici Protestantibus amicissimi Dedititios fuisse; cum Digniorius per ea Loca, quæ etiam commodissimus in Italiam transitus est, Sabaudum trans Alpes cedentem victor est insecutus. Deditionis illius Instrumentum in Actis Regni vestri Publicis etiamnum extat: in quo exceptum atque cautum inter alia est, ne cui*



*postea Convallenses traderentur, nisi iisdem conditionibus quibus eos Avus tuus invictissimus in fidem recepit. Hanc fidem nunc implorant, avitam abs te Nepote supplices requirunt. Tui esse quàm cujus nunc sunt, vel permutatione aliquà si fieri possit, malint atque optarint: id si non licet, patrocinio saltem, miseratione atque perfugio.*

*"Sunt et rationes regni quæ hortari possint ut Convallenses ad te confugientes ne rejicias: sed nolim te, Rex tantus cum sis, aliis rationibus ad defensionem calamitosorum quàm fide a Majoribus datâ, pietate, regidque animi benignitate a magnitudine permoveri. Ita pulcherrimi facti laus atque gloria illibata atque integra tua erit, et ipse Patrem Misericordiæ ejusque Filium Christum Regem, cujus Nomen atque Doctrinam ab immanitate nefariâ vindicaveris, eò magis faventem tibi et propitium per omnem vitam experieris.*

*"Deus Opt. Max. ad gloriam suam, tot innocentissimorum hominum Christianorum tutandam salutem, Vestrumque verum decus, Majestati Vestræ hanc mentem injiciat.*

*" 'Majestatis Vestræ Studiosissimus*

*" 'OLIVERIUS, PROTECTOR REIP. ANGLIÆ,' &c*

*"Westmonasterio, Maii '26<sup>o</sup> die,' anno 1658."\**

Of which here is a Version the most literal we can make :

*"To the most serene and potent Prince, Louis, King of France.*

*"MOST SERENE AND POTENT KING, MOST CLOSE FRIEND AND ALLY,*

*"Your Majesty may recollect that during the negotiation between us for the renewing of our League† (which many advantages to both Nations, and much damage to their common Enemies, resulting therefrom, now testify to have been very wisely done),—there fell out that miserable Slaughter of the People of the Valleys; whose cause, on all sides deserted and trodden down, we, with the utmost earnestness and pity, recommended to your mercy and protection. Nor do we think Your Majesty for your own part, has been wanting in an office so pious, and; indeed, so human, in so far as either by authority or favor you might have influence with the Duke of Savoy: we certainly, and many other Princes and States, by embassies, by letters, by entreaties directed thither, have not been wanting.*

*"After that most sanguinary Massacre, which spared no age nor either sex; there was at last a Peace given; or rather, under the specious name of Peace, a certain more disguised hostility. The terms of the Peace were settled in your Town of Pignerol: hard terms; but such as those poor People, indigent and wretched, after suffering all manner of cruelties and atrocities, might gladly acquiesce in; if only, hard and*

\* The prose works of John Milton (London, 1833), p. 815.

† June, 1655: *Antea*, vol. ii., p. 173-4.

unjust as the bargain is, it were adhered to. It is not adhered to : those terms are broken ; the purport of every one of them is, by false interpretation and various subterfuges, eluded and violated. Many of these People *are* ejected from their Old Habitations ; their Native Religion is prohibited to many : new Taxes are exacted ; a new Fortress has been built over them, out of which soldiers frequently sallying plunder or kill whomsoever they meet. Moreover, new Forces have of late been privily got ready against them ; and such as follow the Romish Religion are directed to withdraw from among them within a limited time : so that everything seems now again to point towards the extermination of all among those unhappy People, whom the former Massacre had left.

“ Which now, O most Christian King, I beseech and obtest thee, by thy right hand which pledged a League and Friendship with us, by the sacred honor of that Title of Most Christian,—permit not to be done : nor let such license of savagery, I do not say to any Prince (for indeed no cruelty like this could come into the mind of any Prince, much less into the tender years of that young Prince, or into the woman’s heart of his Mother), but to those most accursed Assassins, be given. Who while they profess themselves the servants and imitators of Christ our Saviour, who came into this world that He might save sinners, abuse His most merciful Name and Commandments to the cruellest slaughterings. Snatch, thou who art able, and who in such an elevation art worthy to be able, those poor Suppliants of thine from the hands of Murderers, who, lately drunk with blood, are again athirst for it, and think convenient to turn the discredit of their own cruelty upon their Prince’s score. Suffer not either thy Titles and the Environs of thy Kingdom to be soiled with that discredit, or the peaceable Gospel of Christ by that cruelty, in thy Reign. Remember that these very People became Subjects of thy Ancestor, Henry, most friendly to Protestants ; when Lesdigières victoriously pursued him of Savoy across the Alps, through those same Valleys,\* where indeed the most commodious pass to Italy is. The Instrument of that their Paction and Surrender is yet extant in the Public Acts of your Kingdom : in which this among other things is specified and provided against, That these People of the Valleys should not thereafter be delivered over to any one except on the same conditions under which thy invincible Ancestor had received them into fealty. This promised protection they now implore ; promise of thy Ancestor they now, from thee the Grandson, suppliantly demand. To be thine rather than his whose they now are, if by any means of exchange it could be done, they would wish and prefer : if that may not be, thine at least by succor, by commiseration and deliverance.

“ There are likewise reasons of state which might give inducement *no*

\* In 1592 : Hénault, *Abrégé Chronologique* (Paris, 1774), ii., 597.

to reject these People of the Valleys flying for shelter to thee: but I would not have thee, so great a King as thou art, be moved to the defence of the unfortunate by other reasons than the promise of thy Ancestors, and thy own piety and royal benignity and greatness of mind. So shall the praise and fame of this most worthy action be unmixed and clear; and thyself shalt find the Father of Mercy, and his Son Christ the King, whose Name and Doctrine thou shalt have vindicated, the more favorable to thee, and propitious through the course of life.

“May the Almighty, for His own glory, for the safety of so many most innocent Christian men, and for your true honor, dispose Your Majesty to this determination.

“Your Majesty’s most friendly

“OLIVER, PROTECTOR OF THE COMMONWEALTH  
OF ENGLAND.

“Westminster, 26th May, 1658.”

‘To Sir William Lockhart, our Ambassador at the French Court: These.’

‘Whitehall,’ 26th May, 1658.

SIR,

The continual troubles and vexations of the poor People of Piedmont professing the Reformed Religion,—and that after so many serious instances of yours in the Court of France in their behalf, and after such hearty recommendations of their most deplorable condition to his Majesty in our name, who also has been pleased upon all such occasions to profess very deep resentments of their miseries, and to give us no small hopes of interposing his power and interest with the Duke of Savoy for the accommodating of those affairs, and for the restoring those poor distressed creatures to their ancient privileges and habitations,—are matter of so much grief to us, and lie so near our heart, that, notwithstanding we are abundantly satisfied with those many signal marks you have always hitherto given of your truly Christian zeal and tenderness on their regard, yet the present conjuncture of their affairs, and the misery that is daily added to their affliction begetting in us fresh arguments of pity towards them, not only as men, but as the poor distressed Members of Christ,—do really move us at present to recommend their sad condition to your special care. Desiring you to redouble your instances with the King, in such pathetic and affectionate expressions as may be in some measure suitable to the greatness of their present sufferings and grievances. Which, the truth is, are almost inexpressible. For so restless and implacable is the malice and fury of their Popish Adversaries, that,—as though they esteemed it but a light matter to have formerly shed the innocent blood of so many hundreds of souls, to have burned their houses, to have razed their churches, to have plundered their goods, and to have driven out the Inhabitants beyond the River Pelice, out of those their an-

cient Possessions which they had quietly enjoyed for so many ages and generations together,—they are now resolved to fill their cup of affliction up to the brim, and to heat the furnace yet seven times hotter than before. Among other things :

*First*,—They forcibly prohibit all manner of Public Exercises\* at San Giovanni, which, notwithstanding, the Inhabitants have enjoyed time out of mind : and in case they yield not ready obedience to such most unrighteous orders, they are immediately summoned before their Courts of Justice, and there proceeded against in a most severe and rigorous manner, and some threatened to be wholly destroyed and exterminated.

2. And forasmuch as, in the said Valleys, there are not found among the Natives men fitly qualified and of abilities for Ministerial Functions to supply so much as one half of their Churches, and upon this account they are necessitated to entertain some out of France and Geneva, which are the Duke of Savoy's friends and allies,—their Popish Enemies take hold of this advantage ; and make use of this stratagem, namely, to banish and drive out the shepherds of the flocks, that so the wolves may the better come in and devour the sheep.

3. To this we add, their strict prohibition of all Physicians and Chirurgeons of the Reformed Religion to inhabit in the Valleys. And thus they attempt not only to starve their souls for want of spiritual food and nourishment, but to destroy their bodies likewise for want of those outward conveniences and helps which God hath allowed to all mankind.

4. And as a supplement to the former grievances, those of the Reformed Religion are prohibited all manner of Commerce and Trade with their Popish neighbors ; that so they may not be able to subsist and maintain their families : and if they offend herein in the least, they are immediately apprehended as rebels.

5. Moreover, to give the world a clear testimony what their main design in all these oppressions is, they have issued out Orders whereby to force the poor Protestants To sell their Lands and Houses to their Popish neighbors : whereas the Papists are prohibited, upon pain of excommunication, to sell any immovable to the Protestants.

6. Besides, the Court of Savoy have rebuilt the Fort of La Torre ; contrary to the formal and express promise made by them to the Ambassadors of the Evangelical Cantons. Where they have also placed Commanders, who commit the Lord knows how many excesses and outrages in all the neighboring parts ; without being ever called to question, or compelled to make restitution for the same. If by chance any murder be committed in the Valleys (as is too-often practiced) whereof the authors are not discovered, the poor Protestants are immediately accused as guilty thereof, to render them odious to their neighbors.

\* Means ' Public Worship.'

7. There are sent lately into the said Valleys several Troops of Horse and Companies of Foot; which hath caused the poor People, out of fear of a massacre, with great expense and difficulty to send their wives and little ones, with all that were feeble and sick among them, into the Valley of Perosa, under the King of France his Dominions.

These are, in short, the grievances, and this is the present state and condition of those poor People even at this very day. Whereof you are to use your utmost endeavors to make his Majesty thoroughly sensible; and to persuade him to give speedy and effectual orders 'to' his Ambassador who resides in the Duke's Court, To act vigorously in their behalf. Our Letter,\* which you shall present his Majesty for this end and purpose, contains several reasons in it which we hope will move his heart to the performance of this charitable and merciful work. And we desire you to second and animate the same with your most earnest solicitations; representing unto him how much his own interest and honor is concerned in the making good that Accord of Henry the Fourth, his royal predecessor, with the Ambassadors of those very People, in the year 1592, by the Constable of Lesdiguières; which Accord is registered in the Parliament of Dauphiné; and whereof you have an authentic Copy in your own hands. Whereby the Kings of France oblige themselves and their Successors To maintain and preserve their ancient privileges and concessions.—Besides that the gaining to himself the hearts of that People, by so gracious and remarkable a protection and deliverance, might be of no little use another day, in relation to Pignerol and the other adjacent places under his Dominions.

One of the most effectual remedies, which we conceive the fittest to be applied at present is, That the King of France would be pleased to make an Exchange with the Duke of Savoy for those Valleys; resigning over to him some other part of his Dominions in lieu thereof,—as, in the reign of Henry the Fourth, the Marquisate of Saluces was exchanged with the Duke for La Bresse.† Which certainly could not but be of great advantage to his Majesty, as well for the safety of Pignerol as for the opening of a Passage for his Forces into Italy,—which 'Passage,' if under the dominion, and in the hands of so powerful a Prince, joined with the natural strength of these places by reason of their situation, must needs be rendered impregnable.

By what we have already said, you see our intentions; and therefore we leave all other particulars to your special care and conduct; and rest

'Your friend,'

OLIVER P.†

\* Milton's, given above.

† In 1601 (Hénault, ii., 612)

† Ayscough mss., No. 4107, f. 89.

Lockhart, both General and Ambassador in these months, is, as we hinted, infinitely busy with his share in the Siege of Dunkirk, now just in its agony; and before this Letter can well arrive, has done his famous feat of Fighting, which brings Turenne and him their victory, among the sandhills there.\* Much to the joy of Cardinal and King; who will not readily refuse him in any reasonable point at present. There came no new Massacre upon the poor People of the Valleys; their grievances were again 'settled,' scared away for a season, by negotiation.

\* Thursday, 3 June, 1658 (Thurloe, vii., 155-6).



# CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.

---

## A P P E N D I X





## APPENDIX.

---

### No. I.

#### LETTER TO DOWNHALL.

[Vol. i., p. 52.]

THE stolen Letter of the Ashmole Museum has been found printed, and even reprinted. It is of the last degree of insignificance : a mere Note of Invitation to Downhall to stand ' Godfather unto my Child.' Man-child now ten days old,\* who, as we may see, is christened 'on Thursday next' by the name of RICHARD,—and had strange ups and downs as a Man when it came to that !

*To my approved good Friend, Mr. Henry Downhall, at his Chambers in St. John's College, Cambridge : These.*

Huntingdon, 14th October, 1626.

LOVING SIR,

Make me so much your servant as to be† Godfather unto my Child. I would myself have come over to have made a formal invitation ; but my occasions would not permit me : and therefore hold me in that excused. The Day of your trouble is Thursday next. Let me en treat your company on Wednesday.

By this time it appears, I am more apt to encroach upon you for new favors than to shew my thankfulness for the love I have already found But I know your patience and your goodness cannot be exhausted by

Your friend and servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

Of this Downhall, sometimes written *Downhault*, and even *Downett* and *Downtell* ; who grounds his claim, such as it is, to human remembrance on the above small Note from Oliver,—a helpful hand has, with unsubduable research, discovered various particulars, which might amount almost to an outline of a history

\* Vol. i., p. 67.

† 'by being' *in orig.*

‡ Hearne's *Liber Niger Scaccarii* (London, 1771), i., 261, n.

of Downhall, were such needed. He was of Northamptonshire, come of gentlefolks in that County. Admitted Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, 12th April, 1614;—had known Oliver, and apparently been helpful and instructive to him two years after that. More interesting still, he this same Downhall was Vicar of St. Ives when Oliver came thither in 1635; still Vicar when Oliver left it, though with far other tendencies than Oliver's now; and had, alas, to be 'ejected with his Curate, in 1642,' as an Anti-Puritan Malignant: \*—Oliver's course and his having altogether parted now! Nay, farther, the same Downhall, surviving the Restoration, became 'Archdeacon of Huntingdon' in 1667: fifty-one years ago he had lodged there as Oliver Cromwell's Guest and Gossip; and now he comes as Archdeacon,—with a very strange set of *Annals* written in his old head, poor Downhall! He died 'at Cottingham in Northamptonshire, his native region, in the winter-time of 1669;'—and so, with his Ashmole Letter, ends †

---

## NO. II.

### AT ELY.

[Vol. i., p. 91.]

THERE is at Ely a Charitable Foundation now above four centuries old; which in Oliver's time was named the *Ely Feoffees' Fund*, and is now known as *Parsons' Charity*; the old Records of which, though somewhat mutilated during those years, offer one or two faint but indubitable vestiges of Oliver, not to be neglected on the present occasion.

\* Vol. i., p. 86.

† Cooper's *Annals of Cambridge*, iii., 187; and ms. communicated by Mr. Cooper, resting on the following formidable mass of documentary Authorities:

Cole mss. (which is a Transcript of Baker's *History of St. John's College*), 166, 358. Rymer's *Fœdera*, xix., 261. Le Neve's *Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ*, p. 160. Kennet's *Register and Chronicle*, p. 207, 251. Walker's *Sufferings*, ii., 129, 130. Wood's *Athenæ* (2d edition, passage wanting in both the 1st and 3d), ii., 1179.

This *Charity* of ancient worthy Thomas *Parsons*, it appears, had, shortly before Oliver's arrival in Ely, been somewhat remodelled by a new Royal Charter: To be henceforth more specially devoted to the Poor of Ely; to be governed by Twelve Feoffees; namely, by Three Dignitaries of the Cathedral, and by Nine Townsmen of the better sort, who are permanent, and fill up their own vacancies,\*—of which latter class, Oliver Cromwell, Esquire, most likely elected in his Uncle's stead, was straightway made one. The old Books, as we say, are specially defective in those years; 'have lost 40 or 50 leaves at the end of Book I., and 12 leaves at the beginning of Book II.,'—leaves cut out for the sake of Oliver's autograph, or as probably for other reasons. Detached Papers, however, still indicate that Oliver was one of the Feoffees, and a moderately diligent one, almost from his first residence there. Here, under date some six or seven months after his arrival, is a small Entry in certain loose Papers, labelled '*The Accompts of Mr. John Hand and Mr. William Crauford, Collectors of the Revenewes belonging to the Towne of Ely*' (that is, to Parsons' Charity in Ely); and under this special head, '*The Disbursements of Mr. John Hand, from the — of August, 1636, unto the — of —, 1641* :

'Given to divers Poore People at y <sup>e</sup> Work-house, in the presence of Mr. Archdeacon of Ely,† Mr. Oliver Crom- well, Mr. John Goodricke and others, 10th February, 1636, as appeareth	}	£16 14 0.'
---	---	------------

And under this other head, '*The Disbursements of Mr. Crauford*,' which unluckily are not dated, and run vaguely from 1636 to 1641 :

'Item to Jones, by Mr. Cromwell's consent	. . .	£1 0 0.'
---	-------	----------

Twice or thrice elsewhere the name of Cromwell is mentioned, but not as indicating activity on his part, indicating merely Feof-

\* Report of the Commissioners concerning Charities (London, 1837) : distinct account of it there, § *Cambridgeshire*, p. 218-20.

† One 'Wigmore;' the Dean was 'William Fuller;' the Bishop, 'Matthew Wren,' very famous for his Popish Candles and other fripperies, who lay long in the Tower afterwards. These were the three Clerical Feoffees in Oliver's time.

feeship and passivity;\*—except in the following instance, where there is still extant a small Letter of his. ‘Mr. Hand,’ as we have seen, is one of the ‘Collectors,’ himself likewise a Feoffee or Governor, the Governors (it would appear) taking that office in turn.

‘To Mr. Hand, at Ely: These.’

‘Ely,’ 13th September, 1638

MR. HAND,

I doubt not but I shall be as good as my word for your Money. I desire you to deliver Forty Shillings of the Town Money to this Bearer, to pay for the physic for Benson’s cure. If the Gentlemen will not allow it at the time of account, keep this Note, and I will pay it out of my own purse. So I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Poor ‘Benson’ is an old invalid. Among Mr. Hand’s Disbursements for the year 1636 is this,

‘For phisicke and surgery for old Benson . . . £2 7 4.’

And among Crauford’s, of we know not what year,

‘To Benson at divers times . . . . £0 15 0.’

Let him have forty shillings more, poor old man; and if the Gentlemen won’t allow it, Oliver Cromwell will pay it out of his own purse.

### NO. III.

#### LETTER TO CAMBRIDGE, WITH ‘PROTESTATION’ AND ‘PREAMBLE.’

[Vol. i., p. 117.]

‘A Preamble, with the Protestation made by the whole House of Commons, the 3d of May, 1641, and assented unto by the Lords of the Upper House, the 4th of May.

‘WE, the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the Commons House, in

\* Excerpts of Documents obligingly communicated by the Dean of Ely, —now *penes* Mr. Cooper of Cambridge.

† Memoirs of the Protector, by Oliver Cromwell, a Descendant, &c. (London, 1822), i., 351; where also (p. 350) is found, in a very indistinct state, the above-given Entry from *Hand’s Accoimpts*, misdated ‘1641,’ instead of 10 February, 1636–7. The Letter to Hand ‘has not been among the Feoffees’ Papers for several years;’ and is now (1846) none knows where

Parliament, finding, to the grief of our hearts, That the designs of the Priests and Jesuits, and other Adherents to the See of Rome, have been of late more boldly and frequently put in practice than formerly, to the undermining, and danger of ruin, of the True Reformed Religion in his Majesty's Dominions established: And finding also that there hath been, and having cause to suspect there still are even during the sitting in Parliament, endeavors to subvert the Fundamental Laws of England and Ireland, and to introduce the exercise of an Arbitrary and Tyrannical Government, by most pernicious and wicked counsels, plots, and conspiracies: And that the long intermission, and unhappier breach, of Parliaments hath occasioned many illegal Taxations, whereupon the Subjects have been prosecuted and grieved: And that divers Innovations and Superstitions have been brought into the Church; multitudes driven out of his Majesty's dominions; jealousies raised and fomented between the King and People; a Popish Army levied in Ireland,\* and Two Armies brought into the bowels of this Kingdom, to the hazard of his Majesty's royal Person, the consumption of the revenue of the Crown, and the treasure of this Realm: And lastly, finding great causes of jealousy that endeavors† have been and are used to bring the English Army into misunderstanding of this Parliament, thereby to incline that Army by force to bring to pass those wicked counsels,—

‘Have therefore thought good to join ourselves in a declaration of our united affections and resolutions; and to make this ensuing

#### ‘PROTESTATION.

‘I, A. B., do in the Presence of Almighty God promise, vow, and protest, To maintain and defend as far as lawfully I may, with my life, power, and estate, the True Reformed Protestant Religion, expressed in the Doctrine of the Church of England, against all Popery and Popish Innovations, and according to the duty of my allegiance to his Majesty's royal Person, Honor, and Estate: as also the Power and Privilege of Parliament, the Lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subjects; and every Person that maketh this Protestation in whatsoever he shall do in the lawful pursuance of the same. And to my power, as far as lawfully I may, I will oppose, and by good ways and means endeavor to bring to condign punishment, all such as shall, by force, practice, counsel, plots, conspiracies or otherwise, do anything to the contrary in this present Protestation contained.

\* By Strafford lately, against the Scots and their enterprises.

† This is the important point, nearly shaded out of sight: ‘finding the great causes of jealousy, endeavors have,’ &c., is the tremulous, indistinct, and even ungrammatical phrase in the Original.

‘And further I shall, in all just and honorable ways, endeavor to preserve the union and peace between the Three Kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland: and neither for hope, fear, nor other respect shall relinquish this Promise, Vow, and Protestation.’\*

This is on Monday, 3d May, 1641, while the Apprentices are bellowing in Palace-yard: Cromwell is one of those that take the Protestation this same Monday, present in the House while the redacting of it goes on. Long lists of Members take it,—not John Lowry, who, I conclude, must have been absent. On Wednesday, 5th of May, there is this Order:

‘*Ordered*, That the Protestation made by the Members of this House, with the Preamble, shall be together printed;’ Clerk to attest the Copies; all Members to send them down to the respective Sheriffs, Justices, to the respective Cities, Boroughs, and ‘intimate with what willingness the Members made this Protestation; and that as they justify the taking of it in themselves, so they cannot but approve it in them that shall likewise take it.’

Strict *Order*, at the same time, That all Members ‘now in Town and not sick shall appear here To-morrow at Eight of Clock,’ and take this Protestation: non-appearance ‘to be accounted a contempt of this House,’ and expose one to be expelled, or worse;—in spite of which John Lowry still does not sign, not till Friday morning, after even ‘Philip Warwick’ and ‘Endymion Porter’ have signed; whence I infer he was out of Town or unwell.† This Letter, which seems to be of Cromwell’s writing, still stands on the Corporation Books of Cambridge; read in Common Council there on the 11th of May; at which time, said Letter being read, the Town Authorities did one and all zealously accept the same, and signed the Protestation on the spot. The Letter is not dated; but as Lowry signed on Friday, and the Corporation meeting is on Tuesday the 11th, we may safely guess the Letter to have arrived on Monday, and to have been written on Saturday.

\* Commons Journals, ii., 132 (3 May, 1641).

† Ibid., ii., 133, 5, 6, 7. Rushworth, iv., 241, *et seqq.*

*To the Right Worshipful the Mayor and Aldermen of Cambridge, with the rest of that Body: Present these.*

'London, 8th May, 1641.

GENTLEMEN,

We heartily salute you; and herewith, according to the directions of the House of Commons in this present Parliament assembled, send unto you a Protestation;—the contents whereof will best appear in the thing itself. The Preamble therewith printed doth declare the weighty reasons inducing them, in their own persons, to begin 'making it.'

We shall only let you know that, with alacrity and willingness, the Members of that Body entered therein. It was in them a right honorable and necessary act; not unworthy your imitation. You shall hereby as the Body Represented avow the practice of the Representative. The conformity is in itself praiseworthy; and will be by them approved. The result may, through the Almighty's blessing, become stability and security to the whole Kingdom. Combination carries strength with it. It's dreadful to adversaries; especially when it's in order to the duty we owe to God, to the loyalty we owe to our King and Sovereign, and to the affection due to our Country and Liberties,—the main ends of this Protestation now herewith sent you.

We say no more: but commit you to the protection of Him who is able to save you; desiring your prayers for the good success of our present affairs and endeavors,—which indeed are not ours but the Lord's and yours. Whom we desire to serve in integrity: and, bidding you heartily Farewell, rest,

Your loving friends to be commanded,

OLIVER CROMWELL,  
JOHN LOWEY.\*

#### No. IV.

#### GAINSBOROUGH FIGHT.

[Vol. i., p. 138.]

HERE are other details concerning Gainsborough Fight; in a Letter two days earlier in date; evidently not written by Cromwell, though signed by him and two chief Lincolnshire Commit-

\* Cambridge Corporation Day-Book: in Cooper's *Annals of Cambridge*, iii., 311. Printed also, with errors, in O. Cromwell's *Memoirs of the Protector*, i., 406.



tee-men, as he passes through their City on his way to Huntingdon. Sir Edward Ayscough, or 'Ayscoghe' as he here signs himself,—probably a kinsman of Sir George the Sailor's, possibly the father of this 'Captain Ayscoghe,' the 'Captain-Lieutenant' who slew Cavendish,—he and John Broxholm, Esq., both of the Lincolnshire Committee,\* are clearly the writers of the present Letters.

*For the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Commons House of Parliament: These.*

"Lincoln, 29th July, 1643 (Six o'clock at night).

"NOBLE SIR,

"We, having solicited a conjunction of Forces towards the raising of the Siege of Gainsborough, did appoint a general rendezvous at North Scarle to be upon Thursday, the 27th of July. To the which place, Sir John Meldrum with about Three hundred Horse and Dragoons, and Colonel Cromwell with about Six or Seven Troops of Horse and about One hundred Dragoons, came. With these they marched towards Gainsborough; and meeting with a good party of the Enemy about a mile from the Town, beat them back,—but not with any commendations to our Dragoons. We advanced still towards the Enemy, all along under the Cony-Warren, which is upon a high Hill above Gainsborough. The Lincoln Troops had the van, two Northampton, and three small Troops of Nottingham the battle, and Colonel Cromwell the rear; the Enemy in the mean time with his body keeping the top of the Hill.

"Some of the Lincoln Troops began to advance up the Hill; which were opposed by a force of the Enemy: but our men repelled them, until all our whole body was got up the Hill. The Enemy kept his ground; which he chose for his best advantage, with a Body of Horse of about Three regiments of Horse, and a Reserve behind them consisting of General Cavendish his Regiment, which was a very full regiment. We presently put our Horse in order; which we could hardly do by reason of the cony-holes and the difficult ascent up the Hill; the Enemy being within musket-shot of us, and advancing towards us before we could get ourselves into any good order. But with those Troops we could get up, we charged the greater Body of the Enemy; came up to the sword's point; and disputed it so a little with them, that our men pressing heavily upon them, they could not bear it, but all their Body ran away, some on the one side of their Reserve, others on the other. Divers of our Troops pursuing had the chase about six miles.

\* Husbands, ii., 171.

“General Cavendish with his Regiment standing firm all the while, and facing some of our Troops that did not follow the chase,—Colonel Cromwell, with his Major Whalley and one or two Troops more, were following the chase, and were in the rear of that Regiment. When they saw the body stand unbroken, ‘they’ endeavored, with much ado, to get into a body those three or four Troops which were divided. Which when they had done,—perceiving the Enemy to charge two or three of the Lincoln scattered Troops, and to make them retire by reason of their being many more than they in number; and the rest being elsewhere engaged and following the chase,—Colonel Cromwell with his three Troops followed them in the rear; brake this Regiment; and forced their General, with divers of their men, into a quagmire in the bottom of the Hill. Where one of Colonel Cromwell his men cut General Cavendish on the head; by reason whereof he fell off his horse; and the Colonel’s\* Captain-Lieutenant thrust him into the side, whereof within two hours he died;—the rest chasing his Regiment quite out of the field, having execution of them, so that the field was left wholly unto us, not a man appearing. Upon this, divers of our men went into the Town; carrying in to my Lord Willoughby some of the Ammunition we brought for him;—believing that our work was at an end; saving to take care how to bring further provisions into the Town, to enable it to stand a siege in case my Lord Newcastle should draw up with his Army to attempt it.

“While we were considering of these things, word was brought us That there was a small remainder of the Enemy’s force not yet meddled with, about a mile beyond Gainsborough, with some Foot, and two pieces of Ordnance. We having no Foot, desired to have some out of the Town; which my Lord Willoughby granted, and sent us about Six hundred Foot: with these we advanced towards the Enemy. When we came thither to the top of the Hill, we beat divers Troops of the Enemy’s Horse back: but at the bottom we saw a Regiment of Foot; after that another (my Lord Newcastle’s own Regiment, consisting of nineteen colors) appearing also, and many Horse;—which indeed was his Army. Seeing these there so unexpectedly, we advised what to do.

“Colonel Cromwell was sent to command the Foot to retire, and to draw off the Horse. By the time he came to them, the Enemy was marching up the hill. The Foot did retire disorderly into the Town, which was not much above a quarter of a mile from them; upon whom the Enemy’s Horse did some small execution. The Horse also did retire in some disorder, about half a mile,—until they came to the end of a field where a passage was; where, by the endeavor of Colonel Cromwell, ‘of’ Major Whalley and Captain Ayscoghe, a body was drawn up. With

\* Original has ‘his;’ and for ‘General Cavendish’ in the foregoing line, ‘him.’

these we faced the Enemy ; stayed their pursuit ; and opposed them with about four Troops of Colonel Cromwell's and four Lincoln Troops ; the Enemy's body in the meantime increasing very much from the Army. But such was the goodness of God, giving courage and valor to our men and officers, that while Major Whalley and Captain Ayscoghe, sometimes the one with four Troops faced the Enemy, sometimes the other, to the exceeding glory of God be it spoken, and the great honor of those two Gentlemen, they with this handful forced the Enemy so, and dared them to their teeth in at the least eight or nine several removes,—the Enemy following at their heels ; and they, though their horses were exceedingly tired, retreating in order, near carbine-shot of the Enemy, who thus followed them, firing upon them ; Colonel Cromwell gathering up the main body and facing them behind those two lesser bodies,—that, in despite of the Enemy, we brought off our Horse in this order, without the loss of two men.

“Thus have you a true Relation of this notable service : wherein God is to have all the glory. And care must be taken speedily to relieve this noble Lord from his and the State's Enemies, by a speedy force sent unto us,—and that without any delay ; or else he will be lost, and that important Town, and all those parts ; and way made for this Army instantly to advance into the South. Thus resting upon your care in speeding present Succors hither, we humbly take our leaves, and remain,

“Your humble servants,

“EDW. AYSCOGHE,

“JO. BROXOLME,

“OLIVER CROMWELL.”\*

## No. V.

### LETTER TO FAIRFAX, ON THE ACTION AT ISLIP BRIDGE AND BLETCHINGTON.

[Vol. i., p. 161.]

WRITTEN the night before that in the Text, on the same subject.

‘*For the Right Honorable Sir Thomas Fairfax, General of the Army : These.*’

‘Bletchington,’ 24th April 1645.

RIGHT HONORABLE,

I met at my rendezvous at Watlington, on Wednesday last ; where I stayed somewhat long for the coming up of the Body

\* Tanner MSS., lxii., 194 ; and, with little or no variation, Baker MSS., xxviii., 434.

of Horse, which your Honor was pleased to give me the command of. After the coming whereof, I marched with all expedition to Wheatley Bridge; having sent before to Major-General Browne, for what intelligence he could afford me of the state of affairs in Oxford (I being not so well acquainted in those parts),—of the condition, and number, of the Enemy in Oxford. Who himself informed me by letters, That Prince Maurice his forces were not in Oxford, as I supposed; and that,—as he was informed by four very honest and faithful Gentlemen that came out of Oxford to him a little before the receipt of my letter,—there were Twelve pieces of Ordnance with their carriages and waggons, ready for their march; and in another place Five more pieces with their carriages, ready to advance with their Convoy.

After I received this satisfaction from Major-General Browne, I advanced this morning,—being Thursday, the twenty-fourth of April,—near to Oxford. There I lay before the Enemy; who perceiving it at Oxford, and being in readiness to advance, sent out a party of Horse against me: part of the Queen's Regiment, part of the Earl of Northampton's Regiment, and part of the Lord Wilmot's Regiment;—who made an infall upon me.

Whereupon, I drew forth your Honor's Regiment,—lately mine own,—against the Enemy (who had drawn themselves into several Squadrons, to be ready for action);—and commanded your Honor's own Troop therein, to charge a Squadron of the Enemy. Who performed it so gallantly that, after a short firing, they entered the whole Squadron, and put them to a confusion. And the rest of my Horse presently entering after them, they made a total rout of the Enemy; and had the chase of them three or four miles;—and killed Two hundred; took as many prisoners, and about Four hundred horses. 'Also' the Queen's colors, richly embroidered, with the Crown in the midst, and eighteen flower-de-luces wrought all about in gold, with a golden cross on the top.—Many escaped to Oxford, and divers were drowned.

Part of them likewise betook themselves to a strong House in Bletchington; where Colonel Windebank kept a Garrison, with near Two hundred horse and foot therein. Which, after surrounding it, I summoned:—but they seemed very dilatory in their answer. At last, they sent out Articles to me of Surrender,—which I have sent your Honor enclosed:—and after a large treaty thereupon, the Surrender was agreed upon between us. They left behind them between Two and Three hundred muskets, Seventy horses; besides other arms and ammunition.—I humbly rest,

Your honor's humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* Given in Rushworth, vi., 24. † King's Pamphlets, small 4to, No. 203, § 7

## No. VI.

## BATTLE OF NASEBY. TWO LETTERS CONCERNING ELY.

[Vol. i., p. 165.]

THE following very rough Notes of a studious Tourist will perhaps be acceptable to some readers. Notes dashed down evidently in the most rough-and-ready manner, but with a vigilant eye both on the Old Books and on the actual Ground of Naseby; taken, as appears, in the year 1842.

*'Battle of Naseby, 14th June, 1645: From Sprigge (London, 1647); Rushworth, vi. (London, 1701); Old Pamphlets; and the Ground.*

*'Fairfax's Stages towards Naseby (Sprigge, p. 30, et seqq.).* Wednesday, 11th June, a rainy day: Marched "from Stony Stratford to Wootton,"—three miles south of Northampton. Bad quarters there: "but the Mayor came," &c. Thursday, 12th June: From Wootton to (not Guilsborough four miles west of Northampton," as Sprigge writes, but evidently) Kissingbury and the Farmsteads round. The King "lies encamped on Burrough Hill" (five miles off); has been "hunting," this day; "his horses all at grass." The night again wet; Fairfax, riding about, all night, on the spy, is stopped by one of his own sentries, &c.: "at Flower" (near Weedon), sees the King's Forces all astir on the Burrough Hill, about four in the morning; "firing their huts;" rapidly making off,—Northward, as it proved. At six, a Council of War. Cromwell, greatly to our joy, has just come in from the Associated Counties,—"received with shouts." Major Harrison, with horse, is sent towards Daventry to explore; Ireton, also with horse, to the Northward, after the King's main-body. "We," Fairfax's main body, now set forward "towards Harborough," flanking the King; and that night,—Friday, 13th June,—arrive (not at "Gilling," as Sprigge has it,—is there any such place?—but) at Guilsborough.\* Which is the last of the *Stages*.

"The King's van is now, this Friday night, at Harborough; his rear is quartered in Naseby,—where Ireton beats them up (probably about half past nine), "taking prisoners," &c.: and so the fugitives rouse the King out of his bed "at Lubenham;"†—who thereupon drives off to Prince Rupert at Harborough; arrives about midnight; calls a Council ("resting

\* Rushworth vi., 46 (Despatch from Parliament Commissioners).

† See Iter Carolinum, too.

himself in a chair in a low room," till Rupert and the rest got on their clothes); and there, after debate,\* determines on turning back to beat the Roundheads for this affront. Ireton lies at Naseby, therefore; "we" (Fairfax and the Army), at Guilsborough, all this night.

'*Battle of Naseby.* Saturday, 14th June, 1645. Starting at three in the morning, we arrive about five at Naseby. King "reported to be at Harborough," uncertain whitherward next: behold, "great bodies of his troops are *seen* coming over the Hill from Harborough towards us;"—he has turned, and is for fighting us, then! We put our Army in order,— "large fallow field northwest of Naseby," "the brow of the Hill running east and west" "for something like a mile:" King has sunk out of sight in a hollow; but comes up again nearer us,† and now evidently drawn out for battle. We fall back, "about a hundred paces, from the brow of the Hill," to hide ourselves and our plans: he rushes on the faster, thinking we run ("much of his ordnance left behind"): the Battle joins on the very brow of the Hill. Their word, *Queen Mary*; ours, *God is our Strength*.

'About Three hundred Musketeers of ours on the Left Wing, are advanced a little, as a forlorn, down the *steep* of the Hill; they retire firing, as Rupert charges up: Ireton and Skippon command in this quarter; "Lantford Hedges," a kind of thicket which runs right down the Hill, is lined with Colonel Okey and his dragoons,—all on *foot* at present, and firing lustily on Rupert as he gallops past.—Cromwell is on the extreme Right (easternmost part of the Hill): he, especially Whalley under him, dashes down *before* the Enemy's charge upwards (which is led by Langdale) can take effect;—scatters said charge to the winds; not without hard cutting: a good deal impeded "by furze-bushes" and "a cony-warren." These Royalist Horse, Langdale's, fled all behind their own Foot, "a quarter of a mile from the Battle-ground,"—*i. e.*, near to the present Farm of Dust Hill, or between that and Clipstow;—and never fought again. So that Cromwell had only to keep *them* in check; and aid his own Main battle to the left of him: which he diligently did.

'Our Right Wing, then, has beaten Langdale. But Rupert, on the other side of the field, beats back our Left:—over "Rutput Hill," "Fenny Hill" (*Fanny* Hill, as the Old Books call it); towards Naseby Hamlet; on to our Baggage-train (which stands on the *northwest side* of the Hamlet, *eastward* of said "Rutput" and "Fenny," but northward of "Leane Leaf Hill,"—very sober "Hills," I perceive!). Our extreme Left was "hindered by pits and ditches" in charging: at any rate, it lost the charge; fled: and Rupert now took to attacking the Baggage and its Guard,—in vain, and with very wasteful delay. For our Main battle too

\* See Clarendon, &c

† 'At Sibbertoft' (Rushworth).

was in a critical state; and might have been overset, at this moment. Our Main battle,—our Horse on the Left of it giving way; and the King's Foot “coming up into sight,” over the brow of the Hill, “with one terrible volley,” and then with swords and musket-butts,—“mostly all fled.” Mostly all: except the Officers, who “snatched the colors,” “fell into the Reserves with them,” &c. And then, said Reserves now rushing on, and the others rallying to them; and Cromwell being victorious and diligent on the Right, and Rupert idle among the Baggage on the Left,—the whole business was ere long *retrieved*; and the King's Foot and other Force were all driven pell-mell down the Hill: towards Dust Hill (or *eastward* of the present Farm-house, I think). There the King still stood,—joined at last by Rupert, and struggling to rally his Horse for another brush; but the Foot would not halt, the Foot were all off: and the Horse too, seeing Cromwell with all *our* Horse and victorious Foot now again ready for a second charge, would not stand it; but broke; and dissipated, towards Harborough, Leicester, and Infinite Space.

‘The Fight began at ten o'clock;\* lasted three hours:† there were some Five thousand Prisoners; how many Slain I cannot tell.’

A couple of very small Letters, which have now (May, March, 1846) accidentally turned up, too late for insertion in the Text, may find their corner here.

1. The First, which is fully dated (just eight days before the Battle of Naseby), has lost its specific Address, may without much doubt be referred to Ely and the ‘Fortifications’ going on there.‡

‘To Captain Underwood, at Ely: These.’

Huntingdon, 6th June, 1645.

CAPTAIN UNDERWOOD,

I desire the guards may be very well strengthened and looked unto. Let a new breastwork be made about the gravel,§ and a new work half-musket-shot behind the old work; all storm-ground¶ stuff. Tell Colonel Fothergill to take care of keeping strong guards.—Not having more, I rest,

Yours,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‖

\* Clarendon.

† Cromwell's Letter.

‡ Commons Journals, iv., 161, 5; Cromwelliana, p. 16.

§ Word uncertain to the Copyist.

‖ Original now (May, 1846) in the Baptist College, Bristol.

2. 'Sir Dudley North,' Baronet, of Catlidge Hall near Newmarket, is Member for Cambridgeshire; sits too, there is small doubt, in the Ely Committee at London;—is wanted now for a small County business.

The '30th of March,' as we know, is but the fifth day of the then New Year: Oliver,—I find after some staggering, for his date will not suit with other things,—takes the cipher of the Old Year, as one is apt to do, and for 1647 still writes '1646.' As this Entry, abridged from the Commons Journals,\* will irrefragably prove, to readers of his Letter: 'John Hobart, Esq., dismissed from being Sheriff of Cambridge and Huntingdon Shires, and *Tristram Dyamond, Esq., appointed in his place*, 1st January, 1646,' which, for us, and for Cromwell too on the 30th of March following, means 1647.

*For the Honorable Sir Dudley North: These.*

'London,' 30th March, 1646 [*error for 1647*].

SIR,

It being desired to have the Commission of the Peace renewed in the Isle of Ely,—with some addition, as you may perceive; none left out; only Mr. Diamond, now High Sheriff of the County, and my Brother Desborow, added, there being great want of one in that part of the Isle where I live,—I desire you to join with me in a Certificate; and rest,

Your humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

## NO. VII.

### ARMY TROUBLES IN 1647.

[Vol. i., p. 211.]

THE Vote 'that Field-Marshal Skippon, Lieutenant-General Cromwell, Commissary-General Ireton, and Colonel Fleetwood,' all Members of this House, 'shall proceed to their charges in the Army,' and endeavor to quiet all distempers there,—was passed on the 30th of April: day of the Three Troopers and Army Letter,

\* v., 36 (1 Jan., 1646-7).

† Original in the possession of the Rev. W. S. Spring Casborne, of Pak-  
enham, Suffolk; a descendant of the North Family.



and directly on the back of that occurrence.\* They went accordingly, perhaps on the morrow, and proceeded to business; but as nothing specific came of them, or could come, till the 8th of May, that day is taken as the date of the Deputation. Here are Three Letters from them; one prior and one posterior; which, copied from the Tanner MSS., have got into print, but cannot throw much light on the affair.

1. *'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Commons House: These.'*

"Saffron Walden,' 3d May, 1647.

"SIR,

"We have sent out orders to summon the Officers of the several Regiments to appear before us on Thursday next; to the end we may understand from them the true condition and temper of the Soldiers in relation to the Discontents lately represented; and the better to prepare and enable them,—by speaking with them, and acquainting them with your Votes,†—to allay any Discontents that may be among the Soldiers.

"We judged this way most likely to be effectual to your service; though it ask some time, by reason of the distance of the quarters. When we shall have anything worthy of your knowledge, we shall represent it;—and in the meantime study to approve ourselves

"Your most humble servants,

"PH. SKIPPON,

"OLIVER CROMWELL,

"H. IRETON."‡

2. *'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Commons House: These.'*

"Saffron Walden, 8th May, 1647.

"SIR,

"According to our orders sent out to the Officers of the Army, many of them appeared at the time appointed. The greatest failing was of Horse Officers; who, by reason of the great distance of their quarters

\* Commons Journals, v., 158: see antea, vol. i., p. 209.

† Votes passed that same 30th of April: That the Soldiers shall have Indemnity; that they shall have Pay,—and in short, Justice (*Commons Journals*, v., 158). 'Thursday next' is the 6th of May.

‡ 'A Letter from Major-General' (elsewhere called Field Marshal) 'Skippon, Lieutenant-General Cromwell, and Commissary-General Ireton, was this day read' (*Commons Journals*, 4 May, 1647).

from this place (being, some of them, above three-score miles off), could not be here : yet there were, accidentally, some of every Regiment except Colonel Whalley's present at our Meeting ;—which was upon Friday morning,\* about ten of the clock.

“After some discourse offered unto them, About the occasion of the Meeting, together with the deep sense the Parliament had of some Discontents which were in the Army, and of our great trouble also that it should be so,—we told them, We were sent down to communicate the House of Commons' Vote unto them ; whereby their, ‘the Parliament's,’ care of giving the Army satisfaction might appear : desiring them ‘furthermore’ To use their utmost diligence with all good conscience and effect, by improving their interests in the Soldiers, *for* their satisfaction ; and that they would communicate to their Soldiers the Votes, together with such informations as they received then from us, to the end their distemper might be allayed. After this had been said, and a Copy of the Votes delivered to the Chief Officer of every respective Regiment, to be communicated as aforesaid,—we desired them To give us a speedy account of the success of their endeavors ; and if in anything they needed our advice or assistance for furthering the work, we should be ready here at Saffron Walden to give it them, upon notice from them.

“We cannot give you a full and punctual account of the particular distempers, with the grounds of them : because the Officers were desirous to be spared therein by us, until they might make a further inquiry among the Soldiers, and see what effect your Votes and their endeavors might have with them. We desire as speedy an account of this business as might well be ; but, upon the desire of the Officers, thought it necessary for the service to give them until Saturday next† to bring us an account of their business, by reason the Regiments were so far distant.

“As anything falls out worthy of your knowledge, we shall represent it ; and in the meantime study to approve ourselves

“Your most humble servants,

“PH. SKIPPON,

“OLIVER CROMWELL,

“H. IRETON,

“CHARLES FLEETWOOD.”‡

\* Friday, yesterday ; not ‘Thursday,’ as at first proposed.

† This day week ; the 15th.

‡ ‘Letter from the General Officers,’ ‘from *Walden*, of 8 *Mail*, 1647, was this day read’ (*Commons Journals*, Tuesday, 11 May, 1647). The Letter seems to be of Cromwell's writing.

3. *'To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the Commons House: These.'*

"Walden, 17th May, 1647.

"SIR,

"We having made some progress in the Business you commanded us upon, we are bold to give you this account. Which, although it come not with that expedition you may expect and your other affairs require, yet we hope you will be pleased to excuse us with the weight of the Affair: in comparison whereof nothing that ever yet we undertook was, at least to our apprehension, equal; and wherein, whatever the issue prove, our greatest comfort is, That our consciences bear us witness we have, according to our abilities, endeavored faithfully to serve you and the Kingdom.

"The Officers repaired to us at Saffron Walden upon Saturday last, according to appointment, to give us a return of\* what they had in charge from us at our last Meeting; which was, To read your Votes to the Soldiers under their respective commands for their satisfaction, and to improve their interest faithfully and honestly with them to that end; and 'then' to give us a perfect account of the effect of their endeavors, and a true representation of the temper of the Army.

"At this Meeting, we received what they had to offer to us. Which they delivered to us in writing, by the hands of some chosen by the rest of the Officers then present, and in the name of the rest of the Officers and of the Soldiers under their commands. Which was not done till Sunday in the evening. At which time, and likewise before upon Saturday, we acquainted them all with a Letter from the Earl of Manchester, expressing That an Act of Indemnity, large and full, had passed the House of Commons;† and that two weeks' pay more was voted to those that were disbanded, as also to them that undertook the service of Ireland. And, thinking fit to dismiss the Officers to their several commands,—all but some that were to stay here about further business,—we gave them in charge To communicate these last Votes to their Soldiers, and to improve their utmost diligence and interest for their best satisfaction.

"We must acknowledge, we found the Army under a deep sense of some sufferings, and the common Soldiers much unsettled; whereof, that which we have to represent to you will give you a more perfect view. Which, because it consists of many papers, and needs some more method in the representation of them to you than can be done by letter, and forasmuch as we were sent down by you to our several charges "to do our best to keep the Soldiers in order,"—we are not well satisfied, any of us,

\* Means 'response' to.      † Commons Journals, v., 174 (14 May, 1647).

to leave the place nor duty you sent us to, until we have the signification of your pleasure to us. To which we shall most readily conform; and rest,

“Your most humble servants,

“PH. SKIPPON,

“OLIVER CROMWELL,

“H. IRETON,

“CHARLES FLEETWOOD.”\*

### NO. VIII.

#### LETTER TO THE DERBY-HOUSE COMMITTEE IN 1648.

[Vol. i., p. 290.—*Supplement*, antea, p. 455.]

RECAPITULATING what is already known in the Text; finds its place here.

*To the Right Honorable the Committee of Lords and Commons at Derby House.*

Norham, 20th September, 1648.

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

I did, from Alnwick, write to Sir William Amynt† an account of our condition; and recommended to him divers particular considerations about your affairs here in the North,—with a desire of particular things to be done by your Lordships’ appointment, in order to the carrying on of your affairs. I send you here a Copy of the Summons that was sent to Berwick‡ when I was come as far as Alnwick; as also of a Letter written to the Committee of Estates of Scotland:§—I mean those who we did presume were convened as Estates, and were the men that managed the business of the War. But there being, as I learned since, none such; the Earl of Roxburgh and some others having deserted, so that they are not able to make a Committee;—I believe the said Letter is suppressed,|| and retained in the hands of Colonel Bright and Mr. William Rowe. For whom we ‘had’ obtained a safe Convoy to go to the Estates of that Kingdom with our said Letter; the Governor of Berwick’s Answer to our Summons leading us thereunto. By advantage whereof we did instruct them to give all assurances to the Marquis of Argyle and the Honest Party in Scotland,—who we heard were gathered together in a considerable Body about Edinburgh, to make opposition to

\* Tanner mss. (in Cary, i., 205–16).

† Original Member for Grantham; one of the Committee, and from of old busy in those International concerns.

‡ Letter XX. (antea, p. 454).

§ Letter XLV. (vol. i., p. 297).

|| Not ‘suppressed,’ though it cannot be received except unofficially (vol. i., p. 300).

the Earl of Lanark, Monro, and their Armies,—of our good affection to them. Wherewith they went the 16th of this month.

Upon the 17th of this month Sir Andrew Ker and Major Strahan, with divers other Scots Gentlemen, brought me this enclosed Letter, signed by the Lord Chancellor of Scotland, as your Lordships will see. They also shewed me their Instructions, and a Paper containing the matter of their Treaty with Lanark and Monro; as also an Expostulation upon Lanark's breach with them,—in falling upon Argyle and his men, contrary to agreement, wherein the Marquis hardly escaped, they having hold of him, but Seven hundred of his men were killed and taken.\* These Papers I also send here enclosed to your Lordships.

So soon as those Gentlemen came to me, I called a Council of War; the result whereof was the Letter directed to the Lord Chancellor;† a Copy whereof your Lordships have here enclosed. Which I delivered to Sir Andrew Ker and Major Strahan; with which they returned upon the 18th, being the next day.

Upon private discourse with these Gentlemen, I do find the condition of their Affairs and their Army to be thus: The Earl of Lanark, the Earl of Crawford and Lindsay, Monro, and their Army, hearing of our advance, and understanding the condition and endeavors of their Adversaries,—marched with all speed to get possession of Stirling Bridge; that so they might have three parts in four of Scotland at their backs, to raise men, and to enable themselves to carry on their designs. They were about 5000 Foot, and 2500 Horse. The Earl of Leven, who is chosen General the Marquis of Argyle, with the Honest Lords and Gentlemen, David Lesley being the Lieutenant-General: 'these,' having about 7000 Foot, but very weak in Horse,—lie about six miles this side the Enemy. I hear that their Infantry consists of men who come to them out of conscience; and are generally of the Godly People of that Nation, which they express by their piety and devotion in their quarters; and indeed I hear they are a very godly and honest body of men.

I think it is not unknown to your Lordships what directions I have received from you for the prosecution of our late Victory. Whereof I shall be bold to remember a clause of your Letter; which was, "That I should prosecute the remaining Party in the North, and not leave any of them, wheresoever they go, to be a beginning of a new Army; nor cease to pursue the Victory till I finish and fully complete it with the rendition of those Towns of Berwick and Carlisle, which most unjustly, and against all obligations, and the Treaties then in force, they surprised and garri-soned against us."

In order whereunto, I marched to the Borders of Scotland: where I found the whole Country so harassed and impoverished by Monro and

\* Bishop Guthry's Memirs.

† Letter XLVI. (vol. i., p. 299)

the Forces with him, that the Country was no way able to bear us on the English side ; but we must necessarily have ruined both your Army and the Subjects of this Kingdom, who would not have had bread for a day if we had continued among them. In prosecution of your Orders, and in answer to the necessities of your friends in Scotland, and their desires ; and considering the necessity of marching into Scotland, to prevent the Governor of Berwick from putting of provisions into his Garrisons on the Scots side, whereof he is at present in some want, as we are informed,— I marched a good part of the Army over Tweed yesterday about noon, the residue being to come after as conveniently as we may.

Thus have I given your Lordships an account of our present condition and engagement. And having done so, I must discharge my duty in remembering to your Lordships the Desires formerly expressed in my Letters to Sir William Ardyn and Sir John Evelyn, for supplies ; and in particular for that of Shipping to be upon these Coasts, who may furnish us with Ammunition or other necessities wheresoever God shall lead us ; there being extreme difficulty to supply us by land, without great and strong convoys, which will weary out and destroy our Horse, and cannot well come to us if the Tweed be up, without going very far about.

Having laid these things before you, I rest,

Your Lordships' most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

P.S. While we are here, I wish there be no neglect of the Business in Cumberland and Westmoreland. I have sent Orders both into Lancashire and to the Horse before Pontefract. I should be glad your Lordships would second them, and those other considerations expressed in my Desires to Sir William Ardyn thereabouts.\*

---

## No. IX.

### LETTER ON BEHALF OF YOUNG CHOLMELY.

[Vol. i., p. 313.]

WRITTEN on the march from Carlisle to Pontefract.

*To the Honorable William Lenthall, Esquire, Speaker of the House of Commons : These.*

Boroughbridge, 28th October, 1648.

SIR,

I do not often trouble you in particular business ; but I shall be bold now, upon the desire of a worthy Gentleman, Lieutenant-Colonel Cholmely, to entreat your favor in his behalf.

\* Old Pamphlet : in Parliamentary History, xvii., 481.

The case stands thus. His son Major Cholmely, who was bold in the Fight against the Scots at Berwick,\* was Custom-master at Carlisle ;—the Gentleman 'had' merited well from you. Since his death, his aged Father, having lost this his Eldest Son in your service, did resolve to use his endeavors to procure the place for a Younger Son, who had likewise been in your service. And resolving to obtain my Letter to some friends about it, did acquaint an *under-tenant* of the place for his Son with this his purpose To come to me to the Borders of Scotland to obtain the said Letter ;—which the said servant 'or under-tenant' did say, Was very well.

And when the said Lieutenant-Colonel was come for my Letter, this tenant immediately hastens away to London ; where he, in a very circumventing and deceitful way, prefers a Petition to the House of Commons ; gets a reference to the Committee of the Navy ; who approve of the said man, 'the under-tenant,' by the mediation of some gentlemen :—but I hear there is a stop of it in the House.

My humble suit to you is, That if Colonel Morgan do wait upon you about this business,—I having given you this true information of the state of it, as I have received it,—you would be pleased to further his desire concerning Lieutenant-Colonel Cholmely's youngest Son, that *he* may have the place conferred upon him ; and that you would acquaint some of my friends herewith.

By which you will very much oblige

Your most humble servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

## NO. X.

### CORRESPONDENCE WITH THE MAYOR OF WATERFORD.

[Vol. i., p. 406.]

PRESERVED in the Anonymous Fragment of a Narrative, more than once referred to, are these Letters and Replies :

LETTER I. *To the Mayor and Aldermen of the City of Waterford.*

Kilbarry, near Waterford, 21st November, 1649.

GENTLEMEN,

I have received information that you hitherto refuse a Garrison of the Enemy to be imposed upon you ; as also that some Fac-

\* Against Monro, I suppose, when he ended his maraudings in that quarter (vol. i., p. 295).

† Tanner mss. (in Cary, ii., 46).

tions in the Town are very active still, notwithstanding your refusal, to persuade you to the contrary.

Being come into these parts, not to destroy people and places, but to save them, that men may live comfortably and happily by their trade, if the fault be not in themselves; and purposing also, by God's assistance, to reduce this City of Waterford to its due obedience, as He shall dispose the matter, by Force, or by Agreement with you upon Terms wherein your own good and happiness, and that of your wives, children, and families may consist, notwithstanding 'what' some busy-headed persons may pretend to the contrary; 'and' knowing that if after all this you shall receive a Garrison, it will probably put you out of a capacity to make any such Accord for yourselves, which was the cause of the ruin of the Town and people of Wexford,—I thought fit to lay these things before you; leaving you to use your own judgment therein.

And if any shall have so much power upon you as to persuade you that these are the counsels of an enemy, I doubt it will hardly prove, in the end, that *they* gave you better. You did once live flourishingly under the power 'of,' and in commerce with, England. It shall be your own faults if you do not so again. I send these intimations timeously to you: weigh them well; it so behooves you. I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

REPLY 1. "*For General Cromwell, General of the Parliament Forces in Ireland.*

"Waterford, 23d November, 1649.

"MY LORD,

"Your Letter of the 21st, directed to me and my Aldermen, we have, by your Trumpet, received. Your Lordship's advice, as we do all others, we weigh with the condition of our safety; and so far shall make use thereof as it contributes to the same.

"For your intentions of reducing this City, by force or agreement:—as we will by all possible means endeavor our natural defence against the first, so happily will we not be averse to the latter,—if we shall find it not dishonorable nor destructive. And for that purpose 'we' do desire your Lordship will grant us a Cessation, for fifteen days, from all acts of hostility; and send us Safe-conducts, with blanks for the men we shall employ, to treat with your Lordship; and in the interim bring your Army no nearer this City than now it is.

"We have learned not to slight advice, if we find it wholesome, even from an enemy's hands; nor to deny him such thanks as it merits. And if your Lordship should deny us the time we look for, we doubt not,—with the men we have already in Town, though we should receive no more,—to make good this Place, till the Power of the Kingdom relieves us.



"To signify which to your Lordship, the Council and Commons have laid their commands on me,

"My Lord,

"Your very loving friend,

"JOHN LYVETT, Mayor of Waterford."

LETTER 2. *For the Mayor, Aldermen, or other Governor or Governors, of the City of Waterford.*

From my Camp before Waterford, 24th November, 1649.

GENTLEMEN,

I expected to have heard from you before this, by my Trumpet: but he not coming to me, I thought fit to send, That I might have an account given me, how you have disposed of him. And to save farther trouble, I have thought fit—

Hereby to summon you To surrender the City and Fort into my hands, to the use of the State of England.

I expect to receive your answer to these things, and rest,

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

REPLY 2. *"For the Lieutenant-General Cromwell.*

*"Waterford, 24th November, 1649.*

"MY LORD,

"Your Letter of the 24th I have received even now; in which you desire an account of your Lordship's Trumpeter, sent with a former Letter to us; and summon us to deliver your Lordship this City and Fort.

"Your Lordship's former Letter by your Trumpeter we have answered yesterday morning; and do doubt, by the Trumpeter's not coming to you, night have suffered some mischance by going the County of Kilkenny. We therefore now send you a Copy of that Answer:\* to which desire your Lordship's resolution. Before we receive which, we cannot make further answer to the rest of your Letter.

"We therefore desire you will despatch the Safe-conduct desired, and forbear acts of hostility during the Treaty;—and you shall be very soon attended by Commissioners from,

"My Lord,

"Your Lordship's servant,

"JOHN LYVETT, Mayor of Waterford."

\* Reply 1; already given

LETTER 3. *To the Mayor and Aldermen of the City of Waterford.*

'Before Waterford,' 24th November, 1649.

SIRS,

My first Trumpet not being yet come to me, makes me suspect that, as you say, he has suffered some mischance going by the way of the County of Kilkenny.

If I had received your Letter sooner, I should nevertheless, by the help of God, have marched up to this place, as I have done. And as for your desire of a Treaty, I am more willing to that way, for the prevention of blood and ruin, than to the other of Force ;—although if necessitated thereunto, you and we are under the overruling Power of God, who will dispose of you and us as He pleaseth.

As to a Cessation for Fifteen Days, I shall not agree thereunto ; because a far shorter time may bring this Business to a conclusion as well. But for Four or Five Days I am content that there be a Cessation of all acts of hostility between your City and this Army :—provided you give me assurance That, in the meantime, no soldiers not now in your City be received into it, during the Cessation, nor for Twenty-four hours after.

I expect to have your present answer hereto : because, if this be agreed to, I shall forbear any nearer approach during the said Cessation.

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

I have by this Bearer returned a Safe-convoy, as you desire, for what Commissioners you think fit to send out to me.\*

## No. XI.

### EXCHANGE OF PRISONERS: RENEGADO WOGAN.

[Vol. i., p. 411.]

THE Narrative Fragment above cited has these words, in reference to the affair at Passage and its consequences : ' At that time, there being one Captain Caufield a prisoner at Clonmel, a stranger to the General, but being a prisoner on an English account, the Army concerned themselves for him, and at a Council of War certain votes were passed,' which we shall soon read :

" *For Lieutenant-General Farrell, Governor of Clonmel.*

'Cork, 4th January, 1649.'

"At the Council of War held at the City of Cork, the Fourth day of

\* Fragment of Narrative: in Ayscough MSS., No. 4769, p. 95, *et seqq*

January, Anno Domini 1649, whereat the Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, the Lord President of Munster,\* Sir Hardress Waller, knight, and divers other chief Officers of the Army were present, it was resolved as followeth :

“1. That a Letter be sent, by Lieutenant-General Farrell's Trumpet, to let him know, That for every private Foot-soldier of our party, prisoner with him, whom he shall release, he shall have so many of his private soldiers, prisoners with us, released for them ; and for every Trooper of ours which he shall release, he shall have Two private Foot-soldiers released for him.

“2. That the Lord-Lieutenant is ready to release Officers of like quality for such Officers of ours as are in their power ; and that he will deliver a Major of Foot for a Captain of Horse, and two Captains of Foot for a Captain of Horse ; and so proportionably.

“3. Or that he will deliver Major-General Butler, the Earl of Ormond's Brother, for those Officers of ours now in their custody.”

SIR,

Having lately received an advertisement, that some of the principal Officers of the Irish Army did send menacing Orders to the Governor of Clonmel, to be communicated to the Lord Broghil, That if we did put to death Colonel Wogan, they were ready to put Captain Caufield to death,—I thought fit to offer to you the equal Exchanges before mentioned ; leaving you to your election. Which when you perform, there shall be just and honest performance on my part. And withal to let you know, That if any shall think to put such conditions on me that I may not execute a Person so obnoxious as Wogan,—who did not only betray his trust in England, but counterfeited the General's hand, thereby to carry his men (whom he had seduced) into a Foreign Nation,† to invade England, under whom he had taken pay, and from whose service he was not discharged ; and with the said Nation did invade England ; and hath since, contrary to the said trust, taken up arms here :—That ‘then, I say,’ as I am willing to the Exchanges aforesaid ; so, ‘if’ that equality be denied me, I would that all concerned should understand, That I am resolved to deal with Colonel Wogan as I shall see cause, and be satisfied in my conscience and judgment to do. And if anything thereupon shall be done to Captain Caufield as is menaced, I think fit to let you know, That I shall, as God shall enable me, put all those that are with me at mercy for life, into the same condition.

Your servant,

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

\* Ireton.

† Scotland : to join Hamilton and his *Engagement*.

‡ Fragment of Narrative : in Ayscough mss., No. 4769, *ubi supra*.

## No. XII.

To OXFORD AND CAMBRIDGE.

[Vol. ii., p. 16.]

From those nine months of 1652 remain certain other small vestiges or waymarks; relating, as it happens, to the Universities, of one of which Oliver was Chancellor. The first is a Letter to Oxford.

'Greenwood' we have already seen: 'Goodwin' is the famed Independent, at this time President of Magdalen College. Of 'Zachary Maine,' and his wishes and destinies, the reader can find an adequate account in Wood, with express allusion to the Letter which follows.\* Zachary's desire was complied with. A godly young man, from Exeter City; not undeserving such a favor; who lived seven years in profitable communion with Goodwin, Owen, and the others; then, at the Restoration, fell into troubles, into waverings; but ended peaceably as Master of the Free-school of Exeter, the Mayor and Chamber favoring him there.

1. *To the Reverend my very loving Friend Dr. Greenwood, Vice-chancellor of the University of Oxford.*

'Cockpit,' 12th April, 1652.

SIR,

Mr. Thomas Goodwin hath recommended unto me one Zachary Maine, Demy of Magdalen College, to have the favor To be dispensed with for the want of two or three terms in the taking of his Degree of Bachelor. I am assured that he is eminently godly, of able parts, and willing to perform all his exercises. Upon which account (if it will not draw along with it too great an inconvenience) I desire that he may have the particular favor to be admitted to the said Degree. Which I intend not to draw into a precedent, but shall be very sparing therein.

I remain, Sir,

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

\* Athenæ, iv., 411.

† From the Archives of Oxford University; communicated by the Rev Dr. Bliss.

The Second an official Protection to Cambridge :

2. *To all Officers, Soldiers under my command, and others whom it may concern.*

THESE are to charge and require you, upon sight hereof: Not to quarter any Officers or Soldiers in any of the Colleges, Halls, or other Houses belonging to the University of Cambridge; Nor to offer any injury or violence to any of the Students or Members of any of the Colleges or Houses of the said University. As you shall answer the contrary at your peril.

Given under my hand and seal, the First of July, 1652.

OLIVER CROMWELL \*

The Third and Fourth are for Oxford again.

3. *By his Excellency the Lord General Cromwell, Chancellor of the University of Oxford.*

WHEREAS divers applications have been made unto me, from several of the Members of the University of Oxford, concerning differences which have arisen between the Members of the said University about divers matters which fall under my cognisance as Chancellor: And forasmuch as differences and complaints of the like nature may 'again' happen and arise between them: And considering that it would be very troublesome and chargeable to the parties concerned to attend me at this distance about the same: And the present burden of public affairs not permitting me so fully to hear and understand the same as to be able to give my judgment and determination therein:

I do hereby desire and authorise Mr. John Owen, now Vice-chancellor of the University, and the Heads of the several Colleges and Halls there or any Five or more of them (whereof the said Vice-chancellor to be one). To hear and examine all such differences and complaints which have 'arisen,' or shall arise, between any of the said Members; giving them as full power and authority as in me lies to order and determine therein as, in their judgments, they shall think meet and agreeable to justice and equity. And this Power and Commission to continue during the space of Six Months now next ensuing.

Given under my hand and seal, the 16th day of October, 1652.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

4. *By his Excellency the Lord General Cromwell, Chancellor of the University of Oxford.*

WHEREAS within the University of Oxford there frequently happen several things to be disposed, granted, and confirmed, wherewith the Vice-

\* Cooper's Annals of Cambridge, iii., 452.

chancellor, Doctors-Regent, Masters, and others of the said University, in their Delegacies and Convocations, cannot by their statutes dispense, grant, or confirm, without the assent of their Chancellor: And forasmuch as the present weighty affairs of the Commonwealth do call for and engage me to reside, and give my personal attendance, in or near London; so that the Scholars of the said University and others are put to much charge and trouble by coming to London to obtain my assent in the cases before mentioned: Therefore, taking the premises into consideration, For the more ease and benefit of the said Scholars and University, and that I may with less avocation and diversion attend the councils and service of the Commonwealth:

I do by these presents ordain, authorise, appoint, and delegate Mr. John Owen, Dean of Christ Church and Vice-chancellor of the said University Dr. Wilkins, Warden of Wadham College; Dr. Jonathan Goddard, Warden of Merton College; Mr. Thomas Goodwin, President of Magdalen College; and Mr. Peter French, Prebend of Christ Church, or any Three or more of them, To take into consideration all and every matter of dispensation, grant, or confirmation whatsoever which requires my assent as Chancellor to the said University, and thereupon to dispense, grant, confirm, or otherwise dispose thereof, as to them shall seem meet; and to certify the same to the Convocation. And all and every such dispensation, grant, confirmation, or disposition made by the aforesaid Mr. John Owen, Dr. Wilkins, Dr. Jonathan Goddard, Mr. Thomas Goodwin, and Mr. Peter French, or any Three or more of them, shall be to all intents and purposes firm and valid, in as full, large, and ample manner as if to every such particular act they had my assent in writing under my hand and seal, or I had been personally present and had given my voice and suffrage thereunto.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal, the 16th day of October, 1652.

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

---

### No. XIII.

#### SCRAPS FROM 1653.

[Vol. ii., p. 31.—*Supplement*, antea, p. 523.]

1. In a volume of the *Annual Register* are given certain Letters or Petitions concerning the printing of Dr. Walton's Polyglott Bible. At the end of the Petition is the following:

\* From the Archives of Oxford University; communicated by the Rev Dr. Bliss.

'Whitehall,' 16th May, 1653.

I THINK fit that this work of printing the Bible in the Original and other Languages go on without any let or interruption.

OLIVER CROMWELL.\*

2. Here, lest any one should be again sent hunting through 'Pegge's Manuscripts,' take the following highly insignificant Official Note. Date, four weeks after the Dismissal of the Rump; when the 'Committee of the Army,' and Oliver 'Commander of all the Forces raised and to be raised,' are naturally desirous to know the state of the Army-Accounts. Where Mitchell commands at present, I do not know; nor whether he might be the 'Captain Mitchell' who was known some years ago in a disagreeable transaction with the Lord-General's Secretary,† and whose Accounts may be rather specially a matter of interest.

*For Lieutenant-Colonel Mitchell.*

Whitehall, 18th May, 1653.

SIR,

You are desired with all expedition to prepare and send to the Committee for the Army an Account of all Moneys by you received upon their Warrants between the Fifteenth of January, 1647, and the Twentieth of October, 1651, for the use of the Forces within the time aforesaid under your command, or for the use of any other Regiment, Troop, or Company, by or for whom you were entrusted or appointed to receive any money.

And in case you cannot perfect your Account, and send the same, as you are hereby directed, before the Seventh of June next, you are desired by that time at the farthest to send in writing under your hand to the said Committee what Moneys by you received as aforesaid do remain in your hands.

Hereof you are not to fail.

OLIVER CROMWELL.‡

3. Among the State Papers in Paris there have lately been found Three small Notes to Mazarin, not of much, if indeed of almost any

\* Annual Register, xxxvi., 373-4.

† Newspapers (in Cromwelliana, p. 61), 22-29 June, 1649.

‡ Pegge's mss. (in the College of Arms, London), vii., 425.

moment, but worth preserving since they are here. Two of them belong to this Section. The first, which exists only in French, apparently as translated for Mazarin's reading, would not be wholly without significance if we had it in the original. It is dated just three days after that Summons to the Puritan Notables;\*—and the Lord General, we see, struggles to look upon himself as a man that has done with Political Affairs.

*'A Son Eminence, Monsieur le Cardinal Mazarin.*

*De Westminster, ce 9-19 Juin, 1653.*

MONSIEUR,

*J'ai été surpris de voir que votre Eminence ait voulu penser à une personne si peu considérable que moi, vivant en quelque façon retiré du reste du monde. Cet honneur a fait avec juste raison une si forte impression sur moi, que je me sens obligé de servir votre Eminence en toutes occasions; et comme je m'estimerai heureux de les pouvoir rencontrer, j'espère que M. de Bourdeaux en facilitera les moyens à celui qui est,*

*Monsieur,*

*De votre Eminence le très-humble serviteur,*

OLIVER CROMWELL.†

Of which take this Version :

"Westminster, 9th June, 1653.

"SIR,

"I have been surprised that your Eminency was pleased to remember a person so inconsiderable as myself, living as it were withdrawn from the rest of the world. This honor has justly such a resentment with me that I feel myself bound, by all opportunities, to be serviceable to your Eminency; and as I shall be happy to meet with such, so I hope M. de Bourdeaux," the Ambassador, "will help to procure them to,

"Sir,

"Your Eminency's most humble servant,

"OLIVER CROMWELL."

4. The negotiations with Whitlocke for going on that perilous Embassy to Sweden have left for us the following off hand specimen of an Official Note from Oliver. Oliver and Pickering had already been earnestly dealing with the learned man that he would

\* Antea, vol. ii., p. 31.

† From the Archives du Ministère des Affaires Etrangères, at Paris. Communicated by Thomas Wright, Esq., F.S.A., &c.



go : at their subsequent interview, Oliver observed to Whitlocke, "Sir Gilbert" Pickering "would needs write a very fine Letter ; and when he had done, did not like it himself. I then took pen and ink, and straightway wrote that to you :"

*'To Sir Bulstrode Whitlocke, Lord Commissioner of the Great Sea.'*

Whitehall, 2d September, 1653.

MY LORD,

The Council of State having thoughts of putting your Lordship to the trouble of being Extraordinary Ambassador to the Queen of Swedeland, did think fit not to impose that service upon you without first knowing your own freedom thereunto. Wherefore they were pleased to command our service to make this address to your Lordship ; and hereby we can assure you of a very large confidence in your honor and abilities for this employment. To which we begging your answer, do rest,

My Lord,

Your humble servants,

OLIVER CROMWELL,

GILBERT PICKERING.\*

5. The Little Parliament has now dismissed itself, and Oliver has henceforth a new Signature.

*'To his Eminency Cardinal Mazarin.'*

'Whitehall,' 26th January, 1653.

MY LORD,

Monsieur de Baast† hath delivered me the Letter which your Eminency hath been pleased to write to me ; and also communicated by word of mouth your particular affections and good disposition towards me, and the affairs of these Nations as now constituted. Which I esteem a very great honor ; and hold myself obliged, upon the return of this Gentleman to you, to send my thanks to your Eminency for so singular a favor ; my just resentment whereof I shall upon all occasions really demonstrate ; and be ready to express the great value I have of your person and merits, as your affairs and interest shall require from,

Your very affectionate friend to serve you,

OLIVER P.‡

\* From Whitlocke's Account of his Embassy (quoted in Forster, iv., 319)

† The new Envoy, or Agent ; of whom in the next No.

‡ From the Archives du Ministère des Affaires Etrangères, at Paris Communicated by Thomas Wright, Esq., F.S.A., &c

6. 'The Corporation of Lynn Regis,' it appears, considered that the navigation of their Port would be injured by the works now going on for Draining the great Bedford Level of the Fens. They addressed the Protector on the subject; and this is his Letter in answer thereto. Nothing came of it farther.

*To the Mayor and Aldermen of Lynn Regis.*

Whitehall, 30th January, 1653.

GENTLEMEN,

I received yours; and cannot but let you know the good resentments I have of your respects;—assuring you that I shall be always ready to manifest a tender love and care of you and your welfare, and in particular of that concernment of yours relating to navigation.

Commending you to the grace of God, I remain,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.\*

#### NO. XIV.

*From 1654–1655: VOWEL'S PLOT, PENRUDDOCK'S PLOT; NEW ENGLAND*

[Vol. ii., p. 81.]

1. Another wholly insignificant Official Note to Mazarin, in regard to Vowel's Plot, and the dismissal of M. De Baas for his complicity in it. De Baas, whom some call Le Baas, or rightly Le Bas, was a kind of subsidiary Agent despatched by Mazarin early in the Spring of 1653–4 'to congratulate the new Protector,'—that is, to assist Bourdeaux, who soon after got the regular title of Ambassador, in ascertaining how a Treaty could be made with the new Protector, or, on the whole, what was to be done with England and him. Hitherto, during the Dutch War and other vicissitudes, there had been a mixed undefinable relation between the two Countries, rather hostile than neutral. The 'Treaty and firm Amity,' as we know, had its difficulties, its delays; in the course of which it occurred to M. Le Bas that per-

\* History of the Ancient and Present State of the Navigation of the Port of King's Lynn and of Cambridge (London, fol., 1766), p. 55.

haps the Restoration of Charles Stuart, by Vowel and Company might be a shorter cut to the result. Examination of Witnesses, in consequence : examination of Le Bas himself by the Protector and Council, in consequence ; mild hint to Le Bas that he must immediately go home again.\*

‘ *Eminentissimo Cardinali Mazarino.*’

EMINENTISSIME CARDINALIS,

*In Litteris Nostris ad Regem datis, causas et rationes recensuimus quare Dominum De Baas ex hac Republicâ excedere iussimus, et Majestatem Suam certam fecimus, Nos, non obstante hac dicti de Baas machinatione, cujus culpam ei solummodo imputamus, in eâdem adhuc sententiâ perstare, firmam arcantque Pacem et Amicitiam cum Galliâ colendi et paciscendi. Atque hac occasione gratum nobis est priora illa propensæ nostræ erga vos et res vestras voluntatis indicia et testimonia renovare ; quam etiam, datâ subinde occasione, palam facere et luculenter demonstrare parati erimus. Interea Eminentiam vestram Divine benignitatis præsidio commendamus.*

*Dab. ex Alba Aula, vicesimo nono Junii an. 1654.*

OLIVERIUS P.†

Of which, if it be worth translating, this is the English :

“ MOST EMINENT CARDINAL,

“ In our Letter to the King we have set forth the grounds and occasions moving us to order M. De Baas to depart from this Commonwealth ; and have assured his Majesty, that notwithstanding this deceit of the said De Baas, the blame of which is imputed to him alone, we persist as heretofore in the same purpose of endeavoring and obtaining a firm and intimate Peace and Amity with France. And it gives us pleasure, on this occasion, to renew those former testimonies of our good inclination towards you and your interests ; which also, as opportunity offers, we shall in future be ready to manifest and clearly demonstrate. In the meanwhile, we commend your Eminency to the keeping of the Almighty.

“ OLIVER P.

“ Whitehall, 29 June, 1654.”

2 and 3. The following Two Letters, one of which is clearly

\* Depositions concerning him (April, May, 1654), Thurloe, ii., 309, 351-3 : notice of his first arrival (February, 1653-4), ib., 113. See, also, ib., 379, 437.

† From the Archives du Ministère des Affaires Étrangères, at Paris. Communicated by Thomas Wright, Esq., F.S.A., &c.

of Thurloe's composition, have an evident reference to Penruddock's affair; they find their place here.

Sergeant Wilde, now more properly Lord Chief Baron Wilde, is a Worcester man; sat in the Long Parliament for that City, very prominent all along in Law difficulties and officialities,—in particular, directly on the heel of the Second Civil War, Autumn 1648, he rode circuit, and did justice on offenders, without asking his Majesty's opinion on the subject; which was thought a great feat on his part.\* Shortly after which he was made Chief Baron, and so continues,—holding even now the Spring Assizes at Worcester, I think. Thurloe, as we said, appears to have shaped this Letter into words; only the signature and meaning can be taken as Oliver's. Unluckily too, either Mrs. Warner the Editress must have misread the date '25th' for 24th, or else Thurloe himself in his haste have miswritten, forgetting that it was New-Year's Day overnight, that it is not now 1654, but 1655. We will take the former hypothesis; and correct Mrs. Warner's '25th,' which in this case makes a whole year of difference.

*For Sir John Wilde, Sergeant-at-Law, and the rest of the Justices of Peace for the County of Worcester, or any of them, to be communicated to the rest; or, in his absence, to Nicholas Lechmere, Esq., Worcester.*

Whitehall, 24th March, 1654.

GENTLEMEN

We doubt not but you have heard before this time of the hand of God going along with us, in defeating the late rebellious Insurrection. And we hope that, through His blessing upon our labors, an effectual course will be taken for the total disappointment of the whole Design. Yet knowing the resolution of the common Enemy to involve this Nation in new calamities, we conceive ourselves, and all others entrusted with preserving the peace of the Nation, obliged to endeavor in their places to prevent and defeat the Enemy's intentions: and therefore, as a measure especially conducing to that end,

We do earnestly recommend to you To take order that diligent Watches (such as the Law hath appointed) be daily kept, for taking a strict account of all strangers in the Country. Which will not only be a means to suppress all loose and idle persons; but may probably cause some of

\* Thanked by the Parliament (*Commons Journals*, vi, 49, 10 October 1648).

those who come from abroad to kindle fires here, to be apprehended and seized upon,—especially if care be taken to secure all them that cannot give a good account of their business ;—and may also break all dangerous meetings and assemblings together. Herein we do require, and shall expect, your effectual endeavors ; knowing that, if what by Law ought to be done were done with diligence in this respect, the contrivance of such dangerous Designs as these would be frustrated in their bud, or kept from growing to a maturity. I rest,

Your affectionate friend,

OLIVER P.\*

3. This second Letter, to the Gloucester Authorities, on the same subject, we judge by the style of it to be mostly or altogether the Protector's own.

*For Major Wade, Major Creed, and the Mayor and Aldermen of the City of Gloucester.*

Whitehall, 24th March, 1654.

GENTLEMEN,

We doubt not but you have heard before this time of the good hand of God going along with us in defeating the late rebellious Insurrection ; so that, as we have certain intelligence from all parts, the Risings are everywhere suppressed and dissolved, and some hundreds of prisoners in custody, and daily more are discovered and secured. And we hope that through the blessing of God upon our labors, an effectual course will be taken for the total disappointment of the whole Design.

The readiness of the Honest People to appear hath been a great encouragement to us, and of no less discouragement to the Enemy ; who, had he prevailed, would, without doubt, have made us the most miserable and harassed Nation in the world. And therefore we hold ourselves obliged to return you our hearty thanks for your zeal and forwardness in so readily appearing and contributing your assistance ; wherein, although your Country and your own particular as to outward and inward happiness were concerned, yet we are fully persuaded that a more general Principle respecting the glory of God, and the good of all these Nations, hath been the motive to incite you : and therefore your account† goes upon the higher and more noble account.†

You have desired that we would consider of ways how to find money to carry on this work. If the Business had not been allayed, we *must* have found out a way and means to allay that want. But otherwise indeed we make it, as we hope we ever shall, our design to ease this Na-

\* Rebecca Warner's Epistolary Curiosities : First Series (Bath, 1818), p. 51-3.

† Sic.

tion, and not to burden it; and are tender,—as we conceive yourselves have been,—of putting the good people thereof to any unnecessary charge. And therefore, as you shall have fitting opportunity, you may recommend our thankfulness to your honest willing Countrymen; as we hereby do to yourselves, for this their forwardness; and let them know That when any danger shall approach, as we shall be watchful to observe the Enemy's stirrings, we will give you timely notice thereof: and we trust those good hearts will be ready, 'on' being called out by you, to appear upon all such occasions. In the meantime they may continue at their homes, blessing God for His mercy, and enjoying the fruit and comfort of this happy deliverance, and the other benefits of Peace.

And I do hereby let you know that Letters are directed to the Justices of Peace of several Counties,\* That Watches be kept, such as the Law hath appointed for taking a strict account of all strangers, especially near the Coast. Which will not only be a means to suppress all loose and idle persons, but may probably cause some of those that come from abroad in 'order' to kindle fires here, to be apprehended and seized,—especially if care be taken to secure all them that cannot give a good account; and may also break all dangerous meetings and assemblings together. And indeed, if what by Law ought to be done were done with diligence in this respect, the contrivance of such dangerous Designs as these would be frustrated in the birth, or kept from growing to maturity.

Having said this,—with remembrance of my hearty love to you, I rest,  
Your very affectionate friend,

OLIVER P.†

By the same City Records it appears, that on the eve of the Battle of Worcester, in 1651, 'Eighteen Gloucester Bakers had sent to Tewkesbury for the Lord General Cromwell's Army, Thirteen hundred and odd Dozens of Bread at a Shilling the dozen, amounting to £66 5s.; and that the Mayor and others, on the 1st September, 1651, sent Forty barrels of strong Beer to the Lord General, "praying your favorable acceptance thereof, as an argument of the good affection of this Corporation, who doth congratulate your seasonable coming into these parts, for the relief thereof against the violence of the common Enemy, and wish prosperous success to you and your Army." ‡

Furthermore, that on the 11th of October, 1651, directly after

\* Foregoing Letter, To Wilde, for one.

† Bibliotheca Gloucestrensis (Gloucester, 1825;—see Antea, vol. i., p. 143) p. 412:—from the City Records of Gloucester.

‡ Ib., p. 406.

the said Battle, Gloucester did itself the honor of appointing the Lord General Oliver Cromwell, 'in consideration of the singular favor and benevolence which his Excellency hath manifested to us and to this City,' High Steward of the same, 'with an annual rent of 100 shillings, issuing out of our 'Manors;''—for at least one payment of which there exists the Lord General's receipt, in this form :

23 Novemb 1652.

Recd of the Maior and Burg <sup>s</sup> of Glouc <sup>r</sup> by the hands of Mr.	} £ s. d.
Dorney, Townclerke of the said City, the day and year	
aboves <sup>d</sup> the some of ffive pounds as being a fee due to me	
as Lord High Steward of the said City, I say Recd . . .	
O. CROMWELL.*	

4 and 5. Two poor American scraps, which our New-England friends ought to make more lucent for us ; worth their paper and ink in this place.

*To Our trusty and well-beloved the President, Assistants, and Inhabitants of Rhode Island, together with the rest of the Providence Plantations, in the Narragansett Bay in New-England.*

'Whitehall.' 29th March, 1655.

GENTLEMEN,

Your Agent here hath presented unto us some particulars concerning your Government, which you judge necessary to be settled by us here. But by reason of the other great and weighty affairs of this Commonwealth, we have been necessitated to defer the consideration of them to a further opportunity.

In the meanwhile we were willing to let you know, That you are to proceed in your Government according to the tenor of your Charter formerly granted on that behalf ; taking care of the peace and safety of these Plantations, that neither through any intestine commotions, or foreign invasions, there do arise any detriment or dishonor to this Commonwealth or yourselves, as far as you by your care and diligence can prevent. And as for the things which are before us, they shall, as soon as the other occasions will permit, receive a just and fitting determination.

And so we bid you farewell ; and rest,

Your very loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

\* Bibliotheca Gloucestrensis (Gloucester, 1825;—see Antea, vol. i., p. 143), p. 412 :—from the City Records of Gloucester.

† Original in the Rhode-Island Archives: Printed in Hutchinson's *Collection*, and elsewhere.

Towards the end of the Dutch War, during that undefinable relation with France, 'hostile rather than neutral,' which did not end in Treaty till October, 1655,\* Oliver's Major Sedgwick, whom we have since known in Jamaica, had laid hold of certain 'French Forts,' and indeed of a whole French region, the region now called *Nova Scotia*, then called *Acadie*; of which Forts and of the region they command, it is Oliver's purpose, for the behoof of his New-Englanders, to retain possession;† as the following small Document will testify :

*To Captain John Leverett, Commander of the Forts lately taken from the French in America.*

WE have received an account from Major Sedgwick of his taking several Forts from the French in America, and that he hath left you to command and secure them for Us and this Commonwealth: And although We make no doubt of your fidelity and diligence in performance of your trust, yet We have thought it necessary to let you know of how great consequence it is, that you use your utmost care and circumspection, as well to defend and keep the Forts abovesaid, as also to improve the regaining of them into Our hands to the advantage of Us and this State, by such ways and means as you shall judge conducive thereunto. And as We shall understand from you the state and condition of those places, We shall from time to time give such directions as shall be necessary.

Given at Whitehall, this 3d of April, 1655.

OLIVER P.‡

To which there are now, from this side of the Water, the following small excerpts to be added :

*Grant of Privy-Seal*: '6th June, 1655, To Major Robert Sedgwick, £1793 7s. 8d., in full of his Account for service done against the French.' And

\* Thurloe, iv., 75.

† In Bancroft's *History of the United States* (Boston, 1837), i., 445, is some faint and not very exact notice of the affair.

‡ Original in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society: Printed in their *Third Series*, vii., 121. In vol. ii. of the same Work (Boston, 1820), p. 323-364, is an elaborate Notice of certain fragmentary ms. *Records of the Long Parliament* still extant at New York,—which Notice ought to be cancelled in subsequent editions! The amazingly curious 'Records' at New York turn out to be nothing but some odd volumes of the *Commons Journals* of that period; the entire Set of which, often enough copied in *manuscript*, was *printed* here about fifty years ago, and is very common indeed, in the Butter-shops and elsewhere!



*Ditto*, '28th July, 1656, To Captain John Leverett, £4482 3s. 11½d., in full satisfaction of all sums of money due to him upon Account of his receipts and disbursements about the Forts taken from the French in America, and of his Salary for 760 days, at 15s. *per diem*.\*

Oliver kept his Forts and his *Acadie*, through all French Treaties, for behoof of his New-Englanders: not till after the Restoration did the country become French again, and continue such for a century or so.

---

6. Is a small domestic matter:

*For Colonel Alban Cox, in Herefordshire.*

Whitehall, 24th April, 1655.

SIR,

Having occasion to speak with you upon some Affairs relating to the Public, I would have you, as soon as this comes to your hands, to repair up hither; and upon your coming, you shall be acquainted with the particular reasons of my sending for you.

I rest, your loving friend,

OLIVER P.†

---

No. XV.

*From 1657. LAST ROYALIST PLOT.*

[Vol. ii., p. 260.]

1. *To our trusty and well-beloved the Vice-chancellor and Convocation of our University of Oxford.*

OLIVER P.

Trusty and well-beloved,—We greet you well. Among the many parts of that Government which is entrusted to us, we do look upon the Universities as meriting very much of our care and thoughts: And finding that the place of Chancellor of our University of Oxford is at present in Ourself; and withal judging that the continuance thereof in our hands may not be so consistent with the present constitution of affairs,—

We have therefore thought fit to resign the said Office, as we hereby do; and to leave you at freedom to elect some such other person thereunto, as you shall conceive meet for the execution thereof.

\* Fourth Report of Deputy Keeper of the Public Records (London, 1843), Appendix ii., p. 192; Fifth Report (London, 1844), Appendix ii., p. 260.

† Gentleman's Magazine (London, 1788), lviii., 379.

Our will and pleasure therefore is, That you do proceed to the election of a Chancellor with your first conveniency. Not doubting but you will, in your choice, have a just regard to the advancement and encouragement of Piety and Learning, and to the continuing and further settling of good Order and Government among you ; which you may easily find yourselves obliged to have principally in your consideration and design, whether you respect the University itself, or the good of the Commonwealth upon which it hath so great an influence. And although our relation to you may by this means in some sort be changed, yet you may be confident we shall still retain a real affection to you, and be ready upon all occasions to seek and promote your good.

Given at Whitehall, this 3d day of July, 1657.\*

---

2. *To Our trusty and well-beloved the Bailiffs and Free Burgesses of our Town of Oswestry: These*

OLIVER P.

TRUSTY and well-beloved,—We, being informed that the Free School of our Town of Oswestry is now void of a Head Schoolmaster settled there, by reason of the delinquency and ejection of Edward Paine, late Schoolmaster thereof,

Have thought fit to recommend unto you Mr. John Evans, the son of Matthew Evans, late of Penegos in the County of Montgomery, as a fit person, both for piety and learning, to be Head Schoolmaster of the said School ; and That, so far as in yourselves 'is,' the said Mr. Evans may be forthwith settled and invested there accordingly.

Which Act of yours we shall be ready to confirm, if it be adjudged requisite and proper for us. And not doubting of the performance of this our pleasure, we commit you to God.

Given at Whitehall, this 13th day of July, 1657.†

---

3 *To our trusty and well-beloved the Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of our City of Gloucester: These.*

OLIVER P.

TRUSTY and well-beloved,—We greet you well. I do hear on all hands that the Cavalier party are designing to put us into blood. We are, I hope, taking the best care we can, by the blessing of God, to obviate this

\* Archives of Oxford University. Communicated by the Rev. Dr. Bliss.

† *Endowed Grammar Schools*, by N. Carlisle (London, 1818), ii., 369, Art. *Salop*.

danger; but our intelligence on all hands being, that they have a design upon your City, we could not but warn you thereof, and give you authority, as we do hereby,

To put yourselves into the best posture you can for your own defence, by raising your Militia by virtue of your Commissioners formerly sent to you, and putting them in a readiness for the purpose aforesaid. Letting you also know that, for your better encouragement herein, you shall have a Troop of horse sent you to quarter in or near your Town.

We desire you to let us hear from you from time to time what occurs to you touching the Malignant party: and so we bid you farewell.

Given at Whitehall, this 2d of December, 1657.\*

A Paper of the same date, of precisely the same purport, directed to the Authorities at Bristol, has come to us; another out of many then sent: but of course only one, if even one, requires to be inserted here.

---

4. Letter written directly on dissolving the Parliament; probably one of many, to the like effect, despatched that day:

*For Colonel Cox, Captain of the Militia Troop in our County of Hertford: These. For our special service.*

*To be left with the Postmaster of St. Alban's: to be speedily sent.*

Whitehall, 4th February, 1657.

SIR,

By our last Letters to you, we acquainted you what danger the Commonwealth was then in from the old Cavalier Party, who were designing new insurrections within us, while their Head and Master was contriving to invade us from abroad;—and thereupon desired your care and vigilancy for preserving the peace, and apprehending all dangerous persons.

Our intelligence of that kind still continues. And we are more assured of their resolutions to put in execution their designs aforesaid within a very short time; 'they' being much encouraged from some late actings of some turbulent and unquiet spirits, as well in this Town as elsewhere, who, to frustrate and render vain and fruitless all those good hopes of Settlement which we had conceived from the proceedings of Parliament before their Adjournment in June last, framed a treasonable Petition to the House of Commons, by the name of the "Parliament of the Commonwealth of England;" designing thereby not only the overthrow of the late

\* City Records of Gloucester (in *Bibliotheca Gloucestrensis*, p. 419)

*Petition and Advice* of the Parliament, but of all that hath been done these seven years ; hoping thereby to bring all things into confusion ;—and were in a very tumultuous manner procuring subscriptions thereunto, giving out that they were encouraged to it by some Members of the House of Commons.

And the truth is, the Debates that have been in that House since their last meeting have had a tendency to the stirring up and cherishing such humors ;—having done nothing in fourteen days but debate Whether they should own the Government of these Nations, as it is contained in the *Petition and Advice*, which the Parliament at their former sitting had invited us to accept of, and had sworn us unto ; they themselves also having taken an Oath upon it before they went into the House. And we, judging these things to have in them very dangerous consequences to the Peace of this Nation, and to the loosening all the bonds of Government ; and being hopeless of obtaining supplies of Money, for answering the exigencies of the Nation, from such men as are not satisfied with the Foundation we stand upon, we thought it of absolute necessity to dissolve this present Parliament,—which I have done this day,—And to give you notice thereof : that you, with your Troop, may be most vigilant for the suppressing of any disturbance which may arise from any party whatsoever. And if you can hear of any persons who have been active to promote the aforesaid treasonable Petition, that you apprehend them, and give an account thereof to us forthwith. And we do further let you know, That we are sensible of your want of pay for yourself and troop ; and do assure you that effectual care shall be taken therein, and that without delay. And so I rest,

Your loving friend,

OLIVER P.\*

---

5. *For the Commanders of the Militia of the City of Gloucester : These.*

Whitehall, 11th March, 1657.

GENTLEMEN,

We are informed that the Enemy from Flanders intend to invade us very suddenly, and to that purpose have Twenty-two Ships of War ready in the Harbor of Ostend, and are preparing others also which they have bought in Holland, and some men are ready to be put on board them. And at the same time an Insurrection is intended in this Nation. And the time for the executing these designs is intended by them to be very sudden.

We have therefore thought fit to give you notice hereof ; and to signify to you our pleasure, That you put yourselves into the best posture

\* Gentleman's Magazine (London, 1788), lviii., 313.

you can for the securing the City of Gloucester, and put the arms into such hands as are true and faithful to us and this Commonwealth. We desire you to be very careful, and to let us hear from you of the receipt of this, and what you shall do in pursuance of this Letter.

I rest,

Your very assured friend,

OLIVER P.\*

\* City Records of Gloucester (in Bibliotheca Gloucestrensis, p. 421).

# INDEX



## INDEX.

---

- АВВот**, Colonel, in Ireland, 405.  
**Aberdeen**, Provost, at Dunbar fight, 466. *See* Jaffray.  
**Alabaster**, Dr., preaches Popery, 62.  
**Allen**, Trooper, examined, 215; Adjutant-General, his account of Prayer-Meeting at Windsor, 252-256; disturbances by, ii., 134-136.  
**Allertoun House**, Cromwell at, 534, 535.  
**Alured**, Thomas, M.P., letter by, 58.  
 — Col. Matthew, captures Scots Committee, 557; Anabaptist, cashiered, ii., 79-81; Cromwell's letter to, 80.  
 — Col. John, King's Judge, ii., 80.  
**Alyth**, Scots Committee extinguished at, 557.  
**Amps**, Mr. Thomas, plotting at his house, ii., 71.  
**Anabaptists** favored by Cromwell, 169.  
**Antichrist**, designated by Cromwell, ii., 91; Magistracy considered Anti-christian, 93.  
**Apprentices**, riots of, 117, 120, 225, 252.  
**Arcklow**, skirmish at, 402.  
**Ardes**, Lord of, assists Ormond, 384.  
**Argyle**, Marquis, dines with Cromwell, 311; Cromwell's letter to, 296; his party in 1650, 493.  
**Armstrong**, Sir Thomas, notice of, 402.  
**Army**, King's and Parliament's, 121, 2; of Parliament in 1643, 135; New Model, 170; motions of, in 1645, 182; too near London, 209; against Parliament, 210, 211; state of, in 1647, 213; at Saffron Walden, 215; Agitators in, 216, 217; will not disband, 217; Rendezvous at Newmarket, 217; at Royston, 218 comes to St. Albans, 220; Manifesto and claims of, 220; Declaration against, expunged, 224; advances to London, 225; enters London, 226; Prayer-Meeting at Windsor Castle, 254; against Treaty with Charles I., 319; Remonstrance, 320; at Windsor, 320; in London, St. James's, &c., 326.  
**Arnald**. *See* Levellers.  
**Array**, Commission of, 121,—*see* St Albans; in Eastern Association, 132.  
**Artists** in 1651, 525.  
**Ascham**, Anthony, slain in Spain, ii., 214.  
**Ashburnham**, Mr., notice of, ii., 84.  
**Ashe**, John, M.P., notice of, 315, 317; Cromwell's letter to, 315.  
**Ashton**, Sir Arthur, Governor of Tredah, 380.  
 — Col., at Preston, 276.  
**Assembly**, General, answer Cromwell, 446.  
**Associated Counties**, origin of, 126, 134; raise an army, 143.  
**Astley**, Sir Bernard, taken, 177.  
 — Sir Jacob, last of Royalist generals, 191.  
**Axtel**, Col., regicide, ii., 135.  
**Ayr Citadel** built by Cromwell, 560.  
**Ayscough**, Sir George, his house like a ship at sea, ii., 216.  
**Augustin**, Mosstrooper, 497, 520-522.  
**Bacon**, Nathaniel, author of Burton's Diary, ii., 314.  
**Baillie's** remarks on Scots Demands, 106.  
**Baillie**, Gen., at Preston fight, 272 perplexed, 280.



- Balder, Allegory of, 12.  
 Baltimore, Lord, in Maryland, ii., 132.  
 Bamfield, Col., spy, ii., 257.  
 Banks, Mr., on Cromwell, 17.  
 Bannockburn, Cromwell at, 540.  
 Barbadoes, delinquents sent to, ii., 165.  
 Barbarous nations, records of, 6.  
 Barbone, Mr. Praisegod, account of, ii., 33.  
 Barebones's Parliament, ii., 33.  
 Barclay of Ury, Scotch Quaker, 518.  
 Barkstead, Col., a Major-Gen., ii., 184.  
 Barlow, Mrs., and Charles II., 391.  
 Barnard, Robert, Justice of the Peace, 65, 127; his descendants, 128; Cromwell's letter to, 127.  
 Barnet, Col., at Wogan, 411.  
 Basing House described, 184, 186.  
 Bastwick, John, Dr., in pillory, 92; his Widow provided for, ii., 347.  
 Bates, Dr., sent to Cromwell in Scotland, 537.  
 Battles: Edgehill, 23d Oct., 1642, 125; Grantham, 13th May, 1643, 135; Newbury (first), 20th Sept., 1643, 144; Winceby, 11th Oct., 1643, 145; Marston Moor, 2d July, 1644, 149; Cropredy, 30th June, 1644, 153; Newbury (second), 27th Oct., 1644, 154; Naseby, 14th June, 1645, 165-168; Preston, 17th Aug., 1648, 271; Dunbar, 3d Sept. 1650, 465, 466, 471; Worcester, 3d Sept., 1651, 551, 553.  
 Baxter's, Richard, opinion of Edgehill battle, 125; unfriendly to Cromwell, ii., 75.  
 Beard, Dr., Schoolmaster, 35, 62, 65.  
 Bedford, Earl, chief of Puritans, 115; General of Parliament horse, 124.  
 Bedford Level, 95.  
 Bennet, Richard, Cromwell's letter to, ii., 132.  
 Berkley, Sir John, tutor to Duke of York, ii., 257.  
 Berners's, Lord, ancestors, 130.  
 Bernej, Sir Richard, fined, 134.  
 Berwick demanded by Cromwell, 298.  
 Bethel, Major, at Bristol siege, 179.  
 Biddle, Mr., Socinian, ii., 129.  
 Billingsley, butcher, in Gerard's plot, ii., 81.  
 Biographers of Cromwell, criticised, 15. *See* Heath, Noble, Ludlow, Banks, Maidston, Kimber, Forster, Harris.  
 Birch, Col., at Bristol siege, 179.  
 — Dr., prints Hammond's letters, 238.  
 Bishops, pretended Scotch, 41. Bishops, their lands sold, 89 (ii., 17, &c.); insulted, 119; protest of, 119; twelve of them sent to the Tower, 120.  
 Bishopsgate, mutiny in, 359.  
 Blake, Col. Robert, relieved, 170; in Ireland, 400; as Admiral, beats the Dutch, ii., 17; in Little Parliament, 33; fires the Turkish ships, 171; letters from Cromwell to, 171, 178, 181, 204, 206, 349; letter to Cromwell, 173; sends thirty-eight waggon-loads of silver to London, 252; beats the Spaniards at Santa Cruz, 312; death of, 349.  
 Bletchington House taken, 161.  
 Bohemia, King of, dies, 68.  
 Boteler, Major, a Major-General, ii., 184. *See* Butler.  
 Bourchier pedigree, 45.  
 Boyd, Rev. Zachary, against Cromwell, 496.  
 Brandenburg, Duke of, mastered, ii., 375.  
 Bradshaw, John, presides at trial of Charles I., 328; in Council of State, 335; President of, 340, Cromwell's letters to, 380, 392, 417, 444, 473, 489, 526, 540; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87; does not sign the Recognition, 127; a rejected M. P. candidate, 216.  
 Bramston, Judge, notice of, 124.  
 Brandy, Captain, at Tredah, 381.  
 Brewster, Rev. Mr., ii., 175.  
 Bright, Colonel, notice of, 296.  
 Briot, Nicholas, engraver, 523.  
 Bristol, Parliament loses, 142; siege of, Sept., 1645, 176.  
 Brocksmouth and House described, 460.  
 Broghil, Lord, in Ireland, 401. 403,

- 414; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87; in Committee on Kingship, 278; and Cromwell on Kingship, 292.
- Brook, Lord, a Puritan, 51.
- Brown, Sir John, Major-General of Scots, 538; routed at Linlithgow, 539.
- Burntisland surrenders to Cromwell, 540, 543.
- Buckingham, Duke, accused, 59; stabbed by Felton, 62.
- Buckingham, Duke, at Kingston, 268.
- Bunyan, John, notice of, 169.
- Burford, Levellers at, 362.
- Burgess, Roger, defends Farrington, 161; Cromwell's letters to, 161, 162.
- Burleigh House, ii., 209.
- Burton's Diary criticised, ii., 263, 314.
- Burton, Rev. Henry, in pillory, 92.
- Butler, Major, seizes Wildman, ii., 162.
- Cadiz to be attempted, ii., 205.
- Cahir Castle submits, 417.
- Calendar, Earl, at Preston fight, 272, 277, 280.
- Calendar House taken by Cromwell, 538.
- Cambridge plate, 123; Committee, Cromwell's letter to, 138.
- Cant, its effect and prevalence, 6, 76.
- Cantwell Castle surrenders, 421.
- Capel, Lord, motions of, 131, 288; condemned, 343; dies nobly, 344.
- Carisbrooke Castle, Charles I. confined in, 237.
- Carlisle demanded by Cromwell, 298.
- Carre, Gibby. *See* Ker.
- Carstairs, Principal, aWhig, 518.
- Carstairs, Rev. John, account of, 518; preaches before Cromwell, 532.
- Carte, Jacobite, his opinion on Tredah, 386.
- Cartwright, Dr., Message to Cromwell, 422.
- Castlehaven, Earl, assists Wexford, 389.
- Cavendish, General, killed, 139; account of, 141.
- Cecil, Trooper, and Sindercomb, ii., 261.
- Ceremonialism in 1610, 38.
- Cervantes' death, 40.
- Chaloner, M.P., a drunkard, ii., 27.
- Chancery records, 52.
- Chancery Court to be abolished, ii., 62; reform of, difficult, 167.
- Charles, Prince, returns from Spain, 47.
- Charles I., failures of, 55; devices to raise money, 64; goes to Scotland, 69; wars with Scots, 101; shifts to raise an army, 102; his Council of Peers, 103; endeavors to coalesce with Puritans, 115; his difficulties, 116; favors Army-Plots, 116; yields a little, 117; goes to Scotland, 118; feasted by London City, 119; attempts to seize five Members of Parliament, 120; his Queen pawns Crown jewels, 121; attempts Hull, 121; his Commission of Array, 122; at Oxford, 135; his affairs in August, 1643, 142; sends for Irish Army, 148; is completely routed, 165, 166; his motions after Naseby battle, 170; in Wales, 191; goes to Scots Army, 191; at Holmby, 205; carried off by Joyce, 217; his manœuvring, 224; at Hampton Court, 227, 234; attempts to escape, 250; is denounced, 256; last Treaty with, 307; at Hurst Castle, 325; Trial of, 328; Death warrant, 329; execution of, 335; his goods, &c., to be sold, 341.
- Charles II. at Jersey, 391; character of, 435; with Scots Army, 444; repudiates his father's doings, 453; descended from Catherine Muir, 391, 502; at Perth, 22d Nov., 1650, 518; invades England, 544; at Worcester, 547; escapes from Worcester, 551; countenances assassins, ii., 72; at Middleburg, 165; his embassy to Spain, 214; quarrels with his brother, 257; designation of, by Cromwell, 379; cold reception of abroad, 397.
- Cheapside. *See* Cross.
- Chepstow Castle taken, 261.
- Cheswick, Cromwell at, 301.
- Church government, Cromwell's, ii., 74, 75.

- Civil War. *See* War.
- Clarendon, Lord, character of, 77; his notice of Cromwell, 109; on Irish affairs, 428.
- Claypole, Lady, her character, 202; and family, ii., 528, 529; death of, 402.
- Claypoles, the, in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87.
- Cleveland, John, poet, apprehended, ii., 200.
- Clonmel stormed, 424, 425.
- Clubmen, account of, 171; an obstinate one, 173; their designs discovered, 175.
- Coaches, hackney, in 1654, ii., 76.
- Cockburnspath. *See* Copperspath.
- Cockpit, the, bestowed on Cromwell, 417.
- Coke, Chief Justice, 40; weeps, 58.
- Coke, Henry, taken at Lowestoffe, 134.
- Colchester, tumults at, 261; siege of, 288.
- Colvil, Lord, in Ireland, 415.
- Commonwealth established, 336; seal found, 364.
- Conference. *See* Hampton Court.
- Conisby, Sheriff Thomas, sent prisoner to Parliament, 131.
- Cooper, Anthony Ashley, in Little Parliament, ii., 33; in Council of State, 61; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 87; is refused the Lady Mary Cromwell, 213.
- Coot, Sir Charles, in Ireland, 401.
- Copperspath in Scotland, 443.
- Coriolanus, position of, ii., 108.
- Cory, John, his letter, 132.
- Cotton, Rev. John, character of, ii., 8; Cromwell's letter to, 9.
- Council of State, members of, 335; first meeting, 340.
- Counties. *See* Associated
- Courtenay, Mr Hugh, royalist, ii., 136.
- Covenant,—*see* Scots; taken by House of Commons, 1643, 144.
- Covent Garden, soldiers in, 208.
- Cowell, Col., killed, 294.
- Crane, Sir Richard, slain, 177.
- Crequi, Duc de, Ambassador to Cromwell, ii., 398.
- Cromwell, Mrs. Elizabeth, letters from Oliver Cromwell to, 474, 527, 536; letter to Oliver Cromwell from, 516; retired to Norborough, 528.
- Cromwell, Frances, and Mr. Rich, ii., 212, 361; married, 213.
- Cromwell, Henry (son of Protect.), is of Gray's Inn, 44; is a captain, 240; in Ireland, 418; in Little Parliament, ii., 61; in Ireland, good conduct of, 174; Oliver Cromwell's letters to, 199, 215; Mary, letter to, 203.
- Cromwell, Major, wounded at Bristol, 179.
- Cromwell, Mary, her letters to Henry, ii., 203, 211; married, 213, 361.
- Cromwell, Oliver, significance of, to the Puritan cause, 14; modern reaction in favor of, 17; birth, kindred, &c., 20, 21; youth of, 23; house where born, 24; his Father's character, 24, 25; List of his Brothers and Sisters, 21; of his Uncles and Aunts, 25, 26; of his Children, 67. His poverty? 27; related to Earl Essex, 27; his great grandfather, 28; the 'alias Williams,' 31; his Welsh pedigree, 32; origin of the name, 32; death of his grandfather, 34; idle tales of his youth, 35; his schoolmaster, 35; admitted of Cambridge University, 39; death of his father, 42; death of his grandfather, 42; never of any Inn of Court, 44; marries Elizabeth Bourchier, 46; his Uncle an M.P., 48; his hypochondria, 48; becomes Calvinist, 49; subscribes to Feoffee Fund, 51; is a Puritan, 51; visit to his royalist uncle, 53; heir to his uncle at Ely, 55; is M.P. for Huntingdon in 1628, 55; returns to Huntingdon, 60; first mention of in Commons Journals, 63; is Justice of Peace, 65; sells his estate, 65. Of his Letters and Speeches, 72; how to read them, 73, 74.
- his life at St. Ives, 82-89; stories of, an enthusiast? 88; at Ely, 90, 91; character of by Warwick, 95; related to Oliver St. John,

- 97; once dissolute? 44, 98; is M.P. for Cambridge, 102, 103; delivers Lilburne's petition, 108; Sir P. Warwick's description of him, 109; dispute with Lord Mandevil, 110; reproved by Mr. Hyde, 111.
- Cromwell, time spent at Ely, 118; intends for New England? 119; subscribes 300*l.* to reduce Ireland, 122; gets arms for Cambridge, 123; his soldiers on the alert, 124; is a Captain of Parliament horse, 125; at Edgehill battle, 125; his movements in 1643, 128; is Colonel, 128; his troopers at St. Albans, 131; takes Lowestoffe, 133; preserves Associated Counties, 134; skirmish at Grantham, 135; relieves Croyland, 137; the beginning of his great fortunes, 141; is Governor of Isle of Ely, 142; his Ironsides, 143; signs the Scots Covenant, 144; nearly killed at Winceby, 145; complains of Lord Willoughby, 148; at Marston Moor, 150; proceeds with vigor, 154; complains of Earl Manchester, 155; would fire at the King in battle, 156; an incendiary? 157; besieges Farrington, 161, 162; is Lieutenant-General of the Army, 162; at Naseby battle, 165; heads Schismatic Party, 169; reduces the Clubmen, 172, 173; at Bristol, 176; on uniformity in religion, 181; famous at sieges, 182; takes Winchester, 183; his justice, 183; takes Basing, 184; his character by Mr. Peters, 188.
- his duplicity? 212; his true character, 213; very busy, 231; his Free Offer, 244; his two youngest daughters, 247, 248, 249.
- in Wales, 262; goes north, 269; at Preston, 274; at Durham, 293; his justice, 304; at Berwick, 305; at Seaton and Moray House, Edinburgh, 308; feasted there, 311; at Carlisle, 313; in London, 327; attends Trial of Charles I., 328.
- is made one of Council of State, 335; is Commander for Ireland, 340 routs Levellers, 362; at Bristol, 367; at Dublin, 373 takes Tredah, 380; takes Ross, 396; at Cork, 409; wanted for Sootland, 412; at Kilkenny, 420; returns to London, 426.
- Cromwell appointed Commander-in-Chief against Scots, 436, 439; conversation with Ludlow, 436, 437; in Scotland, 441; his generosity to the Scots, 449; encamps on Pentland Hills, 450; comments on Scots Covenant, 451: at Dunbar, 457, 458; straitened at Dunbar, 458; battle of Dunbar, 459-476; Letters to Edinburgh Ministers, 477-488; in Glasgow, 497; Proclamation by, in Scotland, 497; another, on surrender of Edinburgh Castle, 510; in Edinburgh, 513; his portrait, 522, 524; dangerously ill at Edinburgh, 526, 527; at church, in Glasgow, 532, 533; at Allertoun House, 534, 535; pursues the Scots into England, 546; Worcester battle, 551; comes to London, 556; his government of Scotland, 558, 559.
- on future government of the State, ii., 11, 12; disbands the Rump, 27-29; his mode of public speaking, 56; in Council of State, 61, *n.*; made Lord Protector, 64, 65; personal appearance of, 65.
- removes to Whitehall, 76; his First Parliament, 87, 88; difficult position of, 108, 157; accident to, in Hyde Park, 138; his Mother dies, 131.
- appoints Major-Generals, 165, 184; assists Piedmont, 169; dines with Triers, 170; receives Swedish Ambassador, 179; interviews with George Fox, 185, 404; on Popery, 223.
- fond of music, 266; is offered the title of King, 273, 274; recreations whilst debating kingship, 292; refuses the title of King, 345 installed Protector, 350; unwell, 369; invincible, 399; age and appearance, 401; last sickness of, 402; death-bed sayings and prayer, 403-410; dies, 3d Sept., 1658 410.

- Cromwell, Oliver (son of Protector),  
Cornet of horse, 125; death of,  
150.
- Cromwell, Richard, Protector's great  
grandfather, 28-32.
- Cromwell, Richard (son of Protec-  
tor), character, 241; married, 336;  
death of, 355; his Wife, 355;  
Cromwell's letter to his Wife, 372;  
Oliver's letter to, ii., 209; his  
estate, 210, *n*.
- Cromwell, Mrs. Richard's child, 440.
- Cromwell, Thomas, Earl Essex, 24;  
Oliver related to, 27.
- Cromwells in the Civil War, 53.
- Crook, Capt. Unton, Cromwell's let-  
ter to, ii., 135; pursues Wagstaff,  
&c., 164.
- Cropledy. *See* Battle.
- Cross, Cheapside and Charing, de-  
stroyed, 136.
- Croyland relieved, 137.
- Dalbier, Col., at Basing siege, 185;  
account of him, 190; in revolt at  
Kingston, 268.
- Dalegarth Hall described, 339.
- Dalgetty, Dugald. *See* Turner, Sir  
James.
- Dalhousie, Cromwell at, 311.
- Danger, Scots Committee of, 246.
- Daniel, Colonel, at Linlithgow fight,  
540.
- Danton on government, ii., 109.
- Davy, John. *See* Theauro.
- Dawkins, Admiral, a Major-General,  
ii., 184.
- Dean, Col., at Preston, 283; Major-  
General, at Worcester battle, 552;  
in Dutch War, ii., 17.
- Dean, Cornet, Leveller, pardoned,  
363.
- Debentures of soldiers, 247.
- Declaration against Army, 214; ex-  
punged, 224; by Cromwell, 293;  
by Charles Stuart against his Fa-  
ther, 488.
- Delinquents, Staffordshire, 208; are  
searched out, ii., 18.
- Denbigh, Earl, and Duke Hamilton,  
314.
- Dendy, Edward, Sergeant-at-Arms,  
335.
- Dennington Castle, 184, 185.
- Derby, Earl, routed at Wigan, 546;  
beheaded, 555.
- Desbrow, Maj., at Bristol Siege, 178.
- Colonel, at conference at Speak-  
er's, ii., 11-13; in Council of State,  
61, *n*.; made Major-General, 165,  
against title of King, 346; one of  
Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Dewes, Sir Simon, cited, 108, 109,  
notices of Cromwell, 122; purged  
by Pride, 327.
- Dick, Sir William, notice of, 310.
- Dives, Sir Lewis, notice of, 175.
- Divines, Westminster Assembly of,  
108, 206.
- Doon Hill, Scots Army at, 458.
- Dorislaus, Dr., notice of, 231.
- Douglas, Will, his poetry on Crom-  
well, 392.
- Drogheda. *See* Tredah.
- Drury Lane, Cromwell lives in, 202.
- Dryasdust Societies, 4, 5, 9.
- Dryden's uncle, ii., 61.
- Dublin, Cromwell in, 373.
- Dukinfield, Governor of Chester,  
265.
- Dunbar, town described, 457; Crom-  
well at, 456, 457; battle, plan of,  
462, 463. *See* Battle.
- Duncannon, ships taken at, 402.
- Dunch of Pusey, John, collection of  
letters, 336; Cromwell's letter to,  
ii., 352.
- Dundas, Governor, letter to General  
Whalley, 478; letters to, from  
Cromwell, 479, 502, 503, 505, 506,  
507, 508, 509; his letters to Crom-  
well, 480, 503, 504, 506, 508, 509.
- Dundee, stormed by General Monk,  
557.
- Dunkirk taken, ii., 259.
- Dutch War, ii., 17.
- Earle, Sir Walter, sent to Charles I.,  
198.
- Edgehill. *See* Battle.
- Edinburgh, riot in, 94; Cromwell in,  
307, 310; Scots Army near, 445,  
446, 455; Ministers and Cromwell,  
447, 448; Castle besieged, 491,  
502-510; High Church, Cromwell  
in, 477; Castle surrenders, 503.
- Eliot, Sir John, motion by, 58; dies  
in the Tower, 64.

- Elizabeth, Queen, tuned the pulpits, 62.
- Empson, Lieut., repulses the Scots, 444; character and promotion, 515, 516.
- Engagers, the, 299.
- England in 1642, 124; deluded by Cant, ii., 4, 411.
- English genius, 7; character, 8, 56, 64, 117.
- Enniscorthy Castle surprised, 413.
- Episcopacy in danger, 119. *See* Church government.
- Erasmus's ape, 118.
- Esmonds, the, seat of, 387.
- Essex, Earl, General of Parliament Army, 124; discontented, 136; relieves Gloucester, 143; is defeated in Cornwall in 1644, 153, 154; is pensioned and dies, 158; funeral of, 203.
- Eure, Lord, one of Cromwell's Lords, ii., 363.
- Evelyn of Wilts, Sir John, in committee, 240.
- Everard, Leveller, 357.
- Ewer, Colonel, takes Chepstow Castle, 262; presents Army Remonstrance, 319; succeeds Col. Hammond, 325; at Kilkenny, 420.
- Exchange, Royal, has been twice burned, 87.
- Fairfax, Lord, besieged in Hull, 144; death of, 265.
- Fairfax, Sir Thomas, serves under Earl Manchester, 145; General of New Model Army, 157; interview with Clubmen, 172; at Bath, 197; adheres to Commons, 199; meets the King, 205; Governor of Hull, 233; in Kent, 265; at trial of Charles I., 328; of Council of State, 335; half Presbyterian, 412, Cromwell's letters to, 159, 163, 173, 189, 196, 197, 201, 204, 207, 209, 230, 232, 244, 266, 295, 306, 319.
- becomes Lord Fairfax, 265; refuses to fight the Scots, 436; gives up his commission, 436; in Church Commission, ii., 75; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 87.
- Falkland, Lord, killed, 144.
- Famine in Ireland, 308.
- Fauconberg, Lord, marries Mary Cromwell, ii., 213; character of, 361; his letter on Cromwell's death, 410.
- Fawley Park for sale, ii., 78.
- Feak, Anabaptist, against Cromwell, ii., 70.
- Felsted Free-School, 46.
- Felton, John, character and death, 60, 61.
- Fens, draining of the, 95; drained, ii., 30.
- Fenwick, Col., besieges Hume Castle, 513.
- Fees, purchases by, 50; prosecuted by Laud, 51; suppressed, 70; losses of, 88.
- Ferral, Lt.-Gen., attacks Passage, 410.
- Ferrar's, Nicholas, establishment, 69.
- Fethard Town, described, 414.
- Fiennes, Nathaniel, of committee, 240; in Council of State, ii., 73, *n.*; Keeper of Great Seal, 167; his speech analysed, 370.
- Finch, Speaker, his conduct, 63; flies, 107.
- Finch, Col., in Gerrard's plot, ii., 81, 84.
- Firebrace, Henry, notice of, 250.
- Five Members, the, 120.
- Fleet, revolt of, 270.
- Fleetwood, Lieut.-General, at Dunbar, 470; at Worcester, 549, 550, Deputy for Ireland, ii., 15; of Council of State, 73, *n.*; Cromwell's letters to, 79, 176; conduct in Ireland, 174; against title of King, 346.
- Fleming, Sir Oliver, Master of Ceremonies, 341.
- Fleming, Adjutant, notice of 198, killed, 261.
- Forster, John, on Cromwell, 18.
- Fortescue, Major-Gen., in Jamaica, ii., 191; Cromwell's letter to, 195; death of, 198.
- Fox, George, Quaker, ii., 129; and Cromwell, 185, 186, 404.
- Fox, Somerset, his plot, ii., 81, 84. *See* Gerard, Vowel.
- France, treaty with, ii., 180, 354.

- French Revolution compared to English, 213.
- Fuller's *Ephemeris Parliamentaria*, 62.
- Gainsborough relieved, 138.
- Geddard village, murder at, 514.
- Geddes, Jenny, and her stool, 93.
- Generals, Major, their office, ii., 165; names of, 184; withdrawn, 252.
- Germany, Emperor of, Papist, ii., 375.
- Gerrard's plot, ii., 82; he is beheaded, 84.
- Gibbons, Major, defeats Royalists, 268.
- Gibson, Bishop, on Cromwell, 18.
- Gillespie, Rev. Patrick, interview with Cromwell, 533.
- Glasgow, Assembly there, 101; Cromwell at, 496, 497, 533; riot in, 533, 534.
- Glencairn's rebellion in Highlands, 558.
- Gloucester besieged, 142, 143; relieved by Earl Essex, 144.
- Goddard, Guibon, in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 86; his narrative of, 106, 107, 128.
- Goffe, Major, exhorts at Windsor Castle, 255; is at Dunbar, 470; a Major-Gen., ii., 184; in favor of Kingship, 346.
- Goodman, Bishop, character of, 27.
- Goodson, Vice-Admiral, character of, ii., 191; Cromwell's letter to, 192.
- Goodwin, Robert, M. P., sent to Charles I., 198.
- Goodwin, Rev. Thomas, preaches to Parliament, ii., 88.
- Goring, Lord, pardoned, 343.
- Grampian Hills, Charles II., on, 493.
- Grantham. *See* Battle.
- Gray of Wark, Lord, commands Eastern Association, 126.
- Grey of Groby, Lord, assists in Pride's Purge, 326; in prison, ii., 163.
- Grimston, Harbottle, after Restoration, 212.
- Grocers' Hall, dinner at, 364.
- Grove, Major, beheaded, ii., 164.
- Guildhall, scene at, 226.
- Guillams, Capt., slain, 177.
- Guizot, M., criticised, 171.
- Gustavus the Great dies, 68.
- Guthry, Rev. James, interview with Cromwell, 533.
- Hacker, Col., at execution of Charles I., 329; routs Mosstroopers, 514, 515; Cromwell's letter to, 515.
- Haddington, Cromwell at, 468.
- Hailes, Lord, character of, 531.
- Hall, Bishop, pamphlet of, 106.
- Hamilton, Duke James, flies to King, 144; taken, 198; prepares an army, 245; his army ready, 269; defeated at Preston, taken at Uttoxeter, 270-287; escapes, and is retaken, 338; condemned, 343; executed, 344.
- Hamilton, Duke William, succeeds his brother, 343; taken at Worcester, 553.
- Hammond, Lieut.-General, summoned by Commons, 215; notice of, 237.
- Hammond, Col. Robert, at Bristol siege, 178, 179; the King flies to, 236; character of, 237; provided for, 249; letters from Cromwell to, 239, 249, 320.
- Hammond, Dr., King's chaplain, 238.
- Hampden, John, his mother, 26; a Puritan, 51; shipmoney, 71, 90 trial of, 94; is Colonel in Parliament Army, 125; proposed as Lord General, 136; mortally wounded, 138.
- Hampton-Court Conference, 36. *See* Charles I.
- Hapton parishioners, letter concerning, 129, 30.
- Harley, Col., Presbyterian, 214.
- Harrington, James, author of *Oceana*, 250.
- Harris's life of Cromwell, 86.
- Harrison, Thomas, notice of, 24; at Basing siege, 187; at Preston, 283; Major-General, in Scotland, 344; at Conference at Speaker's, ii., 11; at disbanding of Rump, 26, 27; Anabaptist, dismissed, 71; and Fifth Monarchy, 94, *n.*; in prison, 163.

- Hartfell**, Lord, in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87.
- Hartlib**, Samuel, letter on dissolution of Cromwell's Second Parliament, ii., 394.
- Haselrig**, Sir Arthur, Governor of Newcastle, 305-6; Cromwell's letter to, 459; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87; opposed to Cromwell, 127; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 218; excluded, 251; re-admitted, 373, 390.
- Haynes**, Col., Deputy Major-Gen., ii., 184; apprehends poet Cleveland, 200.
- Heath**, James, 'Carrion Heath,' on Cromwell, 15, 16.
- Henderson**, Sir John, renegade Scot, 135.
- Henry**, Prince, death of, 38.
- Henshaw**, Major, in Gerrard's plot, ii., 81, 84.
- Herbert**, Col., at Bristol siege, 179; in Wales, 264.
- Herbert**, Lord, afterwards Duke Beaufort, 528, 529; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 86.
- Heroic and unheroic ages**, 79.
- Heroism**, Puritan, 3, 12.
- Hewit**, Dr., plot and execution of, ii., 395, 397.
- Hewson**, Col., in Ireland, 419; one of Cromwell's Lords, ii., 363.
- Heylin**, lying Peter, 68.
- Hill**, William, notice of, 293.
- Hills**, Henry, printer to Protector, ii., 138.
- Hinchinbrook House**, 24; sale of, 53; Charles I. at, 218.
- Hippesley**, Sir John, sent to Charles I., 198.
- Hispaniola**, failure of attack on, ii., 187.
- Historians**, character of good, 9; labor of, 13.
- History of Puritanism**, its difficulties, 3-9.
- Histriomastix**. *See* Prynne.
- Hobart**, Col. Sir Miles, 137.
- Hodgson**, Capt., character of, 271; in Scots War, 439; narrative by, 442.
- Holborn**, General, invites Cromwell to Edinburgh, 311; at Dunbar battle, 464, *n*.
- Holland House**, 226.
- Holland**, Earl, condemned, 343; executed, 344.
- Hollar**, Wenceslaus, taken at Basing, 189.
- Holles**, Denzil, holds down the Speaker, 63; imprisoned, 64; Presbyterian, 214; a leader in Parliament, 216. *See* Members Eleven.
- Holmby**, Charles I. at, 205, 217.
- Homer's Iliad**, 7.
- Hopton**, Sir Ralph, character of, 182.
- Horse**, wooden, described, 351.
- Horton**, Col., defeats Welsh, 262; dies, 308.
- Hothams**, treachery of the, 138; executed, 210.
- Howard**, Col., in Little Parliament, ii., 33; attends Cromwell to Parliament, 87; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Howlet**, Dr., tutor to Cromwell, 39, 40.
- Hull**, Governors of, 233.
- Hume Castle** besieged, 513.
- Hungary**, King of, Papist, ii., 375.
- Hungerford**, Anthony, Royalist, ii., 18; Cromwell's letter to, 19.
- Sir Edward, notice of, ii., 19.
- Henry, M. P., notice of, ii., 19.
- Huntingdon** described, 22.
- Huntly**, Marquis, for Charles II., 493.
- Hurry**, Col. Sir John, wounded at Preston, 278; taken with Montrose, and executed, 285.
- Hursley**, described, 241.
- Hurst Castle**, Charles I. at, 325.
- Hutchinson**, Colonel, Governor of Nottingham, 315.
- Hyde**, Mr. *See* Lord Clarendon.
- Hyde Park**, Army near, 226; accident to Cromwell in, ii., 130.
- Impropriations**, Lay, meaning of 37. *See* Feoffees.
- Inchiquin**, Lord, assaults Carrick 407.
- Inchgarvie** taken, ii., 540, 541.
- Incumbrance**, Parliamentary defining of, ii., 334.
- Independents and Presbyterians**, 204, 211.



- Indies, West, expedition to, failed, ii., 181.
- Ingoltsby, Col., at Bristol siege, 179.
- Innes, Lieut.-Col., taken, 285.
- Instrument of Government, the, ii., 64; new, 273.
- Inverness Citadel, built by Cromwell, 560.
- Ireland, state of, in 1649, 374, 375.
- Ireton, Commissary-General, at Bristol siege, 177; character of, 201; examined by Commons, 215; in Ireland, 370; Deputy in Ireland, 426; dies in Ireland, 426; character of, ii., 14, 15.
- Ireton, Widow, marries Fleetwood, ii., 15.
- Mrs., Cromwell's letter to, 202.
- Alderman, in Little Parliament, ii., 33; of Customs Committee, 59.
- Irish, Massacre in 1641, 118; Charles I. sends for Army of, 148; Papists found in arms in England to be hanged, 152; forces go abroad, 425; Puritan settlement, 427.
- Ironsides, Cromwell's, described, 143.
- Jaffray, Provost, at Dunbar battle, 466; at Edinburgh, 506, 507; a Quaker, &c., 518; in Little Parliament, ii., 33.
- Jamaica island, taken, ii., 188, 189.
- James I., King, visits Hinchinbrook, 34; a theologian, 37; his falling off, 38; returns to Scotland, 41; his miscalculations, 47; dies, 48.
- Jedburgh. *See* Geddard.
- Jenner, Robert, M.P., notice of, 314, 317; Cromwell's letter to, 315.
- Jephson, Governor of Bandon, 407.
- Jesuit stabs Henry IV., 38. *See* Papist.
- Jesuit practices in England, ii., 96, 97.
- Jews endeavor to settle in England, ii., 201.
- Johnson, Samuel, his hypochondria, 49.
- Johnston, Archibald, Lord Register of Scotland, Cromwell's letter to, 529; account of, 531.
- Jones, Inigo, taken at Basing, 189.
- Col. Michael, occupies Dublin, 228; routs Irish at Dungan Hill, 229; routs Ormond's army, 370, Cromwell's letter to, 229; dies, 410.
- Col. John, regicide, 230.
- Col. Philip, in Council of State, ii., 73, *n*.
- Quartermaster Samuel, notice of, 264.
- Joyce, Cornet, carries off the King, 217; Lieut.-Col., imprisoned, ii., 78.
- Keinton fight. *See* Battle Edgehill.
- Kelsey, Col., a Major-General, ii., 184.
- Kent in insurrection, 246, 261, 265.
- Ker, Col. Gilbert, interview with, 453; at Glasgow, 489; in Scots Army, 493, 494; Remonstrance by, 498, 501; his forces routed, 499.
- Ker, Earl Somerset. *See* Overbury.
- Sir William, notice of, 301.
- Kilkenny Castle taken, 414, 421, Irish at, 418.
- Killing no murder, ii., 266, *n*.
- Kimber, Rev., on Cromwell, 18.
- Kimbolton, Lord, with the Five Members, 120. *See* Mandevil, Manchester.
- King Street, Cromwell lives in, 252.
- Kingship, Oliver Cromwell's, ii., 271, 275, 280, 306; he refuses it, 345.
- Kingston, insurrection at, 268.
- Kirkcudbright, Lord, invites Cromwell to Edinburgh, 311.
- Knyvett, Thomas, Cromwell's letter to, 129; taken at Lowestoffe, 133.
- Ladies taken at Naseby, 168; at Basing House, 186, 187.
- Lambert, General, described, 220; in the North, 265; at Edinburgh, 310; at Pontefract, 327; Major-General in Scots War, 439, 470; skirmishes with the Scots, 443, 444; routs Col. Ker, 499; routs General Brown at Linlithgow, 539; at Worcester battle, 549; in the Highlands, 558; of Council of State, ii., 73, *n*.; a Major-General of counties, 184; against title of King, 346; dismissed, 346.

- Lammermoor Hills described, 457;  
Scots Army at, 457.
- Lancashire Committee, Cromwell's  
letter to, 274.
- Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, joins  
Scots, 265; escapes, 315.
- Laud, William, Archdeacon of Hunt-  
ingdon, 39; finds no religion in  
Scotland, 42; persecutions by, 51;  
inclined to Popery, 61; Parlia-  
ment intends to accuse, 62; ac-  
companies Charles I. to Scotland,  
69; roots out Feoffees, 70; is in  
the Tower, 107, 120; beheaded,  
210.
- Lauderdale, Earl, taken at Worces-  
ter, 553; incident to, in London,  
555.
- Laughern, Major-Gen., revolts, 261;  
condemned to death, 345.
- Lieut.-Col., shot, 418.
- Law, Reform of, ii., 15, 21, 98, 99.
- Lawrence, Col. Henry, of Council  
of State, ii., 73, *n*.
- Lea Hamlet, described, 140.
- Lecturers, running, described, 50,  
88.
- Lehunt, Col., commissioned, 267.
- Leicester taken and retaken, 170.
- Leith Citadel built by Cromwell,  
560.
- Leland's Itinerary, 31.
- Lemon, Mr., classified Records, 340.
- Lenthall, Hon. William, Speaker,  
Cromwell's letters to, 168, 176,  
182, 184, 232, 281, 305, 311, 366,  
381, 387, 397, 400, 405, 409, 413,  
418, 467, 499, 511, 538, 543, 544,  
552, 553; Conference at his house,  
ii., 10, 11; unseated, 28; in Crom-  
well's First Parliament, 86;  
against Law Reform, 167; one of  
Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Lesley, Alexander, Fieldmarshal, at  
Dunse Law, 101; Earl of Leven,  
enters England with Scots Army  
in 1644, 147; at Marston Moor,  
149; cannonades the Hamilton  
Engagers from Edinburgh Castle,  
289; entertains Cromwell at din-  
ner, 310; at Alyth, and sent to the  
Tower, 558.
- Lesley, General David, extinguishes  
Montrose, 191; at head of Kirk  
Party, 289; dines with Cromwell,  
310; General of Scots, 445; his  
caution, 449; letter to Cromwell,  
450; Cromwell's letters to, 451,  
517; and the English soldier at  
Dunbar, 461.
- Letters of Oliver Cromwell (In  
Vol. I.) One abstracted, 52; how  
to read them, 73; corrections of  
originals, 75.
- i. To Mr. Storie (St. Ives, 11 Jan  
1635), 86.
- ii. — Mrs. St. John (Ely, 13 Oct.,  
1638), 97.
- iii. — Mr. Willingham (London,  
Feb., 1640), 105.
- iv. — R. Barnard, Esq. (Hunting-  
don, 23 Jan., 1642), 127.
- v. — T. Knyvett, Esq. (Norfolk,  
Jan., 1642), 129.
- vi. — Unknown (Grantham, 13  
May, 1643), 135.
- vii. — Cambridge Committee  
(Huntingdon, 31 July, 1643), 138.
- viii. — Col. Walton (York, 5  
July, 1644), 150.
- ix. — Sir T. Fairfax (Salisbury,  
9 April, 1645), 159.
- x. — Governor R. Burgess (Far-  
ringdon, 29 April, 1645), 161.
- xi. — the same, same date, 162.
- xii. — Sir T. Fairfax (Hunting-  
don, 4 June, 1645), 163.
- xiii. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Har-  
borough, 14 June, 1645), 168.
- xiv. — To Sir T. Fairfax (Shaftes-  
bury, 4 Aug., 1645), 173.
- xv. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Bris-  
tol, 14 Sept., 1645), 176.
- xvi. — the same (Winchester, 6  
Oct., 1645), 182.
- xvii. — the same (Basingstoke,  
14 Oct., 1645), 184.
- xviii. — Sir T. Fairfax (Wallop,  
16 Oct., 1645), 189.
- xix. — the same (London, 31  
July, 1646), 196.
- xx. — the same (London, 10  
Aug., 1646), 197.
- xxi. — J. Rushworth, Esq. (Lon-  
don, 26 Aug., 1646), 199.
- xxii. — Sir T. Fairfax (London  
6 Oct., 1646), 201.

- Letter xxiii. To Mrs. Ireton (London, 25 Oct., 1646), 201.
- xxiv. — Sir T. Fairfax (London, 21 Dec., 1646), 204.
  - xxv. — the same (London, 11 Mar., 1646), 207.
  - xxvi. — the same (London, 19 Mar., 1646), 209.
  - xxvii. — Col. Jones (Putney 14 Sept., 1647), 229.
  - xxviii. — Sir T. Fairfax (Putney, 13 Oct., 1647), 230.
  - xxix. — the same (Putney, 22 Oct., 1647), 232.
  - xxx. — Hon. William Lenthall, (Hampton-Court, 11 November, 1647), 232.
  - xxxi. — Col. Whalley (Putney, Nov., 1647), 236.
  - xxxii. — Col. Hammond (London, 3 Jan., 1647), 239.
  - xxxiii. — Col. Norton (London, 25 Feb., 1647), 241.
  - xxxiv. — Sir T. Fairfax (London, 7 March, 1647), 244.
  - xxxv. — Col. Norton (Farnham, 28 March, 1648), 246.
  - xxxvi. — the same (London, 3 April, 1648), 247.
  - xxxvii. — Col. Hammond (London, 6 April, 1648), 249.
  - xxxviii. — Major Saunders (Pembroke, 17th June, 1648), 263.
  - xxxix. — Lord Fairfax (Pembroke, 28 June, 1648), 266.
  - xl. — Lancashire Committee (Preston, 17 Aug., 1648), 274.
  - xli. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Warrington, 20 Aug., 1648), 281.
  - xlii. — Lord Wharton (near Knaresborough, 2 Sept., 1648), 291.
  - xliii. — Lord Fairfax (Berwick, 11 Sept., 1648), 295.
  - xliv. — Marquis Argyle and the well-affected Lords now in arms in Scotland (near Berwick, 16 Sept., 1648), 296.
  - xlv. — Committee of Estates (near Berwick, 16 Sept., 1648), 297.
  - xlvi. — Earl Loudon (Cheswick, 18 Sept., 1648), 299.
  - xlvii. — Committee of Estates (Norham, 21 Sept., 1648), 303.
  - Letter xlviii. To Hon. W. Lenthall (Berwick, 2 Oct., 1648), 305.
  - xlix. — Lord Fairfax (Berwick, 2 Oct., 1648), 306.
  - 1. — Committee of Estates (Edinburgh, 5 Oct., 1648), 308.
  - li. — Hcn. W. Lenthall (Dalhousie, 9 Oct., 1648), 311.
  - lii. — Governor Morris (Pontefract, 9 Nov., 1648), 314.
  - liii. — Jenner and Ashe (Knottingley, near Pontefract, 20 Nov., 1648), 315.
  - liv. — Lord Fairfax (Knottingley, 20 Nov., 1648), 319.
  - lv. — Col. Hammond (Knottingley, 25 Nov., 1648), 320.
  - lvi. — Rev. Robinson (London, 1 Feb., 1648), 337.
  - lvii. — R. Mayor, Esq. (London, 12 Feb., 1648), 339.
  - lviii. — the same (London, 26 Feb., 1648), 342.
  - lix. — the same (London, 8 March, 1648), 343.
  - lx. — Dr. Love (London, 14 Mar., 1648), 345.
  - lxi. — R. Mayor, Esq. (London, 14 Mar., 1648), 347.
  - lxii. — the same (London, 25 Mar., 1649), 350.
  - lxiii. — the same (London, 30 Mar., 1649), 352.
  - lxiv. — the same (London, 6 April, 1649), 352.
  - lxv. — the same (London, 15 April, 1649), 353.
  - lxvi. — Hon. W. Lenthall (London, 10 July, 1649), 367.
  - lxvii. — R. Mayor, Esq. (Bristol, 19 July, 1649), 369.
  - lxviii. — the same (Milford Haven, 13 Aug., 1649), 371.
  - lxix. — Mrs. R. Cromwell (Milford Haven, 13 Aug., 1649), 372.
  - lxx. — President Bradshaw (Dublin, 16 Sept., 1649), 380.
  - lxxi. — the Hon. W. Lenthall (Dublin, 17 Sept., 1649), 381.
  - lxxii. — the same (Wexford, 14 Oct., 1649), 387.
  - lxxiii. — Governor Taaf (Ross, 11 Oct., 1649), 392.

- Letter lxxiv.** To the same (Ross, 19 Oct., 1649), 394.
- lxxv. — the same, same date, 395.
  - lxxvi. — the same, same date, 396.
  - lxxvii. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Ross, 25 Oct., 1649), 397.
  - lxxviii. — R. Mayor, Esq. (Ross, 13 Nov., 1649), 399.
  - lxxix. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Ross, 14 Nov., 1649), 400.
  - lxxx. — the same (Waterford, Nov., 1649), 405.
  - lxxxi. — the same (Cork, 19 Dec., 1649), 409.
  - lxxxii. — the same (Castletown, 15 Feb., 1649), 413.
  - lxxxiii. — President Bradshaw (Cashel, 5 March, 1649), 417.
  - lxxxiv. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Carrick, 2 April, 1650), 418.
  - lxxxv. — R. Mayor, Esq. (Carrick, 2 April, 1650), 423.
  - lxxxvi. To R. Mayor, Esq. (Alnwick, 17 July, 1650), 440.
  - lxxxvii. — President Bradshaw (Musselburgh, 30 July, 1650), 443.
  - lxxxviii. — Committee of Estates (Musselburgh, 3 Aug., 1650), 446.
  - lxxxix. — Gen. Lesley (Camp at Pentland Hills, 14 Aug., 1650) 451.
  - xc. — Council of State (Musselburgh, 30 Aug., 1650), 454.
  - xci. — Sir A. Haselrig (Dunbar, 2 Sept., 1650), 459.
  - xcii. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Dunbar, 4 Sept., 1650), 467.
  - xciii. — President Bradshaw (Dunbar, 4 Sept., 1650), 473.
  - xciv. — Mrs. E. Cromwell (Dunbar, 4 Sept., 1650), 474.
  - xcv. — R. Mayor, Esq. (Dunbar, 4 Sept., 1650), 475.
  - xcvi. — Governor Dundas (Edinburgh, 9 Sept., 1650), 479.
  - xcvi. — the same (Edinburgh, 12 Sept., 1650), 482.
  - xcvi. — President Bradshaw (Edinburgh, 25 Sept., 1650), 489.
  - xcix. — Committee of Estates (Linlithgow, 9 Oct., 1650), 494.
  - c. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Edinburgh, 4 Dec., 1650), 499.
  - ci. — Governor Dundas (Edinburgh, 12 Dec., 1650), 502.
- Letter cii.** To the same, same date, 503.
- ciii. — the same (Edinburgh, 13 Dec., 1650), 505.
  - civ. — the same (Edinburgh, 14 Dec., 1650), 506.
  - cv. — the same, same date, 507.
  - cvi. — the same (Edinburgh, 18 Dec., 1650), 508.
  - cvii. — the same, same date, 509.
  - cviii. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Edinburgh, 24 Dec., 1650), 511.
  - cix. — Col. Hacker (Edinburgh, 25 Dec., 1650), 515.
  - cx. — Gen. Lesley (Edinburgh, 17 Jan., 1650), 517.
  - cx. — Committee of Estates (Edinburgh, 17 Jan., 1650), 521.
  - cxii. — Committee of Army (Edinburgh, 4 Feb., 1650), 522.
  - cxiii. — President Bradshaw (Edinburgh, 24 March, 1650), 526.
  - cxiv. — Mrs. E. Cromwell (Edinburgh, 12 April, 1651) 527.
  - cxv. — Hon. A. Johnston (Edinburgh, 12 April, 1651), 529.
  - cxvi. — Mrs. E. Cromwell (Edinburgh, 3 May, 1651), 536.
  - cxvii. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Linlithgow, 21 July, 1651), 538.
  - cxviii. — President Bradshaw (Dundas, 24 July, 1651), 540.
  - cxix. — the same (Linlithgow, 26 July, 1651), 541.
  - cxx. — R. Mayor, Esq. (Burntisland, 28 July, 1651), 541.
  - cxxi. — Hon. W. Lenthall (Burntisland, 29 July, 1651), 543.
  - cxxii. — the same (Leith, 4 Aug., 1651), 544.
  - cxxiii. — the same (near Worcester, 3 Sept., 1651), 552.
  - cxxiv. — the same (Worcester, 4 Sept., 1651), 553.
- Letters of Oliver Cromwell** (in Vol II.)
- cxxv. — Rev. J. Cotton (London, 2 Oct., 1651), 9.
  - cxxvi. — Mr. Hungerford (London, 30 July, 1652), 19.
  - cxxvii. — Mr. Parker (Whitehall, 23 April, 1653), 30.
  - cxxviii. — Committee of Customs, (Whitehall, Oct., 1653), 59.

- Letter cxxix.** — H. Weston, Esq. (Whitehall, 16 Nov., 1653), 60.  
 — cxxx. — R. Mayor, Esq., (Whitehall, 4 May, 1654), 77.  
 — cxxxi. — Lord Fleetwood (Whitehall, 16 May, 1654) 79.  
 — cxxxii. To Col. Alured (Whitehall, 16 May, 1654), 80.  
 — cxxxiii. — Sir T. Rymer (Whitehall, 5 July, 1654), 82.  
 — cxxxiv. — R. Bennet, Esq. (Whitehall, 12 Jan., 1654) 132.  
 — cxxxv. — Captain Crook (Whitehall, 20 Jan., 1654), 135.  
 — cxxxvi. — Gen. Blake (Whitehall, 13 June, 1655), 172.  
 — cxxxvii. — Lord Fleetwood (Whitehall, 22 June, 1655) 176.  
 — cxxxviii. — Gen. Blake (Whitehall, 30 July, 1655), 178.  
 — cxxxix. — the same (Whitehall, 13 Sept., 1655), 181.  
 — cxl. — Maryland Commissioners (Whitehall, 26 Sept., 1655), 182.  
 — cxli. — Gen. Goodson (Whitehall, Oct., 1655), 192.  
 — cxlii. — D. Serle, Esq. (Whitehall, Oct., 1655), 194.  
 — cxliii. — Gen. Fortescue (Whitehall, Nov., 1655), 195.  
 — cxliv. — Henry Cromwell (Whitehall, 21 Nov., 1655), 199.  
 — cxlv. — Gen. Blake and Montague (Whitehall, 28 Apr., 1656, 204.  
 — cxlvi. — the same (Whitehall, 6 May, 1656), 206.  
 — cxlvii. — Rich. Cromwell (Whitehall, 29 May, 1656), 209.  
 — cxlviii. — Hen. Cromwell (Whitehall, 26 Aug., 1656), 215.  
 — cxlix. — Mayor of Newcastle (Whitehall, 18 Dec., 1656), 255.  
 — cl. — Cardinal Mazarin (Whitehall, 26 Dec., 1656), 258.  
 — cli. — Parliament (Whitehall, 25 Dec., 1656), 271.  
 — clii. — Gen. Blake (Whitehall, 10 June, 1657), 593.  
 — cliii. — Gen. Montague (Whitehall, 11 Aug., 1657), 352.  
 — cliv. — J. Dunch, Esq. (Hampton Court, 27 Aug., 1657), 352.  
 — clv. — Gen. Montague (Hampton Court, 30 Aug., 1657), 353.  
**Letter clvi.** To Sir W. Lockhart (Whitehall, 31 Aug., 1657), 356.  
 — clvii. — the same, same date, 357.  
 Levellers described, 235, 356-358;  
 Arnald shot, 237; routed at Burford, 362.  
 Libberton, Lord, killed at Dunbar, 471.  
 Liberty of the people, 77.  
 Lilburn, John, account of, 108; his brothers, 200; accuses Cromwell, 240; his pamphlets, 351; death of, ii., 359.  
 Lilburn, Col. Robert, routs Earl Derby, 547; deputy Major-General, ii., 184.  
 Linlithgow, fight at, 539.  
 Lisle, Lord Viscount, in Council of State, ii., 61, *n.*; at Installation, 351.  
 — Sir George, shot, 288.  
 Livingston, Rev. James, notice of by Cromwell, 500; his descendants, 502.  
 Lloyd, Capt., sent to Generals Blake and Montague, ii., 204.  
 Locke, John, tomb of, 96.  
 Lockhart, Col. Sir William, wounded at Preston, 278; Ambassador to France, ii., 257; Cromwell's letters to, 356, 357; notice of, 354, 355.  
 Lockier, Rev., preaches at Cromwell's Installation, ii., 65.  
 Lockyer, Trooper, shot, 359.  
 London City petitions for Parliament, 103; for Reform of Bishops, 105; helps Long Parliament to raise army, 122; armies fitted out by, 153; petitions for peace, 204; shops shut, 224; averse to Cromwell party, 252; lends money, 353. Preacher recommended to, ii., 83, Cromwell entertained by, 117; will resist Cromwell's enemies, 395.  
 Loudon, Chancellor, in danger, 101; Character of, 301; Cromwell's letter to, 299.  
 Love, Rev. Christopher, notice of, 147, 345; his treason, 537; condemned, 538; executed, 547, 548  
 — Dr., Cromwell's letter to, 345.  
 Lowestoffe, affair at, 132.

- Lucas**, Sir Charles, shot, 288.
- Ludlow**, General, Memoirs of Cromwell, 17; Cromwell's remark to, 216; notes Cromwell's ill success, 252; at trial of Charles I., 328; of Council of State, 336; Deputy of Ireland, 426; Cromwell's conversation with, 436, 437; and Cromwell, scene with, ii., 14; Republican, lives in Essex, 201, 408.
- Lumsden**, Col., killed at Dunbar, 471.
- Lunsford**, Col., described, 120.
- Lydcot**, Col., at Linlithgow fight, 540.
- Lyttleton**, Lord, his running off with Great Seal, 524.
- Mace of the Commons**, the, a bauble, ii., 28.
- Mackworth**, Col., in Council of State, ii., 73, *n.*; account of, 213, *n.*
- Maidstone fight**, 265.
- Maidston**, John, on Cromwell, 18; account of Cromwell's death, ii., 401, &c.
- Mainwaring** censured, 61.
- Major-Generals**, the, ii., 183; list of, 184; abolished, 252.
- Maleverer**, Lord, Royalist, ii., 163.
- Manasseh Ben Israel**, learned Jew, ii., 201.
- Manchester**, Earl, Sergeant-Major of Associated Counties, 142; quarrels with Cromwell, 154, 156; one of Cromwell's Lords, ii., 363.
- Mandevil**, Lord, dispute with Cromwell, 110. *See* Manchester, Earl.
- Manning**, Mr., spy, ii., 165.
- Manton**, Mr., preaches at Installation, ii., 351.
- Mardike taken**, ii., 358.
- Marston Moor**. *See* Battle.
- Marten**, Henry, M. P. of Council of State, 335; character of, ii., 6; a lewd liver, 27.
- Masham family**, notice of, 96.
- Sir William, in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 86.
- Massey**, Gen., how to be employed, 197; forces disbanded, 199; character of, 199; enlists soldiers, 226; purged by Pride, 327; with Scots, 539; wounded at Worcester, 549.
- Mathews**, Col., delinquent, 317, 318.
- Maurice**, Prince, drowned, 400.
- Maynard**, Mr., one of Cromwell's Lords, ii., 363.
- Mayor**, Richard, Esq., character of, 241; letters from Cromwell to, 339, 342, 343, 347, 350, 352, 353, 354, 369, 374, 399, 423, 440, 475, 541, ii., 33; in Little Parliament, 77; of Customs Committee, 59; in Council of State, 61, *n.*, 73, *n.*
- Mazarin**, Giulio, Cardinal, policy of, ii., 256; Cromwell's letter to, 258; opinion of Cromwell, 358.
- Meg**, Muckle, in Edinburgh Castle, 511, *n.*
- Members**, the Five, 120; the Eleven, 211; accused by Army, 223; names of, 224, *n.*; last appearance of, 225.
- Middleton**, Gen., at Preston fight, 272; for Charles II., 493; Rebellion in Highlands, 558.
- Mildmay**, Sir Henry, quarrels with Lord Wharton, 290.
- Militia**, Ordinance of, 122.
- Milton**, John, his burial, entry of, 46; notice of, 346; pamphlets, 106; Sir H. Vane friend of, ii., 6; blind, and Latin Secretary, 73, 169.
- State Papers criticised, 72.
- Ministers of Edinburgh and Cromwell**, 477-488.
- Model**, New, of the Army, 153, 157, 166.
- Monarchy**, Fifth, described, ii., 94, *n.*; plot, 281.
- Monk**, Col. George, in the Tower, 148; in Ireland, 230; in Scots War, 439, 470; at Edinburgh, 509, made Lieut.-General of Ordnance, 531; sent to Stirling, 545; storms Dundee, 557; Army mutinous, 133.
- Monopoly**, of soap, &c., 64.
- Monroe**, Gen., in Scots Army, 269; his motions, 290; rejected at Edinburgh, 295.
- Montagu**, Dr., censured, 61.
- Montague family**, 54.
- Lord, a Puritan, 51.

- (Earl Sandwich), Colonel of the Parliament foot, 164; at Bristol siege, 177, 178; receives King at Hinchinbrook, 218; in Little Parliament, ii., 33; of Customs Committee, 59; in Council of State, 61, *n.*; made Admiral, 190; Cromwell's letters to, 204, 206, 352, 353; on Committee of Kingship, 278; assists the French, 313; at Installation, 351; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Montgomery, Major-General in Scots Army, 444, 445, 500, *n.*
- Montrose, Earl, in Scots Army, 102; routed in Scotland, 191; ill success of, 435, 436.
- Moray House, Edinburgh, Cromwell at, 308.
- Mordington, Cromwell, at, 441; incident at, 442.
- Morgan, Mr., to be taken, 262.
- Morris, Governor of Pomfret Castle, 314; Cromwell's letter to, 314.
- Mosstroopers, Watt and Augustin, 497; routed by Col. Hacker, 514.
- Mulgrave, Earl, in Council of State, ii., 73, *n.*; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Munster for Parliament, 410.
- Musical entertainment at Cromwell's, ii., 266.
- Musselburgh, Cromwell, at, 455; Cromwell's Army in, 532.
- Naseby described, 165. *See* Battle.
- Nayler, James, worshipped, ii., 129, 184; punished, 269, 270.
- Neile, Bishop, and Popery, 61; Parliament about to accuse, 62.
- Newbury. *See* Battle.
- Newcastle, Earl, helps the King, 121; his Popish Army, 135; state of in 1643, 140; besieges Hull, 144; retires disgusted, 152.
- Newcastle, Mayor of, Cromwell's letter to, ii., 255.
- Newhall estate, ii., 209.
- Newmarket rendezvous. *See* Army.
- Newport, negotiations at, 307.
- New Year's day, when. *See* Year.
- Nicholas, Capt., at Chepstow, 264.
- Noble's Memoirs criticised, 16, 17.
- Norham, situation of, 305.
- Norton, Col. Richard, serves under Earl Manchester, 142; notice of, 241, 247; Cromwell's letters to, 241, 246, 247; in Little Parliament, ii., 33; in Council of State, 61, *n.*
- Nottingham, Charles I. erects his standard at, 548.
- Noy, Attorney, conduct of in 1632, 69; his advancement, death, and dissection, 71.
- Oblivion and remembrance, 9.
- Officers, one hundred, remonstrate with Cromwell on Kingship, ii., 274; petition of, on Kingship, 343.
- Okey, Col., taken at Bristol siege, 177; at Linlithgow fight, 540; Republican, 81.
- Oldenburg, Duke, his present to Cromwell; ii., 130.
- O'Neil, Henry, joins Ormond, 397.
- Hugh, Governor of Clonmel, 425.
- Owen Roe, character of, 386.
- Onslow, Sir Richard, in Kingship Committee, ii., 306.
- Ordinance of Militia. *See* Militia.
- Self-denying, 153, 157.
- Ormond, Earl, Irish levied by, 198; character of, 228; strong in Ireland, 340; routed by Jones, 370; at Ross, 393; plotting in England, ii., 371, 395, 397.
- Otes, described, 96.
- Otley, Col., at disbanding of Rump, ii., 28.
- Ouse River, 83.
- Overbury poisoned, 40.
- Overton, Col., Governor of Hull, 233; in Scots War, 439, 470; at Linlithgow, 540; Republican, ii., 81; dismissed, 133.
- Overton, Richard, a Leveller, 351.
- Owen, Colonel Sir John, delinquent, 315.
- Dr., in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 86; preaches to Second Parliament, 218.
- Oxford, Charles I. at, 136; Cromwell feasted, &c., at, 364.
- Pack, Sir Christopher, motion by, ii., 273.

- Pamphlets on Civil War, King's,** 5, 106.
- Paper, blotting, not in use,** 205, *n*.
- Papists, to be hanged,** 152; cruelties in Ireland, 390; against Protestants, *ii.*, 374, 375.
- Parker, Mr., Cromwell's letter to,** *ii.*, 31.
- Parliament, Third, of Charles I.,** 55; is Puritan, 56; its Petition of Right, 56; doings of, 57; Alured's letter about, 58; prorogued, 60; dissolved, 63; holds down the Speaker, 63; conduct after, 64: Short, summoned 1640, 101; dissolved, 102: Long, summoned 3d Nov., 1640, 103; sketch of, 103; votes against Bishops, 106; secures the Militia, 116; grand Petition of, 119; Charles I. attempts to seize Five Members, 120; goes to City for refuge, 121; how it raises army, 122; affairs in July, 1643, 142; takes the Scots Covenant, Sept., 1643, 144; affairs in 1644, 153, 154; disagreement of Generals, 153; affairs prosper, 191; new Members elected (Recruiters), 192; Army turns on it, 209; declares against Army, 214; number of Members in 1648, 247 (*see* Members); purged by Pride, 327; new one to be elected, *ii.*, 23; difficulties in choosing, 24: Little, summons for, 32; members of, 33; meets 4th July, 1653, 34; failure of, 58; doings and resignation of, 61-63: First Protectorate, assembles 3d Sept., 1654, 86-88; unsuccessful, 106; signs the Recognition, 127; doings of, 128, 129; dissolved, 157: Second Protectorate, assembles 17th Sept., 1656, 217; doings in Sindercomb's plot, 262; doings of, 268-270; offers Cromwell title of King, 273, &c.; presses him to accept the title, 280; second session of, 262; the two Houses disagree, 372, 373; dissolved, 393.
- Pass, form of, in 1649,** 338.
- Paul's, St., Cathedral, a horseguard,** 359; Cross inscribed, 62.
- Peak, Sir Robert, taken at Basing,** 185.
- Pembroke besieged by Cromwell,** 262.
- Penn, Admiral, sails with the fleet,** *ii.*, 131; sent to the Tower, 181, 187.
- **Quaker, *ii.*, 187.**
- Penruddock, Col., in arms, *ii.*, 163;** beheaded, 164.
- Peters, Rev. Hugh, chaplain of train,** 164; secretary to Cromwell, 184; his narrative of Basing, 186; at Putney, 227; at Pembroke, 268; in Ireland, 370; Cromwell to be King, 556.
- Petition of Right, 56; altered,** 61.
- **London, 105, 216; Surrey, 263**
- **and Advice of Parliament, *ii.*, 273.**
- Phayer, Col., at execution of Charles I.,** 329; at Cork, 401.
- Piccadilly, derivation of, *ii.*, 342.**
- Pickering, Sir Gilbert, in Council of State, *ii.*, 61, *n.***
- **Col., at Bristol siege, 178; at Basing, 184.**
- Piedmont, persecution in, *ii.*, 167-169.**
- Pierrepont, Mr., and Cromwell on Kingship, *ii.*, 292.**
- Pilgrimage of Grace in 1536,** 29.
- Pinchbeck invented by Prince Rupert,** 400.
- Pinkerton's stories of Cromwell,** value of, 496.
- Plague, Army escapes, in 1645,** 180.
- Plot, Gunpowder, 38; Waller's, 141;** of Army, 116; by Rev. C. Love, &c., 537; Anabaptists, *ii.*, 71; Royalist, 72, 360, 371, 396, 397; Republican commotions, 80, 81; Gerrard's, 81, 84; Penruddock's, 163; Sexby's, 215; Sindercomb's, 260; Venner's, 281; Hewit and Slingsby's, 395.
- Politics and Religion in 1642,** 127.
- Pomfret. *See* Pontefract.**
- Pontefract, Cromwell at,** 313.
- Popery in 1623, 47; images of, destroyed,** 136.
- Pope Alexander VII., Cromwell's opinion of, *ii.*, 229.**



- Popish States, War with, ii., 222-226.
- Portuguese Ambassador's brother. *See* Sa.
- Potts, Sir John, letter to, 132.
- Powel, Presbyterian-Royalist Colonel, 261, 262.
- Powel, Anabaptist, against Cromwell, ii., 70.
- Power, definition of, ii., 65, 66.
- Powick possessed by the Scots, 550, 552.
- Pownell, Major, at Preston fight, 273.
- Poyer, Col., his doings in Wales, 262, 263; shot, 345.
- Poyntz, General, enlists soldiers, 226; slashes the mob, 226.
- Prayers for the Parliament Army, 162; an English troop interrupted at, 455; Cromwell's last, 409.
- Preaching, Cromwell on, 484.
- Presbyterianism, Charles I. averse to, 148; and schism, 169; adopted by Parliament, 206; overthrown, 226.
- Preston, Dr., fame of, 50.
- Preston. *See* Battle.
- Pride, Colonel, summoned by Commons, 214; at Preston battle, 250; purges the Commons, 327; in Scots War, 439, 470; would hang up the Lawyers' gowns, 471.
- Prince, Thomas, Leveller, 351.
- Prussian Monarchy, founder of, ii., 375.
- Prynne, William, first appearance of, 67; his *Histriomastix*, 68; in pillory in 1633, 70; again in 1637, 92; speech in pillory, 93; purged by Pride, 327; assists Dr. Hewit, ii., 396.
- Puritan sermons, 10; history, 14; demands at Hampton Court Conference, 37; characteristic, 49; leaders, 51.
- Paritanism, our last heroism, 3; faded, 10; Dryasdust on, 11; nature of, 76.
- Puritans, English and Scots, 103; become formidable, 116.
- Putney Church, Army-meeting at, 227.
- Pym, John, M.P., a Puritan, 51; speech by, 58; lives at Chelsea, 118
- Quakerism, germ of, 315.
- Quakers, first Scotch, 518. *See* Nayler, Fox, Penn.
- Queen of Charles I., doings by, 137
- Ragland Castle besieged, 196.
- Rainsborough, Col., at Bristol siege, 177; deserted by the Fleet, 289; assassinated, 314.
- Raleigh, Sir Walter, execution of, 45.
- Ramsay, Rev. Robert, preaches before Cromwell, 532.
- Rawlins, Captain of Parliament horse, 164.
- Recruiters, new Members of Parliament, 192.
- Redbank, fight at, 280. *See* Preston.
- Reformers, true, 77.
- Remonstrance, against Buckingham, 60.
- against Laud, 63.
- and Petition of Ministers, 105.
- Grand, of Long Parliament, 119.
- Reynolds, Col., surprises Carrick, 406; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87; assists the French, 313; death of, 359.
- Ribble Bridge, fight at, 277. *See* Preston.
- Rich, Mr. and Frances Cromwell ii., 210, 213; death of, 400.
- Richmond, Duke, present to, 236.
- Riots. *See* Apprentices.
- Robinson, Luke, sent to Charles I., 198; turncoat, ii., 372.
- Rev. Mr., Cromwell's letter to, 337.
- Rochester, Earl. *See* Wilmot.
- Rolf, Major, accused, 291.
- Rooksby, Major, killed at Dunbar, 471.
- Ross Town, besieged, 392; taken, 396.
- Roths, Earl, taken at Worcester 553.
- Rouse, Francis, Translator of the Psalms, 99; in Little Parliament, ii., 33; Speaker of Little Parliament, 63; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 86; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Rowe, Scoutmaster, character of 296, 297

- Royston Rendezvous.** *See* Army.
- Rump**, doings of the, ii., 5-8; must be dissolved, 25; dismissed by Cromwell, 26.
- Rupert**, Prince, his father dies, 68; plunderings of, in 1643, 131; nicknamed, 143; relieves York, 149; routed at Marston Moor, 149; at Worcester, 1645, 160; at Naseby battle, 166, 167; at Bristol, 175; manner of his leaving Bristol, 181; in Ireland, 400.
- Rushworth**, John, in danger at Naseby, 167; Cromwell's letter to, 199; secretary to Cromwell, 439.
- Rushworthian chaos**, 9, 57.
- Russel**, Francis, Henry Cromwell married to daughter of, 151, 247.
- Rymer**, Sir Thomas, Lord Mayor of London, Cromwell's letter to, ii., 82.
- Sa**, Don Pantaleon, beheaded, ii., 84, 85.
- St. Abb's Head** described, 437.
- St. Albans**, Commission of Array at, 131. *See* Army.
- St. Fagan's**, fight at, 262.
- St. George's Hill**, Levellers at, 357.
- St. Ives** described, 83.
- St. James's Fields**, scene in, 226; House, bestowed on Cromwell, 417.
- St. John**, Oliver, character of, 94; related to Cromwell, 97; is Solicitor-General, 107; with Cromwell at Aylesbury, 556; character of, ii., 6; at Conference at Speaker's, 11.
- Mrs. Cromwell's letter to, 97.
- St. Johnston** (Perth) surrenders, 545.
- St. Neots**, fight at, 268.
- Salisbury**, Levellers at, 361; insurrection at, ii., 163.
- Santa Cruz**, Blake beats Spanish at, ii., 313.
- Saunders**, Col., notice of, 262; Cromwell's letter to, 263.
- Say and Sele**, Lord, a Puritan, 51; in Church Commission, ii., 75.
- Scot** of Scotstarvet, notice of, 302.
- Scot**, Major Thomas, report by, 336; Republican, ii., 75; does not sign the Recognition, 127; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 318, 389; excluded, 251; death of, 372.
- Scots Committee of Estates**, Cromwell's Letters to, 297, 303, 308.
- Scots affairs** in 1637, 93; Covenant, 93; affairs in 1639, 101; motions of their Army, 102; Declaration and proceedings of, in England, 103; demands, 106; assist English Parliament, 144; Army enters England, 1644, 147; at Marston Moor, 149; Commissioners against Cromwell, 157; Army returns home, 195; Negotiations concluded, 203; assist Charles II., 412; their Covenant in 1650, 433, 434, 492, 494; call in Charles II., 435; prepare to repel Cromwell, 441, 442; Army skirmishes with Cromwell, 443-445; Army, how officered, 445; their poverty, &c., described, 449; their Covenant commented on by Cromwell, 451; skirmish with Cromwell, 454; routed at Dunbar, 465, 466; Clergy and Cromwell, 477, 488; Committee of Estates, Cromwell's letters to, 494, 521; divisions among, 493, 501; at Stirling, levying forces, &c., 513; entrenched at Torwood, 538; invade England, 544, 547; routed at Worcester, 551; Cromwell's opinion of, ii., 384.
- Scoutmaster**, office of. *See* Rowe.
- Scroope**, Col., pursues Scots, 286.
- Seals**, Great, new, &c., 524, 525.
- Sedgwick**, Major-Gen., in Jamaica, ii., 191; death of, 198.
- Selden**, John, imprisoned, 64.
- Serle**, Daniel, Governor of Barbadoes, ii., 191; Cromwell's letter to, 194.
- Sexby**, Edward, Trooper, examined, 215; 100% voted to, 288; his plottings, ii., 215; his death, 360.
- Shakspeare's death**, 39.
- Sherland**, Parson, apprehended, ii., 200.
- Shipmoney**, Writ of, 71. *See* Hampden.
- Sidney**, Col. Algernon, in Parliament Army, 164; in Rump Parliament, ii., 26.
- Silence**, nature of, 7.

- Simes, Major, shot, 418.
- Sindercomb, Miles, character and plot of, ii., 260, 261; poisons himself, 266.
- Skippon, Major-Gen., conveys Scots money, 205; in Council of State, ii., 73, *n.*; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 86; a Major-General, 184; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Slepe Hall described, 84.
- Slingsby, Sir Henry, in arms, ii., 163; plot and execution of, 395, 397.
- Smectymnuus pamphlets, 106.
- Societies, Printing. *See* Dryasdust.
- Soldiers at sack of Basing, anecdotes of, 187.
- Somers Tracts criticised, 72.
- Sorrow defined, 49.
- South Sea Island Queen, anecdote of, 330.
- Southwark declares for Army, 226.
- Spain, Alliance with, broken, 47; War with, 47; issue of, 48; War with, ii., 189, 214; reasons for, 221-225.
- Speech, Oliver Cromwell's first, 62.
- Speeches, how to read Cromwell's, 73; fragment of, against Earl Manchester and present Parliament commanders, 155-157.
- Speeches of Oliver Cromwell.
- I. Opening of the Little Parliament, 4 July, 1653: ii., 32-57.
- II. Meeting of the First Protectorate Parliament, 4 Sept., 1654: 86-105.
- III. To the same Parliament, 12 Sept., 1654: 106-131.
- IV. Dissolution of the First Protectorate Parliament, 22 Jan., 1654-5, 133-158.
- V. Meeting of the Second Protectorate Parliament, 17 Sept., 1656: 219-249.
- VI. To the same, 23 Jan., 1656-7: 262-265.
- VII. To the same, 31 March, 1657: 275-277.
- VIII. To a Committee of the same Parliament, 3 April, 1657: 278-280.
- IX. Conference with the Committee of Ninety-nine in regard to the title of King, 11 April, 1657: 284-292.
- X. Second Conference with the same, 13 April, 1657: 293-305.
- XI. Third Conference with the same, 20 April, 1657: 307-312.
- XII. Fourth Conference with the same, 21 April, 1657: 315-341.
- XIII. To the Second Protectorate Parliament in a body, 8 May, 1657: 343-345.
- XIV. To the same, 9 June, 1657, on the presentation of some Bills for assent, 348.
- XV. To the Two Houses of Parliament; Opening of the Second Session of the Second Protectorate Parliament, 20 Jan., 1657-8: 365-370.
- XVI. To the same, the Commons having raised debates as to the Title of the other House, 25 Jan., 1657-8: 373-388.
- XVII. Dissolution of the Second Protectorate Parliament, 4 Feb 1658; 390-393.
- Sports, Book of, burned, 136.
- Sprigge's *Anglia Rediviva*, 161.
- Standard set up, pamphlet, ii., 306, 309.
- Stapleton, Sir Philip, Presbyterian, 214. *See* Members, Eleven.
- Stapleton, Bryan, notice of, 296.
- Stapleton, Rev. Robt., 297; preaches in Edinburgh High Church, 491.
- Steward, Sir Thomas, Knt., death of, 90.
- Stewart of Allertoun, 534, 535.
- Stewart of Blantyre, duel with Lord Wharton, 291.
- Stockings, anecdotes of, 41.
- Stonyhurst, Cromwell at, 273.
- Storie, Mr., notice of, 87; Cromwell's letter to, 86.
- Strahan, Major, notice of, 301; in Scots Army, 444, 493, 494; at Glasgow, 489; Remonstrance by, 498; joins Cromwell, 501; is excommunicated, 530.
- Strafford, Earl, subscribes 20,000*l.* to the King, 102; in the Tower, 107, trial, execution, and character, 117.
- Strickland, Walter, of Council of State, ii., 73, *n.*, 87.
- Strode, William, imprisoned, 64.

- Buffolk**, Earl, sent to Charles I., 198.  
**Suir River**, castles on, 418.  
**Surrey** petition and riot, 264.  
**Sweden**, Whitelocke concludes treaty with, ii., 77.  
**Swedish Ambassador**, audience of, ii., 179, 180; takes leave, 216, 217.  
**Swinton, Laird**, joins Cromwell, 502; in Little Parliament, ii., 33; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 87.  
**Sydenham**, Colonel, in Council of State, ii., 73, *n*.  
**Syler**, Col., at Linlithgow fight, 540.  
**Symonds**, Mr., engraver, 524, 525.  
**Synott**, Col., Governor of Wexford, 388.  
**Taaf**, Father, killed, 384.  
 — Lucas, Governor of Ross, 393; Cromwell's letters to, 392, 394, 395, 396.  
**Taffe**, Lord, his intrigues, ii., 233.  
**Tate**, Zouch, M.P., introduces Self-denying Ordinance, 157.  
**Teme River**, near Worcester, 550.  
**Theauro**, John, a kind of Quaker, ii., 129.  
**Thompson**, Col., Leveller, 361; shot, 363.  
**Thompson**, Cornet, Leveller, 361; shot, 362.  
**Thornhaugh**, Major, slain at Preston, 278.  
**Thurloe**, secretary to Cromwell, ii., 73; and Cromwell on Kingship, 292.  
**Tillinghurst**, Rev. Mr., and Cromwell, ii., 175.  
**Tipperary county** fined, 416.  
**Titchborne**, Alderman, of Customs Committee, ii., 59.  
**Titus**, Capt., 50*l*. voted to, 218; with Charles I., 250; killing no murder, ii., 266, *n*.  
**Tonnage and Poundage** disputed, 61.  
**Trope**, and Sindercomb, ii., 260, 261.  
**Trade**, Committee of, ii., 202.  
**Treasury**, state of the, ii., 243.  
**Treaty**, Ripon, 103; at Oxford, 136; Uxbridge, 147; with the King, 203, 216, 307.  
**Tredah**, garrison of, 379; stormed, 380, 381.  
**Trevor**, Col., character of, 402, *n*.  
**Triers of preachers**, ii., 99.  
**Troopers**, three, present Army-letter, 215.  
**Tulchan Bishops**, account of, 41.  
**Tunis**, Dey of, brought to reason, ii., 171.  
**Turner**, Sir James, narrative by, 271; wounded by his own men, 279.  
**Turner**, Rev. Mr., Cromwell's opinion of, ii., 83.  
**Tweeddale**, Earl of, Committee on Kingship, ii., 278.  
**Twistleton**, Col., at Dunbar, 470.  
 Ulster pikes, 410.  
 Uniformity in religion, 206.  
**Urrey**, Col. *See* Hurry.  
**Uttoxeter**, capture of Scots at, 281.  
**Van Druske**, Col., taken, 285.  
**Vane**, Sir Henry jun., signs Scots Covenant, 144; character of, ii., 6; a juggler, 28; of Council of State, 210; a rejected M. P. candidate, 216.  
 — Sir Henry sen., in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87.  
**Varney**, Sir Ralph, his Notes, 105.  
 — Sir Edmund, in Tredah, 380, 381.  
**Venables**, Col., at Derry, 387; made General, sails with fleet, ii., 131; sent to the Tower, 181.  
**Venner**, Cooper, rising by, ii., 281, 282.  
**Vere family**, Fairfax's wife of the, 436.  
**Vermuyden**, Col., notice of, 164.  
**Vicars's** relation of Winceby fight, 145.  
**Villemain**, M., criticised, 172.  
**Voluntary principle**, 206.  
**Vowel's** plot, ii., 81, 84.  
**Wagstaff**, Sir Joseph, in arms, ii., 163. *See* Penraddock.  
**Wales**, Prince of, Fleet revolts to, 269; at Yarmouth, 269.  
**Wales**, tumults in, 261.  
**Walker**, Clement, M.P., described, 243; purged by Pride, 327.

- Wallace, Mr., his house in Edinburgh, 509.
- Waller, Sir Hardress, at Bristol siege, 178; wounded at Basing, 184.
- Waller, Poet, his plot, 141.
- Waller, Sir William, in high repute, 136; beaten at Lansdown heath, 141; his army deserts, 153; is Presbyterian, 214; deputed to Army, 214; purged by Pride, 327.
- Wallop, Robert, M.P., notice of, 387, *n.*; in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87.
- Walpole, Horace, collector of letters, 336.
- Walton, Col., Cromwell's letter to, 150; account of, 151.
- Walwyn, William, Leveller, 351.
- War, the Thirty-Years, 68; with Scots, 101; the Bishops', 102; Civil, commenced, 111; exciting cause of, 116; Second Civil, 261.
- Warrington, Scots surrender at, 285.
- Warwick's, Sir Philip, opinion of Cromwell, 95, 108.
- Warwick, Earl, notice of, ii., 210; at Installation, 351; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363; letter to Cromwell, 400.
- Waterford besieged, 406.
- Watt, Mosstrooper, 497.
- Waugh, Rev. John, description of, 519, 520.
- Weimar, Bernard of, in Thirty-Years War, 68.
- Welden, Col., at Bristol siege, 177.
- Wells, Rev., notice of, 88.
- Welsh War, ended, 269.
- Wentworth, Sir John, fined 1000*l.*, 134.
- Sir Peter, in the Rump, ii., 27.
- West, Col., at Linlithgow fight, 540.
- Westminster Hall, riots in, 120, 265.
- Weston, Henry, Cromwell's letter to, ii., 60.
- Wexford besieged, 388.
- Whalley, Major, commended, 139, 140; meets the King, 218; guards the King, 234; at trial of King, 328; Cromwell's letter to, 236; in Scots War, 439, 470; skirmishes with the Scots, 443, 444; wounded at Dunbar, 471; his letter to Governor Dundas, 478; at Conference at Speaker's, ii., 11-13; removes the Mace, 107; a Major General, 184; in favor of Kingship, 346; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Wharton, Lord, a Puritan, 238; his character, 290; Cromwell's letter to, 291.
- Duke, character of, 293.
- Manor House, 291.
- Whiggamore raid, 289.
- Whitaker, Historian, mistake of, 36, *n.*
- White, Major, at Dunbar, 470.
- Whitehall, Cromwell removes to, ii., 77.
- Whitelocke, Bulstrode, of Council of State, 335; receives news of Worcester battle, 552; Cromwell's present to, 556; at Conference at the Speaker's, ii., 11-13; Cromwell consults with, 23; goes to Sweden, 77; in Cromwell's First Parliament, 87; his quarrel with Cromwell, 167; in Cromwell's Second Parliament, 251; and Cromwell on Kingship, 292; at Installation, 351; one of Cromwell's Lords, 363.
- Widdrington, Sir Thomas, at Conference at Speaker's, ii., 11-13; Keeper of Great Seal, 167; elected Speaker, 262.
- Wigan Moor, Scots Army at, 278.
- Wight, Charles I. at Isle of, 237.
- Wildman, Mr., in Cromwell's First Parliament, ii., 87; opposed to Cromwell, 127; seized plotting, is put in Chepstow, 162.
- Williams, Archbishop of York, 119.
- Sir Trevor, to be taken, 262, 263.
- Willingham, Mr., Cromwell's letter to, 105.
- Willis, Sir Richard, notice of, ii., 84; spy, 382.
- Willoughby of Parham, Lord, at Gainsborough, 138; complained of, 148.
- Wilmot, Earl Rochester, escapes ii., 164.
- Winceby. *See* Battle.
- Winchester, Cromwell takes, 183.

- Winchester**, Marquis of, taken at Basing, 185, 189.  
**Windebank**, Secretary, flies, 107.  
**Windsor Castle**, Army-council at, 254.  
**Winram**, Laird, and Charles II., 391.  
**Winstanley**, Leveller, 357.  
**Winwood**, M.P. for Windsor, 556.  
**Wogan**, Col., his maraudings, 410, 411.  
**Wolseley**, Sir Charles, in Council of State, ii., 73, *n.* See **Worseley**.  
**Worcester**, Marquis, his lands given to Cromwell, 243; author of *Century of Inventions*, 243.  
**Worcester**, Charles II. at, 548,—see **Battle**; state of, after battle, 555.  
**Worselev**, Col., a Major-General, ii., 184.  
**Year's Day**, New, difference of style, 35, *n.*  
**York**, Duke of, escapes, 205; at Dunkirk, ii., 358.  
 — City relieved by Prince Rupert 150; captured by Parliament Army, 152.  
 — House, meeting at, ii., 358.  
**Yorke**, Hon. Mr., papers burned, 238.  
**Zanchy**, Col., relieves **Passage**, 410, wounded, 418.

THE END.

